

DRAGON-BLOODED WAR GOD

by Feng Qing Yang

Dragon-Blooded War God / Long Xue Zhan Shen

Author : Feng Qing Yang

Dragon-Blooded War God (龙血战神) is a novel written by Feng Qing Yang (风青阳).

It is still ongoing and has a grand total of 112 million views and counting.

Synopsis 1 :

According to legends, back in ancient centuries and eons past, the heavens and the earth was rent, and a tribe of dragons ruled as the overlord. But now, the dragons are extinct, and with a mysterious catastrophe descending, the fate of the world is at stake!

Long Chen , a useless playboy, had no merit to speak of. But because of the legacy left by his father, a Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant which had devoured ancient Dragon Gods blood, he chased after the mystery behind the sudden extinction of the dragons. In a lucky coincidence, he becomes the first ancient dragon warrior in an eon, with the responsibility to uphold the dragon tribe's honor and the command of all dragons under heaven.

With the most passionate battles, heart-moving tender scenes, brutal slaughters, and filled with the majesty of dragons. On the advent of the catastrophe, millions upon millions of dragons descend upon the world again, bringing the world to the brink of an era of war.

For he of the ancient dragon tribe, is willing to paint the sky with blood, if only for the bonds of brotherhood; with a wave of the hand to reverse the flow of the

galaxy, for a goddess worthy of praise; will pull the gods down from their celestial pedestal, sunder the heavens, for the good of all living things under the sky!

Heaven – Devouring tribe, we have returned!

Synopsis 2 :

In the ancient centuries of the yonder past, the heavens and the earth was rent, and in Long Ji Continent a tribe of dragons ruled supreme. But now, the dragons are extinct, and with a mysterious catastrophe descending, the fate of the world is at stake!

A teenager named Long Chen takes on the legacy of his father, chases after the mystery behind the sudden extinction of the dragons. In a lucky coincidence, he becomes the first ancient dragon warrior in an eon, with the responsibility to uphold the dragon tribe's honor and the command of all dragons under heaven.

With the most passionate battles, heart-moving tender scenes, brutal slaughters, and filled with the majesty of dragons. On the advent of the catastrophe, millions upon millions of dragons descend upon the world again, bringing the world to the brink of an era of war.

For he of the ancient dragon tribe, is willing to paint the sky with blood, if only for the bonds of brotherhood; with a wave of the hand to reverse the flow of the galaxy, for a goddess worthy of praise; will pull the gods down from their celestial pedestal, sunder the heavens, for the good of all living things under the sky!

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/dragon-blooded-war-god/>

Raws :

<http://www.17k.com/book/391013.html>

Translator :

<http://omatranslations.com/table-of-contents-dbwg/>



DBWG-Toc

[Dragon-Blooded War God](#)

[Images](#)

[DBWG-C01](#)

[DBWG-C02](#)

[DBWG-C03](#)

[DBWG-C04](#)

[DBWG-C05](#)

[DBWG-C06](#)

[DBWG-C07](#)

[DBWG-C08](#)

[DBWG-C09](#)

[DBWG-C010](#)

[DBWG-C011](#)

[DBWG-C012](#)

[DBWG-C013](#)

[DBWG-C014](#)

[DBWG-C015](#)

[DBWG-C016](#)

[DBWG-C017](#)

[DBWG-C018](#)

[DBWG-C019](#)

[DBWG-C020](#)

[DBWG-C021](#)

[DBWG-C022](#)

[DBWG-C023](#)

[DBWG-C024](#)

[DBWG-C025](#)

[DBWG-C026](#)

[DBWG-C027](#)

[DBWG-C028](#)

[DBWG-C029](#)

[DBWG-C030](#)

[DBWG-C031](#)

[DBWG-C032](#)

[DBWG-C033](#)

[DBWG-C034](#)

[DBWG-C035](#)

[DBWG-C036](#)

[DBWG-C037](#)

[DBWG-C038](#)

[DBWG-C039](#)

[DBWG-C040](#)

[DBWG-C041](#)

[DBWG-C042](#)

[DBWG-C043](#)

[DBWG-C044](#)

[DBWG-C045](#)

[DBWG-C046](#)

[DBWG-C047](#)

[DBWG-C048](#)

[DBWG-C049](#)

[DBWG-C050](#)

[DBWG-C051](#)

[DBWG-C052](#)

[DBWG-C053](#)

[DBWG-C054](#)

[DBWG-C055](#)

[DBWG-C056](#)

[DBWG-C057](#)

[DBWG-C058](#)

[DBWG-C059](#)

[DBWG-C060](#)

[DBWG-C061](#)

[DBWG-C062](#)

[DBWG-C063](#)

[DBWG-C064](#)

[DBWG-C065](#)

[DBWG-C066](#)

[DBWG-C067](#)

[DBWG-C068](#)

[DBWG-C069](#)

[DBWG-C070](#)

[DBWG-C071](#)

[DBWG-C072](#)

[DBWG-C073](#)

[DBWG-C074](#)

[DBWG-C075](#)

[DBWG-C076](#)

[DBWG-C077](#)

[DBWG-C078](#)

[DBWG-C079](#)

[DBWG-C080](#)

[DBWG-C081](#)

[DBWG-C082](#)

[DBWG-C083](#)

[DBWG-C084](#)

[DBWG-C085](#)

[DBWG-C086](#)

[DBWG-C087](#)

[DBWG-C088](#)

[DBWG-C089](#)

[DBWG-C090](#)

[DBWG-C091](#)

[DBWG-C092](#)

[DBWG-C093](#)

[DBWG-C094](#)

[DBWG-C095](#)

[DBWG-C096](#)

[DBWG-C097](#)

[DBWG-C098](#)

[DBWG-C099](#)

[DBWG-C0100](#)

[DBWG-C0101](#)

[DBWG-C0102](#)

[DBWG-C0103](#)

[DBWG-C0104](#)

[DBWG-C0105](#)

[DBWG-C0106](#)

[DBWG-C0107](#)

[DBWG-C0108](#)

[DBWG-C0109](#)

[DBWG-C0110](#)

[DBWG-C0111](#)

[DBWG-C0112](#)

[DBWG-C0113](#)

[DBWG-C0114](#)

[DBWG-C0115](#)

[DBWG-C0116](#)

[DBWG-C0117](#)

[DBWG-C0118](#)

[DBWG-C0119](#)

[DBWG-C0120](#)

[DBWG-C0121](#)

[DBWG-C0122](#)

[DBWG-C0123](#)

[DBWG-C0124](#)

[DBWG-C0125](#)

[DBWG-C0126](#)

[DBWG-C0127](#)

[DBWG-C0128](#)

[DBWG-C0129](#)

[DBWG-C0130](#)

[DBWG-C0131](#)

[DBWG-C0132](#)

[DBWG-C0133](#)

[DBWG-C0134](#)

[DBWG-C0135](#)

[DBWG-C0136](#)

[DBWG-C0137](#)

[DBWG-C0138](#)

[DBWG-C0139](#)

[DBWG-C0140](#)

[DBWG-C0141](#)

[DBWG-C0142](#)

[DBWG-C0143](#)

[DBWG-C0144](#)

[DBWG-C0145](#)

[wink](#)

Ling Xi

Dragon Shaped Jade Pendant

Poplar Town.

In a room on the second floor of the Emerald Jade House, a pair of coquettish girls sat on Yang Chen's lap. Yang Chen whipped out a few silver bills slapped them on the table and laughed delightfully.

Once the two girls saw the bills, their eyes immediately shone with light, and hurriedly rubbed their breasts on his arm, slyly laughing. "Master Yang, you sure are very generous..."

Just at this moment, the door suddenly slammed open. A servant rushed to the young man's side, and in spite of the sweat, stooped low to the youth's ear and said, "Young Master Chen, Third Aunt's husband has passed away!"

The servant's name was Xiao Huang, Yang Chen's most trusted aide, accompanying his side for many years.

Yang Chen's face suddenly went expressionless, only recovering after a while, brushed his sleeves, stood up, and left the area. The servant's expression was sorrowful, but could not keep up with Yang Chen's footsteps.

Walking on the street, Yang Chen thought: "Although this devil of a father died in an intoxicated manner, surpassing even me when drinking, but he is barely forty years old, he could still live another ten years, so how did he suddenly kick the bucket today?"

Increasing his pace, he very quickly arrived in the Yang residence.

Poplar Town had two families in power, the Bai family and the Yang family. The Yang family was in control of close to half of all of Poplar Town's resources, hence achieving the name of the second power.

Usually a person born to such a family is one's fortune. However, in Yang Chen's case it was not so.

During his younger days, the Yang family founder was known for having a great innate talent, his martial skills were immeasurable, and in Poplar Town he had built up his foundation. The Yang family quickly expanded and achieved success, giving birth to countless children.

Yang Chen's mother is of the older generation and is the third daughter, with a genius talent, which everybody in Poplar Town knew. However, Yang Chen's father became a son-in-law living with his wife's family. Yang Chen did not know how flirtatious his father was during his younger days, but as far back as he could recall, his father was drinking wine all day long, in a muddy daze, abandoned in a crude cottage, wasting his life away.

As the father was useless, the unlucky son was also implicated. Hence Yang Chen's position was not essential in the great Yang family. Not only did other people give him the cold shoulder, but even his own mother pretended not to have given birth to him. As such, he led a carefree life and had an unrestrained disposition. With the reputation of the Yang family, he got by with wasting his life away drinking and eating merrily, by dominating men and conquering women, leading a pretty good life.

Ignoring the cold gazes from the gate guards, Yang Chen entered the Yang

residence.

The Yang family courtyard was filled with pavilions, beautiful flora, displaying the elegance and history of the great family.

Not even a few steps away there were two people who were walking over. The first was a white robed, tall and largely built, stern young man. It was Yang Chen's second uncle's eldest son, his cousin Yang Zhan.

Behind Yang Zhan, stood a distant cousin called Chen Liu. He had an ugly disposition, hunchbacked, and looked towards Yang Zhan with flattery.

When he arrived in front of Yang Chen, Yang Zhan suddenly blocked Yang Chen's path.

"I hear that your useless father finally kicked the bucket."

Yang Zhan mocked Yang Chen, his face full of ridicule.

Yang Zhan had a decent reputation in Poplar Town, at the age of only 17, he had already broken through and entered the realm of the fourth dragon pulse, his achievement was considered as splendid.

Yang Chen in comparison to the rest of the outstanding youths in the Yang family, was never considered to be even in the same league.

Ever since they were small, they have had access to innumerable amounts of resources, and secret intermediate martial techniques, as for Yang Chen he

never had any of these.

His mother did not bother with him, and other people were even less likely to give him anything. When he was younger, he participated in an intra-family competition and showed off his incredible cultivation speed, stunning the crowd and earning himself a period of fame. However, without access to martial techniques, coupled with his lack of aptitude to improve, and even not practicing cultivation, he never managed to break through the first Dragon Pulse Vein, not being able even to enter the first level of Dragon Pulse Realm.

Yang Chen had practiced in secret before, but without martial techniques and guidance, even improving a little was extremely difficult.

“Why are you keeping quiet? I said that your dad is someone useless, you refuse to accept that fact?”

Standing in front of Yang Chen, Yang Zhan looked down upon him with ridicule in his eyes.

This kind of bullying, it's not as if Yang Chen has never encountered it before. Although Yang Chen has quite a reputation outside, but when he returns back to the Yang family he is considered to be equal to a dog. He knows his own place in the family, so he constantly endures and lets things slide by. But today, perhaps it was because of his father's death, even though he looked calm on the surface, his heart was extremely vexed.

“Move out of my way!”

Inhaling deeply, Yang Chen coldly said as he raised his head to look at him.

“My dear younger brother, how can you speak to your elder brother so rudely, could it be that you are resentful towards me? You did not learn martial cultivation, while tarnishing the Yang family name. As your elder brother, isn’t it a natural thing for me to discipline you a little bit?

Yang Zhan laughed as he said that. Not waiting for Yang Chen to dispute, he threw a punch hitting Yang Chen’s stomach and left, sneering.

Yang Chen cried out in pain and collapsed to the ground.

With Yang Zhan gone, Chen Liu immediately trotted after him. As he passed Yang Chen, he turned around and spat at him. Yang Chen, who was lying on the floor in agony, hurriedly dodged the spittle.

“Aiyo, so you managed to dodge? Cousin, your family’s dog is rather nimble...”

After ridiculing Yang Chen a while more, Chen Liu then sped up to keep pace with Yang Zhan.

The maids around who saw the scene, deemed it as an everyday activity, and did not look surprised.

No one turned a sympathetic eye upon Yang Zhan, but instead they became amused.

Yang Chen crawled up from the ground, wiping the blood from the corner of his mouth. Watching the departing backs of Yang Zhan and Chen Liu, his

intelligent eyes smoldered with anger.

“I must get revenge! If only I was a Martial cultivator, if only I were to enter the Dragon Pulse Realm!”

Yang Zhan, and that lackey Chen Liu, I will remember today’s humiliation. If I ever get the opportunity, I will make sure you will die horribly!”

Clenching his fist, Yang Chen walked towards his father’s living quarters.

Over these past several years, he etched in his heart anyone who had humiliated him. If there ever comes a day that he gets to improve, he will make sure those people who looked down on him will never live in peace again.

This is him, in Yang Chen’s circle of friends, the ones that were familiar with him all labeled him as a wolf in sheep’s clothing.

Yang Chen’s father was named Long Qinglan, a considerably refined name. Word has it that he was unparalleled in his flirtatious ways in his younger days, even the Yang family’s third madam was also enthralled.

Walking into the crude doorway, Long Qinglan was surrounded by a swarm of maidservants, lying on the floor with a pitch-black complexion. The room stank with a putrid odor, the result of a combination of alcohol and urine.

“He’s here...”

Seeing the arrival of Yang Chen, the maidservants hurriedly left, seemingly

having completed their task.

Yang Chen's gaze lingered on Long Qinglan. Since a long time, this man had no future. Him having this ending today, Yang Chen had long foreseen it.

Squatting down, he looked at that pitch-black face.

"In the end, what kind of person are you? These sixteen years, I felt like I have never understood you, and you didn't let me understand you either. The sad thing is, standing here today, I actually feel like we are total strangers. Father, father... it seems I am that unfilial son of the myths, even when you pass away, I cannot even shed a drop of tear."

Originally he considered himself to be heartless, and yet currently, his heart unexpectedly held a trace of bitterness.

Lingering for a while longer, upon the sound of footsteps outside, Yang Chen regained his composure. A woman wearing a faded pink robe with her hair tied up walked over, surrounded by a cluster of people. She glanced sideways at Long Qinglan's corpse, and let out a sigh and blandly said: "This ill-fated relationship has now passed. Yang Chen, he is your father, and because of this connection, you should find a place to bury him."

When she finished speaking, she left straight away without giving Yang Chen a second glance.

Yang Chen smiled, already accustomed to this, and looked at Long Qinglan and mockingly said, "Father, your looks can be considered as suave, and during your youth, your flirtatious reputation was spread far and wide, countless beauties

fell before the seams in your big pants. Unexpectedly when you died, even your woman has barely glanced at your dead body.

In his heart, he was disheartened, yet he did not display it in his expression.

Yang Chen, disregarding everything else carried Long Qinglan's corpse on his back, ignoring the weird glances coming his way, and walked all the way out of the Yang residence. Calling a horse drawn carriage and personally acting as the coachman, he brought Long Qinglan's body out of town, after finding a scenic location in the forest, Yang Chen unmounted and observed the surroundings.

"The verdant hills and limpid water, with the birdsong and fragrant flowers, is a fitting location for your eternal rest. Also the yin in the air is quite dense; I would imagine there would be many female spirits around. If you ever feel flirtatious in the afterlife, and wish to get me a step-mother or two, then this exquisite location, should be unrivaled for your XXX time.

"No matter what, I Yang Chen am still your son, and half of my blood and body was spurted out by you. However, since you died so early, and I am not accomplished, the best I can do is have you buried here. If you turn into a ghost and gain any magic power, please give me your blessing so that I can continue to live cheerfully."

Whilst looking at Long Qinglan's dim and lifeless face, he was startled to find a teardrop flow down his face.

Yang Chen hastily wiped away the tear, and without another word, used his fingers, and dug a grave in the fertile soil with his bare hands.

Although he no longer practiced martial cultivation, he still had a degree of talent. After all those years, his tempered body up till now has not deteriorated one bit. Digging a big pit was not a problem to him at all.

Just as he was preparing to bury Long Qinglan, Long Qinglan suddenly opened his eyes.

Yang Chen gave a cry as he realized the body wasn't dead, even if it was his own father; he still pushed him into the muddy pit.

Looking at the person in the pit, Yang Chen's mind was in a panicked state, stammering he said: "Fa ... Father, I did not speak ill of you, and today I merely dug this grave for you to let you rest in peace..."

Long Qinglan flipped his body around, cursing: "I swear to our ancestors, I have not completely died, and you already want to bury me, you little bastard. The reason why I came back to life was to tell you one thing. In my dantian, there's a dragon shaped emblem. When I die, dig out that dragon shaped jade pendant from my dantian, and that way it will allow me to be freed from all the suffering..."

Long Chen

After investing a considerable amount of energy, Yang Chen finally managed to shift Long Qinglan, allowing him to lean against the tree trunk.

“This old man was faking his death all along!”

After observing for a while, Yang Chen discovered that Long Qinglan had no issues at all, he was exasperated to the point that he wanted to deliver a few punches to his father.

Long Qinglan stared at him and said, “Don’t think that I survived. Right now I have resurrected, the main reason is to entrust you with a few things. You better listen to me carefully, if you miss a thing, I will turn into a ghost and make you unable to produce any heirs.”

Yang Chen rolled his eyes, in the past he had never heard this guy speak, but he didn’t think that their manner of speech would be so alike, it must have been hereditary.

“Alright, I know there’s nothing wrong with you father, look you are turning back to normal, just shoot what you have to say.”

Long Qinglan laughed heartily and said, “I have seen you a few times in the past, you little bastard, no doubt you have my style from when I was younger, so I will cut this short, after I die, the first thing you have to do is take the dragon shaped jade pendant out from my dantian.”

After hearing about the Dragon Jade again, Yang Chen stared blankly, and said, “Father, do you think that I’m an idiot? If your dantian had a piece of jade pendant squeezed in it, how is it that you are still living so well right now?”

“Bullshit! How can you call this perfectly fine? When I was eighteen and came to Poplar Town, only your mother was my match in her generation, if not for that reason, then how could I get a beauty like your mother in my bed? However, ever since I acquired this jade, the Qi in the eighth level of my Dragon Pulse Realm, was absorbed entirely in half a year, hence leading to this state of uselessness!”

So there was actually such a story, Yang Chen honestly did not know. Seeing from his old man’s emotional speech, the story shouldn’t be a lie, however what kind of a Dragon Jade could this be, to be able to make Qi disappear?

And more importantly, this old guy used to be an eighth level super expert of the Dragon Pulse Realm? If his father had such achievements during those younger days, what would his future look like?

According to legend, the human race inherited the bloodline of the ancient divine dragon, causing the nine major blood vessels that flowed inside the human body to be labeled as dragon veins, when the physical body was tempered to the maximum, feeling both heaven and earth, absorbing the surrounding essence, then one can accumulate it into Qi, when Qi rushes through the nine dragon veins, then one can become a top level expert, hence the Dragon Pulse Realm had a total of nine levels.

[TL: Dragon Pulse Realm is only the first realm, and has a total of nine levels.]

To Yang Chen’s knowledge, amongst Poplar Town’s strongest people, his

cheap old grandfather, self-proclaimed a peerless master, but he was actually no more than an expert at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

Ignoring Yang Chen's skeptical expression, Long Qinglan continued seriously, "This first thing, I have already clearly explained to you, the second thing is... to change your name. From this day onwards, your name will be changed to Long Chen. Our Long family is the world's greatest overlord, as their descendants, we definitely cannot use another family's surname!"

(TL note – 龙 = Long = Dragon)

"Greatest overlord? Bluffing little kids is okay, but don't use it to coax me..... oh well, if I only need to change my surname to Long then so be it."

Yang Chen blanked out for a second, he never would have thought this old devil would play this kind of joke on him, however, he had since a long time ago not wanted to have the surname Yang anymore. Although his father was not so accomplished, but he could still make do with having the surname Long.

Long Chen, this is his new name.

He chanted his name several times, and the feeling was pretty good. Looking at the old devil showing a genuine smile, Long Chen suddenly felt that he was quite happy today.

He sat down next to Long Qinglan, his shoulder leaning against his.

"You are my son, calling you Chen Er should not be too excessive, I have been stirring up trouble my entire life, traveled unhindered throughout the entire

Long Ji Continent, but I did not expect to die in Poplar Town, this hell of a dog place, fate is hard to predict, it really makes one feel like sobbing.”

“Did your brain spoil today or something, your entire life’s misdeeds I know at the back of my hand, quit bragging in front of me! Oh right, let’s not return to the Yang family, with my abilities, even in another place, supporting a drunkard like you shouldn’t be that much of a problem, how about it?”

As Long Chen spoke, he looked at the distant scenery, waiting for his father to reply, but after a long while there was no reaction. He suddenly felt cold, and immediately turned around, only to see Long Qinglan’s eyes filling up with tears, but not moving one bit.

“Old devil, what happened to you.....”

Being looked at in such a manner by a man, Long Chen did not feel one bit awkward. Even though he has always had a vulgar mouth, but the man in front of him is undeniably his father.”

“Chen Er.....”

“.....Yes?”

Long Qinglan raised his head, and said: “I am not a good father, and I did not bear any responsibilities that a father should have, hence allowing you to walk down the wrong path. There are many things that you will have to face. Right now I do not want to tell you, but once you reach that level, you will be able to experience it yourself.”

“And the last thing I want to tell you in this life, you had better clean your ears and listen closely, that is: In this cruel world, your strength is everything; a man without strength is the equivalent to a dog!”

“After my death, I wish for you to become strong, to set that as your life’s goal, because that too, ultimately was my aim, but fate played such a joke on me.....”

After being entrusted with such a task so solemnly, Long Chen was left in a daze.

Long Qinglan vigorously patted him on the head, and put his hand onto Long Chen’s shoulders and said smilingly: “I have already said what I intended to, lastly I wish to entrust to you one more request. Soon, there will be a Yang family competition; the younger generation of disciples will have a competition. The champion in the end will receive the Yang family’s most advanced tome of martial techniques, the [Seal of the Dragons]. This [Seal of the Dragons] is the key for you to become the Dragon Warrior, so no matter what you do, you must get your hands on it, never forget that, never forget that.....”

This family competition, Long Chen had heard some of it, but it had nothing to do with him.

“With my ability, I can beat up a few local thugs without a problem, but to enter into this competition, I will only manage to lose face for you. And also old man, what is this Dragon Warrior you speak of?

“Dragon Warrior.....that is a long-lost legend of the Long Ji Continent.....”

After finishing this sentence, Long Qinglan’s face was graced with a smile, his

eyes filled with yearning. However, the hand that he rested on Long Chen's shoulder, had just slowly slumped off, and ceased all breathing.

Long Chen was about ask more about the Long Ji Continent, but upon seeing Long Qinglan's hand limply fall, his heart entered a state of panic, and quickly held onto Long Qinglan.

Although his eyes were still open, and his face was graced with a smile, Long Chen discovered that his father had already lost all signs of life. This time around, he was truly dead.

Long Chen was having a mental breakdown.

Just a day ago, if Long Qinglan died, he could have accepted it, but now when he had longed to travel with the old devil to a far away place, and live a happy, unrestrained life, he was suddenly left behind alone.....

Long Chen bowed his head in sorrow.

"You better listen to me carefully, if you miss a thing, I will turn into a ghost and make you unable to produce any heirs."

"I am not a good father, and I did not bear any responsibilities that a father should have."

"In this cruel world, your strength is everything; a man without strength is the equivalent to a dog!"

“After my death, I wish for you to become strong, to set that as your life’s goal.”

His words, echoed repeatedly in Long Chen’s ears.

Long Chen would have never expected that he will one day be able to experience such a painful parting. He formerly thought that he had long lost his conscience, but this painful feeling right now, from where does it come from?

After waiting until deep into the night, and confirming that he will not wake again, only then did Long Chen lower him into the grave.

Looking down upon the gaunt face in the grave, Long Chen silently clenched his fists.

“.....”

“Old man, of all the things you have said to me, I will remember everything clearly, and will act accordingly. The few things you have entrusted to me, even if I become crippled, I will carry them out. As for the changing of my surname, I have already done so, the task of the [Seal of the Dragons], I will slowly accomplish, the matter of becoming strong, cannot be done in a day either. And.....”

He recalled the request that Long Qinglan asked of him, to remove the jade shaped pendant from his dantian.

He is already dead, if I desecrate his corpse; this would be a grave sin.....”

Upon thinking of this, he wanted to give up, but then he immediately changed his mind.

“No, that’s not right, this old devil said that the Dragon Jade was tormenting him, and he also told me this repeatedly. This jade may have some profound mysteries.”

Long Chen is not a sentimental person, and upon thinking of this, he took out a dagger, glanced at Long Qinglan once more, took a deep breath, and broke through his dantian.

Sure enough, there appeared a piece of black jade pendant.

Long Chen placed the jade pendant onto the ground, then covered Long Qinglan’s body with mud and dirt, erected a gravestone, and after paying his respects, sat off to the side, looking at the strange jade piece that lie on his hand.

This was the Dragon Jade that Long Qinglan mentioned.

“So it was you that sucked him dry of all his essential Qi and ruined his life?”

The Mysterious Dragon Jade was a dragon shaped piece of jade, with numerous strange lines forming a pattern on it. The entire piece of jade was black; the material seemed ordinary, if a bit old. Long Chen could not imagine how this thing could torment Long Qinglan his entire life.

At this time it was already dark, the moonlight gently illuminated the scene, and mist gradually permeated through the woods. The Dragon Jade in Long Chen's hands began to emit a hazy light, and then suddenly disappeared, much to the surprise and shock of Long Chen.

"What just happened?"

Still not fully recovered, Long Chen felt a roaring sound inside his head, and found that his consciousness appeared in the midst of an expanse of grey fog. The mist unceasingly rolled forward, moving along with the billowing wind. Long Chen lost all sense of orientation, and could only look around in all directions in bewilderment.

"This was exactly as described in the book, the sea of consciousness houses and hides the soul, but only once one becomes a martial warrior, and opens up his mind, can he see this sea, so what exactly is going on?"

He was secretly shocked, Long Chen continuously traveled within this sea of consciousness, but he felt that even if he ran forever, it would be impossible to escape from this endless sea of fog. At this moment, Long Chen saw that ancient black piece of dragon shaped jade appear, suspended before his eyes and exuding an obscure light.

Long Chen's eyes were filled with surprise and disbelief.

"For this Dragon Jade to appear in my consciousness, would it be to suck away my vital Qi?"

Long Chen was shocked.

“No, that couldn’t be it. Fundamentally, I do not possess any vital Qi, it wouldn’t be here to absorb my fart, would it?”

Just at this moment, a potent force surged out from the Dragon Jade, and crossing between the boundaries of flesh and soul, appeared inside of Long Chen’s dantian.

This vigorous reserve of heat made Long Chen’s body feel entirely refreshed.

“Qi?”

Dragon Pulse

While Long Chen was standing there dumbfounded, Qi that forcefully broke out from the mysterious jade emblem appeared in his dantian.

“Where did this Qi come from? Could it be that the Dragon Jade absorbed it from my father’s body?!”

Although Long Chen’s physical training was at the pinnacle stage, the huge amount of Qi had exceeded his ability to harness it. The abrupt energy flowed outwards from his limbs, sending the earth flying in all directions!

A scorching wave surged through his chest, causing Long Chen to cry out in agony. He gritted his teeth, already drenched in sweat!

The Qi in his dantian thrashed violently within, and seemed ready to explode at any moment. At this rate, it would result in death by combustion. Long Chen’s eyes turned red at the thought of dying without a complete corpse.

“I’m not someone who dies so easily! Dragon Pulse? Break through it!”

After training the body, at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, a practitioner’s dantian generates Qi. When a sufficient amount of Qi has been gathered, it will transform into the Legendary Dragon, and break through the first Dragon Vein. And the amount of Qi in Long Chen’s dantian at this time far surpassed the requirement!

“Break!”

Gritting his teeth, sweat dripping onto the ground, he let out a roar. Under his skillful manipulation, the Qi in his dantian transformed into a Dragon. Sucking in a deep breath, he resolutely pushed forward towards the Dragon Vein! With a bang, the Dragon Vein was burst open by his forceful Qi. A countless amount of Qi rushed in like a raging flood, thundering into the Dragon Vein. Formerly closed, the Dragon Vein expanded inch by inch under the assault of the Qi. Throughout this entire process, the Dragon Qi also expanded crazily!

[TL note: Here the author wrote the Qi condensed/transformed into the form of a Dragon, but because “Dragon-like Qi” sounds weird we decided to go with Dragon Qi, but the Qi is not really from a Dragon.]

Pop!

The first Dragon Vein, in a quarter of an hour, was suddenly pierced through. The Dragon Qi cycled through the Dragon Vein several times, then returning to the dantian. However, the Qi that had just returned to the dantian at this time ceaselessly rampaged around. The powerful Qi had bloated Long Chen, making his entire body feel extremely uncomfortable!

“After opening up one Dragon Vein, I actually managed to break through the first level of Dragon Pulse Realm! However, the Qi in my dantian is still growing at an extraordinary pace. This level two Dragon Pulse, I have to give it a try today!”

Inside, he knows that just then, it could be said that he broke through the first Dragon Vein almost effortlessly. With the momentum he had now, he cannot let this opportunity go. As he sat in front of his father’s grave, he gritted his teeth, and rushed towards the path of the second Dragon Vein.

The difficulty of breaking through the second Dragon Vein and the corresponding amount of Qi needed, in comparison to the first, was many times greater. Just from this, it is apparent how difficult it is to train in the Dragon Pulse Realm. In Poplar Town, even after investing copious amounts of money and a lifetime's worth of effort, it is extremely difficult to ascend into the realm after the Dragon Pulse Realm!

He again altered his Qi into a mighty Dragon. Today in front of his father's grave, he gritted his teeth and made up his mind to keep on going even if it cost him his life, forcing the immense amount of Qi to advance bit by bit in the Dragon Vein. Opening up the second Dragon Vein is much more difficult than the first, if he failed, then he would have to start from the very beginning!

A quarter of an hour later, Long Chen only managed to open up ten centimeters, and at this time, he was already exhausted. However, when he remembered his old man's words, and the tears that appeared in his eyes right before his death, Long Chen felt that the pain and suffering he was experiencing right now was insignificant!

"That devil wanted me to become strong, and I agreed to his request. With my personality, even if I die, I will properly accomplish the tasks you have given me. Today I will break through this second Dragon Vein, and make you look at me in a new light!"

At the same time, he also thought of the people that had insulted him behind his back, and those that had laughed at him.

"Forget it, I am not a cold and ruthless person. Those that have humiliated me, if I ever become stronger than them, then it is only fair for me to return the favor!"

“Pop!”

After two hours, the second Dragon Vein was finally broken through. Two mighty streams of Qi flowed through his two Dragon Veins and through his entire body, strengthening it. Even more Qi was circling his dantian, and settled there.

When the Qi flowed over his seven orifices, he felt those senses reach an unprecedented clarity. Even though it was nighttime, he could see a larger area, and when carefully listening, he could hear the birds and the insects around him much more lucidly.

Upon entering the Dragon Pulse Realm, it was as if he underwent a dramatic transformation. Right now, he felt like he was as light as a swallow, and yet possessed the force of a thousand jin.

[TL Note: 1000 jin = 604.79 kg]

Long Chen stood up, feeling reinvigorated and full of strength, his face revealing a smile.

Right now, he is already at the second level of Dragon Pulse Realm. Using this Qi, even snapping this tree at his side wouldn't be too difficult if he went at full force.

And from today onwards, he can finally be considered to have stepped into the ranks of a true practitioner!

Looking at Long Qinglan's tombstone once more, Long Chen once again kowtowed a few more times.

"My many achievements tonight all stem from you. Before I hated you for you have given me nothing, but now I acknowledge my mistake. You are a good father."

Standing up, he drove the wagon back to Poplar Town.

"Something's amiss"

Long Chen frowned.

"This Dragon Jade was originally in my father's dantian. I initially had thought that it's appearance in my consciousness was an anomaly, but now thinking back on it, there's around an eighty percent chance that my old man already knew about it, and thus urged me to remove it from his dantian. This Dragon Jade is extremely mysterious, and my old man's words were very cryptic. The way he spoke of the Continent of Dragons and those superpowers were exceedingly mystifying. Could it be that my old man has some sort of background?"

"That's right, before father came to Poplar Town, nobody knew a thing about his past."

Long Chen frowned and said: "The most important thing is that my old man definitely recognised the origin of this Dragon Jade, but allowed it to extract his Qi until his death, yet now he is letting me inherit it. This twist of a mystery, what could exactly be the reason?"

Turning his mind back into his sea of consciousness, the mysterious Dragon Jade was still floating in tranquility. Even if Long Chen was gifted with ten brains, he would not be able to explain why it would appear here.

The sea of consciousness is actually a void of emptiness, so if he were to tell others about it, that matter could actually enter the sea of consciousness, it is inevitable that no one would believe him.

Once again this further exudes the mysterious quality of the Dragon Jade.

However at this moment, Long Chen unexpectedly discovered that Qi from the Dragon Jade was still flowing into his dantian, albeit not as much as before.

Long Chen was elated.

“My Qi is constantly increasing, probably even surpassing the others’ cultivation speed. With this speed, catching up to the others shouldn’t be too difficult to achieve.

He formerly presumed he would lead a normal mortal life, but now there is finally hope.

Looking at Poplar Town which was just ahead, Long Chen thought of Long Qinglan’s tasks for him.

“The gathering of the Yang family with all their outstanding disciples... all of them are experts and geniuses. I cannot compete even against Yang Zhan, let alone the rest. My old man wants me to emerge as the champion and obtain the [Seal of the Dragons], this is even harder than ascending to the heavens... All

these Dragon Warriors, are they that important?”

Arriving at Poplar Town, it was already late night.

Long Chen did not live together with the Yang family, but bought a room in the East Pavilion, living alone. Since growing up he has picked on many bad people, but none with important identity. Therefore even living alone, he has not met with any encounters.

Sticking to his usual routine once reaching home, Long Chen went to bathe and then finally stood before his bed. Suddenly, his cold eyes flashed.

“The bed has been messed up, could it be a thief?”

Long Chen maintained his suspicion and inspected for a while, but could not find anything amiss.

Long Chen laughed dryly and lay on the bed. Many events had occurred today, breaking through two Dragon Veins and entering the second level of Dragon Pulse Realm. Right now his energy is at its peak level, therefore finding it hard for him to fall asleep.

Right now it was after midnight, the time where people should sleep soundly. The newly made practitioner Long Chen had improved his senses, vaguely aware of someone approaching his room.

He quickly pressed the mechanism switch near his bed, and entered an underground cell. As for the bed, it maintained the same original shape.

Through the small crack of the floorboard, Long Chen peeked up and quietly observed.

Within breaths, two black suit masked men entered his room, and when they saw the bulging blanket that resembled his silhouette, they did not utter a word, and sent a knife slash towards his bed. A sound of bang could be heard as the bed split into two.

“Eh? This useless bum is actually not here? Didn’t we see him entering earlier?”

“He must have discovered our traces and escaped!”

“Hng, even if he escaped today he won’t escape tomorrow. We’ll just come again tomorrow and with our abilities, handling this useless boy, wouldn’t it be a piece of cake?”

The two men hurriedly left.

Although he entered the second level of Dragon Pulse Realm, there were still many people who were much stronger than him. Long Chen did not dare to be careless. The two assassins earlier gave off a dangerous vibe, thinking about it the skills they had were not bad. If Long Chen faced them head on, there would not be a good ending.

“Fortunately I’m quick-witted, installing secret mechanisms on my bed. If not tonight my dead body would be lying here”

His gaze held an icy stare.

“In Poplar Town, there actually exist people who will dispatch assassins to kill me? Such a small fry like me, is it worth that kind of attention?”

Thinking about it, Long Chen frowned once again. Even going through the list of probable suspects, he was still unable to figure out the mastermind.

The Yang family, while they forsaked him, is still not at the stage to hire experts to kill him.”

“Within this, there should exist a conspiracy that I don’t know of. Oh well, I’ll move back into the Yang family residence tomorrow. Firstly, my safety can be guaranteed. Secondly, I am only at level two of the Dragon Pulse Realm, without any fighting techniques, even if I meet someone from the first level I wouldn’t be able to gain any advantages. Yang family has a Martial Techniques Hall, and right now I am still part of the Yang family, I should still be able to enter.”

“With a good technique, it is possible to increase my attack capabilities by several folds.....”

Back in the past he has seen Yang family members using fighting techniques, and their might was not to be messed with!

In the Yang family residence, Long Chen had a designated place to live in, just that he did not stay there for years. Once the sun had lit the sky, he carried numerous baggages back in the Yang family residence.

The Yang family mansion was extremely spacious, so whether Long Chen went

back or not, it would not arouse any interest.

When he had finished tidying up his room, Long Chen consolidated his cultivation. After a night, his Qi rose once again, thinking of the near future, he can progress and move towards the 3rd level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

Of course, the present was important. He had better go to the martial arts hall and obtain a fighting technique.

Yang family's rule was that as long as a member of the Yang family had entered the 1st level of Dragon Pulse Realm, they are qualified to enter the Martial Arts Hall and choose a fighting technique. And right now, Long Chen had satisfied that criteria.

Along the way, the maids and guards gazed at him coldly. Long Chen had long gotten used to it, these whispers behind his back, he could not care less. His memory aided him well, although he had only seen the Martial Arts Hall once, he was actually able to find the correct route towards it.

The Martial Arts Hall is a forbidden area of the Yang family. Only a member of the Yang family can enter, not to mention even the maids and guards could not go even close to it. Long Chen saw the stone door far ahead within the grove, and there was a tall pagoda behind those doors. It was the Martial Arts Hall.

Before he could step near the stone door, his path was already blocked by someone.

It was none other than Chen Liu who spit on Long Chen previously. Chen Liu's age was similar towards Long Chen's, and also had a cultivation in the second

level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

Seeing Long Chen had actually come to the Martial Arts Hall, Chen Liu was taken aback. Shortly after, he ridiculed him and said: “ Turns out it is Young Master Chen, why did you have time today to come to the Martial Arts Hall? I heard that a certain trash in the Yang family had gloriously kissed the floor yesterday, but why did Young Master Chen come here today instead of mourning? “

Long Chen naturally understood the sarcasm, but Chen Liu’s speech had brought humiliation to him. Listening to it today, Long Chen felt his rage again. However he was just right in front of the Martial Hall. Before obtaining any techniques, he did not want to create any trouble, so he endured once again and walked around Chen Liu towards the hall.

However Chen Liu continued his harassment and blocked his path once again. He coldly laughed and said: “ Could it be that Young Master Chen is deaf, and couldn’t hear a word I said? “

“I have already entered the Dragon Pulse Realm. Besides, to enter or not, what has it got to do with an outsider like you?”

Raising his head, he stared at Chen Liu coldly.

Even without any true strength, Long Chen was able to mix around in Poplar Town for years, so his might was definitely there. In addition he had already entered the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, so this gaze unexpectedly scared Chen Liu into retreating a step back.

“What? Did I hear wrongly? Entering the Dragon Pulse Realm is not to be entered by claiming you did. However I have time today, so I will witness Young Master Chen’s true strength!”

DBWG – Chapter 4

[Falling Star Fist]

Chen Liu retreated a few steps backwards, laughed happily at Chen Long and said: “This is just sparring; we’ll stop once a hit lands, Young Master Chen do not have to worry about losing too badly!”

Long Chen gazed coldly at Chen Liu, and deeply felt the contempt behind that smiling mask. Indeed, if Long Chen did not undergo yesterday’s experience, in the Yang family ranks, perhaps he would not even beat an outsider like Chen Liu.

However, right now, regardless of whether it is combat ability or tactics, he had undergone a world changing experience. Having just gained combat strength, deep down he is also raring to have a fight!

“Chen Liu, I know your true colors, do not put up a front. If you want to fight then go ahead, however if I kill you accidentally, do not blame me!”

Hearing such a resolute tone from Long Chen, Chen Liu was stumped momentarily. At the same moment when he decided to retaliate verbally, he caught Long Chen’s figure moving with surging Qi, throwing a fist at him!

“Indeed you entered the Dragon Pulse Realm, but you are still not my match! Fine, if you do not know your place, don’t blame me, Chen Liu, for not holding back!

Chen Liu lingered in the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm for two years and had accumulated a huge reserve of Qi, right now instead of retreating he went forward with a big shout and threw a punch, opposing Long Chen directly.

Bam!

The two opposing fists collided, causing an explosion of Qi, which pushed both parties backwards.

Feeling the strength of the opponent's fist that was comparable to his strength, Chen Liu was startled: "Well done, you actually concealed your strength deeply, the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!"

Long Chen had also retreated.

Chen Liu's Qi reserves are similar to mine, and he has more experience compared to me, if this fight is prolonged, I will definitely not be able to match him. Today is my first fight, if this ends with a loss; it will definitely hinder my progress in cultivation greatly, so even if I die I must not lose!"

Thinking of that, Long Chen's eyes turned bloodshot, his eyes turning quickly he suddenly saw a rock the size of a fist lying nearby.

He immediately cast his gaze away, stared at Chen Liu and said: "Chen Liu, you definitely carry some weight, but I am stronger than you, try and take another fist of mine!"

Throwing out a punch, Chen Liu was not to be outdone, and drew an explosive burst of Qi directing it to Long Chen!

Boom!

This time, Long Chen was sent flying and fell violently towards the floor!

“The old cripple’s son is indeed a cripple as well, with this pathetic strength of yours, how dare you even flaunt your strength in front of me, you ought to be beaten up! “

Seeing Long Chen falling, Chen Liu knew that his strength was definitely stronger than his opponent and laughed loudly on the spot.

However Long Chen had already hopped back on his feet, his bloodshot eyes resting on Chen Liu. What Chen Liu did not see was Long Chen placing his left hand at his back.

“You have actually not given up yet?”

Chen Liu roared with laughter, and charged towards Long Chen again. Seeing how Long Chen desperately got cornered to the nearby wall, Chen Liu once again wanted to hit Long Chen with another fist and defeat him thoroughly. However at this point, Long Chen’s left hand jerked forward, gripping a black object and struck at Chen Liu’s face.

“What is this?!”

Chen Liu hurriedly used both hands to shield his face, and the black object struck his arm, from the pain felt on his arms, he could feel that it was a piece of rock.

Long Chen used all his strength to hit, but Chen Liu used his Qi to hit it away, thus not causing much damage to his arm.

Yet at this moment, Long Chen rushed towards Chen Liu, and landed a kick on his stomach. A loud bang sound was heard and Chen Liu gave a blood curdling screech, crashing into a willow tree and spurted blood on the floor, completely losing his combative state, only using a frightened gaze to look at Long Chen, with a face filled with disbelief.

“You.....Yang Chen, you actually dared to hurt me, my elder cousin brother will definitely claim your wretched life!”

Long Chen stood firmly and spit in contempt.

“What kind of second level Dragon Pulse Realm practitioner are you, in front of my skills you will be killed easily!”

Before Long Chen became a practitioner, he was involved in numerous fights. The move earlier was actually his ultimate move.

When the two fought he had thrown a heavy object directly at his opponent's face. The face with the seven orifices and important organs is man's most important part of the body, and also the most vulnerable part. Chen Liu did not know what Long Chen threw at him, so he will definitely use his hands to block. While he deflected the rock, Long Chen had already simultaneously attacked him below where he had no defense left.

Thinking of yesterday's flashback where Chen Liu spit at Long Chen, and the loser in front of him that still threatened him, Long Chen walked towards Chen

Liu and grabbed his collar tightly, sneering he said: "You once called me a dog, you once spit at me, all these were the misdoings of your mouth, today I will not make things too difficult, I'll only seal this mouth of yours!"

Chen Liu was frightened, and displayed an extremely horrified expression, even somewhat beggingly pleading with his eyes towards Long Chen. But before he got to speak, Long Chen had already punched him in the mouth, breaking all of his teeth. Chen Liu rolled on the floor crying in pain, full of regrets in his heart that were unfortunately too late.

Defeating Chen Liu, Long Chen suddenly felt his hair standing on his back. He hurriedly turned around and saw Yang Zhan and Yang Zhan's father the second elder, Long Chen's uncle, both standing five meters away.

They were actually just walking by, but happened to see such a fantastic show displayed in front of the martial arts hall. Chen Liu was Yang Zhan's lackey, and was just beaten like that by Long Chen. Yang Zhan felt his rage rising, and stormed towards Long Chen with an imposing demeanor.

"Yang Chen.....Are you courting your own death? "

Without saying anything else, he sent a slap flying towards Long Chen.

From the palm which was backed with boundless Qi, Long Chen actually discovered that if he was not able to dodge in time, if the slap hits him he would without a doubt lose all of his teeth. Yang Zhan's fury can definitely be seen.

Helpless Long Chen was inferior in strength, and could only sit around and wait for death.

He clenched his teeth tightly, the rage in his heart almost consuming him whole. This whole fiasco of being despised upon, living a life like a dog, he had had enough of it.

He swore that revenge will be exacted.

“Why is it that he could slap me without questioning the truth, if my strength was greater than his, even with his father protecting him, would he dare to slap me so easily? If only I was stronger than him, it would already have been my turn to slap him! “

This imminent slap was like a fuse, sending waves of pulsating vehemence.

A sound of pa was heard, and Yang Zhan's arm was caught, only an inch away from Long Chen's face. The wind pressure from the palm blasted at Long Chen's face causing him pain.

The one who caught Yang Zhan's arm was Yang Yuntian. Yang Yuntian sternly said: “Zhan-Er, have you forgotten my teachings. We all are one big family, how can you easily strike, see if I do not punish you when we get back. “

Shortly after he looked at Long Chen and said: “Oh, you finally entered the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm? With that said, you should be here for the martial techniques, if you want it then go ahead, but my father is there cultivating quietly, if you bother him, you will be punished severely.....”

After which, without another look at Long Chen, he grabbed Yang Zhan's arm and walked away.

Walking several tens of steps away, Yang Zhan finally could not contain himself and asked: “Father, he injured Chen Liu, why did you not allow me to teach him a lesson? With that little ability of his, ten thousand of him would still be no match for me.”

Yang Yuntian indifferently said: “What do you want to show by constantly bullying a cripple, if you have any ability why don’t you challenge your sister, Ling Yue or Yang Wu? Besides he is your aunt’s son, how can you treat him like a slave!”

Yang Zhan gloomily muttered: “The reason is not because of aunt, but only her eighth level of Dragon Pulse Realm ability. Father, give me more time, won’t I be able to reach it as well? “

Looking at their leaving shadows, Long Chen forcefully suppressed his rage within. However the debts of this slap today, and even the beatings and scoldings from before, he had remembered all of them clearly.

“It is still the same line, do not give me a chance, if not you will rather wish to die than live.”

After enduring for so many years, he has long since learned to control his emotions.

Looking at the martial arts hall, Long Chen threw aside any lingering feelings he had, he pushed open the stone door and walked inside.

As for Chen Liu, who was still lying in the same spot, he was only carried away

after a long while at the command of Yang Yuntian.

Long Chen walked towards the tall pagoda within, raised his head and looked at the steel pagoda, and muttered: “My very first martial technique is right here!”

Casting his gaze to the side, there was a wooden hut. The Yang family’s founder, his grandfather, was inside there cultivating. Outsiders usually did not dare to disturb him, and with the founder acting as a guardian, the martial arts hall was absolutely safe. Long Chen had fulfilled the conditions of looking at martial techniques, hence he was able to enter.

“This old man, why is he acting so mysterious, when my father was younger he had already been in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, only inferior to you by just a little, if he did not have the Dragon Jade, I’m afraid he would already be someone who you would pin your hopes on.”

With this slanderous thought, he stepped into the martial arts hall. After walking through several pathways, Long Chen had arrived at the internal section of the steel tower.

“With my ability at the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, it seems that I am only able to practice Huang level martial techniques.”

Yang family had a total of thirty three copies of basic Huang level martial techniques. Long Chen walked to this section of bookshelves, and from the first shelf, he chose a book called [Ferocious Tiger Punch].

Within a minute, Long Chen had placed the book down.

“How it could be, why is this martial technique so easy?”

After looking through these martial techniques, Long Chen felt that his five senses and comprehensive abilities were exceptionally great. He was able to understand completely the information written in the books.

If he could practice inside the martial arts hall, he felt that he could immediately cast these techniques out.

“I am either a martial cultivation genius, or.....”

The previous him from before had also looked through some simple techniques, but he had felt that it was difficult to understand. However the situation right now was totally different, so it could only be the effects from the mysterious Dragon Jade.

“This mysterious Dragon Jade is inside my sea of consciousness, allowing my spirit to undergo changes, hence I am able to relax like a newborn baby, reading ten lines at a time, and even have a greater sense of my surroundings.....”

“Father, what exactly is this mysterious Dragon Jade, it can actually have such heaven-defying effects, not only could it transfer your cultivation Qi to me, it can even allow me to be a martial cultivation genius.”

Looking through another several bookshelves containing basic Huang martial techniques, Long Chen felt that there wasn't any challenge at all. Therefore he went towards the intermediate section of Huang martial techniques, and it only contained five techniques. At a glance Long Chen had his eyes on one of the

books titled [Falling Star Fist].

“.....Body like a starry night, fist like a meteorite, as heavy as Mt. Tai, as fast as lightning.....”

“This [Falling Star Fist] attack capabilities are ranked near the top even among intermediate Huang martial techniques, Yang family’s [Falling Star Fist] also had its own reputation, however according to what I see, it does not have that much difficulty to comprehend. I have already remembered the basic Huang martial techniques, so I will just copy this [Falling Star Fist].....”

Yang family secret techniques obviously could not be brought out of the martial arts hall, so after choosing a technique, one could only copy it.

One hour later, Long Chen had finished copying, and returned the martial technique back to its original position.

“During the process of copying, I have already understood the contents inside, so now I will head out to practice. However, this intermediate Huang martial technique, I do not know if I am able to master it.”

Huang martial techniques, are separated into 3 levels: basic, intermediate and advanced. Every three levels in the Dragon Pulse Realm is usually assigned like this. By choosing an intermediate rank, Long Chen had already crossed the level barriers in cultivation.

[TL Note: Basically this means that levels 1-3 are Basic Dragon Pulse Realm, levels 4-6 are Intermediate Dragon Pulse Realm, and levels 7-9 are Advanced Dragon Pulse Realm.]

“With the uniqueness of the Dragon Jade, I should be able to achieve it. “

Making up his mind, Long Chen walked out of the martial arts hall, and when he neared the stone door, a parched voice rang beside his ears.

“Yang family martial techniques should be destroyed immediately once finished practicing. If one is discovered to divulge the secrets, they will face immediate execution!”

Yang Chen looked back but did not see anyone behind him. He hurriedly replied: “Yes, grandfather, Yang Chen will take his leave.”

He chose the intermediate Huang martial technique, which can be considered as disregarding the rules. Afraid that the old man would discover something, he answered and quickly left.

Inside the hut, an old man opened his eyes, and helplessly exclaimed: “I originally thought that this boy could be a talent that can be groomed, but he seems to bite off more than he can chew, and actually chose an intermediate Huang martial technique.....what a pity. Long Qinglan previously could be said to have the greatest potential to enter the Deity Dan Realm.....”

Yang Lingqing

Three days later, Long Chen stood in front of a two meter tall rock.

To his left was a forest, and to his right was a river, alongside the river, rocks of enormous sizes could be seen everywhere.

Long Chen inhaled deeply, exerting Qi explosively through his whole body, his body moved as fast as a cannonball and rushed towards a huge boulder, he shouted fiercely and then punched. His fist as if a streak of a huge falling star, whistled towards the boulder and then smashed!

Boom!

The huge boulder shattered into many pieces, after which they were swept away by the huge wind that accompanied the punch. About half of the remaining rocks flew into the water, exploding and splashing everywhere.

“Body like a starry night, fist like a meteorite, as heavy as Mt. Tai, as fast as lightning.....This [Falling Star Fist] includes both speed and weight, hence it is able to display such strength, right now I am in the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, so it is still difficult to display the full effect of the [Falling Star Fist], but.....” Long Chen’s eyes flashed coldly, “If I meet Chen Liu the next time, I will definitely kill him with just this blow!”

“Within three days, I, Long Chen will completely master this [Falling Star Fist], if this were to be exposed to the public, I think they would definitely be stunned.”

Walking along the riverbank, Long Chen washed his face with the river water, and looked at himself through the reflection.

“These days I have been training crazily, and my body looks like it has gotten more chiseled, skin is also darker by several tones, but still, I am so handsome, surely I won’t have a shortage of chicks in the future.”

Thinking of which, Long Chen smiled shrewdly.

Suddenly, there came a rustling sound behind his back, which gave Long Chen a shock, he hurriedly bowed down and laid flat, one leg hooking up, but what surprised him was the feeling of his leg knocking against something soft and bouncy. Afterwards a figure flew over his head, which shouted in surprise and then fell into the river.

Long Chen stood up and looked, quickly realized that the person who originally wanted to backstab him, had now been kicked into the river and the identity was a teenage lady, this girl did not look like a weakling, so being kicked into the river by Long Chen was only due to a momentary slip-up.

Her face seethed with fury, and very soon jumped from the river onto the shore, she pursed her lips, angrily looking at Long Chen with a pair of sparkling eyes that seemed to eat Long Chen up.

This girl’s age seemed similar to Long Chen’s, she had a graceful figure, with bright eyes, white teeth, the face as if it was jade. She was wearing a light azure colored long dress, and she was a rare young beauty. Long Chen had never seen such a beautiful girl, and was momentarily stunned.

This girl just came out from the river, her clothing soaked, at this point in time the girl's body, her snowy skin and her alluring body curves could faintly be seen, and even the underwear was embroidered with a small doggy picture. This had all been caught under Long Chen's gaze, and her prominent chest area, had made Long Chen's throat go dry.

From Long Chen's eyes, the girl knew that he was up to no good, she immediately got angry and scolded: "Pervert!"

Her Qi swelled explosively, a wave of scorching Qi pushed Long Chen several steps backwards, and at once her drenched clothing instantly became dry. Then this girl staring fiercely at Long Chen, gritted her teeth and said: "You.....What did you see earlier?"

Long Chen hastily replied: "Nothing, miss, I did not see anything....."

Looking at the serious expression of Long Chen, only then did she forgive him. However thinking back on it, she resentfully said: "Well done Yang Chen, your elder sister, me, only wanted to scare you, but you actually pushed me down the river, you bastard!"

Elder sister?

But Long Chen did not recognize this girl so he asked: "Who are you?"

Under such a direct question, the girl became angry and scolded: "Well done you idiot, you don't even recognize your big sister, I am Yang Ling Qing, your second uncle Yang Yuntian's second daughter. "

“Oh, so it was actually you.....”

Long Chen suddenly recalled of this lass, speaking of whom she actually had a certain fate with him, because they were born on the same year, same month and same day. And at the time when Long Chen was born, it was just at the Chen hour; hence the name given to him was Chen.

Yang Lingqing was usually hiding at home and not going out, and Long Chen only saw her a few times, so he definitely had forgotten. However thinking back on a certain thing, Long Chen smiled smugly: “Girl, you told me to call you big sister? Although we were born on the same year, same month and same day, but I was born in the Chen hour, while you were in the Xi hour, speaking of which I should be your elder brother.....”

After finishing speaking, he did not even bother with Yang Ling Qing’s angry expression, but just found a rock in the forest to sit down on.

“You smelly idiot, stay right there!”

“Yang Lingqing walked to the front of Long Chen and coldly said: “Alright, this matter about who’s older, let’s not talk about it first, anyway we were both born on the same day, so let’s take it as we’re the same age. Just now I happened to walk past here and actually saw you using [Falling Star Fist], and you even practiced it with decent form, what actually happened?”

So it was because she saw him.

Long Chen thought about it, thinking that it did not matter even if she saw him, while this lass was a little arrogant, but she had never bullied Long Chen

before. Also she did not have that look of despise, hence Long Chen had some positive feelings towards her, so he is still willing to talk to her.

He smiled happily at the other party, saying: “Why? I am not allowed to practice the [Falling Star Fist]? I made you jealous and envy me? What a pity, you and I are related by blood, so it is not a good sign, if you were someone else, maybe I could still teach you.”

Yang Lingqing after being told off by him became angry and nonchalantly threw out a punch, and a rock that was even bigger had actually been blown to bits.

“You see that, I too know about the [Falling Star Fist], besides I am in the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, much stronger compared to you!”

Long Chen was a little stunned, who knew that this lass that was the same age as him, had the cultivation level that was actually better than her brother Yang Zhan.

Looking at her pretending to stare at him angrily, Long Chen chuckled within, he already knew her goal. A girl’s dignity was not good to step on, so he said: “Indeed, you also know the Falling Star Fist, but you have not mastered it, not being able to go into the body at the starry sky, fist like a meteorite stage, if I had your level of Qi, the might of my [Falling Star Fist] would have been twice as powerful as yours. Oh well, today I am feeling great, so I shall be generous and explain to you how to do it.”

Yang Lingqing was shocked, and thought: “This guy is pretty good, I only threw out a punch, but he could actually see that my mastery of the [Falling Star Fist] isn’t there.”

“Okay, seeing how you are so eager, I will grudgingly accept your offer, but all of this is willingly taught by you, do not seek any remuneration from me, let me first tell you, I myself am so poor that I’m almost dying.....”

“A country bumpkin like you, as your elder brother, teaching you is only right, who would want something from you?”

“What?”

Yang Lingqing was so angry even her mouth became twisted, growing up until now, this is the first time that somebody called her a bumpkin.

“Right now I’ll let you be cocky, and after you teach me, I will definitely let you suffer before leaving!”

She forcefully suppressed her anger down.

Of course, her thoughts could not be heard by Long Chen. He was only looking at the delightful sight, and he also did not have many friends; today he did this on a whim, and had enough mastery on the [Falling Star Fist] so he could demonstrate in detail.

“.....The [Falling Star Fist] most importantly is about the stance, look at the shooting stars in the sky, they are all always advancing, and nothing is able to stop their path.....”

“When you use your fist, you cannot have any hesitation, absolutely give no

thought to staying alive, your heart only thinking of wanting to destroy and conquer the enemies, advancing forward, only then can you understand the true meaning of the [Falling Star Fist].....”

After explaining for a long time, Yang Lingqing was finally enlightened, however Yang Ling Qing’s attitude towards Long Chen had changed into adoration.

She could not imagine, a second level of Dragon Pulse Realm fellow could actually have such deep enlightenment towards the way of martial arts.

When they separated, Yang Lingqing said: “Hey, today I must still thank you, completely learning this [Falling Star Fist], I have a higher chance of competing against elder sister Lingyue in the family competition, who knows I might even be able to win our family’s treasured martial technique [Seal of the Dragons].

Hearing about the [Seal of the Dragons], Long Chen’s eyes flashed, and asked: “Girl, when is the family competition going to be held?”

“It should be about half a month later, but you don’t need to have any ideas about that anymore, elder sister Lingyue has already cultivated to the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, amongst the younger generation besides elder brother Yang Wu I’m afraid no one can be her match, besides elder brother Yang Wu has long gotten the [Seal of the Dragons], so this round the obvious winner would probably be elder sister Lingyue.....Alright, I won’t chat with you any longer, I have to rush back and cultivate, gotta work hard to enter the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. “

Saying her piece, the lass ran away. The sight of her azure long dress swaying behind her back, it was rather cute.

Long Chen watched her leave, swallowing down a mouthful of saliva.

“This lass looks and character are both at a very high level, too bad that Heaven is blind, actually making her my cousin. No chance at all to act, what a pity.”

Sitting on the azure rock, Long Chen looked towards the direction of the Yang residence.

“Sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.....Half a month later, I think it truly is impossible for me after all. But father has warned me repeatedly, how can I not try to obtain the [Seal of the Dragons]. This little lass is already striving so hard, I must not be any slower, sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm is after all the sixth level, I will train and cultivate as if my life depends on it, I must definitely have a chance at least!”

“Cultivate! Strive! Persevere!”

Beads of sweat trickled down.

All the way until the sky turned dark, only then did Long Chen go back to the Yang residence, the Yang family now has already lit up the lanterns, making a field of brightness.

Just as he was entering, a group of people walked out in a grandiose fashion, Long Chen looked up, and was just blocking the middle of the group's path, so those people, who were chatting cheerfully, immediately noticed him.

The leader of the group was a pretty and mature lady; she was Yang Xueqing, Long Chen's mother.

Behind Yang Xueqing was a coquettish girl, the one Yang Lingqing spoke off that was in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, Yang Lingyue, eighteen years of age, the daughter of the oldest uncle, Yang Xueqing's elder brother Yang Qingxuan.

Yang family's eldest son was named Yang Qingxuan; he was currently representing the household for general affairs, the second son Yang Yuntian was in charge of the household finances, and the third daughter Yang Xueqing was delegated to teach cultivation to the younger generation.

Yang family's eldest son Yang Qingxuan had a son and a daughter, named Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue respectively. Yang Wu was the best out of the Yang family's younger generation, while Yang Lingyue would be the coquettish lady in front of him.

Yang family's second son Yang Yuntian had a son and a daughter also, Yang Zhan who was constantly bullying Long Chen, as well as Yang Lingqing whom he met earlier.

Yang Xueqing is the only woman in the elder generation who had a profound cultivation, so Yang Lingyue who is constantly following Yang Xueqing, can be considered as her half daughter.

While this side had two ladies, on the other side there were two men.

The one together in the lead with Yang Xueqing chatting happily was a

handsome middle aged man, coupled with a long beard and white robes, seeming elegant. And behind him was a young guy, his gaze electrifying, a chiseled build, his mannerism was filled with vigor, very much similar to the middle aged man.

The two men should share a father and son relationship.

As they spotted Long Chen standing in front of them suddenly, Yang Xueqing was stunned a little, and then hurriedly faced the middle aged man and laughed: “Big Brother Bai, originally I have wanted you to admire our Yang family’s orchid and lotus pool, but the sky has already turned this dark.....”

“No worries, Younger Sister Qing, you and me both reside in Poplar Town, we will always be able to see each other, if there is any spare time, I will naturally once again pay a visit to you here, after all the fame of the Yang family’s orchid and lotus pool is rather resounding.....”

Both of them continued talking away cheerfully. Under the protection of some guards they walked past Long Chen.

Only Yang Lingyue turned around and gave Long Chen a stare, then resumed to converse with the younger guy beside her, occasionally pouting playfully.

“Very good, ignoring my existence totally, as if I have no difference from the air.”

Long Chen gradually clenched his fists tightly.

“Seeing how my father died, yet you are already rushing over to a new flame,

first let's not talk about my father's reputation, but this Bai Zhanxiong fellow, I will definitely not let you marry him! Even if you are heartless towards me, but I Long Chen cannot be lacking in moral values, after all my blood and flesh was given by you.....”

“Bai Zhanxiong looks like a gentleman on the outside, but truthfully he isn't any good at all, the last time the courtesans from Emerald Jade House, were all killed by him.....”

Watching this middle aged man who was laughing with Yang Xueqing, Long Chen recalled a distant memory, and Emerald Jade House's courtesans were all his friends, selling their art but never their body. But they were secretly kidnapped, if Long Chen did not witness this scene, then nobody would have known about it. From that day on, he knew that this Bai Zhanxiong in fact was a beast.

“In front of this Bai Zhanxiong, you actually scorned me this much, ignoring my existence, but I Long Chen am not a person who fears loneliness, the more you want me to disappear, the more I want to be in front of you, showing off. If you think both of us father and son are useless, then I will only have to continue to become stronger!”

“There will come a day, where I stand in front of you, and you wouldn't dare to look down on me, and you'll be repenting on your knees in front of me! You as a mother have never done any obligations a mother should have done! I hate you! But I can never ignore you the same way as you did to me!”

At this moment, the group of people had already passed him, Long Chen bowed his head, clenched his fist tightly, his fingernails digging so deep into the flesh that blood flowed out.

His body felt as if surging against a huge wave.

His heart, as if nurturing a wild beast, fiercely roared with ferocity.

Returning to his abode, Long Chen started preparing for his shower, as well as preparing to practice cultivating.

Suddenly, he saw a slip of note under the teacups on the table. Picking it up, he briefly got angry.

The note wrote: "If you want to keep Xiao Huang alive, then come to the Rising Sun Inn, second floor room number one and hurry up! Do not be late!"

Celestial Core Technique

To Long Chen, although Xiao Huang is only a cowardly manservant, but he had been following him for a good six years, loyal to him, and if Long Chen had any goodwill at all he would not leave him out, Long Chen did not know who wanted to deal with him, but they actually kidnapped Xiao Huang for it, this was absolutely intolerable for him.

But Long Chen knows, Xiao Huang's family has a pair of ailing parents which need to be taken care of, if anything were to happen to Xiao Huang, Long Chen will blame himself harshly!

He took the note and tore it to pieces, without saying another word, he rushed out of the Yang family residence, as quickly as a swift passing wind, and headed towards the Rising Sun Inn!

This Rising Sun Inn was located near the Emerald Jade House, Long Chen hastened his pace, and the people strolling along the streets had all felt a whirlwind passing, leaving no shadow behind!

Looking up, the bright lantern lights that had illuminated the dark night could be seen clearly, Long Chen pressed on one step at a time towards the inn, but many people were walking by, so Long Chen had no choice but to slow down. Looking on, the big wide door was getting closer!

At this moment, on the left side of the street there appeared a horse drawing a horse carriage that was galloping away, this caused the passers-by to curse and dodge, but the horse carriage had no intention of slowing down. Originally Long Chen could easily dodge it, but at this instant, behind him there was a little child who was looking at the charging carriage blankly and started to wail.

This horse carriage with its tremendous speed, if it were to charge through the child, it would not leave even a corpse behind, Long Chen being shocked, did not consider anything else, and he who could have dodged long before, had actually turned away and hugged the child tightly, his whole body exerting explosive Qi. At this moment, the horse carriage had already struck Long Chen's back, sending him flying abruptly.

Loud gasps could be heard along the street, they were thinking that both Long Chen and the child would perish, but they did not expect Long Chen to change his trajectory in the air, and land safely. He did not console the child, and before the crowd could see how he looked like, Long Chen had disappeared. Because he still had to save Xiao Huang's life.

After passing the scene of commotion, Long Chen endured the creeping pain on his back muscles, and entered the Rising Sun Inn.

As he walked through the door, he almost bumped into someone in front of him. Looking up; it was a catchy young lad who had temporarily stunned his eyes.

This young lad looked only to be fourteen or fifteen years of age, which might even be relatively younger than Long Chen. Long Chen's looks could be considered to be suave enough, but the lad in front of him had a beauty that was a little too bewitching. If not for the protruding Adam's apple, Long Chen would have almost assumed he was a beautiful lady.

"Are you male or female?" Not being able to control his mouth, Long Chen blurted out the question.

Listening to his own question made even Long Chen himself embarrassed, but the young man with the delicate features did not get angry, but only looked at Long Chen firmly, and then pointed at his Adam's apple and said: "I am a male."

His expression stern, yet the voice was melodious. Long Chen who was reminded of the teasing voices of the Emerald Jade House ladies, after listening to him speak, actually felt a tickling sensation that was difficult to endure.

He quietly berated himself as a bastard, but thinking that Xiao Huang's life was not yet saved, he hurriedly walked past the lad, and walked into the Rising Sun Inn.

"Earlier you rescued the child, and narrowly saved a life....."

Behind Long Chen, the lad spoke, but did not think that Long Chen would hurriedly rush into the inn. He shut his mouth, observed curiously, in fact he was not holding any grudges against Long Chen, he only thought that Long Chen's rescue earlier was praiseworthy.

"This guy is similar to elder brother, his body faintly has the essence from the stars, he probably has practiced a kind of martial technique. This [Celestial Core Technique], I haven't used it for a long time....."

The lad watched Long Chen disappear as he muttered to himself.

Just arriving, Long Chen saw a scene which compelled him to stare, turning back he saw, Yang Zhan was sitting at a spot in front of a window, and in front of him, was a beautiful girl.

“Yang Zhan is unexpectedly here, could it be that the kidnapping of Xiao Huang was arranged by him?”

Once again looking at the girl in front of him, Long Chen shook his head, saying: “If this Yang Zhan wanted to deal with me, he wouldn’t have to resort to this method, so he is surely only here to date chicks.....”

Thinking of which, Long Chen did not stop any longer and directly walked to the second floor of the inn, where the note said to enter room number one, and at this point, after arriving here, he could no longer hold back his fury, running closer towards the destination he viciously pushed the door open to be greeted with a sight that was pitch black.

Just arriving into the room, Long Chen had already felt a swing from a knife that was slashing towards him. He hurriedly dodged, and only then could he see the situation inside the room. As of now, the person who struck earlier had already moved in front of the door, and quietly closed it. Then he was coldly looking at Long Chen, while on the opposite side, Long Chen saw Xiao Huang’s body being tied with a rope, his mouth gagged with a cloth with a face of anger and despair which was casted towards Long Chen as he whimpered.

Yet on his side, there stood another guy, both of them wearing masks, but their killing intent was not to be underestimated.

It was exactly the same two who attacked him that other night, until now Long Chen could not understand, such a small fry like himself, why would someone send assassins after him.

“Both of you, what’s your identity, why do you want to deal with me?”

“Accepting payment, and assisting to eliminate a cumbersome person. You don’t have to ask much, Yang Chen, just die!”

Two swings of the knife came slashing towards Long Chen; the knife technique was vicious, creating sound from the acceleration of the knife which could make people tremble in fear.

Both of them have similar abilities to me, but their experiences are bountiful, and probably have amassed enough assassinations. Compared to Chen Liu, that loser, they are more frightening by a hundred times. If today I do not use my full capabilities, I will definitely be killed here!”

“Looking at their movements, they should be used to killing in a team, so I only have to defeat one guy, and then I can definitely overcome their allied strength.”

In the darkness, Long Chen’s eyes stared coldly. As the two knives came rushing towards him, he used his agility, and rolled to the side, and with this roll, he had skillfully overcome the need to face both people at the same time. Then the two black robed men attacked again with one standing in front of the other.

“[Whirlwind Blade]!”

Shouting out, the person at the front had already come close to him with the knife. Looking at their combination which had failed to hit him, Long Chen gritted his teeth, he generated all his Qi, he didn’t back down but instead advanced forward and rushed towards the black robed man!

“[Falling Star Fist]!”

In the pitch black room, a streak of starlight had exploded. The black robed man's eyes turned big, and felt a wave of strong Qi evade his knife technique, and then hit soundly on his body.

Bang!

The man in the front spurted out blood, and then was smashed into the other man behind him.

Long Chen rushed forward, and in an instant took hold of the opponent's knife, gave a roar, and pierced through the man's heart with a thrust. At this point the blood that had flowed out had dyed both his robes and his face blood red.

The earlier scene might have looked easy, but it was actually a hair-raising experience. Long Chen's biggest shock was that the [Falling Star Fist] emitted starlight which had blinded the vision of his opponent. [Falling Star Fist] which was an intermediate Huang martial technique, had a might which was equivalent with the strongest attack of the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Therefore he was able to heavily injure the black robed man, and successively kill him afterwards.

The other black robed man seeing his partner die looked shocked at Long Chen, and without bothering about anything else, hurriedly jumped through the window. Long Chen had intended to give chase, and interrogate the man for his contractor, but right at this moment the door slammed open and Yang Zhan was there standing in the door, watching Long Chen who had a face dyed with blood and right beside him lay a corpse.

He momentarily frowned and then said: "You bastard, you do not know what's

good for you, with just this little accomplishment, you already dare to kill people in the Rising Sun Inn, could it be that you don't know Boss Qing of the inn and me are good friends?"

Long Chen ignored him, he turned around and released the rope on Xiao Huang's body and said: "Xiao Huang, leave this place first, we'll talk about it later."

Of the two assassins one died and one escaped. Xiao Huang feeling astonished was looking at Long Chen, but Yang Zhan who had just entered the scene had an unkind gaze, so Xiao Huang was scared. Although he was worried about Long Chen's safety, he understood he would not be of any use, so he quickly ran away, and started to look for a savior.

Being ignored by Long Chen, Yang Zhan's face gradually twitched with anger.

Behind Yang Zhan, a lavishly dressed fatty looked at the mess of the blood scene, he turned white and then said: "This master seems to have gone a little overboard, creating such a sickening blood scene here, scaring away my customers. This business will surely take a huge loss now."

Both of them joined together to rebuke, that scene they were making was only just to make things difficult for Long Chen. He who had just killed someone, at this point was filled with killing intent, with a gaze, he scared the Boss Qing into a retreat.

Right now he still did not wish to come into conflict with Yang Zhan, after all Yang Zhan was a fourth level Dragon Pulse Realm practitioner, and had studied many martial techniques, the him right now is still not Yang Zhan's match, so he could only endure.

Even though Long Chen had already backed down, Yang Zhan was still angry.

He had since long ago thought of Long Chen as a nuisance, in the past he had grown accustomed to stepping on him, yet now this fellow actually had some power. Especially, after all the previous time when Long Chen hurt Chen Liu, he had swallowed down a bad taste afterwards. And now coupled with the old hate and this new anger, he looked at Long Chen and emitted killing intent.

“..... Previously even though you hurt Chen Liu, I had forgiven you, but today you once again ruined the reputation of the Yang family. It looks like I have to discipline you properly so that you start showing some respect, and stop carrying out misdeeds!”

After which, he walked several steps forward, and a huge aura pressed down on Long Chen.

“This fellow.....So strong.”

The fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm was a might to be reckoned with, Yang Zhan’s both eyes flashed and then he pressed his aura on Long Chen, which felt as if a huge mountain. Long Chen was unexpectedly pushed back.

However the knife from earlier was still in his hand, and with the blood continuously dripping down from the knife, coupled with his ferocious gaze, it looked like he might be a match for Yang Zhan.

Seeing Long Chen like this, Yang Zhan got even angrier, he grinded his teeth and said: “What an idiot, you actually dare to face me off squarely, today if you

do not kneel and beg me, don't even think of leaving here alive!"

Long Chen did not reply, he was just staring at him coldly.

He knows, if Yang Zhan really pushes him too far, even at the cost of his life, he will definitely make his opponent pay the price.

Looking at the two who were about to fight, from Boss Qing's back appeared a girl; her face turned pale, and then she retreated.

"Brother Zhan, don't be like this, let's leave here, shall we....."

Yang Zhan kept his Qi down, looked back at the girl, then back at Long Chen and then he warned: "Alright, I'll let you live for another day, tomorrow morning, you will know how to write the death word."

After which, he took the girl and then left.

Long Chen heaved a sigh of relief, and then the knife dropped onto the floor.

"Yang Zhan, this debt between us, has yet again increased, right now I almost broke through the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. When I become stronger than you, you will know how to write the death word....."

The ones who tried to kill him, had one dying, but he did not know what trouble the other one could still cause him. Since the mastermind had not been revealed, it was all just a mystery, right now this was not a good place to be, so Long Chen decided to leave.

Running down the stairs, he saw Xiao Huang's worriedness from waiting for him.

After seeing that Long Chen was fine, only then he heaved a sigh of relief, and hurriedly said: "Young Master Chen, earlier when I ran down, there was a beautiful young guy who wanted me to pass this to you, he said you are worthy of his respect, but he had to attend to something so he left.

Long Chen was stumped, thinking of the guy with such an unfair beauty bestowed on him, and thinking of his melodious voice and stern face, he felt that it was rather amusing. He apprehensively took the martial technique scroll from Xiao Huang's hands, opened it and looked over it. It actually had four big words on it which said [Celestial Core Technique].

"The guy said that this item is compatible with your [Falling Star Fist]. Seeing how you saved a child today, the fact that you are a good person, and also the fact that he did not need this item, so he decided to give this to you."

Long Chen nodded his head, scrutinizing the [Celestial Core Technique].

"This is actually an intermediate Huang martial technique....."

"I had only saved a child, and this fellow actually gives me this [Celestial Core Technique], looks like his background isn't simple. He shouldn't be from Poplar Town, he's probably a disciple from a big faction from another place.

"Oh well, today this meeting is because of fate, right now I urgently need these items, and giving me this now, if I ever see him again, I will repay his kindness."

Long Chen smiled, told Xiao Huang to leave, and then went back to the Yang family residence.

“.....Absorbing the celestial essence of the stars, incorporate them into the skin, bones, blood and flesh.....Temper my body every day, endure it, and then one can achieve the body of a celestial core.....While moving, be it sand or rocks, with a simple punch, I will be able to draw upon its strength.....:”

“This [Celestial Core Technique], is actually classified as a scripture, compared to a martial technique it is much more valuable.”

“The [Celestial Core Technique] has a total of two levels, the first being the Enlightened level and the second being the Mastery level. However, although this scripture is cryptic, I am still able to understand it. Tonight the starlight is resplendent, I have to make use of the starlight tonight, and practice the [Celestial Core Technique], if I will manage to master it, and any hit I unleash will be equivalent to using the power of an offensive martial technique! If I meet Yang Zhan again, I should also be able to evade his hits, and probably even have a fair fight!”

To Long Chen, this [Celestial Core Technique] was not difficult to understand. Under the luster of the starlight, he practiced seamlessly. After some time, it could be seen, that as the starlight from the sky had shone on him, his body, as if a falling star, was glistening with starlight.

Suddenly, Long Chen opened his eyes.

“The [Celestial Core Technique] is yet to be mastered, but after tonight’s hair raising fight, along with the nurture given to my body under the stars, adding on

the mysterious jade pendant, my Qi has once again risen explosively. And right now, it will let me break through the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!”

Revenge

POP!

With a dragon's cry, abundant Qi finally passed through the third Dragon Vein.

Qi violently thrashed within his four limbs. Long Chen had to spend a great deal of effort, as he first had to suppress the Qi then convert it completely, and only then could he absorb it for himself.

At this moment, his eyes flashed, apparently his cultivation speed has increased yet again compared to previously!

The Qi from the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, is actually several times stronger than the Qi from the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. If I happen to meet Yang Zhan again, coupled with my [Falling Star Fist], if he wants to defeat me, it will be difficult for him!

After entering the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, Long Chen gradually controlled his breathing, right now it was midnight, thinking about it there was still some time before the sunrise.

Today's night was cloudless, the Milky Way filled the sky, it's beauty was magnificent.

"The 18 Cosmos Paths, the 9 Daylight Roads and the 9 Twilight Roads. Rumor has it that the Cosmos Paths were formed by countless stars. If there ever comes a day where I can enter the heavens and take a look, it can be said that I have

not lived my life in vain.”

“If the Milky Way is made of stars, then I will borrow the strength of the Milky Way and the stars, and continue to cultivate in the [Celestial Core Technique]!”

Originally Long Chen had borrowed the essence of some singular stars, but as he faced now towards the Milky Way, a torrential rush of starlight shone gloriously on his body.

“The starlight from this large amount of stars, is actually infusing into my blood, veins and bones, this speed compared to before must be at least a 100 times faster, those 9 Cosmos Paths as expected are formed by countless stars!”

While starlight was brimming him, Long Chen felt like he was being surrounded by so many stars, and all these miniscule stars’ essence converged onto his skin, and integrated with every inch of his body, Long Chen could feel that under the continuous tempering of the starlight his flesh was constantly becoming stronger.

This happened all the way until the sun had risen and was shining.

The starlight on his body was vanishing gradually. Long Chen jumped down from the roof, his eyes filled with excitement.

“After experiencing a night of refinement under the starlight, without taking any roundabout paths, right now I have actually reached the stage of Enlightenment for the [Celestial Core Technique]. This strength and dominance added with my Qi of the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm..... I, Long Chen compared to the me from yesterday, must be at least 10 times stronger!”

Long Chen smiled: “I can finally hold my head up high from this day forward. With [Celestial Core Technique] and [Falling Star Fist], I don’t believe I won’t be able to hold my own against Yang Zhan who is at the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm! Also for the rest of the people.....Their debts, I’ll make them pay slowly!”

Entering the house, Long Chen laid on the bed.

“A night without sleeping, it’s time for a rest, and when I wake up later, my vigor will be brimming, thus allowing me to take the next step of my cultivation plans.

“[Celestial Core Technique], if mastered, it should definitely be able to display a bigger amount of strength, the Qi from father’s Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, which he gave me, was not little. My dantian’s Qi has increased faster than the others who cultivate, but I cannot limit myself to this training speed, I must cultivate, so as to obtain a Spirit Jade at the same time.

Spirit Jade, this is a kind of jade rock which can contribute to Dragon Pulse Realm cultivators, which contains a monstrous amount of essence from heaven and earth. Normally only the group of younger generations who have had splendid accomplishments will be rewarded by the elders with it.

“There’s still half a month left, I must obtain the [Seal of the Dragons], so I must at least enter the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Breaking through each level in the Dragon Pulse Realm becomes at least 10 times more difficult with each passing level. Yang Zhan has already been stagnant at the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm for over a year, if I want to enter the 5th level, I think it will not be easy, not to mention to achieve that in under a month.....”

“I don’t care so much anymore. But for my father, for people not to despise me, and for that stinking woman, I will struggle!”

[TL Note: Stinking woman refers to his mother.]

In the early morning, Long Chen was awakened by some noise.

After entering the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, his awareness had grown once again. Even if anyone approached him from afar, he would be alerted by that person. Standing up, and getting himself ready by entering his peak condition, Long Chen smiled and walked out of the house.

Indeed, Yang Zhan had taken the lead, standing in front, and the ones following him, were a few of his, Yang family’s brothers and sisters, ages hovering between 14 and 15. But seeing how all were big and tall, it seemed like there were people who were even older than Long Chen.

Yang Zhan actually got a great number of people involved, which had surprised Long Chen.

After seeing how this boy did not show a hint of fear in front of such a large formation of people, Yang Zhan laughed coldly and said: “Last night I said I will discipline you, so today surely I cannot eat my words. A little bastard like you has grown a bit stronger the past few days, and now you have become arrogant. Also, our Yang family’s brothers and sisters all do not like you, so they specially entrusted me to discipline you and teach you a few values of being a human.

Long Chen smiled faintly, saying: “No wonder you have made such a huge

commotion. I first thought you had stage fright but now I see that the more people you have the more daring you become!”

Long Chen under these circumstances, could actually still mock Yang Zhan, and shrewdly joke, those Yang family’s brothers and sisters were dumbfounded, not recovering even after a short while.

Is this still the bowed down, flattering and fawning trash?

Anger welled up within him, and flared up on Yang Zhan’s face in a second, the flames of hatred slowly erupting from him.

“Very good, you little bastard, you luckily gained some strength, no wonder you are different from the lackey you were before. Just after you defeated Chen Liu you naively thought that you are unrivalled under the sky. Today you have successfully angered me, brothers and sisters, tell me, what should I do?”

“Dispose of him!”

Hands rising in the air continuously.

Yang Zhan waved his hands, saying: “Sorry, this is their suggestion, your performance today was not appealing to us. We are still better used to that dog lackey Yang Chen from before. So, today I will spend some effort, and correct you to your previous form!”

“Before thinking of beating me, stop grumbling nonsense like a little child, your speech is just dog fart to me. Right in the early morning you bring a huge group of people to my doorstep and then release your dog fart, it is somewhat

unbelievable!”

Long Chen’s last sentence had pushed the final straw for Yang Zhan’s rage. For him who was always high up on a pedestal, Long Chen in his heart was just like a lice, and today he was actually humiliated by this lice, making him lose his decorum.

“Bastard, you are courting death! If I don’t dispose of you today, my name is not Yang Zhan!”

After saying this, his Qi exploded, the might of the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm pressured Long Chen’s body.

“They are getting into a fight!”

The people who were around had suddenly spread apart. On the court there was only Yang Zhan and Long Chen left now.

“This might, although it’s the same one from last night, but now it’s not able to make me retreat even half a step back!”

Although the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm was strong, Long Chen’s strength currently wasn’t bad either. With his whole body faintly suffused with starlight, and with the powerful Celestial Core which had been tempered by the starlight, he did not even feel the overbearing pressure of the opponent.

“A mere second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and you dream of wanting to battle against me, you should pay a price for your ignorance!”

Like a whirlwind, Yang Zhan pressed towards Long Chen, continuously shouting. In a short time he had actually unleashed many punches, which Long Chen hurriedly avoided.

“Cheh, Yang Chen this fellow was acting so strong just now. I thought he had some trump card, but to think that once Brother Yang Zhan has acted, he is being beaten like a whimpering mouse.”

“He’s just making a fool of himself.”

The crowd around laughed loudly, pointing and discussing about the battle that was happening.

After once again dodging Yang Zhan’s hit, Long Chen eyed them, and cursed them: “What a bunch of donkeys.”

After that he smilingly looked at Yang Zhan, and mockingly said: “Yang Zhan, is this all you’re worth?”

Yang Zhan was in the actual battle, unlike those idiots in the crowd. Although Long Chen was escaping all the time, but his dodging had some real skill, not in the slightest clumsy. Yang Zhan used all his strength, but was still unable to hit his opponent. His mind roared in surprise.

“This isn’t right, he is only a second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, although his agility to dodge is not bad, but he definitely does not have any offensive techniques!”

“Thinking of this, Yang Zhan smiled coldly, he punched out one fist and shouted: “You cowardly thing, all you know is to dodge like this? If you are a man, then fight me squarely for 1 round!”

Long Chen after a round of fighting, had more or less grasped the extent of Yang Zhan’s strength. In terms of the Qi amount, he is definitely inferior by several times.

Because of the enlightened stage of the [Celestial Core Technique], his attack & speed compared to the normal third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm was stronger by several times. His defense was even better. With these as insurance, Long Chen’s eyes flashed cold, then looked at Yang Zhan shouting and punched his fist. Not only did he not retreat, but he also sent a fist flying out.

“[Ferocious Tiger Punch!]”

“[Ferocious Tiger Punch!]”

The two tigers in the mountain had collided loudly!

Boom!

Both parties retreated backwards with heavy steps, imprinting each and every footprint on the stone tiles. Behind Yang Zhan, there even was a stone tile which he had broken!

“What? How can his strength be this great!?”

“Yang Zhan finally steadied himself, and seeing Long Chen’s retreat to be even less than his, he was momentarily in disbelief. The Yang family’s brothers and sisters had their smiles frozen, as if being given a vicious slap!

“How was it? Did this punch fill your appetite? Yang Zhan, your [Ferocious Tiger Punch] isn’t such a big deal after all.”

Yang Zhan was suspicious in his heart.

“Only days before, he wasn’t a practitioner, but looking at him now, he was already in the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Being able to defeat Chen Liu showed that he had concealed his strength. This fellow right now has the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm? The fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he had actually concealed it, what was his motive?”

Looking at Long Chen smile heartily at him, Yang Zhan’s anger had almost set his body on fire.

“Impossible, he cannot have such strength, it was definitely some dirty tricks in order to achieve this ending! He may know [Ferocious Tiger Punch], but for this next skill I’ll use, no matter how much he concealed before, or if he used any shameful methods, I will definitely kill him!”

Thinking of this, Yang Zhan shouted loudly. As if a meteor falling, he rushed towards Long Chen. This enormous might, which had pressured all those Yang family’s brothers and sisters into retreat, making them think: “Brother Yang Zhan is indeed extraordinary, he even learned this intermediate Huang level technique, [Falling Star Fist]. That fellow, under this [Falling Star Fist], will definitely not have a corpse left!”

A Gamble

“[Falling Star Fist] huh.....”

Looking at this punch which resembled a falling star, Long Chen was composed and laughed.

“I just don’t know how many conflicts will this cause for me after I take care of this retard. That woman, will she look at me differently? I really look forward to it.....”

Long Chen had to admit, the way Yang Xueqing viewed him, mattered a lot to him.

“This fellow is obviously trash, under Yang Zhan Elder Brother’s [Falling Star Fist], he was actually scared stupid.”

Listening to such talk, Long Chen dismissed it with a laugh and then looked at Yang Zhan.

“[Falling Star Fist], I know it ten thousand times better than you!”

What Long Chen had intended by using [Ferocious Tiger Punch] against [Ferocious Tiger Punch] and then using [Falling Star Fist] against [Falling Star Fist] was to completely subdue Yang Zhan physically and mentally. From this, Long Chen will become a trauma in Yang Zhan’s heart, making him suffer eternally from such a pain.

An even brighter light explosively ignited, and under the support of the [Celestial Core Technique], the [Falling Star Fist] had a never before seen battle strength, which collided with Yang Zhan's [Falling Star Fist]. But what made most people breathless was that Yang Zhan, as he retreated, had spurted blood and crashed onto the floor, while Long Chen once again went up and single handedly grabbed onto Yang Zhan's robes, and picked up his whole body.

Those, Yang family's, brothers and sisters, under the stare of Long Chen, were all scared into retreating several steps backwards, and on their faces was a look of disbelief.

"He used [Falling Star Fist] and defeated Brother Yang Zhan who was in the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Impossible....."

"Brother Yang Zhan has overflowing battle energy, but this piece of crap..... how is this possible? Earlier we did not see clearly but this fellow definitely used some underhanded means!"

"Not good, he looks like he's going to kill Yang Zhan Elder Brother!"

The crowd looked breathlessly, only to see Long Chen carry Yang Zhan with one hand, while the other hand had become a clenched fist, and was coldly staring at Yang Zhan.

Yang Zhan at this point, had blood all over his mouth. His eyes looked spiritless, his injuries were obviously not mild, but at least he still had his consciousness intact.

"Do you see it now? Now that I am stronger than you, this reputation of being

useless, I had better return it to you. However Yang Zhan, the humiliation that you have given me, was not only just this little. What will happen next is that you will pay for the humiliation you have given me for the rest of your life, and each time will be worse than the other, you had better mentally prepare yourself for this.....”

“Bastard.....”

Yang Zhan spit out some blood, while looking at Long Chen and smiling happily at him. Under the murderous gaze of that façade, he suddenly discovered that the person before him, was no longer the person he could once bully and harass. Right now, he actually was scared deep down, making him shudder in fear.

“Is this trembling?”

This was Long Chen’s intended result, but his hatred in his heart, could not be resolved by just a punch of the [Falling Star Fist]. In the past few years the suffering given to him by Yang Zhan was not to be overlooked.

He laughed loudly, and as he got ready to beat him several more times to vent his hatred, suddenly there came a loud voice scolding him.

“Stop right this instant!”

Long Chen did not need to see because he already knew who was here, Yang Zhan’s sister, the second strongest in the younger generation, his first uncle’s precious daughter, the arrogant Yang Lingyue.

At this moment, Yang Lingyue rushed over, and behind her were two guys, one

of them was the young man who was with her the other day.

The other guy had a similar age to Long Chen, his features looking similar to the other young man.

These two were the sons of Bai Family's Bai Zhanxiong.

Long Chen's attention was slightly drawn towards the younger son of Bai Zhanxiong. This fellow was called Bai Shixun, he frequents the Emerald Jade House, and taking advantage of his cultivation he bullied Long Chen a few times in the past.

At this point Bai Shixun who saw Long Chen had actually beaten Yang Zhan, had suddenly felt panic and hid behind the other young man, his elder brother.

"Coward."

Long Chen laughed loudly, and then diverted his gaze back at Yang Lingyue.

"Using such a loathing gaze to look at me, this Yang Lingyue most likely wants me dead." Long Chen thought, and silently smirked.

Looking on at Yang Lingyue who was about to rush over, suddenly Long Chen's right hand moved and all the clothes which Yang Zhan was wearing, had actually been ripped. And at this moment, Yang Zhan who was naked, after a throw by Long Chen, had flown towards Yang Lingyue.

With this move, Long Chen had made all the girls momentarily scream in

succession, making them turn around and flee. As Yang Lingyue saw that white body was thrown towards her, her face was drained of its color, and both her legs turned weak. From where would she still have the strength to attack Long Chen?

Luckily the young man behind her eyes flashed and rushed forward, and then grabbed Yang Zhan with a hand. As he tried to give his cloak to Yang Zhan, right at that moment Yang Zhan had realized what had happened, and suddenly gave a loud cry. Seizing this chance he escaped with his two butt-cheeks continuously swaying, this view was magnificent.

“Yang Zhan is a tall and big man, never thought that his butt would be so soft, this is really worthy of celebration. I think even if he does not practice cultivation in the future, he can easily work for a livelihood.”

Long Chen laughed out loudly, and after hearing his words the crowds’ ears had gone red and started scolding him for being so shameless.

As for Yang Lingyue’s dignified normal demeanor, now it had been shattered by Long Chen without leaving a single speck. She had almost fallen down earlier. At this point of Yang Zhan’s escape, she once again reevaluated Long Chen. Behind her refined gaze, her murderous intent rising constantly.

“Yang Chen, not only did you disobey the family rules of hitting your brethren, you even committed such a shameless act, which is even difficult to explain. On your parent’s behalf, today, I will discipline you thoroughly!”

It was hard to imagine, Yang Lingyue who had always maintained a mysterious elder sister image normally, had actually been angered to such a point that even the two fellows behind her could not stop her.

“Today was nothing but a sparring match, and already such a large commotion has been created, as if I, Long Chen have done something and have harmed the innocent. Usually, all these Yang family’s brothers and sisters bullied and beaten me, not treating me even as a human, I didn’t see anyone who had stepped up for me then!”

Thinking of this, Long Chen’s eyes reflected anger, and not in the least showing signs of fear against Yang Lingyue.

“What father said was definitely right, a man without any true ability, is equivalent to a dog. Today the reason why she can scold me like this, is also because my strength is still not enough, but today if I could actually beat Yang Zhan, then the next time I will also be able to defeat you.”

He retreated several steps behind, and coldly said: “Yang Lingyue, unless you are blind, it is obvious that Yang Zhan came here early in the morning to find trouble with me, and bully me. All the people had known this, only they did not expect me to have already practiced cultivation successfully. So instead I have defeated him, but I did not kill him. So when you push all the blame onto my shoulders, what does this mean for you as the Big Sister? Is this the only way you punish me for a private grudge by rashly abusing your position as the Big Sister?!”

After being told off by Long Chen, only then did the raging Yang Lingyue calm herself down. She took in a deep breath, and thinking of the guests who were still behind her, she then managed her current emotions. She then walked in front of Long Chen and stared at him coldly.

Although Long Chen was only sixteen years old, but his height was much taller

than Yang Lingyue.

“Yang Chen, I’ve never seen you in a positive light before, but I did not expect you to conceal your abilities so deeply. You reached all the way into the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm before exposing your true strength. But us, Yang family’s, brothers and sisters, why should we have to do something like this, or was it that you had ulterior motives?”

“Oh well, you have already beaten Yang Zhan, as well as embarrassed him, but Second Uncle and Third Aunt, they will never let you go for this, and even if I don’t punish you today, it will still be difficult for you to escape punishment.”

Long Chen laughed and said: “Then I am looking forward to this, let us see. I think you had better scram, the two lovers behind you are still waiting for you.”

Long Chen’s speech in front of everyone just now was considered to be malicious.

The young man behind her had good feelings for Yang Lingyue. Everyone knew this, but the other fellow was his brother. But as they were both behind Yang Lingyue, and Long Chen mentioned two lovers, it made people have fanciful thoughts, and this subtly hinted at Yang Lingyue’s fickle-mindedness.

No matter how good Yang Lingyue was at managing her temper, at this moment she was absolutely seething in fury. She sent one hand to grab Long Chen’s neck, and then her strength at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had been used. As if a mountain collided against him, Long Chen actually found it difficult to breath, and although he practiced the [Celestial Core Technique], all his muscles were feeling enormous pain.

“She hasn’t even attacked me yet, but it is already this painful, Yang Lingyue’s strength has exceeded my expectations. Right now I don’t have a single chance in front of her might!”

At this point, one hand reached out and blocked in front of Yang Lingyue, forcing her to let go.

Long Chen thought that he would be beaten already, never expecting that someone would actually protect him. Looking down, this person who was standing in front of him, was Yang Lingqing? That lass?

After injuring her brother, but now she was here to save him, this world is a really strange place.

Yang Lingqing had a ponytail, and was wearing an azure martial practitioner’s costume. Her pose valiant and her beauty was not one bit inferior compared to Yang Lingyue.

Seeing that it was actually Yang Lingqing, Yang Lingyue hurriedly asked: “Sister Qing what are you doing right now, this fellow has injured your brother, I am right about to punish him.”

Yang Lingqing apologized and said: “Sister Ling, I know, but my father and First Uncle want me to bring him to them, so I can only act first. Sorry.”

Hearing that, Yang Lingyue coldly stared at Long Chen and said coldly: “Your retribution is coming soon, I hope you can walk out of it alive, you offending me, I definitely will not let you have a good life!”

Long Chen creased his nose, saying: "Even if you have so much time to willingly spend on me, but I definitely won't have the time to bother about it. Let me make a suggestion, let's end this once and for all, what do you say?"

Yang Lingyue frowned and said: "What are you trying to pull off?"

"The intra-family competition, there is still half a month left; at that time I will also participate. Our feud will then be ended at that point, half a month's time; do you dare give this time to me?"

Long Chen with this sentence, had aroused everyone's interest and discussion.

"What kind of silly joke is this fellow saying? Third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and he wants to beat Big Sister Yang Lingyue in half a month's time? He is totally daydreaming."

"Not good, this must be a scheme; this fellow is using a delaying tactic. In half a month's time, I'm afraid we won't know where he will have gone into hiding!"

Yang Lingyue looked suspiciously at Long Chen, and suddenly laughed, saying: "Maybe it's because of your recent progress which is very fast, so you are complacent, this cultivation thing, is an arduous journey, I Yang Lingyue after 10 years of cultivation, have managed to achieve this current standard I have, and you wish to outdo my level in only half a month's time? Oh well, I will just let you live your life peacefully for another half a month. And at the time of the intra-family competition I will crush your foolish dreams in front of everyone!"

After saying this, she took her leave.

However the matter regarding Long Chen and Yang Lingyue's match had started spreading through the Yang Family household. Long Chen, with his delusions, had instantly become a laughingstock in front of everyone.

Along the way.

Yang Lingqing using suspicious glances to look at Long Chen, was finally not able to hold it in anymore and asked: "Hey, how did you managed to do it?"

"Do what?"

Yang Lingqing suspiciously looked at him and said: "Last time I know for certain that you were in the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, so how did you actually manage to beat my elder brother?"

About the secret of the Mysterious Dragon Jade, Long Qinglan had repeatedly warned Long Chen not to divulge anything, so Long Chen said: "I, all along, was not in the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, it's just that you have not seen clearly."

"Is that so?"

Yang Lingqing had only half-believed him. She turned over and saw the indifferent expression on the boy, only to find that he had turned into a mystery, it was very difficult to understand.

Yang Lingqing feeling that her mental capacity could not handle such thoughts, had decided not to think about it anymore, and unknowingly they reached their destination. Yang Lingqing worriedly said: "My father and First Uncle are both

inside; god knows even if they punish you, I cannot help you again, so I will not enter. So you had better know what's good for you."

Long Chen nodded his head, and said: "Lingqing, thank you for saving me today."

Yang Lingqing replied: "Who said I was trying to save you, you hurt my brother, however you are really funny, Yang Lingyue sister is in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. With your ability, you are not qualified to even carry her shoes, and still you say you want to defeat her in half a month's time. Are you not afraid of being laughed at?"

Long Chen smiled, not denying nor agreeing.

Precious Treasure

In the hall there were only two men. Yang family's second son Yang Yuntian sat on the side, while in the center sat an immortal-like and dignified middle aged man.

This was Yang family founder's eldest son, Long Chen's first uncle Yang Qingxuan.

Long Chen stepped into the hall, and his gaze met Yang Qingxuan.

"This Yang Qingxuan seems to be good natured, but from his eyes there is a mysterious roving light. Obviously he is a very high level cultivation expert, higher by at least a level when compared to Yang Yuntian who is beside him."

Long Chen had raised his cultivation level, so his insight had also increased.

Yang Qingxuan looked towards Long Chen and said:"You should be Yang Chen. Since young you have spent your time outside. I myself have only seen you several times, but I never thought that you have grown up so quickly."

"Yang Qingxuan did not scold me from the moment I stepped in, looks like there is going to be a show."

Long Chen thought to himself, his motto in life is that a man can submit or stand tall as is required. By keeping a contingency plan one will never be afraid of not making a comeback. And now he has hit Yang Yuntian's son, he is definitely in the wrong, so he just followed the rules and bowed towards the both of them,

saying: “Your nephew..... Yang Chen pays his greetings to First Uncle & Second Uncle.”

He had already promised his father to change his surname, but right now he still did not have the strength to declare it open in front of the Yang Family, so he can only use this plan because it’s convenient.

“Indeed you have reached the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, but looking at your vitality, I think you must have learned a school of body enhancing technique. All these years you have been secretly working hard and by doing so you have such an achievement now. Catching up to Ling Qing and Ling Yue in the future is a highly possible thing.

Long Chen did not dare to disagree.

“This fellow did not mention anything about beating people up, and chatted with me like it was a normal conversation. But as for this Yang Yuntian, the way he looks at me one can tell that he wants to kill me.”

At this point, Yang Yuntian growled: “Big brother!”

Listening to Yang Yuntian’s reminder, Yang Qingxuan smiled and said: “You are indeed a good seedling, but beating up your own family’s brothers, it just isn’t right. I even heard that you have dealt a critical blow.....”

Long Chen hurriedly said: “First Uncle, during a fight, punches and kicks have no eyes. With my ability it’s simply impossible to control my attack strength at will. So when I hurt him earlier, it was actually not my intention to do so.”

Being interrupted by Long Chen, Yang Yuntian simply did not speak anymore. At this point Yang Yuntian coldly said: "It was not your intention? How come I have heard that you wanted to beat Yang Zhan to death? With such a vicious personality at such a young age, in the future it would be even worse. If today I do not give you a reminder, won't you create an even larger mess in the future?"

Yang Yuntian stood up immediately and started walking towards Long Chen one step at time. A thick layer of cultivation started pressuring Long Chen's body, almost crushing him to the floor.

Long Chen did not say a word, and silently endured.

He knew, if today Yang Yuntian wanted to kill him, it would only take but a single strike.

At this point, there came a woman's voice from outside of the door.

"Second Brother, let me handle him, I will definitely account to you.

Only then did Long Chen heave a sigh of relief, but he still had some lingering fear.

He knew who the person behind him was, it was Yang Xueqing.

The way Yang Xueqing has treated him all these years was known to everyone. If Long Chen were to land into her hands, he will definitely not have a good time.

Yang Yuntian thinking of this point, laughingly said: "Third Sister do not

hesitate to take him away. However between the younger generation, a fight is just a small issue so Third Sister can just show him the correct path and that'll be fine.”

After saying this he left.

Yang Qingxuan saw that it had nothing much to do with himself anymore, so he also smiled and left. But before he left, he went beside Yang Xueqing's ear and whispered: "Not even five days, and he has actually skipped levels and learned [Falling Star Fist]. With his talent, father will definitely appreciate him so you had better play it by ear on this matter.....”

Yang Xueqing was shocked for a few moments. After Yang Qingxuan left, only then did she walk to Long Chen's side.

Long Chen had also heard Yang Qingxuan's whispering from earlier. He was very curious about Yang Xueqing's stunned expression, but unfortunately this woman was still wearing an icy look on her face.

“That's right, today after beating Yang Zhan to this state, it's still not enough for her to view me differently.”

Long Chen's heart was still filled with determination, so he nonchalantly said: “To kill or to slaughter is entirely up to you, but if you are not killing me then hurry up and talk, I do not have so much time to stay here with no purpose.”

[TL Note: “To kill or to slaughter is entirely up to you” (idiom) = whatever you want to do to me just go ahead (even killing)]

Yang Xueqing frowned and said coldly: "With only such a small achievement, your tone of voice has changed quite a bit. It's the same as that useless trash, a short lived genius. Only both father and son would think of themselves as an important figure, what a laughingstock!"

Long Chen's eyes flashed with a murderous intent.

He could not endure it any longer.

"If there is nothing else I will take my leave."

After saying this, he walked past Yang Xueqing, and as he arrived at the door, Yang Xueqing suddenly said: "In one month's time, I will marry the Bai Family's third child Bai Zhanxiong. As for you, I do not wish for you to remain in Poplar Town for another day. If you remain then don't blame me for not recognising our ties."

Listening to that, Long Chen was not one bit surprised.

However no matter how resilient he had made himself to be, at this point in his heart he was in agony. There is no pair of mother and son under the sky, with such a scenario like this one from today.

Long Chen looked back at her and coldly said: "Don't blame me when the time comes that I did not tell you, the elegant gentleman Bai Zhanxiong that he appears to be on the surface, is actually a rotten thing. I have once seen him use his own strength to forcefully kidnap a few girls under sixteen years of age, and then sell them to an unknown person....."

After saying this secret which he had kept inside him for all this time, Long Chen originally thought that she would appreciate it but he found Yang Xueqing's gaze to be even colder. Once Long Chen had finished speaking, she immediately retaliated verbally by coldly saying: "Yang Chen, as you now have the ability to defeat Yang Zhan, it did make me look at you in a better light, I still thought from today onwards you can discard your bad habits and turn over a new leaf. I was happy for you from the bottom of my heart but you now have actually disappointed me greatly."

"I know you do not wish for me to remarry, but you don't have to resort to slandering Brother Bai's reputation by creating such a laughable offence. Me and Brother Bai are childhood sweethearts. If not for your father, I would have long ago become his woman. Also my understanding of him is stronger than yours by tens of thousands of times. You wish to confuse me with your hilarious lie?"

Long Chen was stunned, looking at the woman in front of him who was filled with disappointment and disdain; he gradually clenched his fist and felt a rush of blood to his brain. In his heart a ferocious beast was roaring insanely!

Long Chen stared at her unwaveringly, and started talking, one word at a time: "Oh, really? Your own son's advice, has no weight on it's own?"

Yang Xueqing kept quiet for a while, and then said: "The deeds that you have done over these past few years, not cultivating, bullying men and conquering women, every incident you've done I know them like the back of my hand. I've been disappointed by you since more than ten years now. Your Long family's people are unworthy of trust so why should I believe you?"

Long Chen only felt that his chest was about to explode. His eyes turned bloodshot, and stared impassively at Yang Xueqing, suddenly, he laughed crazily

and said: “Yang Xueqing, saying that is easy, but as a mother, have you ever once taken responsibility for that role? I, without my father and mother, have had no one to teach me, that’s why I only have this dog-like character today, and you blame me for it? You say that I am a scum since I was born, a hopeless lecher that no one can save, but I will tell you right now, although I have harmed a few people before, but I’ve never harmed a single good person! But your Brother Bai Zhanxiong is different.....”

Taking in a deep breath, Long Chen then blandly said: “Your disappointment towards me, has also made me extremely disappointed with you. But if you wish to get married, with me Long Chen around, it will not be easy! Did you hear that right? Long Chen!”

Yang Xueqing’s face was expressionless as ever as she threw a bag with some stuff in it at Long Chen’s feet.

“In my heart you have never had the surname Yang, take this 50 pieces of spirit jade. Poplar Town can no longer accommodate you anymore.

Speaking any more is just meaningless. Although Long Chen always liked accepting small advantages from others, but this time he did not even look at the spirit jade, he turned around and walked away.

Dashing out of the Yang family residence, he howled madly and started hitting wildly at some huge rocks until he was too tired and simply sat on the floor.

He looked towards the direction of the Yang family residence, this grand estate was right now across his eyes. He was feeling as if this colossal mountain was crushing his heart.

Long Chen gradually tightened his fist, and then murderous aura started emitting strongly from his body.

“Father, I do not know if she is worth it, I only know that Bai Zhanxiong is not a good guy. No matter how she treats me, I will stop her. Also, I cannot let her look down on me, and all the more I cannot let her look down on you!”

He was tightening his fist all the way until his fingernails started bleeding.

“Father, no one is going to stand in my way of becoming stronger. The words between us, today I have finally understood completely. To be above the rest, to want to have everyone respect and flatter you, then one needs to get infinitely stronger, all the way until the top of the world!”

“To all the people that have been looking down on me until now, thank you, if not for you I would still foolishly believe that cultivation was the most boring thing ever. Everyone has something they desire, so next let me reward you by showing you a whirlwind of a surprise!”

“The family intra-competition in half a month’s time, and that broken marriage in a month’s time, because of my, Long Chen’s existence, I will definitely give all of you a major major major surprise!”

After a round of venting his anger, the night came shortly.

Long Chen sat on the roof of his own apartment, looking at the vast light of the night.

“Yang Xueqing wants me to leave Poplar Town, but father wants me to get the

[Seal of the Dragons] so how can I just leave like that? But with my current strength, if she were to attack me, how could I even block it? Or should I leave Poplar Town and hide for a period of time, and wait until the competition starts before I return?”

Long Chen went into deep thought for a moment, and his eyebrows which were frowning then loosened. He thought: “Why stay in Poplar Town? Why don’t I just go out and slay some Demonic Beasts, this way maybe my progress will be fast, and I also have a chance at obtaining earthly treasures!”

Thinking of that, he had already made up his mind to go out for a period of time. But right now his stomach was grumbling, so he jumped off the roof, and went towards the Rising Sun Inn.

It was almost midnight, but the Rising Sun Inn was still a clamorous and noisy place.

Long Chen quietly neared the inn, and suddenly heard someone say: “Big news, you guys don’t know yet but something big has happened in the Yang family!”

“What big news, hurry up and say it!”

“You guys do not know, but I heard this morning that Yang family’s Yang Zhan and Third Mother’s son Yang Chen had a match and young master Yang Zhan was stripped of his clothes in front of everyone, and when he went back he actually committed suicide!”

“Is this true?”

“How can it be fake? The news just broke out; right now Yang family is out searching for Yang Chen!”

After hearing this, Long Chen hurriedly left.

“I originally thought that at most he would just be unable to look at other people in the eye anymore. But I never thought that this fellow wouldn’t even be able to endure it, and would instead commit suicide immediately. He’s such trash. However he normally did not even treat me like a human being. And the contrast today was so great that his heart couldn’t take it, so I guess it’s quite logical after all.”

“Now Yang Zhan is dead so all the more I cannot stay in Poplar Town, right now I must leave immediately!”

In the past he was fraternizing in Poplar Town, so he was very familiar with it. After travelling through some underground tunnels, he had quickly gotten out of town before the Yang Family could find him.

After walking for a long time, only then did he turn his head to look at Poplar Town.

“Yang Zhan is dead so in the future when I return for the intra-family competition, I’m afraid that it will be dangerous. However since I already heard that the Yang family’s founder loves talent as much as his life, if I were to display some extraordinary talent I might still have a chance! Just based on today’s [Falling Star Fist], he would probably have most likely been astonished.

But after leaving Poplar Town, where could he go?”

“East of the Poplar Town is the Big Desolate Mountain, it’s a haven for both poisonous insects and demonic beasts. The earthly treasures there are not few either.....”

Just as he was about to go to the Big Desolate Mountain, at this time, suddenly there was someone behind who came chasing after him.

His face drained of color, and hurriedly hid himself.

After seeing who got here, only then did he give a sigh of relief. After which he started laughing happily.

The person who came was the younger man of the two young men who were standing behind Yang Ling Yue earlier in the morning. His name was Bai Shixun; the younger son of that Bai Zhanxiong person.

His memories of being bullied by Bai Shixun in the Emerald Jade House had all come to surface in Long Chen’s mind.

“What exactly is this Bai Shixun chasing after?”

Long Chen originally thought that Bai Shixun was chasing after him, but after looking closely, he saw that Bai Shixun was actually chasing after a bright floating object. Since that bright object was hovering in the air, it was obviously a treasure!

Desolate Beast Domain

“That flash of light, it must be some godly weapon or device. From the expression on Bai Shixun’s face it obviously looks like he has found a treasure.”

Bai Shixun followed that flash of light and ran wildly after it. Long Chen after leaving Poplar Town, had just followed along from behind. Because of the Enlightenment stage of the [Celestial Core Technique], and him being under this vast sea of starlight, his power was enhanced even more. He wasn’t consuming any Qi and was able to steadily follow Bai Shixun.

The flash of light was hovering in the air but the more it travelled the dimmer it became. Long Chen could faintly see that it was a sword and that it was slightly swaying. A sword flying on its own, he had never seen or even heard of such a thing before. Therefore, he was all the more sure that it was a treasure.

Although it started to sway, it still continued to persevere for another hour, to a place that was a large distance from Poplar Town. Long Chen at this point, did not have to worry about Yang Yun Tian chasing after him.

“This fellow’s nerves are really too big, he actually dares to distance himself so far away from Poplar Town.”

In the process of following behind him, Long Chen had used a black cloth to cover his appearance. Now it normally would be very hard to realise that he was Long Chen, so his goal was achieved with this.

“With all his might, he can only have a speed like that, and now he is even panting. This Bai Shixun, similar to me, is at most only at the third level of the

Dragon Pulse Realm. But, unlike him, I have [Falling Star Fist] and the [Celestial Core Technique].”

After rushing into a forest, that sword then started becoming unsteady. After a moment it went down at a great speed, piercing the ground.

Bai Shixun finally rushed into the forest, and seeing that the sword was right in front of his eyes, he finally heaved a sigh of relief. He was squatting there and panting like a dying dog, however after looking at that blade, his eyes started flashing fiercely.

“This treasure sword can fly on its own, it is definitely some kind of super treasure. If I am able to obtain it, even if I would have to sacrifice my family, I would still be on the winning side!”

Thinking of his beautiful future, Bai Shixun laughed heartily. However he suddenly found a masked man standing across from him. His face turned pale, and said in a frightened voice: “You.....Who are you? What do you want?”

Since Bai Shixun was just an ordinary third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm practitioner, Long Chen’s speed was faster than his by a few times. In the eyes of Bai Shixun, Long Chen’s body had moved in an instant, disappearing in front of him, and then in a heartbeat, landing a blow on him and smashing him to the floor. That enormous strength had immediately broken a few of his teeth.

Looking at the masked man standing coldly in front of him, Bai Shixun began to cry.

“Senior, I.....I have only accidentally chanced upon this sword. If you want it,

then you can have it.....But can you not kill me, please do not kill me.....I'm willing to even be your slave.....”

Long Chen laughed and said: "Is what you say true? Because, after I have obtained this treasure sword, there will inevitably be some rumour that will be leaked out, so killing you is still the best option for me."

Bai Shixun wailed for a moment and then said: "Do not kill me, se.....senior, I have never seen your facial features. And I don't recognise you, so how can rumours be leaked?"

"That's also true."

Long Chen smiled, and then lifted Bai Shixun's neck up. Clicking his tongue while looking at him he said: "You have such fine skin and delicate flesh, looks like your father must also be good looking. However the thing I cannot stand the most is looking at other guys who are more handsome than me, so....."

Hearing Long Chen's speech, Bai Shixun at this point was panicking. He struggled and said: "Senior, please do not disfigure me, if you want anything, my father can give it all to you..... My grandfather is Poplar Town's Bai Family's founder, you.....you recognise him right, so please spare me!"

"Nonsense, why would I disfigure you?"

Long Chen's voice grew sinister by the moment. He secretly reached for a dagger, and in a breath pierced it into his opponent's crotch, after which he twisted. Bai Shixun then screamed a wretched howl, gave a look of despair towards Long Chen and then fainted due to the pain.

Long Chen then threw him on the ground.

“I did not disfigure you, I only just didn’t let you stay a man. Bai Shixun, if it wasn’t for me being quick witted, I’m afraid I would be the one today who wasn’t a man. A debt for a debt, this is simply karma.....”

He turned around and then looked at the sword.

This was a sword which was black all over. What was different from regular swords is that the sword blade was extremely narrow, only about two fingers broad. The length was about 70 centimetres, and the body was made out of a variant of steel. At this point it was stained with spots looking like it could break at any moment.

Long Chen smiled bitterly: “After chasing for so long, to think that it is only a useless sword.”

He walked over to it and while looking at the sword hilt, he reached out his hand and then gripped it.

Suddenly there seemed to be a girl’s surprised scream everywhere. That sword started transmitting a strength which Long Chen could not resist against, and it simply pulled him up. He opened his eyes in shock, and then momentarily turned green with fear because this sword had once again flown up in the air, only this time he was being dragged across the sky.

This time the steel sword’s flying speed was ten times faster than before, it was also much higher. The trees below very soon became small dots. Long Chen

was staring tongue tied, and started screaming.

“If I were to fall down, my body would definitely be broken into pieces!”

Thinking up to this point, he hurriedly used two hands to grip the sword tightly. He was gripping it so much that his whole body clung onto it tightly. He was desperately holding on to the steel sword and not letting it go, but that steel sword was actually carelessly flying around. It seemed like it wanted to fling Long Chen off.

“This steel sword actually has a consciousness, it is indeed a precious treasure, but if I were to be flung down I would die in a hit, and would have no chance to enjoy this fortune either.”

One human and one sword were speeding across the sky.

Long Chen desperately clung onto the sword. Although the sword’s attempts to fling him were innumerable, but it still did not succeed in throwing him off. And for the sake of his life, Long Chen even used the strength he had when taking milk as a baby.

[TL Note: (Idiom) “Using the strength he had when taking milk as a baby” means using all the strength he had.]

Suddenly, from the blade once again came an angry voice of a female.

“You lecher, you actually embraced me and are not letting me go. Hurry up and let me go, if not you will not have a good time!”

Long Chen was shocked for a moment, because this voice obviously came from the sword. He was unexpectedly being scolded as a lecher by a sword. Long Chen had a moment of impulse to vomit blood.

This sword, is a female?

“Did you hear that? Hurry and let go, if not I really will not forgive you.”

Once again came the voice, and the swaying of the steel sword had increased.

Long Chen hurriedly said: “Mi.....Miss, I too want to let go, but you are flying so high up, won't I die horribly once I let go?”

With that said, only then did the sword stop shaking, and she said in a daze: “Is that so? Oh, I am sorry I forgot, I will go down right away, but you must promise to let me go once we go down, that..... It's improper for men and women to touch each other's hands.”

Long Chen thought to himself: “I know it is improper for men and women to touch each other's hands, but you girl are just a sword, what kind of advantage can I take from you?”

However he said hurriedly: “That is only natural, a lady's body is worth a thousand taels of gold, I have offended you carelessly, so I am really sorry.”

“No you did not, I did not think of that point earlier, so it can be considered as my fault too, alright let us go down now.”

Long Chen really wanted to vomit blood and die at this point, this girl had flown for half a day. And only at this point thought that if Long Chen were to release his grip he would fall to his death. What kind of realm must one enter to be this muddle headed?

After landing safely Long Chen observed his surroundings. He realised that this was a desolate mountain range. Rocks and dried up trees could be seen everywhere, it was a wasteland. From afar came the howls of wild beasts, it would make people tremble in fear.

With a crack, Long Chen had crushed a skull into pieces. Only then did he realise that the surroundings had been littered with beasts and human bones. These remains were not few, and momentarily Long Chen felt a rising fear stirring from the inside.

“Mi.....Miss, what do you think, this place wouldn’t happen to be the..... Desolate Beast Domain right.....”

The Desolate Beast Domain, was the deepest part of the Big Barren Mountain, this was the place where one lives after nine deaths. Long Chen had heard many myths of people adventuring here. The people who died here, were too many to count. He himself did not know, if he would be one of them soon.

[TL Note: (Idiom) “One lives after nine deaths” means out of ten times he would die nine times and live only once. (Basically, 10% chance of living.)]

He looked towards the sword that was next to him. At this moment, a female voice yet again was sent out from the steel sword.

“Ah, I’m sorry; I perceive a lot of demonic beasts here with an aura that is much greater than yours. By bringing you here, you will definitely die soon, what should we do? What should we do?”

The missy panicked and twirled around.

Long Chen was speechless.

After a moment, he said: “Hey, let’s do the same as earlier, let’s fly back from the path we came from and won’t that be settled?”

This time the steel sword did not reply.

Long Chen hurriedly said: “Hey, miss, what happened to you? Not saying a word?”

After saying this he grabbed the sword.

The steel sword hurriedly said: “That.....I’m really sorry, I.....I never thought that it would turn out this way. I was hastily trying to fling you earlier, and I didn’t notice that this place actually had a large restriction. I can fly in here through the sky, but I am unable to fly out now.....”

“Waaa.....”

After finishing her speech, she began to weep loudly.

Long Chen took in a deep breath. If not for his supreme effort of controlling his impulse, right now he would have gone to bang his head and die.”

“To think that I Lingxi will actually die in such a damned place.....I, if I knew earlier, I would not have touched this sword in the first place.....waaaa..... Mother.....Father.....I am scared.....I don’t wanna die.....”

“You had better keep quiet!”

Long Chen promptly held the sword, crouched down and then hid under a huge granite rock because he had faintly felt that a danger was approaching.

Within this Desolate Beast Domain, this steel sword had made such a loud commotion, akin to asking for its death.

Being frightened by Long Chen, she temporarily stopped her tears from flowing. After sensing that dangerous aura, she too did not dare to cry again, behaving well under the grip of Long Chen’s hands, and did not dare to say anything like it is improper for men and women to touch each other’s hands.

Long Chen’s heart started beating furiously. He was feeling such a fear that he did not dare to emit another sound, and shrunk under the huge granite rock. His ears sticking to the ground while hearing the movements.

Heavy footsteps, came closer at every second.

Long Chen’s heart had already jumped into his throat. He realised that he

could not control himself from shuddering. It can be clearly seen how dangerous this was.

Holding his breath and slowing down his heartbeat, he tried his best to remain in the state of near death, but at this moment, cold sweat had already soaked through his robes.

What he was most afraid of was the silly girl clutched in his arms, making a sudden noise. But he could not give her any warning because if he made any noise he would probably turn into a corpse right after.

Due to the sound of heavy footsteps, the rough breathing noises, the trace of putrid smell which hung in the air, and the smell of saliva, Long Chen felt goosebumps all over. The strongest expert he had met until today, never gave him such a feeling before.

“AWOO.....”

A growling sound, came ringing from the other side of the granite rock. The growling sound made Long Chen’s hair stand on end. At this point if he made the slightest bit of carelessness, he would definitely die.

Fortunately, he put up a good effort and he heard the footsteps gradually walking away, until the point where they could no longer be heard. Only then did Long Chen dare to breathe. At this point, his cold sweat had already soaked his hair wet, from that it can be seen how frightened he was earlier.

“The thing that just passed.....was a Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf. With your strength, in one gulp you would be swallowed.....”

The steel sword in his arms seemed to be relieved.

Long Chen stood up and said: "No matter what, I must leave here in half a month's time. Regarding that you will just go with me, if you have any good ideas or methods, just tell me. Oh right, your name is Lingxi? I am Long Chen!"

Lingxi Sword

Desolate Beast Domain; this is the boundary between the Central Granary State and Fiery Southern State.

Both countries do not even need to put any guards along this border, as it was a haven for demonic beasts.

At the same time, the earthly treasures in the Desolate Beast Domain were so plenty that just by looking down on the ground one might see some. Legend has it that the reason why the Desolate Beast Domain was so barren, to the point where flora could not grow there anymore, was because of other spiritual herbs which have absorbed heaven and earth's essence from the area.

"Ah.....Luckily we did not fly in further, I estimate that after several more days, we can leave this decrepit place."

Lingxi who was being carried on Long Chen's back happily rejoiced.

Both of them had been together for over a day, therefore, this girl who previously said that it was improper for men and women to touch each other's hands, was now comfortably laying on Long Chen's back, and was enjoying the feeling of being carried around.

"Xiao Xi, you better shut your smelly mouth. This past day, if not for your chattering, would we have met with so many troubles? I had better say this first, should I die here, I will definitely rape you and kill you before I do, because only then will I rest in peace!"

Long Chen desperately threatened, he was cautiously climbing and leaving the Desolate Beast Domain, but the girl on his back was constantly talking, scaring him till cold sweat was formed on his back.

After encountering the life threatening situation with the Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf, Long Chen right now was still in trauma.

“Hng, you smelly brat, do you think I am an idiot. I have thought through it, now I am a sword, Lingxi Sword, so what can you do to me?”

The grey mountains ahead seemed to be connected with the grey clouds in the sky as if there was no end to them. The air was ever permeating with the stench of skeletons and rotting corpses. Long Chen frowned, and continued on his way.

“Half a month’s time will soon be gone, I want to leave this place, at the same time I need to enter the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. The intra-family competition is right around the corner, if I do not obtain the [Seal of the Dragons], and I do not stop that damned wedding that is following after, then I have no chance in using my ability to confirm my existence.

Lingxi casually said: “Right now you’re only in the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Wanting to reach the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm in half a month’s time, with your resources in this pathetic town, it will truly be hard to achieve.”

Lingxi spoke the truth, which made Long Chen feel even more disheartened.

He looked ahead at these large mountains lined across from him which were his only view, seemingly blocking his path, hence trapping him for an eternity.

“Not right.....”

Long Chen was suddenly enlightened, and thought: “A mountain is meant to be climbed over. The half a month’s time isn’t even over yet, why do I have to be discouraged? Father did not give me any permission to get discouraged!”

In his heart suddenly he was overwhelmed with tens of thousands of grand emotions.

Feeling that Long Chen’s eyes were suddenly beaming with a fiery gaze, Lingxi muttered: “What a strange fellow.....”

“Oh right, Xiao Xi, where do you think we’re at now? Our Central Granary State has 17 regions. Each region’s land is very vast, take for example Poplar Town which is currently situated in Primary Spirit Region; there are already hundreds of towns like this.

Lingxi rolled her eyes and said: “You are only a toad at the bottom of the well, this place where you’re located is called the Ten Thousand Nations Domain. This small Central Granary State is but only one of ten thousand. And the Ten Thousand Nations Domain is only a small part of the Long Ji Continent.

Long Chen was petrified.

He shook his head and said: “Girl, don’t think you can bluff me. How on earth can this place be that huge, I only heard that beyond the Central Granary State there are only a few more nations.”

“Hng! It’s your choice if you believe it or not.”

Footsteps were stepping on the dried wood, producing a crisp sound.

Long Chen did not bother with Lingxi anymore, and fully concentrated on trying to hasten his journey. The Desolate Beast Domain had plenty of large crevices, and only because of these crevices, was Long Chen able to hide his figure.

From the front came a wild beast roar.

“Xiao Xi, I sense that there’s danger ahead, if it’s not important then try not to speak loudly.”

Lingxi felt it as well, and quietly behaved after an “En” sound.

[TL Note: En is basically a confirmation, means “Yes.”]

Half a day’s time had passed crossing over mountain ranges. Long Chen raised his head and saw that the clouds far ahead did not look as ominous as before, a trace of sunlight beaming through, he rejoiced.

“Thankfully this muddle-headed girl did not go in deeper. According to my speed now, if we don’t encounter any dangerous situation, I estimate that we’ll be able to get out in 2-3 days’ time. However we have wasted a total of about 5 days, so in only 10 days, how can I be a match for Yang Ling Yue?”

The two continued on their journey.

If there was no danger, then they would bicker and chatter, teasing each other, if there was danger then the both of them would keep quiet out of fear.

As the days slowly passed, Lingxi too had felt the urgency in Long Chen. This day she suddenly said in a secretive tone: "Hey, I, I have detected the scent of an Enchanted Hill Ginseng. Hehe."

Long Chen was surprised, and replied quickly, "You detected the smell? Are you a dog? Dog noses are very sensitive indeed."

Lingxi was furious for a moment: "Bastard, I genuinely want to help you, but you call me a dog, I.....I don't wanna help you anymore, this way you will lose face at that intra-family competition. Hng!"

Long Chen hurriedly pleaded, and after sweet-talking her for a while more, even addressing her as his great aunt, finally she simmered down and said: "This is more like it, this Enchanted Hill Ginseng is an Intermediate Huang Grade and above spirit medicine. Although it doesn't have not much uses, but it can still help you a little."

Long Chen silently laughed: "This fellow's nose is so sensitive, I had better keep her by my side in the future."

Thinking of the idea of amassing a large pile of spirit medicine, Long Chen secretly made up his mind. The Lingxi who excitedly went to find the Enchanted Hill Ginseng at this point did not think that because of a moment's impulse, Long Chen had already claimed her as his own.

“Enchanted Hill Ginseng is a kind of strange spirit animal. Its body is originally the same as a spirit medicine, but after maturing to a hundred years, it is equipped with a spiritual nature and the ability to move around. So it’s extremely difficult to search for it. However it is still unable to escape my, Lingxi’s, grasp!”

“Go this way, go this way, we’re there soon, aiya, hurry and chase, it’s trying to escape, this way…….”

“Under the command of Lingxi, Long Chen chased after it rapidly. Earlier after going across a huge rock, he had already seen the Enchanted Hill Ginseng. This was a one meter tall humanoid, its whole body emitting a pale yellow light. A strong herbal smell was emitting from its body which made Long Chen go restless.

“This is the crucial item that will allow me to step up in the intra-family competition. No matter what, I must obtain it.”

Under the enforcement of the [Celestial Core Technique], Long Chen had explosively used an alarming speed and rushed towards the Enchanted Hill Ginseng.

Aggressively rushing into a valley, with the Enchanted Hill Ginseng right before his eyes, at this moment, Lingxi suddenly warned, “Hey hey, stop, hide!”

During the past three days, both of them had already had a mutual understanding. It didn’t matter that the Enchanted Hill Ginseng was right in front, because Long Chen knew the saying of as long as the green mountains are there, one need not worry about firewood. This Desolate Beast Domain is not a place where he can carelessly run around. So before everything else,

preservation of life was the most important. So when Lingxi said hide earlier, he had already made a roll, and fiercely dashed into a narrow crack inside the mountain.

[TL Note: (Idiom) “As long as the green mountains are there, one need not worry about firewood.” means when there is life there is hope.]

As he ran into the narrow crack, the Enchanted Hill Ginseng which was engrossed in running away had hurriedly stopped because in the valley’s darkness from around, several beast roars could be heard. In the next instant, a few black shadows rapidly dashed out, and surrounded the Enchanted Hill Ginseng. Heavy breathing could be heard from these beasts.

A total of five beasts, their whole body jet black, their body was compact and small similar to a black leopard, but their snout was sharper and longer. Their four claws were as if knife blades, and as they sprinted, dark red traces came out from their bodies and a smell reeking of blood hung in the air.

“This actually is.....Demonic Earth Hounds.....”

Phantom Star Wolf

Long Chen knew, just like the 9 levels of the Dragon Pulse Realm, demonic beasts were also categorized into 9 grades, and these 5 Demonic Earth Hounds, are an existence of the fourth level of the Huang grade, which is to say, each of their strength would perhaps be stronger than Long Chen's.

As for the Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf demonic beast, according to Lingxi, that was an existence of a super expert of the ninth level.

Long Chen coldly looked on at the Enchanted Hill Ginseng which had breached the territory of the five Demonic Earth Hounds and rejoiced.

"These five Demonic Earth Hounds, their cultivations are higher than mine, but I have the [Celestial Core Technique]. If I catch them off guard and attack them, there is still hope. But these Demonic Earth Hounds will never let me go, and at that time a huge disturbance will be created and I will definitely die in this Desolate Beast Domain.

"But if I don't take a gamble, in the intra-family competition, what right do I have to stand up against them?"

"Oh well, dying is better than living like a trash."

Thinking of that, Long Chen's eyes flashed, and as he was about to rise, Lingxi immediately stopped him. Lingxi growled and said: "Idiot, could it be that you don't want to live anymore? Spiritual medicine is everywhere, if you waste your life like this, then there will be absolutely nothing gained."

Seeing Lingxi saying this in such a pressing tone, made Long Chen able to make out the deeply concerned warning behind her words, which made him falter. And after much thinking, he seemed to realize that people who would treat him this well were not many. And even though they only knew each other for a short time, Lingxi had managed to move him.

“Xiao Xi, you are a good person. Don’t worry, I won’t mess around, I still need to protect you.”

“Cheh, I was a good person since growing up, okay?”

One could hear that it was the first time that this girl was being praised by someone, so although her reply wasn’t that courteous but her shy tone had given it away.

The Demonic Earth Hounds drew closer, and Long Chen did not dare to speak.

Looking at the Demonic Earth Hounds which were about to bring the Enchanted Hill Ginseng back with them, Lingxi suddenly said softly: “There is another demonic beast approaching.....”

Long Chen was startled, and then he actually saw the Demonic Earth Hounds’ hair stand on end. Their eyes flashed viciously and growled while looking towards the opening of the valley because at this moment, a huge figure gradually walked out from the darkness.

Suddenly there was a bright light that had flashed across. Long Chen squinted, and under the dimming starlight, the demonic beast showed its form. This was a demonic beast in the shape of a wolf, its body wasn’t as big as the Moon

Devouring Demonic Wolf's but it was well built. Silver hair covered its body, and at this moment its hair suddenly reflected the essence of the starlight. Long Chen could even feel that the starlight from the sky was being absorbed by the wolf's body right at this very moment.

"This is.....a Phantom Star Wolf at the fifth level of the Huang grade.....usually it absorbs starlight for cultivation, hence its body is strongly reinforced." Lingxi's voice entered Long Chen's ears.

It was actually a fifth level of the Huang grade so it was even more difficult for Long Chen to deal with. At this point he did not even dare to breathe.

The Phantom Star Wolf walked into the valley, faced the five Demonic Earth Hounds and growled loudly.

As if already provoked, the Phantom Star Wolf had rushed towards the Demonic Earth Hounds. Long Chen and Lingxi did not dare to make another sound and fervently watched.

The fact that the Phantom Star Wolf was also an expert with a reinforced body did not exceed Long Chen's expectations. After a pounce and a claw scratch, the mountain rocks were grounded to dust. But the Demonic Earth Hounds weren't weak either so they charged towards it. While letting out a howl, their fangs were showing a horrible scene.

"These Demonic Earth Hounds' claw technique.....actually has a kind of martial style, between an attack and retreat. It is not weaker than basic martial techniques. But this Phantom Star Wolf is even more formidable....."

Very soon, the Phantom Star Wolf's strength had overwhelmed the Demonic Earth Hounds. Although the pack had a frightening strength, but under the Phantom Star Wolf's sharp claws and fangs, they were all either beaten to death or suffered from injuries quickly. Not even a minute had passed but the five Demonic Earth Hounds had already collapsed to the ground.

The Phantom Star Wolf used its snout and sniffed at the quivering Enchanted Hill Ginseng and let out an excited growl. The starlight in the sky rushed forth, and only then did the Phantom Star Wolf walk away satisfied.

"This demonic beast took away the Enchanted Hill Ginseng, hurry, we must follow it and take a look."

This cowardly Lingxi, had actually taken the initiative to follow it. Because Long Chen was convinced she had a great background he trusted in her judgement as well. However at that instant he rushed to the side of the five Demonic Earth Hounds and took out the Demonic Earth Hounds' energy cores from their bodies.

"These things can change into quite a few treasures."

"You greedy brat, hurry up and give chase to the Phantom Star Wolf, but you definitely cannot let him find out, if not you will definitely die."

Compared to Long Chen, Lingxi was even more anxious.

The Phantom Star Wolf did not walk away at a fast pace, so after Long Chen had obtained the energy core, he caught up very soon with it, but he only dared to watch it from afar.

“Xiao Xi, you let me follow him so pressingly, what is the purpose for this actually? The Enchanted Hill Ginseng has already been taken, so we are left with nothing.”

Lingxi anxiously said: “It took the Enchanted Hill Ginseng, but normally when demonic beasts find spiritual medicine they take it as a regular meal. This is such a waste since demonic beasts don’t refine it. Anyway this Phantom Star Wolf most likely is the king of this area, so I reckon its cave has a reserve of these spiritual medicines. Normally demonic beasts love to stash objects which can be eaten, the more they stash the happier they get, so let’s follow it, and find its cave, we won’t go wrong with this choice.”

After Lingxi said so much, only then did Long Chen understand, and silently thought: “If it’s just like what Lingxi said, this time if I were to follow, and if there’s any bounty to be taken, it definitely won’t be considered as a waste of my time.”

Before an hour passed, the Phantom Star Wolf had stopped in front of a cave, and went in quickly. Long Chen was observing it from behind a rock outside of the cave.

“Xiao Xi, what should we do now?”

Xiao Xi anxiously said: “Just wait for now, naturally I have a good plan.”

This girl was being so mysterious but Long Chen couldn’t care less. He watched concentrated on the cave, and not long later, that Phantom Star Wolf had actually come out from the cave. It lifted its head and then glanced around. Long Chen hurriedly stilled his aura and breath, not daring to move. However in his heart he was starting to panic.

After observing the surroundings at the entrance of the cave for a while, the Phantom Star Wolf proudly howled. Its four limbs started moving on the ground and moments later it disappeared without a trace in front of Long Chen's eyes.

Lingxi happily said: "As expected, this was within my calculations. You scoundrel, hurry up and enter the cave, there will definitely be some good stuff inside."

Even if she did not make this point, Long Chen knew, the Phantom Star Wolf only entered for a little while, so if it had eaten the Enchanted Hill Ginseng he couldn't have possibly come out so quickly.

Long Chen aggressively rushed into the cave. The cave was dark as well as deep, and a heavy stench of wolf's musk invaded the nose.

"This is definitely a Phantom Star Wolf's cave."

Very soon, the four walls began to light up. Long Chen rushed into a large semicircular space inside. This was the real home of the Phantom Star Wolf. Although there was a putrid smell from the demonic beast's droppings, but the spiritual medicine's fragrance was filling the nest completely.

"Enchanted Hill Ginseng, there's actually two stalks here.....Long Chen, your luck is a little too much. Anyway, there's no time to lose, hurry up and collect these things."

Lingxi just finished her speech, and Long Chen had already started working on it. Those two stalks of Enchanted Hill Ginseng, very soon were held in his arms.

Suddenly, in his heart there was a bad premonition.

“Ah, I forgot, because the Enchanted Hill Ginseng loves to run about, that Phantom Star Wolf has probably used some methods to put a barrier around it. But now when you took the Enchanted Hill Ginseng, I’m afraid it already knows.”

Long Chen’s face turned red with anger, and scolded: “To hell with your mother, why didn’t you say so earlier, I will be done in by you!”

Without any time to lose, the items had already been retrieved and he madly rushed towards the exit. Lingxi because of being in the wrong, had temporarily kept quiet and was dejectedly following Long Chen.

Faintly sensing the exit, at a place not too far away from the cave, there came a furious wolf’s howl, which rang loudly in the night sky. Long Chen’s heart had already frozen by half due to fear, and dashed out of the cave.

“That way.” Lingxi pointed to a direction.

Long Chen hurriedly escaped towards that direction, he could feel that the heavy breathing which was coming from behind was gradually coming closer and closer.

“If I were to die this time, I will definitely first grab you out from this broken sword and rape you!”

“Wu……I, I really didn’t do it on purpose, but just forgot for a moment…… wuu wuuu……”

Fairy From The Heavens

Long Chen looked behind, and was so scared that he thought his soul had already left him. Behind him there was a pair of bloodshot eyes, howling and chasing after him. The gap between them was about 20 meters. At this rate under a minute, he will surely die.

“I have so many tasks that are unfinished, but yet I’m about to die in a place like this?”

He was extremely unwilling, and let out roars in succession, escaping with all his might. But that demonic beast’s speed was too fast, and in the bat of an eye, Long Chen could already smell its scent.

The scent of a wolf.

“To hell with your mother, I don’t believe I can’t win against a wild beast like you!”

His blood boiling from within, he knew that at this rate, when the demonic beast will have reached up to him, it will definitely penetrate his body in a hit. So at the most crucial moment, he suddenly turned his body, and with a loud shout, starlight was sent out explosively from his body as if a meteorite that had fallen from the outer sky. He then sent a punch towards his opponent!

“Eat this [Falling Star Fist] attack of mine! Now die to me!”

With a loud bang, the Phantom Star Wolf let out a furious cry, and retaliated

with a claw attack. Coupled with its massive frame it sent the claw attack to collide against Long Chen's [Falling Star Fist]. After breaking the [Falling Star Fist], it hit Long Chen's body. Long Chen instantly spurted out a mouthful of fresh blood, and was sent flying back where he smashed into the floor.

“Even the [Falling Star Fist] cannot hold him back!”

The attack earlier had shocked all of the blood in Long Chen's body. His battle strength temporarily shaved off by half. And at this moment, the Phantom Star Wolf once again let out another angry growl and sent another claw flying towards Long Chen's head. If it hit, his head would definitely be smashed into pieces!

As he saw the massive incoming attack that was coming from the strongest opponent Long Chen had ever met, it seemed like his defenses were nonexistent. As the cold flash gradually closed in on his head, Long Chen suddenly laughed out loudly. He then clenched his fist tightly, and madly snarled: “You want to get rid of me with just your power, I'm not going to be that easy!”

Once again, he ferociously drew out all the energy he had left, and used all his strength and Qi for the [Celestial Core Technique]. As if a meteorite that was unafraid of death, he sent a punch towards the Phantom Star Wolf!

He had that kind of feeling where his life was in his hands and he could lose it at any point in time. That had already brought forth all his madness and rage!

Although he was hurt, but in truth, right now the attack that was formed, was the strongest attack he has ever mustered. Using [Falling Star Fist] and practically drawing out all the Qi from his body.

“Idiot, why are you fighting for your life!”

At this time, a sobbing voice was heard from behind Long Chen. His view went blurry, and suddenly there was a flash of misty light appearing in front of him. In that instant, Long Chen suddenly felt like he was in a dream.

The Lingxi sword floated in front of him, and at this moment the Lingxi sword suddenly had a white mist rushing forth from it. Momentarily hazing his vision, a figure was formed by the mist that came from the Lingxi sword. Long Chen merely saw her rear view but two words immediately surfaced from his brain.

“A fairy.....”

This maiden within the mist had silky and shiny black hair which was curled around her temples, and her skin was like jade porcelain. Light was gently falling onto her. She was wearing a light blue skirt on her petite waist and her beauty was so profound that her sharp features were flawless with no signs of imperfections. Her beauty was simply otherworldly.

Despite catching only a glimpse of her figure, he was strongly convinced that she was very beautiful.

The injury he had sustained earlier in fact was more serious than he had thought, but it's just that he was overdoing it because he did not want to die in that place. And because of that it did not feel that it was too serious. The moment Lingxi emerged from the sword, Long Chen suddenly felt at peace within his heart.

Then an earth shattering pain filled his whole body. And he, who had already

been injured because of drawing all the Qi from his body, at this moment was spent. Suddenly, his consciousness became more and more blurry, and the beautiful figure in front of his eyes was also vanishing gradually.

A good while later he woke up and discovered himself to be in the middle of two big rocks. He raised his head and saw that the sky was still grey, which showed that he was still in the Desolate Beast Domain.

Although his body was still in pain, he felt that the injuries were nothing serious anymore. Long Chen thought of the scene before he fainted, and he panicked, hurriedly calling out: “Xiao Xi, where are you?”

“Over here.”

A feeble voice was heard, and only then did Long Chen look at the Lingxi sword which was lying beside him on top of a huge rock. The scene of him fainting was still vivid for Long Chen. And as he saw Lingxi, his heart could not help but make him feel closer to her. The astounding beauty that Lingxi had displayed, he had all remembered in his heart.

Lingxi’s voice seemed to be feeble, so he was worried and anxiously asked: “Are you still okay?”

“I’m fine.....But it is really tiring, I don’t even have the strength to speak anymore. Since you have already woken up, I will be going to get a good sleep. If you disturb me, then I will take your life.....Ugh.....”

During the part where she was finishing her sentence, she was already in a half conscious state.

“It hasn’t been that long and you’re already sleeping, you are indeed a pig.”

Long Chen smiled and scolded her at the same time. However he thought about the fact that this maiden not only saved him, but also endured her exhaustion and feebleness and did not sleep while he was in a coma.

“This compassion, how can I not understand? Oh well, this girl is also all by herself. So I, Long Chen, will properly repay her in the future!”

Long Chen already knew that Lingxi’s physical body had been mysteriously destroyed by this steel sword, after which her soul had been absorbed into it.

“That Phantom Star Wolf most likely was beaten by Lingxi and it retreated. Right now I have gotten two stalks of Enchanted Hill Ginseng, so this is the right time to bring my level up.”

After thinking of this, he observed his surroundings. And after making sure it was safe, only then did he take the Enchanted Hill Ginseng out and consume one stalk. Very soon, Long Chen could feel that a wave of scorching strength rushed towards his dantian.

“This hot energy, should be the spiritual medicinal essence. I must take this opportunity to refine this energy and convert it into Qi.”

Time passes by.

An hour later, the herbal energy from a stalk of Enchanted Hill Ginseng had

already been completely consumed. Long Chen frowned and then said: “Enchanted Hill Ginseng is a medium grade spiritual medicine. Just one may not be enough for me to have enough Qi to break through the fourth Dragon Vein, so I will consume another stalk. My enlightenment of the [Celestial Core Technique] has made my veins more resilient, so I can definitely endure this huge herbal energy!”

Thinking of this he consumed the other stalk.

A very dense herbal smell very soon began to diffuse. Long Chen hurriedly refined it and the Qi in his dantian was growing more and more, gradually reaching to a critical point, and even exceeding it.

“All is complete, this time it will allow me to rush into the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Every three levels in the Dragon Pulse Realm there is a new threshold. Now I have entered the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, this will definitely allow my strength to increase once again. If I were to meet with that Phantom Star Wolf again, I would at least have a chance to resist!

The vast Qi was as if a torrential flood surged towards the fourth Dragon Vein. The breakthrough to the fourth Dragon Vein was several times more difficult than the third Dragon Vein. On Long Chen’s first attempt he had met with strong resistance immediately.

“Cultivation in the Dragon Pulse Realm is indeed very challenging. I have acquired my father’s Qi, as well as 2 Enchanted Hill Ginseng. To think that I still cannot break through..... However, I haven’t given it my all yet!”

Gritting his teeth, Long Chen mobilised all his Qi and then grandly rumbled and charged towards the fourth Dragon Vein. A moment later the cry of a Dragon

resounded from within his body.

An hour later, there was a loud boom and a surge of strong energy fled towards his four limbs. Long Chen stood up and his eyes filled with vigor.

Clenching his fist, he felt his own formidable strength.

“So this is the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. It is indeed strong, but Yang Zhan that fellow even with this might had actually lost to me, he really is trash.”

He looked towards the Lingxi sword and said: “Lingxi rashly emerged from the sword, I’m afraid it won’t be that easy for her to wake up. There aren’t many days left before the intra-family competition, so I mustn’t waste any more time and take the opportunity to cultivate the [Celestial Core Technique] while she is sleeping. And after stabilising my condition in the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, I shall try again to break through the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

As his ability had seen some improvements, Long Chen’s flustered heart by now had calmed down. He sat on the ground, and continued to practice cultivation.

DBWG – Chapter 14

Mastery of [Celestial Core Technique]

Four days have passed from the time when Long Chen had gotten injured to the time when Lingxi had awakened. Long Chen figured out the current time, and realized that the intra-family competition will be held in a few days' time.

“If I don't master the [Celestial Core Technique], I will still be in the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm facing against Yang Lingyue who is at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. It's still not enough.....”

Long Chen frowned, and decided to leave once Lingxi woke up.

Only after four days later did Lingxi wake up.

Looking at the huge progress in Long Chen's cultivation, she quickly said: “Looking at the fact that you have refined the Enchanted Hill Ginseng, now your true battle ability can stand against the Phantom Star Wolf. Also the intra-family competition isn't that many days away so we had better go to its cave.”

Long Chen stared blankly and said: “Do we still need to go there? All the advantages it had were already cleared by us.”

“You do not know, but for you the real treasure is that demonic beast itself.” Lingxi whispered.

“I don't know what you're trying to pull off by being so mysterious.”

Although he was suspicious, Long Chen still chose to believe in Lingxi. So the both of them headed to the nest of the Phantom Star Wolf.

“Xiao Xi, what exactly is this Phantom Star Wolf’s treasure that you say will benefit me?”

“The Phantom Star Wolf’s fur is very unique. It can automatically absorb starlight on its own. And after absorbing it, the fur will strangely become hardened, that is why it can match a core technique of some cultivators. Usually, capturing the Phantom Star Wolf you can obtain a lot of money because of this fur. Also this fur itself is hugely beneficial for your [Celestial Core Technique]!”

After listening to Lingxi’s explanation, Long Chen was secretly speechless. There are indeed many wonders between heaven and earth.

Thinking that the Phantom Star Wolf’s fur will be beneficial to his [Celestial Core Technique], Long Chen knew that this time he had to take a gamble. And if he wins, then he can fulfill Long Qinglan’s wishes.

Long Chen originally thought that the reason Lingxi cared about the Phantom Star Wolf, was for her self-interest, not for him.

“Although this girl is muddle-headed and headstrong, but she is a very good person deep down.”

For Lingxi, and also for Long Qinglan, this time he had to go all or nothing. And now that he had entered the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he was stronger by several times, so there was still a huge chance of defeating the Phantom Star Wolf.

“Dragon Warrior, this extremely unknown title that no one knows about, what exactly does it entail. A mysterious guy like my father was holding it in such high esteem.....”

Very soon, they appeared in front of the cave once again.

Lingxi nervously said: “The physical body of the Phantom Star Wolf is extremely strong, not inferior to yours, so if you are unable to defeat it, it’s okay to escape. I only wanted to give you a chance for another breakthrough to prepare for the intra-family competition, but don’t throw your life away for this.”

Long Chen smiled and said: “No problem, I understand your intentions, but I, Long Chen, am not so easily bullied.”

Placing the Lingxi sword on the floor, Long Chen said: “Just watch how I trample this little beast.”

That strong confidence had made Lingxi lose her bearings for a little.

“Bad guy.”

She scolded him in her heart.

Long Chen walked open and aboveboard towards the entrance of the cave, and drew out his energy from both the Enlightenment level of the [Celestial Core Technique], as well as the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

This way, the Phantom Star Wolf inside the cave will immediately be able to sense Long Chen's presence.

The beast's awareness of its surroundings was extremely high, and Long Chen had trespassed on its territory. So naturally he deserved to die in its eyes.

After coming out and realising that it was the person who stole his stash, the Phantom Star Wolf roared and without another word, came charging at Long Chen.

On the demonic beast's chest there were still some traces of blood. Long Chen knew that it was Lingxi who had done this, so most likely this was the reason why Lingxi was confident enough to let Long Chen have this battle.

However, the speed and strength of the Phantom Star Wolf was still making his pupils shrink.

Looking at the might of the Phantom Star Wolf, Lingxi was also anxious, afraid that she had committed a bad deed.

"Don't move, I won't lose!"

Long Chen's voice rang beside her ears, and while looking ahead at the peerless teenager that had

already commenced battle with the opponent, Lingxi decided and in the end she didn't move.

“Alright, I believe in you.”

She was cheering silently for Long Chen.

At this time Long Chen had used all the strength from the Enlightenment level of the [Celestial Core Technique]. Not only had his defenses greatly risen, but there was also a faintly discernable starlight aura that was swirling around his body like countless blades. If the aura were to be touched by an ordinary human, they would have been harmed by the sharpness of the aura!

Also, the physical body at this point connected with his new Qi that had been increased after breaking through. Long Chen’s strength had dramatically risen overall. Before he had no resistance against the Phantom Star Wolf, but now he could actually face it head on.

With a loud bang the [Ferocious Tiger Punch] and the Phantom Star Wolf had clashed. Although the Phantom Star Wolf’s physical shape was much larger than Long Chen’s, both of them were evenly matched so they parted with another bang. The Phantom Star Wolf’s formidable might had made Long Chen’s arms tremble, but Long Chen’s [Celestial Core Technique] had also cut the opponent with its swirling blade aura.

Its four limbs were strewn with cuts from the [Celestial Core Technique]’s blade aura, which had angered it even more. The Phantom Star Wolf let out a roar and once again charged rapidly towards Long Chen. Its demonic aura rose to the surface, and it then sent a claw attack towards Long Chen.

“Although the imposing size of a wild beast is frightening, and the attack power is even more terrifying, but my guts are bigger than your body so I am not

afraid of you!”

The Phantom Star Wolf’s attack was vicious as each attack was a fatal one. But Long Chen was not to be underestimated, deep inside he also had a very vicious character, only that it was concealed for over ten years, but it was starting to show itself during this battle. Although the Phantom Star Wolf was mighty, but it was actually retreating from Long Chen’s continuous barrage of attacks!

The [Celestial Core Technique] had allowed Long Chen to have very acute reflexes and dexterity in the battle. The Phantom Star Wolf was completely attacking like a wild beast, so he used the same method of fighting as a tactic against the beast.

As if a tornado, Long Chen’s kick had sent the opponent retreating several tens of feet backwards. And with a shout, he gathered energy in his legs and dashed forward, crashing against the Phantom Star Wolf like a meteorite.

“Only after entering the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, can I use the true might of the [Falling Star Fist]. So I shall let you taste this attack which was unable to withstand a blow of yours before.

“[Falling Star Fist], destroyer of heaven and earth!”

With a loud boom, an enormous might was sent and the Phantom Star Wolf was sent flying into a wall on the mountain. At that moment, the spot where it had been hit by the [Falling Star Fist] had already turned scarlet red, and the wall behind him even had a spider web crack!

After landing another blow on the Phantom Star Wolf’s body, Long Chen

immediately grabbed a hold of its head.

At this moment in the Phantom Star Wolf's eyes, it still held the vicious gaze of a demonic beast. However after being hit continuously, it already didn't have much energy left to resist. So with Long Chen's final attack ruthlessly smashing onto its lower jaw, its mandible immediately cracked into pieces and the shrapnel had pierced the brains of the Phantom Star Wolf. With a whimper, it collapsed softly onto the ground.

Looking at this scene, only then did Lingxi heave a sigh of relief.

Earlier when she realised the Phantom Star Wolf had turned stronger, she was so nervous as if on the brink of death. She knew exactly how much ability Long Chen had. This time being able to beat the Phantom Star Wolf, was only because of his battle method which was even more savage than a wild beast's.

"This fellow.....is really a freak. In a battle he is so terrifying. Usually he speaks coarsely which is not pleasant to listen to at all, but when he laughs he sure seems to be good-looking....."

Thinking of which, Lingxi suddenly had a feeling of warmth.

At this point, Long Chen had already dragged the enormous body of the Phantom Star Wolf and was walking towards Lingxi's side. Long Chen smugly asked: "Girl, what's up with you? Have you been enthralled by the battle scene and my formidable might?"

Lingxi originally thought that this fellow was not bad, but after being spoken to like that, she was grossed out for half a day, and said: "In your dreams! A young

lady like me would never fall for a toad like you!”

Long Chen laughed heartily, and changed back to the main topic. Frowning his head and depressingly looking at the Phantom Star Wolf he said: “Hey, why aren’t you speaking? Hurry up and tell me, your big brother, how to use this fur.”

After being asked, Lingxi was excited and suddenly said: “What other way is there, of course it is to pull out all the fur, swallow it and then refine it inside your stomach, this way it will be a great success!”

Long Chen was stumped. Looking at the Phantom Star Wolf, his face turned bitter, and stuttered: “You.....You’re asking me to eat this bastard’s fur? I actually have to eat fur?”

“Yes, eat its fur.....”

Long Chen gave a cry of XX, and fell to the ground.

[TL Note: The author wrote XX, but from the context one can see that he means “Fuck”.]

One hour later.

Long Chen sat on the ground, and on the surface of his skin, starlight was faintly emerging from it, and was slowly becoming more and more concentrated. His eyes went round and looked on. His two eyeballs as if turning into meteorites, were letting out a dazzling ray of light.

As for what lay behind him, it was the Phantom Star Wolf's corpse which had been XX.

[TL Note: Again the author wrote XX, but from the context one can see that he means "fucked over badly".]

This scene could remind people to think of the saying, to rape first and kill later.

Lingxi stared blankly at Long Chen who was deep in concentration, and gave off a silly smile. After a while, her smile froze suddenly.

"Really, what am I thinking about, he is just a weak cultivator in a desolated area like this. As for me.....I cannot have such deep dealings with him. If he can really help me recover my physical body, I will just help him again in the future."

At this moment Long Chen had reached an important point in the cultivation.

"The fur of this dog thing is soft, but once it enters the body, it is rather like blades piercing through. A wave of destructive force is violently thrashing about in my body, damaging it. This energy should be the power of the stars!"

Bearing the intense pain, Long Chen suddenly applied the [Celestial Core Technique], and cultivated the technique with the rebellious energy of the starlight within him. Under this application the goal was to combine both the wild energy and Long Chen's [Celestial Core Technique]. It succeeded and his physical body was becoming stronger gradually.

Thinking of his pathetic state from an hour ago, Long Chen's gut had turned

over a few times. Under the incitement of Lingxi, he had really eaten that disgusting fur. Thinking about it, while this was indeed pathetic, but for the sake of getting stronger he has to make sacrifices.

The physical body was being tempered under the immeasurable power of the starlight and was continuously becoming stronger. After finally reaching a critical point, with a loud bang, Long Chen's body started emitting out a flash of swirling starlight, at which point an enormous force was sent out in all four directions!

Long Chen stood up abruptly, and felt the immense strength within him. Looking closely at his skin, faint traces of starlight could be seen, as if blades were flashing within. His eyes were letting out a dazzling light, as if no different from the stars up in the night sky.

“The mastery of the [Celestial Core Technique] is actually so powerful?”

He looked towards the direction of Poplar Town.

“Yang family, I am coming back.....”

Intra Family Meet

On the 25th of July, for the intra-family competition, the Yang family in Poplar Town had earnestly invited all the influent factions to the match.

The east side of the Yang family residence had a huge courtyard to practice martial techniques. The seats for the banquet had already been laid out. Right now it was just past noon, the esteemed guests had long since had their meal, and what followed next was the commencement of the Yang family intra-family competition. To the younger generation of the Yang family who were in the match, it was a kind of test to see if they would succumb to public pressure. On the other hand, as the Yang family was one of the two big families in Poplar Town, it was also a method to display its formidable might in front of the other families.

In front of the many platforms for sparring, there was a taller platform, where the elders of the Yang family were seated. Because the Yang family was a fairly new addition to Poplar Town's forces, their numbers weren't many. Amongst them there was a white haired, tall and sturdy old man with an electrifying gaze. This old man was the Yang family's founder.

From amongst the Yang family, Yang Qingxuan, Yang Xueqing and other elders, were seated on the side of the founder.

On Yang Xueqing's side, there was a notable figure from the Bai family. Although the founder of the Bai family did not come, but instead his third son Bai Zhanxiong and also his fourth son had come. Other than that there was also a highly skilled young man that stood behind Bai Zhanxiong, which was Bai Shiji who was courting Yang Lingyue. Bai Shiji was the elder brother of Bai Shi Xun. He is the eldest son of Bai Zhanxiong, and his might.....had dominated the younger

generation of Poplar Town.

The other factions of Poplar Town had been seated separately. The other members of the Yang family also did not have a seat on the higher platform, so they gathered outside the platform to watch.

At this moment, the Yang family's founder faced Bai Zhanxiong and laughed, saying: "Brother Bai is my blood brother, so Zhan Er you do not need to be so courteous. I will be busy running the family's intra-family competition, so I'm afraid that I will not be able to play host well for you, so I'll let Qing Er accompany you throughout the competition.

[TL Note: Adding Er to a name is a form of endearment in the Chinese language.]

Bai Zhanxiong hurriedly laughed and said: "I have often come to the Yang family, and each time it was Sister Qing who has accompanied me. So I am already familiar with this place, uncle Yang please go ahead with the hosting of the intra-family competition. I myself also want to admire and see the talent of the Yang family's younger generation."

Yang Xueqing who was beside Bai Zhanxiong, looked towards him and smiled with hidden sentiments.

Above the sparring platform, each battle had been displayed magnificently, and the match was using an elimination format. With the strong challengers crossing through each round, the crowd in attendance was continuously letting out gasps of admiration. Both the Bai and the Yang families were nodding in approval at the Yang family's younger generation's ability.

The first son of the Yang family founder, Yang Qingxuan turned over and looked at a young man behind him, saying: “Wu Er, what do you think of this?”

This young man had similar looks to Yang Qingxuan. He had a hardened face as if chiseled by blades, and his waist was like a thick pole. It was a hard to come by talent, and he was ranked first in the youngest generation of the Yang family, he was Yang Wu.

He had already obtained the [Seal of the Dragons], and cultivated in it for a period of time already.

“Sister Lingyue is the only one at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, which is extremely good. However Lingqing who has easily won Yang Qiong earlier, did surprise me a little. Looking at Lingqing, it seemed like she had completely mastered the [Falling Star Fist], so breaking through the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm is only a matter of time. However this time she still isn’t a match for Lingyue.”

Yang Wu had analyzed clearly, and Yang Qingxuan nodded his head saying: “How come I do not see Second Brother here? Although Second Brother has lost his son, but his daughter is still outstanding, I think it could console him a little.”

Yang Wu’s eyes flashed coldly and said: “Second Uncle has left earlier. I think it was to nurture his sorrow. Father, Third Aunt’s son, I have only seen him a few times. But from what I heard he was completely playing the role of a servant. I cannot fathom how he could have beaten Zhan Er.”

“Most likely he was enduring humiliation all this time while concealing his strength. If not who could ever raise his cultivation to the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm in such a short period of time. But his innate talent is not

bad, just that.....his fate is no good.”

“So what if his talent is not bad, if his mind is evil, and he’s scheming to kill his own brethren, that reason alone should be enough for him to be chopped into a thousand pieces. Oh yes, father, previously it seems that he wanted to beat Lingyue in the intra-family competition, do you think he will appear today?”

Yang Qingxuan smiled and said: “It is only but a lie to Lingyue, not even worth mentioning. Second Brother wants his life so unless he was courting his own death, would he still dare to come back?”

Just as Yang Wu was about to reply, suddenly there was an announcement in the courtyard.

“Everyone, the intra-family competition of our Yang family’s youngest generation is coming to an end. The final two that emerged will be having a final battle, and the winner will be rewarded with the best technique scroll we have, the [Seal of the Dragons].”

“The final battle! On the platform we have: Yang Lingyue, and Yang Lingqing!”

Bai Zhanxiong faintly smiled and said: “Sister Qing, the ladies in your Yang family are sure enough not ordinary, that even the final battle is to be conducted between two girls.”

Looking at Bai Zhanxiong’s flattery, Yang Xueqing felt sweetened inside, and replied: “Bai family’s younger generation is even more extraordinary, Bai Shiji is already in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and your elder brother’s son, Bai Shi Chen, has a reputation as the strongest of Poplar Town’s younger

generation. Yang Wu compared to him, is still falling short.”

“Chen Er that kid is indeed not bad, almost catching up to me already.” said Bai Zhanxiong.

On the platform, Yang Lingqing batted an eyelid below. The person which had surfaced on her mind was not here.

“He definitely will not dare to come here, that’s right, who would risk their life for a bet like that.”

Below the platform, the crowd had formed a discussion.

“What do you guys say, who will exactly emerge as the winner?”

“Bullshit, of course it will be Lingyue sister, there is a difference of one level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.”

“Lingyue obtaining the [Seal of the Dragons] is the crowd’s predicted outcome.”

“You guys don’t remember that kid anymore? The one who had bet that he will meet Lingyue in the intra-family competition? Back then I had said that he had only fabricated a lie to make Lingyue let him go; now you see?”

“Cheh, everyone already knows it was just a joke without you mentioning it.”

On the platform, Yang Lingyue and Yang Lingqing had already begun their battle.

“[Falling Star Fist]!”

“[Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil]!”

An enormous starlight had whistled and enveloped the entire platform. Yang Lingqing had cultivated tirelessly for many years, only for this very moment. So this punch had contained all her might that was at the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Adding Long Chen’s pointers, this [Falling Star Fist] attack, had already closed up to the might of the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!

“At the magnitude of the [Falling Star Fist], Yang Lingyue was also shocked a little. Her expression turned cold, thinking: “Xiao Qing’s age is smaller than mine by two years, I’m afraid two years later she will have long entered the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. At that time her nurturing coming from the family will be even greater than mine, this isn’t good.”

Outside the platform, Yang Xueqing frowned and said: “Xiao Qing’s improvement is very fast, earlier Yue Er had felt a threat so she even displayed the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil].”

At the exhibit of the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil], it had caused the crowd to applaud repeatedly.

The Yang family founder looked on, his gaze torched.

“These two from the younger generation, have practiced their martial

techniques well. Yue Er's [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] can continuously send out 7 fingers, but Xiao Qing has completely comprehended the [Falling Star Fist] and even went beyond that. If the two cultivators' Qi was the same, Xiao Qing would emerge as the victor."

The Yang family founder's strength was mighty, so the battle's situation was entirely captured in his eyes. He suddenly thought of a person, and looked around.

"That fellow who had also learnt the [Falling Star Fist], most likely will not appear here anymore. To him the Yang family is a mountain of daggers and a sea of fire....."

[TL Note: (Idiom) "Mountain of daggers and a sea of fire" means extreme danger.]

Long Chen had calculated well, although he had caused Yang Zhan's death, but the fact that he learnt the [Falling Star Fist] within 3 days had left the Yang family founder feeling astonished.

The [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] under Yang Lingyue's huge Qi, had continuously wore down Yang Lingqing's [Falling Star Fist]. Yang Lingqing perspired heavily and started to control her Qi once again, but to no avail. In the end, when Yang Lingyue used the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] and sent out the fifth finger, Yang Lingqing finally lost her resistance, and was hit off the stage.

The battle results were clear, Yang Lingyue was wearing a smiling expression and was standing on the stage receiving the applause that sounded like a waterfall. Looking up at the Yang family founder and the Yang family members,

they also had smiled in appreciation.

Even more so for Yang Lingyue's father, the eldest son of the Yang family's founder, Yang Qingxuan. Yang Qingxuan could not even close his mouth without smiling.

"And the winner for today's intra-family competition is, Yang Lingyue!"

Bai Zhanxiong and Yang Xueqing looked at each other and smiled, saying: "Only the fact that she has been under your guidance, has allowed Lingyue to have such a spirit that is comparable even to a man's might!"

Yang Xueqing smiled lightly and said: "Brother Bai, you are too kind. Guiding the family's younger generation is Xueqing's responsibility within the family."

She looked on at the excited Lingyue, and was happy in her heart too. Long Chen's bet, she had heard of it too, and she was worried that he would come running here not knowing what's good for him. But from the looks of it, he was indeed a coward.

"The exact same style as his father, a loud thunder, but light rain."

[TL Note: (Idiom) "Loud thunder, but light rain." is the English equivalent of "All bark and no bite."]

As for the two sons beside Bai Zhanxiong, Yang Xueqing was very satisfied with them. Especially the eldest son Bai Shiji, he had always displayed courtesy towards her. And as for the younger son, thinking of that matter, Yang Xueqing's eyes flashed coldly.

“If I knew who it was that had used such a cruel underhanded method, I would definitely make even his corpse disappear!”

At this moment, the Yang family founder started laughing loudly and stood up. Walking lightly up to the stage, everyone could see the sheepskin binded scroll held in his hands. This was naturally the [Seal of the Dragons].

A few small factions could not help but give out an envious look.

The Yang family’s founder kindly looked at Yang Lingyue and said: “Xiao Yue Er, today you have emerged as the champion. I, your grandfather, will now hand over this [Seal of the Dragons] to you, I hope you can work hard and step into the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm as soon as possible. I hope you comprehend it well and increase the glory of our great Yang family!”

“Yes, Yue Er thanks grandfather, as well as the elders present!”

The item that she had been yearning for had finally landed in front of her, naturally Yang Lingyue was fervently excited.

Outside the platform, Yang Lingqing was looking at this scene and had a tinge of bitterness in her heart because that too was something she had long since yearned for.

“This time being unable to obtain the [Seal of the Dragons], I can only work harder, and break through the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, that way I may still have a chance.”

Suddenly, she felt a pat on her back. Yang Lingqing thought it was just another sister, but after looking back and seeing the smiling face, she was tongue-tied.

“You.....You really came back?!”

DBWG – Chapter 16

[Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil]

“You.....You really came back?!”

Long Chen smiled indifferently near the stage, and ridiculed: “Earlier you were making a racket saying you would obtain the [Seal of the Dragons], but in the end, the only result is you ending up being so dejected? You are really an embarrassing fellow. Oh well, let me take your place and fight for you.”

Yang Lingqing really did not expect Long Chen would actually come, so at this moment her brain was short circuited. This fellow with the brimming smile, had not allowed her to recover. But when she thought of her brother’s death being caused indirectly because of him, her face turned cold and sternly said: “You traitor, return my brother’s life back to me!”

With this shout, it had momentarily attracted the gazes of everyone to look over.

The commotion filled the entire stage. Long Chen raised his head up, and while his gaze was falling on quite a number of people, he smirked at them. Under the huge pressure, he straightened his back and walked up to the platform.

At this point, the Yang family founder was handing over the [Seal of the Dragons] to Yang Lingyue!

Looking at Long Chen appearing, all the people who were witnessing this scene had their pupils shrinking. And quite a few of those faces did not have good intentions. Amongst them one of the gazes that was also the fiercest belonged

to Yang Xueqing. Just as she was about to stand up, Bai Zhanxiong suddenly held her back and softly said: “Sister Qing, this fellow has real guts, I do want to see what kind of havoc he can create here. Also if you scold him with everyone present here, it will not be good for your reputation.”

Only then did Yang Xueqing sit down. However her gaze towards Long Chen had remained detached.

Long Chen suddenly looked at her, and Yang Xueqing was startled. Because the unwavering gaze held in his eyes was like an ice arrow, and it had actually caused her to lose her bearings.

“This fellow.....has actually progressed once again.....”

Yang Xueqing was secretly astonished.

Long Chen batted an eyelid at Yang Xueqing, and then coldly laughed. Right now he was standing in front of hundreds of people, but his posture was stable and he was looking on indifferently at the super expert of the family, the Yang family founder!

The Yang family founder was also bewildered by the fellow in front of him. Under such circumstances, Long Chen’s actions were so daring that he was actually not showing any signs of timidity, his actions seemingly natural.

Although he was already in his late years, he silently admired Long Chen for these actions alone. Because he knew that right now the Yang family to Long Chen, was a mountain of daggers and a sea of fire.

“Being able to stand regardless of life or death, unyielding and unbending, either you are an idiot, or you are someone with a strong character.”

This was the view that the Yang family founder thought of when he saw Long Chen. He was in fact anticipating what mess this little fellow could create.

At this point everyone’s gazes were all concentrated onto Long Chen. Half of them held disdain within their gazes. Other than the Yang family founder that had a different opinion, most of them felt that Long Chen’s brain had spoiled.

Under the flickering gazes, neither servile nor overbearing, he looked on towards the Yang family founder. Long Chen slowly knelt to the ground, and clearly said: “Your grandson, pays his respects to grandfather. Today’s intra-family competition, I have actually showed up late, by right I should be punished, only that.....”

He raised his head, and looked at the skeptical yet jumpy Yang Lingyue and said: “Your grandson as a member of the Yang family, also has a chance at obtaining the [Seal of the Dragons]. I earnestly beseech grandfather, to allow me to have a match with Yang Lingyue sister, a final showdown!”

Long Chen had the [Seal of the Dragons] on his mind, and everyone knew this. But he actually so brazenly declared his intentions in front of the Yang family, which had made many people respect his daringness. But after thinking of the difference in power between him and Yang Lingyue, they all shook their heads in succession.

“What wishful thinking.” Yang Xueqing gave a faint smirk.

Among the crowd, the majority of the people were thinking the same thing.

Looking at this young man who was unyielding and unbending, the Yang family founder's interest had slowly grown, and he blandly said: "Chen Er, the family has its own rules. Since you were late, naturally you lost the right to participate. Besides, the champion this time was born through a series of battles. So by coming out like this and wanting to be the winner, is indeed not respecting the rules."

Long Chen saw that the other party had not refused him directly, thus he knew there was still a chance, so he clearly replied: "If grandfather knows that I did not enter the rounds previously, naturally you can arrange a battle for me, the [Seal of the Dragons] is supposed to be handed over to the most outstanding person of the younger generation. Yang Lingyue Sister and I have not fought yet, so how can we know that she is better than me?"

Shortly after he looked at Yang Lingyue. Yang Lingyue's moment had been overshadowed by Long Chen, so naturally she was in a fit of fury. Adding on Yang Zhan's death, Yang Lingyue at this point wished she could kill him right on the spot.

Long Chen looked at her and said: "I don't know if Lingyue sister still remembers our bet, if Lingyue Sister wishes to admit defeat, then I naturally....."

"Enough!"

Yang Lingyue's face turned ice cold. She looked towards the Yang family founder and said: "Grandfather, today I must have a match with this kid to prevent him from embarrassing all of us and also to prevent anyone saying that I am unworthy of the champion's title. What I hate the most in this life, is this kind

of petty and unscrupulous character. Today I will properly teach him a lesson!”

Yang Lingyue had insisted as well, so the Yang family founder smiled mysteriously and said: “Since both of you have requested this, then an old person like me can only comply. But the match stops once someone is hurt, so both of you had better restrain yourselves. If you are to throw the face of the Yang family away, both of you can stop thinking of ever getting this [Seal of the Dragons]”

After successfully agitating Yang Lingyue, Long Chen was secretly celebrating inside. He then hurriedly said: “Thank you grandfather. Lingyue sister is the most competent lady here, so I will naturally show mercy!”

“You!” Yang Lingyue’s rage was not light.

Outside the stage, Yang Lingqing looked on at this scene, her gaze confused. Long Chen had caused her brother’s death, and her father could not wait to cut him into a thousand pieces. Before all of this, she was friends with Long Chen, but now this fellow had such an imposing aura on stage, which made her admire him secretly.

“Oh well, the matter about my brother, we can always deal with it later. Right now this fellow is in such a limelight, if he does not have the ability to match it, then today he will die a horrible death.....Half a month ago he was only in the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, a difference of three levels of the Dragon Pulse Realm. So how can he ever be my, Lingyue Sister’s match? But what can I do?”

Yang Qingxuan and Yang Wu were conversing also.

Yang Wu held an electrifying gaze, while looking at Long Chen and said: “This fellow is at most at the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. He only managed to learn a body enhancing technique, and is already this crazy, he is just a frog in a well.”

[TL Note: (Idiom) “Frog in a well.” means someone who has not seen the world. The frog can only see the walls around him but not the world outside the well.]

Yang Qingxuan also nodded and said: “Indeed, a difference of two levels, cannot be covered with just learning a body enhancing technique. However by daring to stand here in front of us, proves he indeed has incredible guts.”

Yang Wu smiled faintly and said: “All brawn and no brains, he is gonna be just a laughingstock.”

Yang Qingxuan smiled lightly, not denying nor agreeing.

And at this point, the Yang family founder went back to his seat and attended to the guests for a moment. In the next minute the fight between Long Chen and Yang Lingyue was going to commence.

“Sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.....”

“I am not joking with you, today I will use all my might to fight with you. If you accidentally die, do not blame me!”

“After being told off by Long Chen, Yang Lingyue coldly laughed and said: “Go ahead and daydream, you had better remember, you are but a servant in the

Yang family. Just because you have a bit of ability doesn't mean you shouldn't know where you stand."

Long Chen did not dispute with her.

Bracing his body, faint traces of starlight came to the surface from his body. His gaze had momentarily changed into two dazzling meteorites. Yang Lingyue after being dazzled by such a bright light, had been dazed a little.

"A petty skill! I heard that you know the [Falling Star Fist], which is just perfect since I too know two skills. Today I will let you experience the true might of the [Falling Star Fist]!"

Yang Lingyue gave a cry, and her ability at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had been explosively drawn from her body. Her body was like a fleeting tornado. At this moment her fist had gathered an amount of dazzling starlight and a faint print image of a fist appeared which was sent crashing towards Long Chen!

Regarding the [Falling Star Fist], Long Chen was already using it to a level of perfection. However the only thing lacking about him was the fact that his Qi was inferior to his opponent's by two levels. This difference in his Qi could be said to be at least twenty times less than hers!

"Towards the [Falling Star Fist], you Lingyue, don't even have the capability to carry my shoes around!"

Long Chen started laughing manically. Yang Lingyue's [Falling Star Fist] charged towards him. His eyes flashed with a hint of viciousness and with a

shout, he jolted on the stage, and then flew towards his opponent like a cannonball. Suddenly he also threw out a punch covered with dazzling starlight, which strongly collided with Yang Lingyue's fist!

“What a good fellow, with his Qi of the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he can actually use the [Falling Star Fist] to such a level. Compared to Qing Er he is even better!”

Looking towards the stage, the Yang family founder's gaze was concentrated.

The people who were familiar with the [Falling Star Fist], were all surprised, and they silently praised him in their hearts. Even Yang Xueqing was shocked, and thought to herself: “Earlier when I heard that he used the [Falling Star Fist] to defeat Yang Zhan, I could not believe it. But now looking at this fist, it seems like his comprehension towards the [Falling Star Fist] is actually not that different from my comprehension...”

However after being shocked, she noticed that Long Chen had been retreating under Yang Lingyue's attack, and was about to be hurt under the [Falling Star Fist]. Yang Xueqing coldly laughed.

“So what if he has a little talent in comprehensive abilities. If the Qi isn't enough, there is no chance to change the situation!”

At this moment, Long Chen had already been fully engulfed by the might of the opponent's enormous [Falling Star Fist].

“This Qi is at least twenty times more than mine, however if you want me to stop here, dream on!”

Previously his right hand had gathered starlight which had shocked the crowd, but eventually it was unable to best Yang Lingyue. However right at this moment, Long Chen gave a loud cry, and what followed after his right fist, was his left hand that had punched out another [Falling Star Fist]!

Boom!

A loud sound was heard, Long Chen's unexpected fist had completely blocked Yang Lingyue off, and also managed to steady his footsteps!

However the continuous two fists of the [Falling Star Fist], had startled the crowd greatly. The Yang family founder was so startled that he stood up and exclaimed: "He is really a genius, he can already use the [Falling Star Fist] to such an extent while just being in the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm! It's extraordinary!"

Yang Qingxuan and the others were also secretly shocked. Earlier Long Chen was not even in his eyes but at this point Yang Wu's expression was a sight to behold. He too swallowed his saliva and said: "Father.....this fellow, should only be sixteen years of age? If he did not have that issue with Yang Zhan, I'm afraid in the future our Yang family would have a chance to chase after the Bai Family....."

These two consecutive [Falling Star Fist] attacks had cost Long Chen quite a lot of time before being able to successfully use them.

The two [Falling Star Fist] attacks had finally broken away from Yang Lingyue. At this point, Long Chen's blood was still raging violently, and the shocked yet furious Yang Lingyue stared at him.

“Yang Lingyue is indeed not easy to deal with. After using the two [Falling Star Fist] attacks, my Qi has fallen by half. At this rate no matter how good my [Falling Star Fist] is, I will perish too. If I lose to her, grandfather will surely not protect me, and then Yang Yuntian will definitely kill me!”

Thinking that he couldn't retreat anymore, Long Chen's eyes flashed wildly. Yang Lingyue who was looking on had also been scared a little, however she gritted her teeth and once again charged towards Long Chen!

“This time, victory leads to life, defeat leads to death as well as me becoming a laughingstock. So I can only win, and I must not lose!”

Thinking of this, Long Chen smiled manically. Yang Lingyue seeing his crazed state was scared inside, and suddenly used the strongest skill that she had practiced!

“[Seal of the Dragons], is not something a fellow like you can own! [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil]!”

“The first point!”

“The second pierce!

“The third revolution!”

“The fourth exterminate!”

From the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil], each and every stage came pressing onto Long Chen. Everyone knew that Long Chen besides the [Falling Star Fist], had no other skills left. Yang Lingyue after using the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil], will definitely cause Long Chen who was already spent to be defeated!

Outside the stage, Yang Lingqing's heart was very nervous.

“Lingyue Sister's [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] is not an ordinary attack. If I had to retreat he definitely has no hope anymore. And if he is defeated.....”

Everyone present wanted to know very much, how exactly would Long Chen deal with the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil]. But at this moment, Long Chen did not retreat and instead advanced, charging towards Yang Lingyue. But what made everyone most surprised was the fact that he actually did not have any other movement!

“He is actually seeking his own death?”

“Good heavens, he wants to commit suicide!”

Disdain

This move of Long Chen's, had immediately roused the attention of the crowd. Everything had happened in an instant. Yang Lingyue furiously used [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil], and each and every hit had already landed on Long Chen. Because of that imposing martial finger technique, every time one hit landed it would cause the clothes on his body to be shredded. Fresh blood was constantly spilling out from his mouth!

Suddenly such a situation happened, so all of the Yang family members had stood up. All their expressions were uneasy, especially Yang Xueqing's expression. Her face turned pale white and the handle on her chair had been crushed into pieces by her.

As for Yang Lingqing, her face was even paler, and continued to watch the fight on the stage.

"Stop! Lingyue Sister!"

As the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] was presented, there wasn't a reason to hold back. At this point, just when the Yang family founder was about to stop the fight, he noticed Long Chen's eyes!

Long Chen firmly stared towards Yang Lingyue, his blood constantly flowing out from his mouth, but his gaze was still intense. The Yang family founder had been deeply stunned!

This is the most persistent gaze he had ever encountered in his life!

“Vicious! Unbending! Unyielding! Insane! Cruel!

These were the things that he could make out from Long Chen’s eyes. And no matter how far his strength was ahead of Long Chen’s, but this gaze of his had actually struck fear into his heart!

“If this boy were to grow up.....Just based on this nature alone.....He would astonish everyone!”

As the Yang family founder did not interfere, the others naturally did not dare to either. And at this point, Yang Xueqing had walked one step forward, but was actually blocked by the Yang family founder!

No one had noticed this action from Yang Xueqing, even she was not aware.

When everyone had believed Long Chen to be dead soon, suddenly, Yang Lingyue’s limit, the seventh finger of the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] hit Long Chen’s body. He abruptly let out a crazed howl and then drawing his fist he punched towards her. These actions were natural and unforced, as if he had practiced them countless times!

Since she had just finished using the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil], she was weary, and her emotions were struck with fear and shock. Yang Lingyue after being hit in the stomach by Long Chen’s fist, gave a pitiful scream, and was immediately blown off the sparring stage. With a loud bang she crashed into the wall, she then spit out a mouthful of blood and abruptly fainted.

Yang Wu seethed with fury, but was held back by Yang Qingxuan who said: “Bring Lingyue to heal her injuries, do not attack.”

Yang Wu coldly looked at Long Chen, and then agreed. But deep in his heart, he had already planned to viciously beat Long Chen up. As one must know, Lingyue is his blood sister, and normally even he himself did not bear to hit or even scold her.

At this abrupt scene, the courtyard went dead silent. All of the people had astonished faces and were looking towards the young man who was still standing on the stage!

His robes had already been ripped into rags by the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil], and his back was revealed. Blood was spurted out from his mouth, and the injury on his chest caused by the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] was bleeding profusely. He was completely covered in blood!

However, he was steadily standing on the stage, and the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] attack that was used earlier on him actually did not make him retreat even half a step! Even after that last hit of his that had defeated Yang Lingyue he still did not fall down. His face was showing off a faintly cruel smile as if a battle god was sweeping his gaze across the crowd. At this point he looked at Yang Xueqing with his bloodstained eyes and coldly smiled.

Looking on at the figure which was standing perfectly upright on the stage, Yang Xueqing's face turned pale, and even backed off a step. Inside her heart there were tumultuous layers of waves!

She did not dare to even look Long Chen in the eyes, and actually turned around and escaped!

Long Chen silently watched on as she left.

“Have you seen this? Are you scared now? Yes, I am a member of the Long Family! I am the son of Long Qinglan! We all have an unyielding nature! To all the people who looked down on me, you will realise, I Long Chen, will one day become your nightmare! As for today, it is just the start of this nightmare!”

“Yang! Xueqing! From today onwards, you will see a completely different version of Long Chen! He will be the focus of everyone! You will no longer have any rights to look at Long Chen with disdain anymore! He will be the existence that will shock you and make you revere him!”

Right now in his heart, there was an overflowing wave of emotion that was surging from within.

This is the first time he had been so heavily injured, but also up till now, this was the first time he was that impressive! And because of today, he had finally stood up for himself! His back was upright, and while standing on the stage, he swept his gaze across everyone!

As for everyone else, they could only look at the figure that was on the stage, shocked yet unable to say a single word.

For victory, he had used his own body to block Yang Lingyue’s [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] attack. And once Yang Lingyue’s attack was completed and this had exhausted her, he dealt a critical hit! Such a crazy method, no one present would dare to do it!

Yang Lingyue ran towards the stage, and because of the current situation she halted her footsteps. After looking at Long Chen who was completely blood stained, and at the blood that had not yet stopped dripping from the corner of

his mouth, her tears betrayed her and they started flowing out.

Long Chen's gaze had finally landed on the Yang family founder. He smiled indifferently and said: "Yang Lingyue has already lost her ability to battle, but here I am still standing, so who the grand winner of this intra-family competition is, I think it's obvious. Grandfather, please award me with the [Seal of the Dragons]!"

"Please award me with the [Seal of the Dragons]!"

This voice was as loud as thunder, ringing through the ears of the crowd!

This young man who was covered in blood had not fallen. His fiery gaze also did not let anyone dare to belittle him. From this day onwards, this scene will be etched deeply into the hearts of everyone!

The Yang family founder's feelings were obviously struggling. But that gaze from the stage that was on him, was one he could not avoid.

And at this moment, an azure flash with a brushing sound had headed towards the stage.

"Bastard, return me my son's life!"

It was Yang Yuntian that was at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!

Long Chen had created such a huge commotion in the intra-family competition, and Yang Yuntian was still inside the Yang family residence, so how

could Yang Yuntian not have known of this?

Earlier when Long Chen and Yang Lingyue were having a battle, he was holding himself back. But now when Long Chen had won, and had no defenses left, he immediately dashed up the stage and went for Long Chen's life!

Yang Yuntian could be said to be much stronger than Yang Lingyue, his cultivation level almost reaching the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. As he attacked, a strength that could topple the mountains and overturn the seas had come rushing towards Long Chen!

[TL Note: (Idiom) "Strength that can topple the mountains and overturn the seas." means spectacular/earth shattering strength.]

Originally the crowd was still second guessing if Long Chen would be able to obtain the [Seal of the Dragons], but now such a scene happened, so it had shocked the crowd and they cried in surprise!

As for Long Chen who had just escaped death, he was suddenly back at the extremes of danger!

Earlier Long Chen had already used all his energy to fight against Yang Lingyue, and had temporarily forgotten about Yang Yuntian's threat. It could be said that he had underestimated the Yang Yuntian's killing intent, so when Yang Yuntian had attacked, he knew that this time it was game over for him.

Earlier he had expected the Yang family founder to protect him, but he was careless because the Yang family founder still had a distance before he could reach him and Yang Yuntian's sneak attack was beyond anyone's expectations!

This very moment, Long Chen's life was jeopardized to the extreme!

However he had just defeated Yang Lingyue, and he was still in a vicious state. Yang Yuntian's sudden attack, was fast and furious, he knew that Long Chen was already spent, so he did not use any superb Martial Technique. However, just the Qi from the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had already stifled Long Chen!

Yang Yuntian's punch had arrived, Long Chen howled and continuously used two [Falling Star Fist] attacks, but he was still sent flying backwards and then had was forced to spit out a mouthful of blood!

His whole body was scorching in pain!

After suffering from the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] and Yang Yuntian's attack, Long Chen had almost fainted. But at this point, Yang Yuntian did not let him go. After realising that his punch did not actually kill Long Chen, in the next moment he once again appeared in front of Long Chen.

"You scum! Go die!"

Suddenly, with a dragon's cry, a powerful attack appeared and had caused all of Long Chen's body to almost shatter into pieces. Long Chen at this point in time was already in a dazed state; his vision became blurry, and could barely see. It seemed like the mirage of a Dragon was slowly expanding in his vision. That strength was tens of times stronger than the [Falling Star Fist] attack and this strength had instantly arrived!

“This.....This should be the [Seal of the Dragons].....”

He never thought that he would actually die so soon. And after thinking about it, he still had some unwilling feelings; however he had at least accomplished something, which is to let that woman look at him in a different manner!

Thinking of Long Qinglan, and thinking of Lingxi.....

Suddenly at this instant, there was a feeling of warm and soothing energy entering his body. Long Chen had actually found himself to be much more sober. His eyes suddenly opened, but what he saw was the Lingxi sword on his ear had become bigger. And that image which was like a fairy, had once again appeared in his vision!

Long Chen looked on at her silhouette, however this time, he could see much more clearly.....

When they had come out from the Desolate Beast Domain, Lingxi suddenly made her Lingxi sword smaller, and changed into a small ear pin. After piercing Long Chen's ear, she said that this was for concealment, and although Long Chen did not know whether to laugh or cry, he still allowed her to do as she pleased.

At this point, Lingxi was worried for Long Chen's safety, so she made the sword bigger, and then emerged from it.

Originally, the crowd thought that Long Chen would die under the [Seal of the Dragons], but what made people more astonished was that the ear pin on his ear had actually turned into a sword, and then a fairy like lady had slowly appeared.....

“Idiot, why do you always let people worry.....the next time this happens, I won't save you anymore.....”

This voice was Lingxi's.

Long Chen while lying on the stage, raised his head but still did not manage to see Lingxi's face. But from the blank expression of the crowd, he knew that it would have been extremely beautiful.....

A few sword slashes made by the Lingxi sword had swiftly come out from the mist and smashed Yang Yuntian's attack into pieces. And at this moment, the Yang family founder finally had the chance to block Yang Yuntian.

Earlier Yang Yuntian's movements were too quick. No matter how much stronger the Yang family founder was compared to Yang Yuntian, after chasing after him, he was still a moment too late.

But because of this brief moment, Long Chen had almost died!

Lingxi once again turned into mist, and returned into the Lingxi sword. After which she once again became smaller, and attached itself onto Long Chen's ear. Long Chen once again had heard Lingxi's feeble voice, and it looked like this strike had extremely worn her out.

“.....Wu, I am going to sleep, I can't deal with what happens next.....”

“Xiao Xi.....”

After being saved twice by her, Long Chen was extremely grateful.

After all he has always paid back enmity with revenge, and kindness with kindness. This grace that Lingxi has shown him, he will definitely repay it with a great favour in the future.

This time many incidents had occurred throughout the intra-family competition. Long Chen's appearance itself had already been one, and after that he had even beaten Yang Lingyue, and with Yang Yuntian's attack this was yet another incident, but what made most people startled was a lady had walked out from a sword and saved Long Chen.

In their hearts, Long Chen gradually had draped on a veil of mystery.

Even with the Yang family founder's knowledge and experience, he did not know what that was. This grandson of his had given him too many pleasant surprises, evidently he had many secrets.

However now was not the time for questions. Yang Yuntian originally could have killed Long Chen, but he did not imagine that a girl would appear suddenly and destroy his attack, but when he prepared to attack once again, the Yang family founder was already standing in front of him.....

His bloodshot eyes looked at the Yang family founder, and then shouted: "Father, he has caused your grandson, my son, to die! And yet today you want to protect him?! How can you let me down like this?"

The Yang family founder's gaze turned cold and said: "You are forty today, this

is not a young age anymore. I don't think I have to say much, right now this is the intra-family competition. All of Poplar Town's esteemed guests were gathered here, so I will definitely not allow you to shame yourself in front of everyone! This matter of yours, we shall speak of it later! Xuan Er, bring him away!"

The Yang family founder's charisma was incomparable, so even though Yang Yuntian couldn't wait to kill Long Chen, he knew that the Yang family founder had already made up his mind. And at this time if he was not tactful enough, his father would get angry and then there would be even less of a chance to kill Long Chen in the future.

So he viciously looked at Long Chen, suppressed his rage and then left!

He knew that as long as Long Chen was in the Yang family, he had tens of thousands of ways to kill him!

Today the Yang family founder was apprehensive about the Yang family's face so he did not allow him to deal with Long Chen. But in the future there will be many chances for that, so he could just kill first and talk later!

With Yang Yuntian's departure, the Yang family founder had finally heaved a sigh a relief. Today's matter had indeed troubled him. At this moment he looked on at Long Chen who was still lying on the stage, but just as he was about to look into his injuries, he found Long Chen to have sat up abruptly. Looking at that posture, he was actually cultivating!

Right!

Before this, he had consumed the Enchanted Hill Ginseng. That enormous

herbal energy still had traces that had remained inside his body. So this time even though the battle had left him with heavy injuries, but the herbal energy had been drawn out fully because of it. And also after suffering from the injuries, the mysterious Dragon Jade had released out Qi which was even more colossal than before. Under these two's infusion, Long Chen had felt that he actually had the strength to break through to the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!

Breaking through the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm right in front of the crowd!

DBWG – Chapter 18

[Seal of the Dragons]

Half a month ago, everyone knew that he was in the third level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. In half a month he had broken through two levels. This kind of talent has never been seen before in the history of Poplar Town. And if this was the case, if the Yang family founder would not try his best to save Long Chen's life, then it would be very strange indeed.

Long Chen absolutely believed that his performance today had shocked the hearts of everyone. So what will happen next is he will be the talk of Poplar Town!

This time breaking through to the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had been surprisingly smooth. Everything had progressed naturally and it had been even easier than going through to the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. The herbal energy from the 2 stalks of Enchanted Hill Ginseng had been completely absorbed by Long Chen. And after only a short minute, that extremely thick and long fifth Dragon Vein, had been broken through!

A dragon's cry that could shake the earth was heard!

Under the nurturing from the Enchanted Hill Ginseng, his injuries have almost properly been healed. At this point Long Chen stood up abruptly, and everyone had suddenly realised that he right now possessed an intense aura. His eyes were showing an even more lively expression. If he were to compete against Yang Lingyue again, victory would be easy!

“This fellow.....He really is going against the heavens.....”

Chen Liu who had bullied Long Chen back in the past, quietly hid behind the crowd. His two legs could not stop quivering.....

The people, who had once laughed at Long Chen and had given him the cold shoulder, were all swallowing their saliva now, their faces turning pale.

Looking at Long Chen who had broken through to the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, the Yang family founder's face was impassive, but deep down inside he was extremely gratified.

Among the crowd, Long Chen had noticed that Yang Lingqing's gaze was extremely confused.

Long Chen originally thought that the matter was over. He looked at the Yang family founder and just when he was about to obtain the [Seal of the Dragons], at this point, a few members of the Bai family had actually walked up the stage. In their eyes, there was a menacing look.

The Yang family founder was shocked and said: "Sirs, what is the matter?"

Bai Zhanxiong looked at Long Chen with an obvious killing intent. He walked forward and respectfully said to the Yang family founder: "Uncle Yang, your nephew does not want to disturb the intra-family competition but there is one issue that we must ask him in order to find out the truth."

When their gazes fell on Long Chen, he had already known something was wrong.

“Earlier when Lingxi attacked, the sword was revealed, and Bai Shiji had seen the Lingxi sword before, so naturally the description was the same. These 3 people from the Bai family, probably already know I was the one who castrated Bai Shiji!”

At this moment, the Yang family founder looked over, his eyes filled with suspicion.

Right now, Bai Zhanxiong looked at Long Chen coldly and said: “Everyone, my younger son half a month ago has met with an accident; I suppose most of you know a little about it. The attacker was so vicious that I cannot wait to cut him into thousands of pieces!”

“According to Bai Shiji, when he was chasing after a black steel sword. He had unexpectedly met with a masked man who had snatched it away from him, hence ending up in this state. So what I want to say is, earlier the sword which has saved Long Chen, was exactly the same one that my son had described!”

“You rascal, that masked man, that was you!”

“Such a young age but you are already this vicious, what is your true intention!”

Bai Zhanxiong’s interrogation had directed everyone’s gaze towards Long Chen.

The Bai Shiji matter had long since been the talk of Poplar Town. But because the Bai family was the number one superpower in Poplar Town, naturally people only dared to discuss behind closed doors not right in the open.

However they knew that this young man's, Bai Shiji's, life had been ruined.

Long Chen silently exclaimed: "If I were to be found out, the Yang family founder might not want to have any disputes with the Bai family and who knows, he might even give up on me. Anyway the opposition does not have any proof, so I shall deny till the point that I die!"

So he raised his head and coldly said: "I don't even know what you are talking about. Whatever has happened to your son, what does it have to do with me? Also, the weapons under the sky do not differ by so much, so how can you judge that this sword of mine is the same as your son's?"

Looking at Long Chen who was actually not admitting even if he were to die, Bai Zhanxiong was extremely furious, so he coldly said: "While there may be many weapons that look similar, however the number of swords that have the length of 70 cm, are jet black throughout, have a width of two fingers and have the aspect of a rusted steel sword, is not that many. So do you still want to deny it?"

Long Chen said indifferently: "You have seen that sword earlier, so of course you can describe it so well now. You are a reputable figure in Poplar Town, yet you want to frame a nobody such as myself, what is exactly happening?"

Looking at their debate which may never end, the Yang family founder stepped in and said: "Chen Er, do you dare to guarantee that you have never done a thing like this?"

Long Chen nodded his head saying: "Indeed, I haven't. Even today I don't know what has happened to his son. Could it be someone broke his hands and legs, or

has pierced his dantian?”

Lying in front of the Yang family founder, that requires some guts too. Earlier his performance was commendable, and the Yang family founder was a person who loved talent. So although Bai Zhanxiong had stepped forth, the Yang family founder was still hesitant to hand over the juicy meat, that he had just attained, and let the Bai family do whatever they wish with it, hence that question to Long Chen earlier.

Long Chen too had guessed his intentions, which enabled him to lie blatantly.

After receiving Long Chen’s confirmation, the Yang family founder said to Bai Zhanxiong: “Zhan Er, this matter must be investigated thoroughly. You cannot rashly make a judgment, why don’t you first go back today and tell this to your father. Brother Bai and I are brothers in life and death. Brother Bai will naturally trust me, I will also account to him. As for anything else, there is not much left to be said.”

Right now it was the Yang family intra-family competition, so the face of the Yang family founder was the greatest. Poplar Town’s power was split between both families and the situation was complicated, and the Bai family was also preparing for a wedding with the Yang family. Each and every event had caused Bai Zhanxiong to frown, so he could only say: “Since Uncle Yang has already said so I, your nephew, will obey. From the rise of the Yang family, my father has always given enough assistance. Uncle Yang and my father are like actual brothers, so with Uncle Yang’s decisional abilities, I am reassured.....”

Walking away, he gave Long Chen another cold stare, and left while thinking: “Yang family.....Ha ha, this little scum. Today I will let you off temporarily, but all of you, no matter who, your days are soon to be over. The real overlord of Poplar Town, can only be us the Bai family!”

Bai Zhanxiong walked down the stage, but Bai Shiji had remained. He sent Long Chen a cruel laugh, and then asked the Yang family founder: "Grandfather Yang, in that demonic beast hunting competition, will he be participating?"

The Yang family founder's gaze had concentrated, but he did not reply, as he knew this fellow in front of him was giving him a warning. If Long Chen were to join the demonic beast hunting competition, naturally there won't be a good ending for him.

Shortly after, Bai Shiji walked up to Long Chen and coldly said: "A while later there will be a demonic beast hunting competition. You had better not participate, if not your little life will most likely be gone."

Then he exerted the aura of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm fully.

"Trying to scare me into submission huh....."

This Bai Shiji's eyes were full of provocation. Long Chen laughed coldly, because he already knows that his next opponent will most likely have to be him.

After the Bai family had left, the other factions had also left quickly. This Yang family's intra-family competition had finally ended.

However the events that had happened were a hot topic in town.

The Yang family founder's expression was hard to read.

“Follow me.”

Saying just this, the Yang family founder walked in front and led Long Chen who followed behind quietly. As for the rest of the people, they could be sent away, one of which was Yang Lingqing.

“Such a huge commotion, and it was all caused by you. What kind of a person are you exactly.....”

Long Chen’s performance today was like a sweeping tornado. The news travelled even into the ears of the maids and the servants. And all of the people who had mistreated him before, at this moment, were feeling fear in their hearts.

Along the way, those gazes had actually been filled with fear and respect.

Long Chen laughed, this is exactly the kind of life he wanted.

Arriving in front of the Yang family founder’s hut, which was beside the Martial Techniques Hall, he saw that the Yang family founder was seated down cross-legged, and was looking at him.

“First I’ll ask you something. That matter about Bai Zhanxiong’s son, was it done by you?”

Long Chen nodded his head.

This was within the expectations of the Yang family founder. He carefully

looked at Long Chen and after a long while he exhaled loudly and said: “You little rascal, last time you did not have any spirit, but your performance today has actually made me very surprised. You wished to borrow my love for talented people, to block off Yuntian and Zhanxiong. It was indeed a clever move, but at the same time it was extremely risky. But still you gambled correctly, so you managed to survive.”

His own thoughts had been seen through by the Yang family founder, but Long Chen was not surprised, he only said: “To protect my own life, I could only have done this. I hope grandfather does not take it to heart.”

In his heart he was deeply aware of the fact that even though he did not have much affection for this old fellow but the other party was the number one of the Yang family, the overlord of the Yang family, so he could offend anyone but not him.

The Yang family founder fell into silence for a while and then said: “With my temper from before, if you had used me like that, I would’ve definitely not let you lead a good life. However now there is an even more pressing matter, if you were to do well in this, I will naturally not be too nitpicky with you about this previous matter. You must know, there aren’t too many people in Poplar Town who would dare make use of me.”

“May I know the task which has to be completed?”

The Yang family founder casted a flickering gaze towards him and sighed. After a while he said: “Let me tell you about the history of Poplar Town. 30 years ago, Poplar Town did not have the Yang family, only the Bai family. At that point, I was only a martial cultivator with a decent amount of talent. Also at the time I knew the Bai family’s current owner, we had travelled around the world together, and had established a very strong friendship. In the end when we

returned to Poplar Town, I established the Yang family and continued my bloodline.

“As for today, my ties with Brother Bai are still very good, not to mention the fact that Qing Er and Zhan Er are about to get married, with us being the matchmaker. But there has still been something which has been troubling me.”

Long Chen hurriedly asked: “May I know what it is? Could it have anything to with the demonic beast hunting competition?”

The Yang family founder nodded his head and said: “The Bai and Yang families’ ties are close, allied together to fight others. But since that notice from 10 days ago, everything has changed. And you, you little rascal have actually castrated Bai Zhanxiong’s younger son, which has added yet another layer of snow on the frost. If I did not protect you it would’ve still been fine, but now that I have done so, the ties have worsened yet again. I’m afraid Qing Er’s marriage will most likely not happen anymore.”

After saying this, the Yang family founder frowned.

So this marriage was actually arranged by this old fellow. Long Chen was cursing the Yang family founder in his heart a hundred times over. As for the ties between the Bai family and the Yang family, he wasn’t very clear. But from what he could make out from the Yang family founder, the ties seemed to have been pretty good.

“The marriage may not happen anymore? That is great, I don’t have to waste any more energy. Why don’t I worsen the ties between the two families even more? But I’m afraid the first one the Yang family founder would kill is me if I did this.....”

Long Chen pursed his lips and said: “Grandfather, the demonic beast hunting competition that you were talking about, what exactly is it?”

The Yang family founder looked at Long Chen with a fiery gaze and said: “Our Poplar Town is governed under the jurisdiction of the Yuanling City. Ten days ago they have issued a decree that Poplar Town’s younger generation must enter the Big Barren Mountain and proceed with the demonic beast hunting competition. From the two families’ younger generation, the side that obtains the most demonic beast energy cores can have the rights to rule Poplar Town for 20 years. As for the next mandate after these 20 years pass, the ruling over Poplar Town will once again be determined by the demonic beast hunting competition where the younger generations of the Yang and Bai families will compete once again.

“For a long period of time, Poplar Town has been in a state without a mayor. The towns near us, all of them already have a designated mayor, and now it’s Poplar Town’s turn to have a decision. The rights to rule Poplar Town for 20 years has a very important meaning for any family here. So this time, although Brother Bai and I are like brothers, I cannot let this go so easily.

The Yang family founder sighed once again and said: “The time for the demonic beast hunting competition is on the tenth of august. Qing Er’s wedding day will be on the evening of the same day, so this time the younger generation may not have much time to attend the wedding dinner. As for the demonic beast hunting competition itself, Yuanling City will naturally send someone to supervise, so people like us are unable to enter the Big Barren Mountain.”

After listening to so much, Long Chen already knew what he had to do.

“What grandfather wants me to do is collaborate with the Yang family younger

generation during the demonic beast hunting competition and obtain more demonic beast energy cores, right?”

The Yang family founder nodded his head and said: “From the Bai family younger generation, Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen are both in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and they have two cultivators in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm as well, but for my Yang family we only have Ling Yue and Yang Wu who can take on this role. Your performance today was not bad. Being able to learn the [Falling Star Fist] in three days, and you also being able to use it at this stage was a great feat. With your help the demonic beast hunting competition will have actually have a chance if you are present.”

“Participating in the demonic beast hunting competition is okay, the Bai family’s and the Yang family’s relationship has always been well. They wouldn’t try to kill our family. However you yourself have to be wary of the Bai family’s younger generation. When you enter the Big Barren Mountain you will have to hunt the Demonic Beasts on your own, and not clash with any of the Bai family’s younger generation. This way our chances of obtaining more demonic cores will be higher than the Bai family’s.”

Long Chen nodded his head and understood the Yang family founder’s meaning, which was to let him work alone, and be the dark horse of the Yang family. It could be considered as a wish coming from the Yang family founder.

However, when the time comes will it be the same as the Yang family founder said? Can Long Chen avoid Bai Shiji?

Long Chen nodded his head and said: “Your grandson will obey grandfather’s wishes.”

The Yang family founder laughed loudly and said: “You work hard for the Yang family and I will naturally treat you well. As for the matter concerning Yuntian, I will help you solve it. Also, the [Seal of the Dragons], should belong to you so you had better practice it properly these few days and try to have a breakthrough in the next 14 days.”

He then took the [Seal of the Dragons] that he had been dreaming of from the Yang family founder’s hands.

Looking at the flamboyant calligraphy of the words, Long Chen was extremely moved.

“With this [Seal of the Dragons], my strength will once again rise explosively! Also, father has told me that this [Seal of the Dragons] scroll was not so simple. I too want to have a look to see exactly what secret there is inside of it, and to see what kind of existence I will be when I become a Dragon Warrior!”

At this point, the Yang family founder took yet another bag of items and said: “This is 500 pieces of spirit jade, take it away. If you are able to completely refine it, I think it will be able to help you achieve the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. However cultivation cannot be rushed, you have just entered the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm so these next few days you must first familiarise yourself with the [Seal of the Dragons]. You can go back and rest now.”

Only then did Long Chen retreat.

“In half a month’s time, there will be the demonic beast hunting competition and the marriage. These two’s schedules have overlapped, so what should I do?Forget it, first I should just practice the [Seal of the Dragons] and see how much I can increase my strength until then!”

Mysterious Barrier

“[Seal of the Ashened Dragon].....”

Sitting on his bed at the pavilion, Long Chen flipped the pages of the secret [Seal of the Dragons] scroll till he was sleepy. Only then did he place the [Seal of the Dragons] beside the bed.

“Because it is a high level martial technique, many people in the Yang family have not practiced it. Looking at the sheepskin and the withered materials, my [Seal of the Dragons] scroll, should be the original. Father had said that there was some secret on it which is crucial for my development to become a Dragon Warrior. But why can’t I find out what it is?”

Long Chen rolled on the bed, staring out of the window as if in a trance.

“What broken thing is this, isn’t this just a few pieces of sheepskin manual? What secrets can it even keep? By now so many members of the Yang family have already seen this secret martial technique. If there was a secret it would have been discovered since long ago.....”

Long Chen was a little dispirited.

“That’s not true!” Long Chen excitedly sat up on the bed.

“The secret should not be that easy to be discovered, so that’s why so many of the Yang family members have not discovered it yet. And father has asked me to obtain this secret scroll, so if I were to work a little harder, I will naturally know

what is hidden within!”

Picking up the [Seal of the Dragons] again, and looking at each line of cursive yet elegant handwriting, Long Chen looked through each and every single word. He had scrutinised carefully even the corners of each page, but in the end it was all in vain.

“I am now in the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, however with the mastery of the [Celestial Core Technique], an average sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator is no match for me. Together with the [Seal of the Dragons], the battle strength I can exert is even stronger. Such a pity that the [Celestial Core Technique] is only an Intermediate Huang martial technique, if I were to face a cultivator of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, I would not have any advantages at all with this…….”

“The demonic beast hunting competition is about to start and that Bai Shiji hates me to the core. If I’m not able to find a solution before then, then I will definitely die, and I definitely won’t be making a name for myself!”

Thinking of Bai Shiji who was already in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, Long Chen frowned deeply.

He was the most aware of his own abilities. Against a cultivator at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he could most likely win easily. But against a cultivator at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, there was not much hope for him.

The Dragon Pulse Realm is split into 9 realms, and the first six levels’ Dragon Veins are all named as Small Dragon Veins. The Small Dragon Veins are not that durable in strength nor do they have a long pathway, so the explosion of Qi is

limited.

As for the difference between the sixth and the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, it is a huge gap. The Dragon Veins of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and onwards are labelled as the Human Dragon Vein, the Earth Dragon Vein and respectively the Heaven Dragon Vein. And each length and durability is at least double in size and length as that of a Small Dragon Vein. The Heaven Dragon Vein is even more winding, the length is almost similar to the previous eight Dragon Veins added up!

So Long Chen knew, that in this Dragon Pulse Realm, the further one goes the harder it becomes to break through. This is also the exact reason why cultivators at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm are so rare!

As for Long Chen, the greatest difference between him and Bai Shiji is the Human Dragon Vein. The Qi required to break through the seventh level, needs to be more than ten times as much as that of the sixth level. So by comparison, just Bai Shiji's Qi alone, is much greater than Long Chen's by 20 or even 30 times already.

“However.....”

Long Chen's eyes emitted a cold gaze, while he thought: “Bai Shiji is Bai Zhanxiong's son. If he is his son, I must definitely become stronger than him. That way I can let that woman acknowledge me completely. And so that she knows exactly who is the trash and who is not fit to practice martial techniques!”

Although he had said this, in his heart there was still a heavy pressure. Because at least right now, he had no idea on what to do with the [Seal of the Dragons] in his hands. And if he spent the next ten plus days being so muddle-headed, then

it would be fair to say that he will have to continue like that for the rest of his life!

“What exactly is this Dragon Warrior thing? Father actually said that it was a long lost legend? I have heard of the ultra-mysterious Beast Warrior and of the Armament Warrior, but I’ve never heard of a Dragon Warrior……”

“However, both father and Lingxi said that this vast land is named as the Long Ji Continent, and that the people here are descendants of the Ancestral Dragons. I think that this Dragon Warrior has something to do with these dragons of the myth, possibly an inextricably linked connection!”

In the intra-family competition, because of Lingxi’s attack, most likely her energy has diminished. So even though three days have passed, she actually has not woken up yet. Long Chen was quite worried in his heart and thought: “Is this girl just gonna die like this? I think the consumption for her to appear was too great the last time. Even if she was my benefactor, she has already saved me twice. But I said I want to protect her so if anything ever happens in the future, I cannot let her help me again!”

Once again he looked at the [Seal of the Dragons] in his hands.

“Father had only wanted me to obtain this secret scroll, but he never told me how to discover its secret. So I still have to rely on my own ability. If only Lingxi was here, her identity is so mysterious. She must have a colossal backing behind her, and probably has had many experiences. I think she could solve this problem for me.”

Sighing, Long Chen laid on the bed and covered his face with the [Seal of the Dragons].

“What’s wrong?”

Long Chen realised, just as he placed the scroll over his head, that the mysterious Dragon Pendant which had no activity had suddenly moved, but then there were no further actions.

Suddenly at this moment, there was a thin thread of a voice, and the owner sounded anemic.

“On this secret scroll, there seems to be a barrier.....”

The person who said this was Lingxi. Right now the Lingxi sword was changed into the form of an ear pin and was attached to Long Chen’s ear. So even if her voice was very soft, Long Chen could still hear it carefully.

After hearing Lingxi’s voice, Long Chen’s worries from the past few days had finally lessened a bit. However Lingxi still sounded very feeble and he knew that she had not recovered fully. So he hurriedly asked: “Xiao Xi, how is your condition now? This time it’s all because of my rashness. I swear I will not let such a thing happen again in the future. Each time you have come out it has left you so weak.....”

“It’s alright.....” Lingxi interrupted.

Long Chen was moved a little, but he still bit his lips and said: “What is alright? You had better remember it for me, in the future do not be nosy. If I were to die carelessly under someone’s hands, that is well deserved. But if you die because of me, I Long Chen will blame myself for the rest of my life. And I would be better

off dead in that case!”

“Tell me, what exactly is your situation right now.”

Long Chen had been infuriated slightly so Lingxi had kept quiet in fear. And then in a gentle tone: “My physical body has already disappeared, right now my surroundings are pitch black, and my consciousness right now is being preserved only because of my spirit strength. Each time I use it my strength will diminish a little. Last time my mind was in a mess and in fear, so I directed the Lingxi sword to fly for a very far distance. My spirit strength is almost finishing, and adding on to that the last two times I appeared, if I do not have any medicine that could heal and prolong my spirit, I think I will.....”

Long Chen shouted from a bolt out of the blue and said: “Why didn’t you say so sooner!?”

Lingxi felt like she had been wronged, so she said sobbing: “I just woke up, so why are you so fierce with me? And also if I didn’t appear this last time you would have been dead already. There was no time to talk about it at all.....”

Only then did Long Chen calm down, and after keeping his silence for a while, he said: “Xiao Xi, thank you, but as a man, in the future, I do not need you to appear for me anymore. The medicine you mentioned earlier which can nurture your spirit, I will go find it for you right now!”

Lingxi was practically the one who used her life to exchange for his, so while Long Chen did not say how touched he was, but deep in his heart, he had already considered Lingxi’s life as his life. And what’s most important is the fact that he had to be the one responsible for his own life.

Hence Long Chen kept the [Seal of the Dragons] in his arms and left the house. He wasn't so familiar with the medicine of cultivators, but Long Chen had one person in the Yang family with which he could somewhat get along with. This person was Yang Lingqing, so he decided to look for her.

"A medicine which nurtures the spirit cannot be found so easily, and generally they are rather expensive. Long Chen, have I become a burden for you?"

"What bullshit are you saying!? You saved my life, so I am simply spending my time and effort for you in return. How can it be considered as a burden? Has water entered your brain now?"

Although on the way Long Chen spoke very harshly, but in his speech there was a strong concern and urgency detected, which Lingxi appreciated. Looking at this unwavering young man in front of her, her mind started thinking of some stuff. This disaster that has befallen upon her, had let her mature gradually unlike the carefree life she had from before.

"Oh right, earlier you said there was a barrier placed on the [Seal of the Dragons]? Are you able to remove it?"

Earlier because of Lingxi, he had actually forgotten about the most important thing. And as he thought about it now, Long Chen's face was eagerly filled with expectations.

"Right now with my current spirit strength, it's not enough for me to even look at the barrier closely. However if I were to get the medicine for my spirit, I can definitely give it a try."

Long Chen was belated and said: “What a good Xiao Xi. As expected you are very capable. If you had a body how good would that be, I could kiss you now to reward you!”

After saying this, Long Chen laughed out loudly.

“Hng! Dream on, such an ugly toad like you wants to eat swan meat!? However if you want to undo the barrier, the medicine cannot be just a little. I am a voracious eater so if you need me to do anything in the future, it’s very simple, I must eat medicine!”

[TL Note: (Idiom) “A toad wanting to eat swan meat.” means to crave for someone that you are unworthy of.]

“Okay okay, you medicinal junkie.”

After the joke, the atmosphere wasn’t that gloomy as before. However Long Chen understood that the responsibilities he carried now will be heavier than before.

Not only does he have to become stronger, but he also has to amass more treasures, since only medicine with spirit healing properties can prolong Lingxi’s life.

“Such a small place like Poplar Town, will it have Spirit Healing Medicine.....”

Long Chen was still deeply concerned.

Walking towards the courtyard of the Yang family, at the instant that the guards and maids had noticed him, they hurriedly casted a smile towards him. However their smiles were forced, and looked even uglier than their crying faces.

Long Chen's performance in the intra-family competition, had led him to a high position in the Yang family. And adding to that his strong capabilities and his vicious nature, how would these small fry dare to be disrespectful towards him. It would be akin to asking for punishment because they had nothing better to do.

On the side, Yang Wu was watching silently as a row of guards walked past and greeted Long Chen. His expression gradually turned darker.

"Originally this item had belonged to Xiao Yue Er, but now it is stolen by this lackey. Look at that arrogant face of a servant of yours. However, I wonder for how long you can be pleased with yourself."

"Grandfather regards you importantly right now, but it's just to make use of you. Although Second Uncle's cultivation is still in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he has been faithful in carrying out his duties for the family business and has sacrificed so much for the Yang family until now. You actually think that a useless playboy such as you, who has tarnished the reputation of the Yang family since you were young, can actually replace him? You're like a sparrow that thinks that if it flies up the branch it turns into a phoenix."

[TL Note: (Idiom) "Sparrow that thinks that if it flies up the branch it turns into a phoenix" means it does not matter how hard a commoner tries, because he will always be a commoner.]

Long Chen actually knew that Yang Wu was looking at him, but he couldn't

care less.

If anyone were to hit his own sister, Long Chen would most likely immediately go up to that person and fight that person with all his might. So whatever Yang Wu was thinking, he understood it.

“Xiao Xi, do you see the guy who is staring at me like he has a grudge?”

“I see it, but it doesn’t look like he has a grudge on you.”

“You don’t know the truth, but actually he is a pervert, and he has been having a crush on me for a long time already. But alas the both of us are guys, so he doesn’t dare to say it out, but the feelings he holds for me are more precious than pearls.....”

“Ah, that’s so gross, I’m going to vomit!”

DBWG – Chapter 20

Cultivator's Marketplace

After finding Yang Lingqing, Long Chen finally stopped conversing with Lingxi.

Yang Lingqing had lost to Yang Lingyue in the intra-family competition, but she was not dismayed and worked even harder instead. While looking at Long Chen who had actually come to find her, her heart was knotted in a mess, she could only look at Long Chen in a distant manner.

“What do you want from me?”

Long Chen's feud with her brother; she knew well in her heart that it was only a small fight, and even if Long Chen stripped Yang Zhan's clothes off in front of everyone, she felt that it wasn't such a big deal since Yang Zhan was not a maiden. But Yang Zhan was actually not able to endure the humiliation and he committed suicide, which made things even more complicated.

Yang Lingyue thought that Long Chen did not mean it. But it was because of Long Chen that her brother died, so even though she wasn't that close with her brother, nonetheless blood is thicker than water.

Looking at the anger welling in Yang Lingqing's eyes, Long Chen knew that he had given this girl a kind of suffering. He did not feel so good about it deep down so he said: “Your brother's incident, I also did not expect that ending, so I can only say I'm sorry. Today I am here merely to ask you about a few things.”

Yang Lingqing detachedly said: “Ask what you want, I still have to hurry and practice my cultivation. The demonic beast hunting competition is right around

the corner and I do not want to lose to the Bai family's younger generation.”

“I need a medicine that has spirit healing properties. Do you know where I can get some of it? Does our house have any?”

Long Chen had asked with an anticipating look. But Yang Lingqing was a little cold towards him, so he was worried that this girl may not help him.

However he had still lowered his pride and asked her.

Yang Lingqing thought for a while, and then said: “In the family there shouldn't be any of these medicines, but you can go to the medicinal stores in the cultivator's market to have a look. The herbal medicines there have all come from cultivators; either that or the stores have purchased them directly from a larger city, so it's possible to have the medicine you asked about.”

Long Chen had always been mingling with inns and brothels, so how could he have known where the market was. So he asked: “Where is the location of this place?”

Yang Lingqing replied to him haughtily: “The cultivator's market is indeed a bit hidden. Alright then, I will show you the way.”

Long Chen looked at her gratefully. Although this girl did harbour some hate for him, but during the time where Long Chen needed her most, she still tried her best to help. Her character was way better than Yang Lingyue and Yang Wu.

It was indeed an eye-catching scene for Long Chen and Yang Lingqing to be seen walking together. But the people watching did not dare say anything much

since both of them were the young master and the young miss of the Yang family after all.

Long Chen's reputation had been spreading in Poplar Town in the past few days, leading him to become a figure that almost every household knew. Before that, many people did know him, but the only feeling they had for him was disdain. But to think that in such a short period of 1 month, the salted fish had flipped its body. And so he had become a reputable figure among the younger generation in Poplar Town.

[TL Note: (Idiom) "Salted fish has flipped its body." means to make a huge turnaround change.]

"Oh right, since you have practiced the [Falling Star Fist] so quickly, what about the [Seal of the Dragons]?"

Walking on, Yang Lingqing suddenly posed the question.

Long Chen smiled nonchalantly and said: "Are you envying me now? I could teach you again, but you have to call me Big Brother Long Chen first."

Yang Lingqing at this moment made an angry expression and said: "Right now I'm only in the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, I don't have the Qi to practice [Seal of the Dragons]. And also I want to be able to obtain the [Seal of the Dragons] with my own strength!"

Looking at the determination of this girl, Long Chen secretly started respecting her.

After walking for a while longer, Yang Lingqing frowned and said: “You’re also in the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. The [Seal of the Dragons] is a high level martial technique, so it doesn’t have much uses for you. So you might as well give it to Elder Sister Lingyue. With her strength who knows, she may have a little hope of getting close to the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.....”

After all it was an advanced martial technique, and his true strength was only at the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Long Chen did not feel surprised at all about the fact that Yang Lingqing did not think highly of him. He only smiled plainly and stopped speaking.

“Long Chen, you know about the demonic beast hunting competition? The Bai family has always been stronger than our Yang family. So if they were to gain the title of mayor of Poplar Town, our Yang family, I’m afraid will have to lead a difficult life. Now in Poplar Town, the general consensus is that the Bai family will become the mayor of Poplar Town after which they will become a faction of the Lingwu family in Yuanling City and exercise the authority of the Lingwu family!”

The Lingwu family was situated in Yuanling City. Long Chen had heard of it before, this was the first family of Yuanling City. They were venerated by the imperial family of the Central Granary State and they had the power to rule over the whole Yuanling City. It could be considered as the overlord of Yuanling City. So the mayor of Poplar Town will undoubtedly receive the protection of the Yuanling City, and in addition will also reap enormous benefits.

So even though the masters of the Yang and Bai families are good friends, this time they wanted to compete for once.

Long Chen laughed: “That’s because the current Yang family younger generation doesn’t have any real experience!”

Yang Lingqing's ears had turned red from embarrassment. Her eyes showing a helpless look as she said: "In our Yang family's younger generation, we have Big Brother Yang Wu, Elder Sister Lingyue. Also including you, this would only be the equivalent of one cultivator at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and two cultivators at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm."

"The Bai family has four cultivators, two are at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and two are at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Among them Bai Shiji is average, his cultivation can be matched by Big Brother Yang Wu's. But that Bai Shichen, at seventeen years old, had already reached the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Among Poplar Town's younger generation he was the first to reach the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and he has a cultivation that is difficult to even imagine. He has always been the strongest among Poplar Town's younger generation.

Long Chen suspiciously asked: "He is only at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, what makes this Bai Shichen so special?"

Yang Lingqing shook her head and said: "You don't know, but rumor has it that he's about to break through into the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm already. Also from the Bai family's advanced Huang martial technique, the [Dark Heavenly Finger], it is said that he has mastered the second finger! The [Dark Heavenly Finger] martial technique, is stronger than our Yang family's [Seal of the Dragons] by 30 percent. Our [Seal of the Dragons] has two levels, but the [Dark Heavenly Finger] has three and the second finger's attack power, has long surpassed [Seal of the Ashened Dragon]. Also Big Brother Yang Wu has only learnt up till [Seal of the Ashened Dragon].

As Yang Lingqing was describing Bai Shichen, her tone was giving off a powerless feeling.

“Seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and the [Dark Heavenly Finger] huh? Indeed it is terrifying. But I, Long Chen, have only lost to him in terms of Qi.”

At this moment, Yang Lingqing looked over and said: “With Bai Shichen’s help, their Bai family could even slay a Huang 8th Grade demonic beast. Now you tell me, how can our Yang family be their match?”

Long Chen did not know how to answer her, so he said: “Right now is not the time to be dismayed. If one were to admit defeat before starting, then that person is no better than a useless trash. Anyway I, Long Chen, am not a useless trash, so whatever that Bai something is, even if he is a white flower, I will still beat him into a blackened colour!”

[TL Note: “white flower” Author making a pun from his name in chinese.]

Yang Lingqing could not stand it when Long Chen was not serious. She rolled her eyes to Long Chen and said: “Your trumpet blowing abilities have not changed, but you and the Bai family have great enmity. Speaking of the demonic beast hunting competition, the one in the most danger there is you. I think you had better cultivate diligently and also at that time you had better hide yourself far away in order not to embarrass yourself.....”

[TL Note: (Idiom) “Trumpet blowing” means self-praise]

Long Chen hurriedly said: “Okay, Great Grand-Aunt, your servant knows what to do already.”

However deep in his heart he was smirking, he thought: “Hide far away? This

isn't my style."

Looking at Long Chen who still had a nonchalant look on him, Yang Lingqing didn't have anything more to say to him.

In an instant, Long Chen followed Yang Lingqing and walked into a huge pavilion. After a few winding hallways, and entering yet another door, he did not expect to come to a wide and clear open space.

Looking at each and every street, and at the great numbers of shops and stores, Long Chen was momentarily stunned.

"This is the cultivator's market. However this spirit healing medicine I am not too sure about what it is, so you have to ask around yourself. You have been shrewd from a young age, so I don't think someone can scam you. Right now I am almost entering the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, where I'm only lacking an insight in order to break through. And this time it has finally come. I will go find myself a place and save myself from being angered by you to death.

After saying this, she did not wait for Long Chen's opinion, and turned into a winding alley.

The number of cultivators in Poplar Town were not few. Long Chen's eyes swept across, and had already seen hundreds of people walking about, these were all cultivators. Among them there were even some experts.

"This cultivator's market is a place filled with crouching tigers and hidden dragons."

[TL Note: (Idiom) “Crouching tiger, hidden dragon” means a place where there are talented individuals concealed.]

“Xiao Xi, can you sense the existence of any medicine with spirit healing properties?”

Lingxi’s feeble voice rang beside his ears: “You have to go a little closer, it’s too far away now so I am unable to sense it. In this small town, such medicinal herbs should be very rare, I have to look carefully.....”

Lingxi’s voice had weakened yet again, and Long Chen had been anxious in his heart, so he kept praying that he must definitely find that kind of medicine.

After making up his mind, Long Chen entered the first medicinal store. The cultivator’s market had many stores, there were blacksmith shops, pharmacies, and even pawn shops.

These pawn shops mainly collected materials obtained from demonic beasts, as well as a few other treasures. Of course, if it was pawned, it would be bought, after all these shops had roughly all the items that cultivators would need.

Entering the first medicinal store, Long Chen had sensed that a strong herbal scent had drifted to his nose. There should even be spirit medicine of the same grade as the Enchanted Hill Ginseng, and there should be quite a few in here. Long Chen had already noticed that the transactions here were all made with pieces of spirit jade. Gold and silver taels were not used. He only had 500 pieces of spirit jade, so he knew he had to use them sparingly.

These 500 pieces of spirit jade had been given to him by the Yang family

founder for cultivation. However for the sake of Lingxi's life, Long Chen wouldn't care about using these pieces of spirit jade.

Long Chen pretended to look around, and made his way around once. But the person that was actually looking was Lingxi. Unfortunately, after going in a circle, she realised there weren't any.

Long Chen had started to panic, and started looking for the owner of the shop. Finding a grave and stern looking middle aged man he asked: "Excuse me, does this shop have any medicine that has spirit healing properties?"

That shop owner was startled, but then said: "I'm sorry, we don't have any."

Long Chen was disappointed.

"Young man, in this small Poplar Town, spirit healing medicine, basically has no demand. So shops like us, normally do not sell it. But if you need it urgently, then you can take a look at the other stores and try your luck."

Long Chen nodded his head, and thanked the shop owner. After that he walked out of the shop and feeling flustered, he asked Lingxi: "According to him, all of Poplar Town does not have medicine like this, Xiao Xi....."

"Then what can we do....."

Xiao Xi had sounded flustered too. The extent of Poplar Town's remoteness had far exceeded her expectations.

Long Chen clenched his fist and said: “No way, we haven’t even looked at the other shops. Right now we cannot conclude anything, so I will continue looking. I do not believe that such a large cultivator’s market does not even have one spirit healing medicine!”

After saying this, he then promptly walked into each and every store in the cultivator’s market. There were a bit less than 50 of these medicinal stores. Long Chen had went into each and every one and asked, this consumed a lot of time. However this was fine, but what made him worry the most was the fact that the answer was always negative.

“I’m sorry; we don’t have this type of medicines here.”

“Normally we don’t keep this type of medicine.”

“We’re not able to sell it out because we don’t have it in stock.”

Long Chen’s expression was growing darker by the second, and in his heart he was becoming more and more flustered.

“If you really can’t find it, then forget about it. Ever since my physical body has been broken into pieces, I have already known that the time left for me wouldn’t be much longer. However Long Chen, knowing you, was nice.....”

Long Chen’s eyes gradually turned bloodshot, he then growled and said: “Don’t say such silly things, aren’t there stores which we still haven’t searched? I don’t believe I can’t even accomplish a small task like this. If Poplar Town doesn’t have it, I will go to another place. This stupid demonic beast hunting competition, I will not participate in it anymore!

“This can’t do, and I still have to open the barrier for you.....”

Just as the both of them were at their wits’ end, suddenly a few noises rang loudly from afar. The people around all hurriedly looked towards the origin of the noise. Long Chen originally did not care, but very soon someone had actually said: “It looks like a young lady from the Yang family and some guys from the Bai family have a dispute!”

“Yang Lingqing?”

The young lady from the Yang family in the cultivator's market could only be Yang Lingqing.

Yang Lingqing had treated Long Chen very well, so Long Chen had also treated her as a real younger sister. Thinking of the fact that she may be bullied, Long Chen did not say another word and headed towards the origin of the noise.

That noise earlier, should have been Yang Lingqing using the [Falling Star Fist]. Usually the Yang family and the Bai family do not have any clashes, but this time Yang Lingqing had even used the [Falling Star Fist], which shows that she had been very angry.

From far away, Long Chen had seen a crowd gathering. Among them were a few experts, but none of them dared to stop the fight. That's right, even if they had decent abilities, how would they dare to interfere in a fight between the Yang family and the Bai family? How could they not be afraid of the consequences?

Long Chen did not care for any of these, so he blatantly squeezed through, and as he expected Yang Lingqing was fighting with a foxy yet charming looking lady. However right now Yang Lingqing did not have the upper hand, and it looked like she was about to be defeated.

Beside Long Chen, two middle aged man were conversing. It looked like they were two of the many shop owners.

“The talent of this Yang Lingqing from the Yang family is not bad. But even though Bai family’s Bai Zhixing is somewhat older, her cultivation is in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, hence she is stronger.”

“The difference of a level, yet Yang Lingqing has withstood for so long, this is not bad.”

“The Bai and Yang families have had close ties all this time, so why are both of these girls fighting?”

“I also don’t know. When I arrived, both of them had already been fighting.”

“It could be because of the matter concerning the mayor. Looks like Poplar Town is going to face some major changes soon.....”

Long Chen did not say another word, and rushed into the battle scene. Just as he was about to attack, Lingxi who was beside his ear suddenly said agitatedly: “Hey, you see that young man over there? In his waist pocket, there is a stalk of Dream Spirit Grass. That is an intermediate Huang grade medicine which can nurture a spirit!”

Long Chen’s gaze shifted towards the young man as he ran over, because right now that young man was not far behind Bai family’s Bai Zhixing.

“Is that the other Bai family cultivator that is at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, Bai Shidong?”

It was such a coincidence that the item that he had been dreaming of is unexpectedly on his body.

Even if it was only for the Dream Spirit Grass, Long Chen must definitely get involved in this fight now.

Long Chen's movements, had attracted stunned expressions from all the people around.

"That should be.....Yang family's Third Aunt's son who has been notorious lately, right? I heard that he has already entered the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. However he's still lacking a level compared to these two from the Bai family younger generation.

"He seemed to have defeated Yang Lingyue before when she was at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm."

"So what, I heard he used underhanded methods to beat Yang Lingyue, and in fact his true ability is not that strong.

While the two middle aged men were conversing, they fixed their gazes on Long Chen, and were eagerly anticipating what Long Chen would do next.

After all, the opponents were both in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, but he was only in the fifth level and had still dared to rush into the fight.

At this moment, the [Celestial Core Technique] and the Qi from Long Chen's fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm were in full effect. So although his Qi was inferior to the Qi of the two opponents' by several times, this gap could be filled up with the [Celestial Core Technique]!

A dim starlight slowly came out from his body, and from the familiar feeling of the starlight's aura, Yang Lingqing knew that Long Chen had finally arrived.

Her face was filled with fury and indignation, because although the opponents had the strength to defeat her, right now they were only playing around with her.

Suddenly feeling a strong force being applied on her body, Yang Lingqing was suddenly pulled back by Long Chen. After which Long Chen immediately faced Bai Zhixing who had a complacent look after playing around with Yang Lingqing. She never thought that a young man would abruptly appear in front of her eyes, so she was startled into retreating a few steps back.

Both of them then distanced themselves.

Then Yang Lingqing pouted her lips and looked at Long Chen. Long Chen seeing that she was about to cry, asked: "What happened?"

Yang Lingqing used a loathing gaze to look at Bai Zhixing, then she gritted her teeth and said: "I myself don't know why either, but as soon as she saw me she started insulting me. In the end I could not endure it, and forgot about grandfather's warning....."

Even a good natured person like Yang Lingqing could not endure it, meaning the stuff that Bai Zhixing had said must have been extremely vicious.

"She humiliated you? She thinks my younger sister is someone who can be humiliated....."

Long Chen looked at the other party, and then his expression turned darker quickly.

“What kind of things is Sister Lingqing saying? I had only exchanged several words with you, and then you attacked me. I myself still want to ask you, why did you say I humiliated you?”

Long Chen’s gaze had made the girl on the opposite side feeling scared. But then thinking of Long Chen’s true ability, she became bold and started pretending she was innocent.

Long Chen despised the girls who dared to act but did not dare to admit. On the outside they appear innocent but deep down they are vicious. When they do bad things they put up a pitiful front and deny.

Originally both parties had not sustained any injuries. So the matter should have been let go, but because Long Chen wanted the Dream Spirit Grass badly, he now had an excuse. So all the more he wouldn’t let them go.

He patted Yang Lingqing on the shoulder and said: “Lingqing, I have been your Elder Brother for so many years, but I have actually not stepped up for you until now, so today just watch.”

[TL Note: “Elder Brother” when he says here elder brother he doesn’t mean that she is his sister it’s more of an expression to show the fact that they are close.]

Long Chen’s speech had allowed Yang Lingqing to understand something. The other people also knew what he meant, so they looked at him as if he was an

idiot.

Yang Lingqing quickly held his arms and stopped him. She then said: “Don’t do it, let’s just forget about it today. Not to mention the fact that grandfather has told us not to come into conflict with the Bai family, but also the other party has two people at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, we.....”

Long Chen smiled, and then gently pushed Yang Lingqing’s hands away. The determination in his gaze caused Yang Lingqing to lose her bearing, and at this time, Long Chen had already walked to them.

Looking at Long Chen who seemed unafraid to die, the crowd began to discuss earnestly, and started ridiculing him.

Earlier the two middle aged man, were shocked too. Looking at Long Chen they said: “This kid although he’s a little rash, he’s quite bold.”

“That’s right people that are all brawn but no brains, their demise is always pitiful. Knowing how to endure and then return back from Mt. Dongshan, that is the way of a king.”

[TL Note: (Idiom) “Knowing how to endure and then return back from Mt. Dongshan, that is the way of a king.” means knowing how to make a comeback.]

As for Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong, after seeing that Long Chen actually had the guts to oppose them, they momentarily let out a smirk. But they never thought that just as they were about to ridicule him, Long Chen wouldn’t even give them a chance. As he walked over, his expression turned dark, and with one leg jolting the floor, he suddenly flew towards the both of them like a whirlwind.

Looking at his actions, it seemed like he actually wanted to deal with the both of them at the same time!

The crowd immediately started to make a racket. Long Chen's actions had left them confused. Even the two middle aged men who were talking earlier, were now looking at him with dismay and astonishment.

“This kid.....Is really strange, his Qi is lacking, but his guts are definitely not.....”

At this point, if you looked at Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong you could notice in their eyes the disdain held for him. Bai Zhixing had always been aggressive, so she stepped forward first, blocking Long Chen's path.

At this moment, Long Chen had already dashed right in front of her. An enormous wind energy was condensing in his finger. Suddenly a whirlwind had started rotating around his finger. The Qi's forceful noise, had made Bai Zhixing frown!

She coldly smirked, and then her whole body started surging out Qi explosively while her right palm clenched into a fist. Before Long Chen arrived, she had already punched out. Under the support of the strong Qi, a gust of strong Qi went towards Long Chen. Inside that attack, there were a few palm prints that could be faintly made out.

“[Five Directional True Devil Fist]!”

Instantly, Long Chen had to face these five palm prints. However he only gave a cold laugh, and then his finger attack which had been prepared long ago struck too. Suddenly a huge whirlwind which could uproot trees and destroy plant-life

had come rushing towards Bai Zhixing!

“[Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil]!”

“The first point!”

“The second pierce!

“The third revolution!”

“The fourth exterminate!”

What made everyone shocked was that Long Chen’s enormous burst of strength had caused Bai Zhixing to retreat continuously. Long Chen had struck out each finger in succession, and that [Five Directional True Devil Fist] had been destroyed, vanishing without a trace!

Although Bai Zhixing had used all her might to generate the Qi, the force from Long Chen had caused her Qi to be unstable. Her face turned pale and while looking at Long Chen with a deadly stare, she slightly trembled.

Long Chen had not shown any mercy in any of his blows. That wild disposition of his had made everyone at the scene suck in a mouthful of cold air. This was all the more for Yang Lingqing, because she knew that Long Chen was practising [Falling Star Fist] before.

“When did he learn [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil]? And the way he uses it is much stronger than Yang Lingyue Sister. How many fingers can he actually

deal?”

Yang Lingqing closely looked at Long Chen. Earlier it was Long Chen who saved her, so at this point she had already placed Long Chen as her pillar of support. At this point while she was looking at Long Chen who was fighting for his life, she then understood what Long Chen meant by the things he had said earlier.

“Lingqing, I have been your Elder Brother for so many years, but I have actually not stepped up for you until now, so today just watch.”

That sentence had reverberated in her mind endlessly.

While looking at Long Chen who had used [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] in succession and caused Bai Zhixing to lose her complexion, Yang Lingqing felt appeased by that. Her eyes turned red, because she had long ago placed Long Chen as her brother in her heart, since Yang Zhan would never step up for her with all his might.

However, the main reason why Long Chen was doing his utmost, besides stepping up for her, was because of the Dream Spirit Grass.

At this point, Long Chen shouted, and yet another whirlwind-like finger came striking!

“The eighth shatter of the universe!”

Bai Zhixing hurriedly used both arms to block, but that violent energy had struck her arms and caused the robes which were on her arms to shred into pieces immediately. She then gave a piercing scream, and spurted out a

mouthful of blood!

Bai Zhixing collapsed in front of Long Chen. At this point Bai Shidong who had processed what happened, looked at this scene with a face of disbelief, which shortly turned into an overflowing rage.

He was standing only a meter behind Bai Zhixing, and was looking at the situation. Just as he wanted to bring forth his Qi and have a death match with Long Chen he was interrupted because Long Chen's target had all along been Bai Shidong. So after beating Bai Zhixing, Long Chen did not let up on Bai Shidong. At that instant, a finger that contained whirlwind appeared immediately in front of Bai Shidong and went piercing towards his head. If he was hit, Bai Shidong would definitely rupture into many bits and pieces!

“The ninth order of Heaven and Earth!”

Long Chen's actions, had made the crowd clamor. People who had a discerning eye could tell that after being struck suddenly by Long Chen, Bai Shidong will definitely not be able to avoid it.

Bai Shidong himself realised this, that because of Long Chen's sudden attack, even if he drew the Qi with all his might, and tried to retreat he would still not have enough time left!

That shadow of death had slowly engulfed him right before his eyes. Looking at the finger which looked as sharp as a blade on a fine sword, Bai Shidong felt that his whole body turned powerless. Both of his legs turned soft, and below the crotch was a dampened and dark area. As it turns out he had actually peed himself.....

Although Bai Shidong had a wet area around his crotch, the crowd did not ridicule him. Because in front of death, anyone has the right to pee themselves.....

However killing Bai Shidong, was bound to become a shocking change for Poplar Town, so after the crowd realised that, their throats turned parched dry.

“This fellow.....How is he not even thinking about this?”

“Don’t!”

Yang Lingqing started panicking, she was akin to ants in a hot wok. She started crying out as she felt like tearing her heart and breaking open her lungs.

[TL Note: (Idiom) “Ants in a hot wok.” & “Felt like tearing her heart and breaking open her lungs.” both mean the same thing, to be nervous and panicky.]

If Long Chen were to kill Bai Shidong in this kind of setting, Long Chen would definitely die without the Yang family founder’s protection. And in the case that the Yang family founder does protect him, then the ending would be a bloodbath between the two families, with a lot of people ending up injured or dead!

Thinking of the consequences Yang Lingqing was scared to the point that she started quivering. When Long Chen had used the ninth strike of the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] technique, she was completely terrified.

In the Yang family the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] is the strongest martial technique after the [Seal of the Dragons]. Also even after reaching the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, it’s not guaranteed that one can definitely master the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] technique. Even Yang Wu, has only mastered it up till the eighth strike only.

And the most important thing is, Yang Lingqing knew that Long Chen had obtained the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] not more than a few days ago.

In reality, Long Chen had went to the Martial Techniques Hall to practice the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] technique right after the intra-family competition. Because during the battle with Yang Lingyue, he had discovered that the skill wasn't bad. So while in the process of learning the [Seal of the Dragons], he conveniently practiced it for a while as well.

This result was due to the miraculous effects of the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant. Long Chen only had access to just the tiniest bit of it's power, but only this minuscule portion, had already allowed him to reap endless benefits.

The mystery of Long Chen, had already turned Yang Lingqing around.

However now was not the time to be deeply moved. Looking on at Long Chen who was about to kill Bai Shidong with a finger, and at Bai Shidong who had been so scared that he pissed himself uncontrollably, in the crowd everyone had been startled, and their emotions were surging like huge waves.

At this point, Long Chen who seemed to be a devil had instantly and completely retracted all the murderous aura around him.

The overpowering aura of the ninth finger of the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] technique had been withdrawn by him in an instant. The huge Qi disappeared and nothing remained behind. Long Chen was standing there pretending like nothing had happened. He just walked past Bai Shidong's side, and turned around to give a kick to the latter's buttocks. This caused Bai Shidong to fly and land like a dog who was eating shit.

[TL Note: "Fly and land like a dog who was eating shit." means he fell flat on his face.]

This abrupt change had caused all the people surrounding the scene to stare at him blankly. The crows and peacocks were making no sounds.

[TL Note: (Idiom) “The crows and peacocks were making no sounds.” means absolute silence.]

Long Chen walked leisurely back to Yang Lingqing’s side, and looked at her who was staring back blankly at him. He then said: “I know I am very handsome, but do you have to look at me while being so enchanted? You have to know we are cousins, so you had better put away any ideas about me.”

After saying this, he laughed, seemingly pleased with himself.

At this point, Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong had slowly picked themselves off the ground.

One was bleeding through the corner of the mouth, and the other was crying between the thighs.

[TL Note: “Crying between the thighs.” means pissing himself.]

Both of them were also looking at Long Chen blankly. Their arrogance from earlier had completely changed into terror. This was especially so for Bai Shidong. Although he wasn’t hurt, he had made a visit to death’s door. The gaze he had for Long Chen right now was like a mouse looking at a cat. He wasn’t even considering how pathetic he was looking right now.

Long Chen smiled at him, because he was very grateful after taking the Dream Spirit Grass out of Bai Shidong's pocket. Bai Shidong himself did not know that right now the Dream Spirit Grass he had in his pocket, was already in Long Chen's possession.

"I hope you won't be like that retard Yang Zhan who committed suicide....."

At this point, the crowd was looking at Long Chen blankly. His image in their hearts had done a 180 degrees turn, and right now, Long Chen could be truly considered as an expert among the younger generation of Poplar Town.

The two middle-aged men's expressions, at this point were especially serious. They used a respectful gaze to look at Long Chen and said: "In this realm, being able to use the final finger technique of the Yang family's [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil], and even use it with such ease, just based on this martial prowess alone, you can see that this young man is definitely a genius among geniuses."

"From the younger generation of Poplar Town, he should be the strongest after the three that are in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. But his age is smaller than theirs by four to five years, so just based on this, his future is limitless. A pity we only thought of him before as just a useless playboy, and never thought that he would have concealed himself. His talent is extraordinary, and he knows well how to endure.....:"

Both of the middle-aged men knew that Long Chen will have a grand journey ahead, and they both gave a bitter laugh and then one of them said: "If he comes to my shop in the future, I will give him a 70% discount on items!"

Long Chen did not know about the conversation between these two men. He had already obtained the Dream Spirit Grass, so naturally he wanted to leave as

soon as possible.

Taking advantage of the fact that the people surrounding him were not yet fully aware, he decided this was the best time to leave. But just as he held Yang Lingqing's hand to lead her away, there came a cold voice from a man behind him.

“You.....want to walk away just like this?”

Long Chen looked back and from among a group of a family's escorts, a handsome young Bai Shiji had already strolled over. His eyes had a dark expression while staring at Long Chen and the aura of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm was completely revealed.

Looking at Bai Shidong's and Bai Zhixing's pathetic states, Bai Shiji blandly said: “These two wastes have thrown away my Bai family's face completely. Someone come, help me pick away these two wastes.”

Behind him the guards hurriedly agreed, and Bai Shiji and Bai Zhixing did not dare to linger another moment here.

After getting rid of them, only then did Bai Shiji look towards Long Chen and size him up. He then blandly said: “Because of the restrictions set by our two families, our two younger generations do not have many conflicts. However today you have already started this by publicly humiliating my Bai family. So as a member of the Bai family, I will not let you go for this. Since you dared to treat my Bai family this way, then you had better be prepared to pay a similar price.

Before Bai Shiji finished talking, Long Chen had already laughed and

interrupted him saying: “What kind of bullshit are you spouting? I don’t really understand, what is this similar price? Young master, I trouble you to speak a language for humans, can you?”

By calling him Young Master, Long Chen was mimicking the Emerald Jade House’s courtesans’ manner of speech. His voice was thin, and coupled with some movements, the resemblance was uncanny. At that moment the crowd started erupting into laughter.

Yang Lingqing had also temporarily forgotten about Bai Shiji’s threat. Her face turning angry and embarrassed, she viciously pinched Long Chen’s arms a few times.

After being poked fun at by Long Chen, Bai Shiji’s face involuntarily twitched. No matter how much he wanted to maintain the look of a refined young man, at this point his face couldn’t help but turn cold.

He then coldly said: “You used a finger attack to harm Bai Zhixing, so I shall return to you that harm. I will let you see exactly how a real finger martial technique looks like.”

Listening to Bai Shiji’s speech, Yang Lingqing was temporarily shocked. She then hurriedly held onto Long Chen’s arms and said: “He wants to use the [Dark Heavenly Finger], this is an advanced Huang martial technique, so let’s just run.”

Long Chen looked at Bai Shiji indifferently and said: “You leave first, I will face him.”

Yang Lingqing at this point panicked and started pleading with him by saying:

“Chen.....Big Brother, I’m calling you Big Brother Chen already, won’t this do? Just listen to me this time, if you fight with him and you are not his match, you will damage your internal organs. Your loss will be huge.....:”

Although Yang Lingqing had pleaded with him, Long Chen did not comply. He looked at Bai Shiji, while not moving a muscle.

“Bai Shiji.....if you weren’t Bai Zhanxiong’s son, today I might have tried to escape, but unfortunately you are, so even if I were to die, I will never escape in front of your eyes!”

Yang Lingqing did not know Long Chen’s determination in his heart, so she was so anxious till the point of almost crying.

At this moment, Lingxi too had whispered beside Long Chen’s ear and said: “I think we had better leave, right now you are indeed not his match. After I have refined the Dream Spirit Grass, I will help you undo the barrier. So then you can face him in the demonic beast hunting competition, that shouldn’t be considered too late.”

Actually Long Chen knew where to draw the line, but his legs were as if they were pinned to the ground. It was impossible to move him even half a step.

While looking at Long Chen who put on an expression of not being afraid of death, Bai Shiji suddenly laughed. With each step he made he walked slowly towards Long Chen. The people behind Long Chen started to back away, and only Yang Lingqing remained by his side.

“Bai Shiji is indeed furious. Earlier this kid was in such a great limelight, but

since he met a true expert, he will definitely turn into a tragedy.”

“His age is smaller by four years. To be able to have the guts to face Bai Shiji like that, this can already be considered not simple. If he was given another four years, I dare bet that Bai Shiji would definitely not be his match.”

The onlookers’ discussion had made Bai Shiji even more furious. His Qi of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had momentarily pressed on Long Chen’s body. That enormous strength was as if a huge wave was crashing on Long Chen, but Long Chen’s feet were still pinned to the ground, his body not moving even half an inch backwards!

“The might of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, is definitely over ten times stronger than that of the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm! No wonder back then when I was facing against Yang Yuntian, there was not even the slightest thing I could do to retaliate!”

As for Bai Shiji who saw that Long Chen did not even retreat half a step, in his heart he was in shock. He then coldly said: “You want to maintain this farce? I’ll let you have a taste of the [Dark Heavenly Finger], this way you will know what regret feels like.....”

He clenched his fingers into a fist, and with the index finger pointing down, his Qi started rising furiously and a wave of faint black light had slowly began to condense on his index finger. Although it was faint, but the energy that was within this attack, was even stronger than Long Chen’s ninth finger from earlier by at least ten times!

“This.....This is the Bai family’s [Dark Heavenly Finger]? As expected the piercing strength is overwhelming. It’s famous for piercing the heaven and the

earth.....”

Seeing this scene, Yang Lingqing’s tears had started dripping from her eyes. But Long Chen’s stubbornness had already exceeded her expectations. Even Lingxi was not able to persuade him.

Bai Shiji looked at Long Chen with a grim expression. He had to admit that he admired Long Chen for him to be able to have such a performance today. But since he is now in his, Bai Shiji’s hands, he will definitely not show any mercy.

The explosive might concentrated on the index finger of the [Dark Heavenly Finger]. He then slowly raised his finger, and got ready to point.

Long Chen’s gaze intensified. He too had generated all his Qi, and got ready to use the strongest attack he had, the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon].

That is right, the reason he actually had time to learn the [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil] was because he had completely mastered the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon]. And compared to his opponent’s [Dark Heavenly Finger], it was comprehended even better!

However Long Chen knew that his chances were not that high because his Qi amount was at least 20 times less than his opponent’s. Also the [Celestial Core Technique] which had an advantage before, right now, against a seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, did not have much use.

What Long Chen had wished to prove with this decision, was only his proud and unyielding spirit.

The two forces continuously increased, and the onlookers kept their gazes on this intense fight.

Long Chen, by even daring to face Bai Shiji, had left them very surprised.

The two middle-aged men from earlier were also looking at Long Chen. Suddenly one of them said: “Did you feel that, his body had actually faintly shown the aura from the [Seal of the Dragons]. If I haven’t guessed wrongly, this fellow has already practiced the [Seal of the Dragons], and it’s possible he is even able to have some accomplishments in it.”

“He has only gotten ahold of the [Seal of the Dragons] in the intra-family competition. Based on him being in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and having such achievements, he will definitely be honored even if this is a loss.

[TL Note: It says sixth level because the 2 men thought he was in the sixth level after he beat the 2 Bai family members that were in the sixth level.]

“They are really going to fight.....”

Against the enormous strength of Bai Shiji, Long Chen gritted his teeth tightly.

“Father, it is not that I am rash, but this backbone of mine, is completely out of my control.....”

“It is pinned here, so I Long Chen, how can I retreat?”

At this moment, a woman’s voice rang.

“Shiji.....Why are you fighting in the cultivator’s market?”

Killing Intent

Hearing this voice, Long Chen immediately knew who it came from.

Yang Xueqing.

After hearing Yang Xueqing's voice, Bai Shiji was stumped for a while. He then viciously looked at Long Chen, while the [Dark Heavenly Finger] technique that he was condensing earlier started to diminish.

As for Long Chen, he also did not use the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon].

"Aunt, we are here....."

After hearing Yang Xueqing's voice, Yang Lingqing who cried like a little girl earlier, heaved a sigh of relief, and joyfully called out.

At first Yang Xueqing had only seen Bai Shiji, and had a look of concern for Bai Shiji. But after hearing Yang Lingqing's voice, she then suddenly saw that the person Bai Shiji was confronting was actually Long Chen. So her gentle gaze was immediately replaced by an icy cold one.

Long Chen laughed grimly, he had to prostrate himself in admiration at this woman's skill in changing her expression. However what was more pitiful was the fact that she had a gentle gaze for another person's son, while when looking at her own son she used an ice-cold gaze.

Long Chen did not bother to understand this complex feeling he had. He also

did not wish to look at Yang Xueqing while she was looking at Bai Shiji in a caring way. So when Yang Xueqing had appeared, he pretended that nothing had happened and began to walk away.

“Stop!”

Yang Xueqing’s icy cold voice rang beside his ears.

Long Chen turned around and asked: “May I know why is this wife of the Bai family looking for me? Could it be because I have beaten two wastes from the Bai family? Indeed, the two wastes were beaten by me. So may I ask, what are you going to do to me now?”

Long Chen’s speech had made Yang Lingqing, who was somewhat excited at the arrival of Yang Xueqing earlier, get deflated like a balloon. She looked at Long Chen blankly, then she looked at Yang Xueqing’s grim expression, because no matter how hard she tried, Lingqing simply could not make out the situation.

Long Chen’s voice had a hint of insult in it, and this made it hard to breathe for Yang Xueqing. In front of everyone, Long Chen did not give her any face. She had become even angrier, especially because of the nonchalant look he had plastered on his face.

[TL Note: (Idiom) “Give someone face” means to show respect to someone.]

But she knew this; right now her reputation wasn’t that excellent due to the news of her remarrying, so if she would do anything to Long Chen now, it would be difficult to avoid rumours from spreading. And this wasn’t any good news for the Yang family or the Bai family.

So Yang Xueqing pretended not to hear any of Long Chen's insults, and just turned around and asked Bai Shiji: "Shiji, today's matter, I will first apologise to your Bai family. Also about him saying that he had beaten up members of the Bai family, is that true?"

Bai Shiji nodded his head and said: "He did indeed injure Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong. I was just about to resolve this issue with him, so that he won't stir anymore conflicts in the future, for the good of both of our families, but you had suddenly appeared. Auntie Yang, Shiji trusts you, so you can take him home with you."

Looking at this sensible child, Yang Xueqing was very satisfied with him. Besides, Bai Shiji's cultivation was also not lacking. Getting into the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm at the age of twenty, this was no ordinary feat.

So she nodded her head and said: "Please send my regards to your father. Today's matter, I will personally go over to apologise. Right now I will take my leave first."

"Auntie Yang please take care."

Long Chen looking at these two who were showing off this pretense, started feeling disgusted.

With Yang Xueqing's sudden appearance, the matter was over just like that. But as for Bai Shiji's strength and the pressure he had, together with the threat of the [Dark Heavenly Finger], Long Chen had committed them all in his heart clearly!

“If I don’t have a plan to counter this [Dark Heavenly Finger] during the demonic beast hunting competition, and I were to meet him, and at that time there are few people around, I will definitely die!”

Yang Xueqing’s and Bai Shiji’s affectionate attitude towards one another had made Long Chen furious, suddenly he thought of something.

“The demonic beast hunting competition and their marriage is on the same day, if I were to kill Bai Shiji, then the Bai family will have to hold a funeral instead. It would be funny if the marriage would continue nonetheless!”

The two big events; the demonic beast hunting competition and the marriage, had also caused Long Chen to be at a loss for the past 3 days on how to handle things, since he wanted to create havoc at their wedding and stop them from getting married. But it was obvious that his strength right now was still lacking. Not to mention the Bai family wanting to deal with him, even the Yang family would want to dispose of him for throwing so much face.

That time, Long Chen had seen Bai Zhanxiong kidnapping the courtesans from the Emerald Jade House with his own eyes. He followed him from behind only to realise that Bai Zhanxiong had used these girls to make a trade with a group of people with a red dot between their eyebrows.

Last time he had told Yang Xueqing, but Yang Xueqing did not believe him.

Long Chen had always felt that these Bai family members were a little strange, and if Yang Xueqing were to marry over to them, the result would be unclear.

But right now, he had finally thought of a plan to salvage the situation.

Looking on coldly at Yang Xueqing and Bai Shiji who were conversing, he thought: “The only way, would be to kill Bai Shiji. After castrating one of his sons and killing the other, would they still have a chance to get married?”

And the best chance to kill Bai Shiji was of course during the demonic beast hunting competition. However to achieve this goal, Long Chen still needed to have a very huge breakthrough. But he had just obtained the Dream Spirit Grass, which was a crucial ingredient to that end.

After making plans in his mind, Long Chen did not bother to continue watching. Seeing that Long Chen had actually left first, Yang Lingqing hurriedly followed after him.

At this point, Yang Xueqing and Bai Shiji had just finished talking.

Despite her gentle looking nature, she was actually raging deep within. With so many onlookers, she too could not persist. But she knew that because of the way that Long Chen had humiliated her, she would definitely not give Long Chen a good time when she gets back to the Yang family residence.

“I helped you hold Bai Shiji back, which can be considered as saving your life, but you actually do not know how to repay my kindness, and even make me lose face. You have really disappointed me deeply!”

“Your strength isn’t much but your arrogance is sky high, thinking that you can beat anyone, how can you even think that Bai Shiji is someone you can defeat.....”

Looking at the icy cold expression of Yang Xueqing, the crowd did not dare go near her. Walking out of the cultivator's market, she actually saw Yang Lingqing standing there waiting for her, so after giving her another look, she blandly asked: "Where is he?"

Yang Lingqing started to get nervous and said: "Chen.....Big brother as he walked out earlier, he saw someone so he told me to go back first, and then he chased after him. So I don't know either....."

"Chasing someone?"

Yang Xueqing was stunned, and then she sneered: "It was just an excuse. He was just afraid of me scolding him, and actually used this little kiddy method. The Long family trickery is indeed first rate....."

Yang Lingqing bit her lips, not saying a word.

She did actually see Long Chen chasing after someone. When that person had seen them, the man had even escaped immediately, but now according to Yang Xueqing it had been just a lie.....

She wanted to argue back, but thinking of the relationship between Long Chen and Yang Xueqing, it was more sensible not to say anything.

After walking for a few steps, Yang Xueqing suddenly asked: "Xiao Qing Er, can you tell me about today's matter?"

Hearing this Yang Lingqing thought she had a chance to justify Long Chen's actions so she honestly told Yang Xueqing everything that had just happened. She expected Yang Xueqing who had an icy cold expression before to faintly praise Long Chen now. But instead after Yang Xueqing finished listening, her face was still expressionless as she said: "Oh? Being able to defeat two cultivators in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, huh? Even so, if he had to fight against a seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator, wouldn't he be powerless to fight back?"

Yang Lingqing watched as Yang Xueqing's silhouette walked away, she then pouted her lips. Now she suddenly understood why earlier Long Chen in front of Bai Shiji, did not want to retreat even half a step, not even under that immense pressure.....

After dashing through a few streets, Long Chen abruptly grabbed the nape of the man who was running in front of him and shattered the knife that the man had tried to use in a sneak attack against him. He then slammed him towards a latrine, where a stench had immediately infiltrated the air. Long Chen's enormous strength had pushed the man to the wall. The man had a face filled with fear, not being able to even move an inch.

Earlier when Long Chen walked out of the cultivator's market, he had brushed shoulders with this guy, and saw that he was carrying a knife.

At first Long Chen did not think much of it, but he suddenly remembered that the people who tried to assassinate him had also used a knife like this, and they were also in the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. The figure in front of him was similar to those people, so he tried to feel out the guy. He never thought that once he would start to chase him, this guy because of his guilty conscience, would turn around and run. Only at this point did Long Chen confirm that this guy was indeed the assassin that escaped.

After chasing for a short period of time, Long Chen managed to corner the guy in this place. He growled softly: "I will not speak any rubbish with you, tell me who solicited my murder, if not, die."

Long Chen suddenly had become so strong, so this murderer had long ago given up hope. But after hearing that he actually had a chance to reverse the situation, he hurriedly said: "If I say it, can you not kill me then?"

Long Chen nodded his head saying: "But you must leave Poplar Town."

This was in line with the assassin's thoughts, so he blandly stated: "Very simple, Bai family, Bai Zhanxiong."

Long Chen had two surprises, one was that this guy had actually plainly stated out the truth, and the second was that his answer was Bai Zhanxiong.

"He only wants to marry my mother, so why would he risk killing me just like that?"

Long Chen could not figure it out no matter how he tried.

At this point the murderer said: "I have not deceived you, earlier when I told you, it was because I also harbour hatred towards him. He agreed to let my daughter go after I succeeded, but now she has already been killed by him! I have merely remained in Poplar Town until now to find a chance to seek revenge!"

Long Chen looked at this man who had bloodshot eyes while speaking of Bai Zhanxiong. He felt that he wasn't lying, and right now the actual culprit that solicited his murder was not that important anymore. If it was Bai Zhanxiong, then it's just right, because Long Chen had wanted to deal with him either way.

Releasing his hands, Long Chen looked at him and laughed: "You wanted to claim my life, and today you have ended up in my hands, but I have already promised not to kill you, so just go ahead and eat this pile of shit!"

After saying this, before the murderer could react, Long Chen had already pushed him into the pile of shit. The dirty water splashed around and the sound of plop could be heard. Long Chen hurriedly avoided and thought: "So close, lucky I was fast enough....."

The sun had begun to set in the west.

"Xiao Xi, lets go to the Big Barren Mountain."

Lingxi was stumped, and asked: "Why? Are you afraid of your mother beating you? You don't need to be afraid, as long as I have refined this Dream Spirit Grass, I can protect you. I won't let that woman hurt you any longer."

Long Chen smiled and said: "What does a girl like you know, I am not afraid of her, but there are many people in the Yang residence. So if you are going to refine the Dream Spirit Grass and check and see what secrets there are in the [Seal of the Dragons], it will be rather inconvenient in the Yang family residence.

"So this was the case, then let's go, finally there is something yummy to eat....."

Lingxi's voice although feeble, had a hint of joy and happiness in it.

"To eat?"

"....."

"En! You don't know, but after I became like this, I've never had anything to eat since then. Earlier I found myself some spirit medicine, and the flavour wasn't bad....."

Long Chen after hearing this girl talking about it happily, actually felt bad on the inside. Not being able to eat and only being able to use spirit medicine to recreate the flavour of food, to a girl who had been brought up in fortune, he knew how difficult that was.

"Xiao Xi....."

"En?"

"There will come a day, when I will let you be able to eat really well."

"Really? I am a voracious eater, so if you want to feed me it's not gonna be easy. I am a big eater, this Dream Spirit Grass is not even enough as a bite for me, so you must work harder!"

"Yes! Your servant accepts your orders!"

Dragon Warrior

The night quietly crept in, and Long Chen had already arrived on the Big Barren Mountain.

Big Barren Mountain. East of Poplar Town, is a huge group of mountains extending for tens of thousands of miles. Here poisonous bugs can be found everywhere and there you can also find many hidden demonic beasts. It is an area that is famous for being dangerous.

Long Chen had once entered the Desolate Beast Domain, which was in the deepest area of the Big Barren Mountain.

However the difference between the Desolate Beast Domain's barren landscape and the landscape of the Big Barren Mountain is that the Big Barren Mountain's landscape has tall trees with leaves seemingly covering the entire sky.

Right now there wasn't a sound to be heard. Long Chen's purpose for entering the depths of the Big Barren Mountain, was to find a safe and quiet place.

The Big Barren Mountain is a deserted area where very few people can be seen. In the mountains there are many naturally-formed caves, and most of them have become the residence of many demonic or wild beasts, however some are still empty.

In the night, Long Chen had found a very concealed cave. After letting Lingxi probe inside, she found only a bunch of second grade Huang Demonic Beasts, so Long Chen went in to throw them out. After another round of cleaning, he

moved a huge rock to block the entrance of the cave.

“It is very concealed in here and absolutely safe. Alright Xiao Xi, you can now refine this Dream Spirit Grass.”

As he spoke, Long Chen had already taken the Dream Spirit Grass out. It was a kind of purple spirit grass, which emitted a unique kind of sweet smelling scent. As Long Chen smelled it, he felt at peace, it felt extremely comfortable.

“A medicine with spirit healing properties has a great effect on soothing the nerves. After consuming it, there will be a certain degree of increase in comprehensive abilities. This is the reason why that person had brought along the Dream Spirit Grass.”

Lingxi’s voice had lightly sounded out.

Long Chen flipped through Bai Shidong’s pouch, and sneakily said: “This kid even brought along over 80 spirit jades. This is quite advantageous for me, not only did I not spend money, but instead I actually earned some.”

Long Chen had the air of someone accomplishing something great. Lingxi wanted to slap him after seeing his behaviour, but she couldn’t do anything about it since she had no hands.

However the aroma of the Dream Spirit Grass, may induce the attention of some demonic beasts, so without saying another word, she used some methods to refine the Dream Spirit Grass.

Long Chen saw the Lingxi sword that was previously attached to his ear lay on

the ground. And afterwards a cloud of white mist began to emerge from the sword and started engulfing the Dream Spirit Grass. A sound of “zi zi” began to sound, and the mist gradually became smaller, until it was not to be seen.

At last when that last lining of mist had disappeared, Lingxi’s voice sounded out, and compared to before, it was much more distinct.

“You scoundrel, you want to receive a surprise?”

Being called a scoundrel, Long Chen had felt his whole body go numb, so he cheekily smiled and said: “Such a thing like a surprise, I guess it’s better than nothing.”

“You have no sincerity, hng!”

“Okay, stop trying to keep me from guessing. Hurry up, I, your master, am still waiting to appreciate your surprise.”

However Lingxi didn’t make any movements. Suddenly, the Lingxi sword turned small, into a 1 cm ear pin, and attached itself to Long Chen’s ear.

“You girl, is this your so called surprise?”

“Don’t worry.....”

Suddenly a voice rang beside Long Chen’s ear, and Long Chen was stunned, because there was a gentle breeze that was blown on his face. He turned his head, and was momentarily shocked because as he turned around, he had

bumped his nose into a girl who had suddenly appeared in front of him!

Although a sweet aroma infiltrated his nose, this was not the charming scene he was anticipating, because the one who had bumped into Long Chen's nose was only a 2 centimetres tiny figure.

She was surrounded by a mist, however despite only having a 2 cm body, Long Chen had already seen her features which were like beautiful jade. And if the 2 cm were to expand, that fairy would surely be a source of calamity.

Lingxi was like a little pixie flying around while being surrounded by mist. She became irritated when she was bumped on the nose by Long Chen so she said: "You evil guy, that bump was really painful!"

Seeing this small pocket-sized fairy, Long Chen could no longer bring himself to speak.

Actually deep down he was fantasizing. If Lingxi were to become bigger with a physical body.....Wouldn't that be a wonderful thing?

Looking at Long Chen who had not spoken yet, Lingxi's expression had slowly started to change. Her eyes squinting, she shouted angrily: "Hey, at least make a noise, is it okay if I appear like this or not?"

Such a lovable sight, had already made Long Chen's whole body go limp. Before this he had seen quite a number of beauties, the girls in the Yang family were also very beautiful, but after seeing the level of Lingxi's beauty..... he realised that her face, her posture, and her manners were all first class. He had really never seen someone this beautiful before.....

However very soon he started to come back to his senses, and exaggeratedly said: “Xiao Xi, you are simply the most beautiful girl I have ever seen, you are practically on the same level as fairies!”

After being praised like that by Long Chen, Lingxi’s face turned red.

Although she had a spirit body, she looked similar to when she had a physical body. So to Long Chen, although she was in the mist, she already was no different than an actual person.

“Oh right, can you always maintain this form?”

“Lingxi nodded her head and said: “This is the solution I have come up with earlier. Before because I was appearing with such a large body, my spirit strength would be reduced quickly. However this way, I’m not using even one thousandth of the strength I used before. I’m always speaking to you but you’re not looking at me, so because I didn’t feel comfortable, I thought of this idea.”

Long Chen knew that girls hated being ignored, so Lingxi thinking this way, was actually a normal thing to him.

Lingxi was so happy, flying in front of Long Chen’s eyes like a tiny angel. After a while, she then stopped, her face turning grim as she said: “This Dream Spirit Grass, at most it can maintain this life of mine by about a month or two only.....”

Seeing that she was somewhat dismayed, Long Chen started feeling sorry for her, so he hurriedly said: “You silly girl, what are you worrying for? Today, I can obtain a Dream Spirit Grass for you, and in the future when I become stronger,

no matter what kind of spirit nurturing medicine you need, you can have anything you want.”

“What the, you think this medicine is grown like cabbages huh. Because cultivators also have uses for it, even at places where these medicines are plentiful, it is still pretty much in great demand.”

Lingxi quietly sat on Long Chen’s shoulders.

Long Chen’s eyes filled with determination and said: “Alright, let’s not be indecisive anymore. Earlier you only had a few days left, and I was able to solve it. Not to mention now where you have one to two months. After my demonic beast hunting competition ends, I will specially hunt these medicines for you and give you as many as you want!”

Lingxi’s eyes flashed, and while joyfully looking at Long Chen she said: “Really? Why are you treating me so nicely?”

“Because we are best friends.” Long Chen said seriously.

Long Chen’s words had made Lingxi very satisfied, so she happily flew around again. Long Chen’s mood was excellent too, and as he thought of the [Seal of the Dragons], he asked: “Xiao Xi, do you know what a Dragon Warrior is?”

Lingxi stopped, her eyes blinking at him and asked: “Eh, how would you even know this myth?”

Long Chen’s emotions had stirred inside.

As expected Lingxi was from a better place, because something that the whole of Poplar Town did not know, she knew.

“Don’t ask why I would know about this, just tell me what you know.”

“To know about Dragon Warriors, then let me ask you. Do you know about Armament and Beast Warriors? I only know vaguely that Dragon Warriors are a kind of Beast Warriors, but again it’s not the same thing.”

“I know about Beast Warriors.” Long Chen thought of what was recorded in the book and then said: “Legends have it that after a practitioner has finished reinforcing their body, and entered the Dragon Pulse Realm, it will give rise to a vein with Qi. By using some secret methods to swallow a demonic beast’s spirit, you can use it as a foundation for the beast spirit. At this point the Qi will turn into beast Qi, and compared to normal Qi, the beast Qi is even more ruthless. The attack power is stronger and they also have the ability to use the fighting skills of the demonic beast spirit.”

“Also a Beast Warrior can even swallow demonic beast energy cores, this way they can break through realms quickly and morph into a demonic beast. The strength of the beasts, will differ based on the talents of the Beast Warrior. However, after being a Beast Warrior, the skills that can be learned are limited. And if a weak cultivator swallows a strong beast spirit, it could lead to the body’s self-destruction and then death!”

Lingxi nodded her head: “En, you have pretty much said it.”

She stopped in front of Long Chen’s eyes, and tilted her head as if to recall something.

“I think you know too, our people are descendants of the Ancestral Dragons. Today, the Ancestral Dragons have already turned into myths. My father told me that this world no longer has any dragons, and that the Dragon Warriors of the myths were a group of people who had been close to becoming Ancestral Dragons. Their cultivation technique was different from the Beast Warriors’ cultivation technique, and what they needed was not beast spirits, but the true blood essence of an Ancestral Dragon!”

After talking about the true blood essence, Long Chen had suddenly felt, that the mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant had made some movements. Long Chen was extremely startled, so he hurriedly said: “Does this mean that after obtaining the true blood essence, one can become a Dragon Warrior?”

Lingxi rolled her eyes and said: “How would I know? However, according to legends, in the same level, an Armament Warrior is stronger than a Beast Warrior, and Beast Warriors are much stronger than average cultivators. But a Dragon Warrior is much stronger than an Armament Warrior, because they are the group of people who have drawn forth the bloodline of the Ancestral Dragons. Rumor has it that they have the destructive and cataclysmic powers of the Ancestral Dragons. However today Dragon Warriors are but a myth, so whether or not they are that strong, I don’t know.”

Although Lingxi did not know much, but from her words Long Chen knew that a Dragon Warrior was an extreme existence.

Since Long Qinglan had actually told Long Chen to become a Dragon Warrior, Long Chen realised that Long Qinglan’s identity was much greater than Lingxi’s.

Lingxi had said that the Dragon Warriors were only a myth, but Long Qinglan

had let Long Chen become a Dragon Warrior. This difference can be understood almost immediately!

“Father, what kind of person were you? Lingxi knows so much, and her background is extraordinary, but you know even more! Also, this mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, and the Yang family’s [Seal of the Dragons], exactly what kind of connections do they have with the true blood essence?”

Lingxi looked at Long Chen curiously, not knowing what he was thinking about.

To Long Chen, Long Qinglan was like a ball of mystery. Long Chen could not unravel the mystery so afterwards thinking about what Lingxi had said earlier, about her trying to undo the barrier on the [Seal of the Dragons], he took the [Seal of the Dragons] out and placed it on the floor and said: “Xiao Xi, why don’t you try and see if you can undo this barrier.”

Lingxi excitedly and complacently said: “Kiddo, you don’t know this, but although I didn’t work hard in my cultivation, I am an expert at breaking barriers. The more complicated a barrier is, the stronger my fighting spirit is. So today’s matter you can hand it over to me, I will guarantee to you that it will be completed 100 percent!”

Seeing this girl who seemed to be very able, Long Chen said: “Stop talking big, hurry up and do it. If you manage to break it, I, your master will reward you!”

Lingxi’s face flushed red and gave a sound of “Hng!”. But then her cute body slowly landed on the [Seal of the Dragons], and after awhile, that super small eyebrow began to frown, looking extremely lovable.

The Blood Essence Inheritance

After a while, Lingxi suddenly felt tired, and simply sat on the [Seal of the Dragons]. Her eyes shifted back and forth as she thought of a method to break the barrier.

“Xiao Xi, how is it?” Long Chen asked eagerly.

An hour had already passed since the time Lingxi had started studying the barrier. Long Chen was also rather anxious; after all, the secret in this [Seal of the Dragons] was connected to what Long Qinglan had entrusted to him, and was the key to him becoming a Dragon Warrior.

“You bastard, you interrupted my thoughts!”

Lingxi stared at him, but she was not really angry.

“It’s fine, you can rest for a while. Seeing you tired, I, your Elder Brother, feel sorry for you. Oh right, why don’t you tell me more about this barrier. These last few days you have been mentioning it, but you’ve never told me anything.”

Seeing Long Chen’s face which was filled with curiosity, Lingxi waited for the moment she could show off, and then smugly said: “This barrier is a kind of unique application of Qi. Someone like you, who only knows how to fight, wouldn’t know about the intricate details of setting up a formation method. The formation of a barrier is like embroidery, so for me, finding the key is like finding the loose end of the thread. I then need to return on the path where the formation was originally set up, one step at a time. However, breaking the barrier is much more difficult than embroidery, since finding the key is extremely

difficult. If you make any mistake, you would have to start over again.

Only then did Long Chen understand how it worked. However, Lingxi, who had been muddle-headed all this time, already knew this. This made him look at her differently.

Looking at Long Chen's shocked expression, Lingxi could tell what he was really thinking, and momentarily pouted in anger.

"You had better not look down on me. I've said it already; although I, Lingxi, may not be that hard-working at cultivation, but I am a super expert in regard to barrier formation. And in this area of expertise, I am much better than my father, as well as all my other peers."

Long Chen believed that deep down, but he put on an air of nonchalance and said: "Really? Then why is the barrier not undone yet?"

Lingxi suddenly felt pressured and said: "Do you think this is like eating rice? Besides, this broken thing's barrier is rather ancient, I have not heard of it before, much less had experience breaking it before. So I need a little more time. Just wait another hour, I guarantee I will have something to show you!"

After being looked down on by Long Chen, Lingxi had become anxious, and immediately became engrossed in her work. Long Chen secretly laughed at her from a side: "This girl is so easy to trick; in the future I must definitely not let her slip away. With her around, if I encounter any treasures that have barriers next time, won't she be able to unlock them easily for me?"

Under Lingxi's effort, after half an hour, Long Chen felt a mysterious, yet faint

formation of light slowly emerge from the upper part of the [Seal of the Dragons].

Lingxi was busy working on the light formation conscientiously. What made Long Chen surprised was that there was actually a threatening and ancient layer of aura, which was gradually being emitted out from the light formation. It even brought about a smell that reeked of blood.

This mix of aura started getting bigger and bigger, and Long Chen felt his heartbeat speed up greatly. That ancient and detached feeling gave him an urge to fall to his knees. As for that aura that was reeking of blood, it had also turned his eyes bloodshot.

Although there were no opponents in here, the murderous aura on his body started to increase.

Long Chen was extremely flabbergasted; it was just a faint amount of aura but the secrets in this [Seal of the Dragons] could actually affect his bearing. In addition, this was an item which Long Qinglan had deemed as important; with Long Qinglan's mysterious identity, how could something he had regarded as important be simple?

“Long Chen, you must be careful, almost there now.....”

Lingxi's voice sounded out distantly. Hearing her voice, Long Chen became more clear-headed. However, the aura from the light formation had become more and more dense, and that smell of blood had gradually permeated the whole cave.

Long Chen's eyes had also gradually turned redder, and many illusions started to appear in his field of vision. He tightly clenched his fists together, causing his veins to pop out. His whole body started to quiver. It could be seen that he was trying extremely hard to stay in control.

As for Lingxi who had reached the crucial moment, she was devoting all her attention and moved on to the final step, so she definitely could not see Long Chen's abnormality.

"What exactly is the secret of the [Seal of the Dragons].....Why do I have such an uncontrollable feeling right now.....But my father will definitely not harm me..... I, Long Chen, must definitely endure it, and not be hypnotised."

Thinking of his father, Long Chen suddenly had some faith. That ancient and blood stenching aura coming from the light formation was continuously rushing forth to his body. But Long Chen bit his lips tightly, to the point of bleeding. Because this pain was making him a little more clear-headed.

"Get ready now, it's about to be undone. I too don't know what will happen....."

"Faintly, Lingxi's voice had once again travelled over, but at this time the ancient and blood stenching aura had gradually turned the air inside the cave into a reddish colour.

Suddenly, with a ding sound, the light formation in front of Lingxi had turned into dust. Lingxi seemingly was exhausted so she returned back into the Lingxi sword, the cave only had Long Chen and that unique [Seal of the Dragons] scroll.

Under Long Chen's startled vision, the [Seal of the Dragons] scroll which was originally of sheepskin paper, had at this instant started to be covered by a blood red colour, until it completely changed colours.

At this point, that detached and bloody aura had slowly condensed to the extreme point, and under this aura, Long Chen's face turned pale and his whole body started violently shaking.

This aura, had only inexplicably concentrated on one point inside the cave. Within the Big Desolate Mountain, it was still quiet throughout.

"Long..... Long Chen, what exactly is this? I.....I am scared, it's as if I will be eaten anytime....."

Lingxi's quivering voice had rang beside his ears.

At this point Long Chen was very nervous too, but his only belief was that his father would definitely not harm him.

"Don't be afraid!"

Thinking of his father, no matter how dangerous of a situation he was in, had made Long Chen be filled with fighting spirit.

"Come! I don't care what kind of thing you are!"

As if hearing Long Chen's words, at this point a mysterious map started to come out of the [Seal of the Dragons] scroll.

Long Chen only vaguely saw an image of a divine dragon from the ancient legends!

[Wings of Erya] Cloud: It causes the growth of the Dragon Warrior's scales. The Sovereign's Mark is exhibited by 9 particular appearances: Its head is like a bull's, its horns are like a deer's, its eyes are like a prawn's, its ears are like an elephant's, its neck is like a snake's, its abdomen is also like a snake's, its scales are like a fish's, its claws are like a phoenix's, and its palm is like a tiger's. Their backs have 81 scales, a product of 9 by 9 in a Yang configuration, and have the voice of a reverberating copper plate. They have whiskers at the side of their mouths, a jewel under the chin, and a reverse scale below their throats. They have a crest on their head, also known as Metre Wood. A dragon without a metre wood is unable to ascend to the heavens. Their breaths form clouds which can transform into both water and fire.

[TL Note: (龙无尺木不能升天) Metre Wood: In Chinese wood can mean earth, so Metre Wood literally means "From earth to heaven." this can be understood as "Ascending to heavens."]

[TL Note: (逆鳞) Reverse Scale: The Chinese Dragons do contain a rough spot, a Reverse Scale below their chins. When it is touched, it causes them to rage and devastate the earth with their rampaging power. This is their weak spot.]

What Long Chen saw, was a Dragon God such as this!

However in a flash this Dragon God had faded and the blood red colour on the [Seal of the Dragons] scroll had also begun to disappear. Finally it had condensed into a drop, a drop of deep red blood, which floated before Long Chen's eyes!

This drop of blood, had harnessed an aura that was making Long Chen shudder uncontrollably. Earlier, that ancient yet bloodthirsty aura had magnified to several thousand times. Long Chen at this moment could feel that his brains were about to split open. He gave a cry of agony, and his eyes opened wide.

Looking at this scene, Lingxi was even more horrified and she started screaming.

Long Chen could faintly see that within this drop of blood, it was as if there was an endless and vast world. And that world was filled with an endless blood red colour; blood red skies, and blood red seas.

Long Chen knew this; even if all the humans in the world were slayed, it still wouldn't be enough to gather so much blood.

At this time, Long Chen felt as if he was within these seas!

He looked on terrified, and in the expanse of these blood seas which seemed endless, there were waves continually surging, as if there was a colossal beast hidden within, so colossal that it could fill these seas.

Long Chen flew above the vast sky, and shuddered as he looked down into the seas. Under that boundless blood sea, there was a figure so gigantic that he could now see. This figure was coiled around. Looking at its shape, it should be.....a dragon?

At this point, the entire blood sea violently shook, and that huge figure within, slowly raised it's head and gave a cry of dragon's roar, which crossed over the boundaries of time and space and violently crashed into Long Chen's ear!

Long Chen instantly opened his eyes and surprisingly discovered that he was actually still inside the cave. The drop of blood was still floating in front of his eyes.

Inside this drop, there was actually a dragon that was flipping and roaring with rage, and it was making Long Chen's emotions surge!

"Father, what is this? I have only heard of legends of the Red Dragon and the Green Dragon. An even higher rank should be the Five Talons Golden Dragon. But I've never heard of an existence of a dragon like this, that is actually blood red!"

"Is this the Murderous Ghost Shadow Blood Dragon? Not right.....it's definitely not!"

Lingxi's voice had also rang beside Long Chen's ears!

At this moment of Long Chen's shock, that drop of blood, had infused between Long Chen's eyebrows in a flash, and seeped in.

Long Chen had momentarily felt a rush of dark and cold aura spread throughout his whole body!

Long Chen had absolutely no way to resist that fearsome aura. His strength was simply too weak while going against this blood drop. If the blood drop had any intentions of killing him, he would have long ago died, ending up without a corpse!

That blood red droplet, was like a poisonous medicine, quickly spreading throughout his body. Long Chen at this moment had momentarily felt the taste of death!

He himself knew this; the drop of blood was too extreme of an existence for him, so even if it did not have any intentions to hurt Long Chen, he would still die because of it!

When the drop of red blood had entered his body it started tearing and devastating everything. Long Chen suddenly thought of a point, Long Qinglan had let him obtain the [Seal of the Dragons], but he never asked him to become a Dragon Warrior right now. If Lingxi didn't appear, Long Chen would definitely not have had the power to break the barrier. Long Qinglan felt that when Long Chen could make contact and find someone who could actually break this barrier, Long Chen would at that point have the ability to withstand this red drop of blood. But it so happened that a barrier breaking genius like Lingxi had appeared earlier than Long Qinglan expected!

So right now, this was an extremely dangerous situation for Long Chen to be in.

Because of the repercussions, Long Chen already knew that his life was gradually fading away, and his consciousness was slowly becoming blurry.

While dying, he started thinking of many things.

“This.....is the inheritance of the blood essence.....”

“The dragons of the legends, actually have such a fearsome existence.....”

“Without me, Lingxi also cannot live. I am all to blame for this.....”

Those few thoughts appeared hazily. Long Chen had a very strong parting regret, so he was not resigned to die like this, he still had many things he had to accomplish!

At this point, the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant in his consciousness had started moving. And the originally veined pattern of that greyish and dark figure on the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, had at this point let out a faint black light. A strong suction force had formed in the air, and the drop of red blood which had entered Long Chen’s body earlier gave a cry of fury!

This was the roar of a dragon; Long Chen had heard it distinctly!

Because of the change from this Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, Long Chen who was about to die, had regained some consciousness. At this moment he could sluggishly feel that all the dragon blood which had infiltrated his body, had actually converged to a place within his body, as if undergoing a suction process.

The dragon blood had spread all over his body earlier but now it converged back into the red drop of blood. It then vanished from Long Chen’s body. In the next moment, it had actually appeared inside Long Chen’s consciousness, and appeared beneath the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant!

The Inherited Blood Essence was staying there suspended. Looking at it, it seemed to have been suppressed!

The Dragon God within that red drop of blood was continuously roaring.

“Exactly, what kind of existence is the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant that it can suppress something as fearsome as the Inherited Blood Essence!?”

Only then did Long Chen regain his consciousness. After escaping from death, he heaved a sigh of relief. However at this time he could sense that the red drop of blood had not been fully sucked away, there was still a one thousandth of the droplet inside his body!

As the other Inherited Blood Essence had been absorbed away, this one thousandth of the droplet had started to consume all of Long Chen’s blood, and had expanded, instantly rushing towards his whole body!

At this point, the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant no longer had any movements. A wave of acute pain had started to spread from Long Chen’s skin!

Blood Red Scales

At this moment, the aura which had caused Lingxi to be paralyzed in fear earlier had finally vanished. Lingxi had thought that Long Chen was already fine. But she hadn't imagined that Long Chen was now in so much agony that he was rolling about on the ground. Feeling shocked and scared, Lingxi hurriedly emerged from the Lingxi sword, and her tiny body twirled around Long Chen.

"Long Chen, Long Chen, what exactly is wrong with you? Don't scare me....."

While saying these words, her eyes gradually turned red. If she still had any tears left, they would have been flowing out by now.

"My skin, it hurts!"

At this moment, Long Chen felt that every inch of his body had actually been induced with a pain that felt like his heart was wrenching and his organs were rupturing!

Inside his body, that 1/1000th of the Inheritance Blood Essence had actually spread like poison with a flying speed throughout his entire body. His skin's current behavior was actually due to that bit of blood coming into contact with it.

"Long Chen, your body.....has something growing on it!"

Right now, Long Chen was tormented by unimaginable pain, but he could hear Lingxi's flustered voice. So after hearing Lingxi's words, he panicked. He abruptly

opened his eyes wide and looked at his own arm.

What he saw was his arm that had now turned blood red. His arm was also separated into a neat and tidy pattern made up of countless small areas, each the shape and size of a nail. And in each area, there was actually something growing out of it. Long Chen was appalled to find that these bits of things were actually pieces of scarlet scales!

He momentarily had a huge shock. While enduring the intense pain, he looked down at his own body. As expected, his whole body was now covered with these fine and neat pieces of scales. And at the end of his fingers, toes, kneecaps, and elbows, there were actually bones protruding out; they were scarlet and were shaped like knives. Looking at that sharpness, it looked like it had definitely surpassed the sharpness of regular swords!

Looking at the knife-like bones that were protruding out, Long Chen was stumped: “Are these.....are these fucking claws? Have I turned into a beast?”

He felt for his back suddenly, and actually found that there was a row of spikes. These blood red spikes could be found all over his body; even his head was surrounded with these intricate scales. His hair had all vanished, and what replaced it was a fierce-looking, crimson spike!

Although Long Chen was not able to see his whole appearance, but judging from his body and his limbs, he was currently in a condition perfect for battle. That scarlet armor of scales had powerful defensive abilities, and those sharp spikes were methods of attack!

“This appearance.....and these blood red scales, that is really remarkable to the extremes.....”

At this point, Long Chen's pain had slowly disappeared. It seemed like his transformation had almost been completed, so he looked at his body blankly, feeling joy among the bitterness.

After hearing that, Long Chen could speak properly without restraints. Only then did Lingxi heave a sigh of relief. As she was about to speak, Long Chen suddenly asked: "Xiao Xi, look at my body and tell me, am I cool or not?"

Lingxi looked at him for a while. Long Chen's look right now was fierce-looking and reeked of blood. But the contours of his body, whether it was the scales or the spikes, would let people feel that it was extremely perfect, and indeed it was handsome. But what use could it have?

"Long Chen, you.....Right now, how are you feeling?"

Long Chen observed for a while and said: "I don't know.....But I can feel that I have a very large power, a very strong feeling!"

He was currently experimenting with his strength, and at this point, the 1/1000th Inherited Blood Essence, which was the quintessence of the dragon that had been infused into his whole body. In the end, it continued on and reached the final region, the dantian.

At this moment, Long Chen's body had been fully reconstructed into a grotesque shape.

Long Chen could even see his every organ, every bone and even every drop of blood. Inside his body there was a blood red Dragon God shadow that was

endlessly moving and roaring!

Every organ and flesh of his were as if they had come to life. His heartbeat had increased by several times, and the blood which had been reconstructed was swallowed alive as it came into contact with the organs and muscles.

Long Chen could not even dream of such an unfathomable scene!

“Why did I turn out like this.....What exactly happened to me?”

Long Chen was still muttering to himself. At this point, the expanded Inheritance Blood Essence had already assimilated with his Qi of the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. In an instant, his Qi started transforming steadily, and the original Qi gradually showed hints of a blood red color. As the Qi circulated, the blood red Qi in his dantian started to get more and more concentrated!

This process did not cause him any pain, and Long Chen was astonished to discover that for every 10 portions of his original Qi only one portion of the blood red Qi was produced!

As he witnessed this moment, Long Chen felt a very extreme hunger taking over his body, and his expression had changed into something very unsightly.

Lingxi asked worriedly: “You.....how are you feeling now?”

Long Chen could feel her worry from her eyes. He also felt extreme warmth from her.

“I.....I feel like I’m very hungry.....I can’t take it anymore, so hungry!”

After saying this, Long Chen let out a growl of agony, and both of them had startingly realised that this growl was that of a dragon’s cry!

However Long Chen didn’t have time to bother with these matters anymore. The 10:1 ratio of regular Qi being transformed to blood red Qi, had left him feeling hungry because of his real Qi deficiency. Long Chen discovered that right now, he was extremely similar to a demonic beast.

“I’m starving! So hungry.....”

Long Chen fell onto the ground. That starved feeling had already left his whole body powerless. Today’s incidents had many twists and turns, so Lingxi also felt very flustered in her heart. Long Chen had mentioned hunger, but she did not have anything on her, so she could only say anxiously: “I.....I will go out and find something for you to eat!”

If she were to go out, she would definitely have to control the Lingxi sword and fly. It was likely that she’d get killed before she had gotten very far, let alone finding something for Long Chen to eat. As Long Chen absent-mindedly heard that she was going somewhere, he immediately stopped her and said: “No way, you can’t go out! I won’t eat that stuff.....”

These words seemed to be spoken from his subconscious mind. Lingxi hurriedly asked: “Then what do you want to eat?”

Long Chen was stumped, and as he thought of what to consume, he realized his hunger was because of insufficient Qi, so.....

Long Chen had kept 500 pieces of spirit jade with him. As he thought of this, he immediately took them out. With their appearance, Long Chen found that the desires of his body were not to refine the natural energy from the pieces of spirit jade, but to wolf them down directly!

He couldn't bear to wait at all, so under Lingxi's shocked gaze, he grabbed a handful of pieces of spirit jade and stuffed them into his mouth. The pieces of spirit jade, which originally contained the natural energy of heaven and earth, were being gnashed into pieces by his sharp teeth. The immense natural energy had been completely swallowed into Long Chen's stomach and was then seeped into his dantian. This quickly replenished and transformed into more blood red Qi!

At this moment, the feeling that Long Chen received was the same as people who would be starving for days, and then they would suddenly get to eat a delicacy. But if they were to swallow the pieces of spirit jade in huge gulps, they would probably suffocate to death. However, Long Chen was not the same!

In his current eccentric shape, his absorption rate of the natural energy was extremely fast. The pieces of spirit jade, which neared 600, were swallowed into his stomach in under a minute, and they had all completely transformed into new blood red Qi.

However, Long Chen discovered that his hunger had only been satiated for just a little while!

The pieces of spirit jade were not very useful for his blood red Qi, so even though they were enough for him to break through to the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm before, they only felt like an appetizer now.

However, this appetizer had finally put off some of his hunger.

Long Chen felt that if he did not eat anything else tonight, he might very well die of hunger.

Seeing that Long Chen had actually eaten the pieces of spirit jade, Lingxi was stunned to the point that she could not speak. No matter how wide her wisdom and experience was, she could not figure out what exactly was going on at the moment. When she saw Long Chen revert back to his normal state after eating the spirit jade, her tightened heart finally relaxed a little.

As Lingxi was just about to speak, Long Chen, who had finished eating the pieces of spirit jade, suddenly said: "Xiao Xi, return back to the Lingxi sword. We are going out for a while, so help me find any groups of demonic beasts that are lying around in groups! Hurry!"

They were currently in a state of emergency. Despite Lingxi having many questions left unanswered, after seeing Long Chen's urgency, she quietly obeyed and turned back into the Lingxi sword before attaching herself to Long Chen's ear.

However, Long Chen's body had now been reinforced greatly. Despite having a very sharp blade, Lingxi had to spend a great deal of effort to pierce the scales.

Long Chen did not say another word and ran out. It was deep in the night, but he now had an obvious aura that reeked of blood. However, this aura had brought about some detachment that felt very imposing. This had been sensed by a few weaker demonic beasts from a distance, and made them quiver absurdly for some unknown reason.

Long Chen went towards the depths of the Big Barren Mountain, and after walking for awhile, Lingxi said: “There is a cave right in front. I can sense that there are many presences around; however, they all seem to be Huang grade fifth level demonic beasts. You.....”

Before Lingxi had finished speaking, Long Chen’s figure had already darted towards that cave. The meal’s scent from ahead had already become very distinct to him.

This cave was extremely moist, and there was also a very heavy stench of blood. Along the way, there were many faint traces of bones. Soon, Long Chen reached an underground cave.

The space in this underground tunnel was extremely huge. The ground was a blackened area of mud, and emitted a rotting smell that quickly infiltrated the nose. However, Long Chen did not realise it at all.

Not far away from his feet was the quagmire. At that moment, a blood red figure gradually rose from the mud and stuck its head out. A pair of scarlet red eyes coldly stared at Long Chen, who had just rushed in.

“It’s actually an.....Underground Blood Lizard.”

Long Chen’s body odor was extremely obvious. He soon realised that a large patch of area in the cave had suddenly lit up red, like countless lanterns under a night sky. However, these lanterns seemed to scrutinise him and they reeked of blood.

Taking in a breath, Long Chen sensed that the nearest Underground Blood Lizard was already rushing towards him, and that odor of rot was emitted from its body.

He realised that these Underground Blood Lizards also had some blood red scales on them. Their spikes were not that small, and were somewhat similar to Long Chen's in appearance. But their scales were big and rough, unlike the intricate pattern Long Chen's had. The spikes were also crooked and bent. Compared to Long Chen, at least in regards to aesthetics, it was the difference between heaven and earth!

However, Long Chen did not think too much about it. As the Underground Blood Lizard came rushing towards him, its huge body seemingly wanted to crush him underneath. If this happened before, Long Chen would definitely have used a martial technique to destroy it, but right now, he did not do so.

He felt his scorching blood rising. Although the Underground Blood Lizards were dirty, Long Chen had a strange feeling that they were actually a type of delicacy.

He leapt up and turned into a red shadow. In an instant, his arms had already pierced into the Underground Blood Lizard's chest, and directly squeezed the heart inside!

At this point, the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant surprisingly moved again!

Inside Long Chen's consciousness, the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, with its dragon-like patterns, had once again begun to emit a faint glow of light while a black light had shone upon the drop of Inheritance Blood Essence that was below it.

The Inherited Blood Essence, which was constricted by Long Chen, had given a roar of unwillingness that shook Long Chen's consciousness violently, but it still could not escape the control of the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant.

The Inherited Blood Essence slowly moved towards the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant. In the next instant, they merged together and had turned the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant completely blood red.

At this point, Long Chen could see that the black coloured dragon-like patterns on the Dragon Jade had already turned red. In the midst of these dragon-like patterns, many veins emerged which looked exactly like the Dragon Veins!

Long Chen had no time to be startled as just then he discovered that the Dragon Vein inside the dragon-like pattern had a blood red energy that was flowing within. Long Chen was already very excited deep down and attentively memorised the trajectory of the energy movements.

“This movement was similar to martial techniques and was actually a method to draw Qi!”

No matter if it was the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant or the Inherited Blood

Essence, both of them still had a very mysterious and immense presence. As a result, the method of drawing Qi shown on the Dragon Jade was naturally not simple.

Long Chen hurriedly recorded all of the movements down. At this point the blood red colour on the Dragon Jade slowly faded away and that red droplet of blood had once again been separated and suppressed under the Dragon Jade, not being able to move an inch.

Long Chen did not bother to guess what exactly the Dragon Jade was, so he naturally used the method that was shown in the Dragon Jade to draw the blood red Qi. In that instant he felt himself shake uncontrollably because he had suddenly grasped the name of this technique to draw the blood red Qi as well as its uses.

“[Blood Transmuted Qi].....it can actually refine the blood essence, and then transform it into one’s Qi! This effect, compared to directly eating spirit jades or even learning Beast Warrior techniques to swallow the beast energy cores, is much more effective by many times!”

This technique, although it has no grade, is definitely an overpowered ability!

Long Chen who had been squeezing the heart of the Underground Blood Lizard’s heart in his hands, applied the newly acquired [Blood Transmuted Qi] technique. Suddenly, there was a strange force being applied on the Underground Blood Lizard’s body.

Long Chen could feel that the opponent was in extreme agony so he crushed its heart to allow it to die immediately, no longer suffering from this torturous pain.

After the Underground Blood Lizard died, under the [Blood Transmuted Qi], the blood from it's body had madly rushed towards Long Chen without leaving a single drop.

At this time every scale on Long Chen's body, as if a huge mouth, had swallowed all of this blood.

With the domineering strength of the [Blood Transmuted Qi], there was a loud bang. A large number of these blood droplets resoundingly exploded and many of the impurities from Long Chen's body were forcefully expelled. As for the blood droplets that had remained, they had all transmuted into a blood red Qi and assimilated into Long Chen's dantian!

This one Underground Blood Lizard's energy was comparable to that of a 100 spirit jades! As for Long Chen, who had tasted some food after being famished, he turned his gaze to look at the other Underground Blood Lizards.

Under the method of this [Blood Transmuted Qi], Long Chen had gone on a one-sided killing spree on the Underground Blood Lizards. Although Long Chen was still in the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, compared to these Underground Blood Lizards he was much stronger, especially those spikes of his which had pierced into the Underground Blood Lizards' body as if it was tofu!

With the blood red Qi of the Underground Blood Lizards, Long Chen's hunger had slowly disappeared and the amount of Qi he had was slowly catching up to the amount he had before he touched the [Seal of the Dragons]. However, the quality alone had increased tenfold!

Seeing Long Chen act in such a savage manner, Lingxi felt unbearable in her

heart. However, Demonic Beasts and Humans were of two different races. Normally the humans will slay the demonic beasts and vice versa, this was the way of nature.

As the intelligence of Demonic Beasts are lower she did not say anything much and before Long Chen had absorbed their blood for refining. He had killed them first, so it could be seen that his heart was not corrupted by the Inherited Blood Essence's murderous aura.

As Long Chen was about to stop, suddenly Lingxi's worried voice rang out:

"Long Chen, under here is a huge demonic beast! The strength is Huang Grade 7th level, should we escape?"

A beast of the Huang Grade 7th level, compared to his strength before, can easily claim Long Chen's cheap life!

She too could not comprehend the true strength of Long Chen after his transformation, so she used a worried tone to ask him. At this point Long Chen was shocked.

"Huang Grade 7th Level huh, a good time for me to test my true ability....."

Huang Grade 7th Level Demonic Beast, in reality they are much stronger than those cultivators of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

As Long Chen thought of this the whole ground shook. At this moment, a cry that was similar to a dragon's had sounded and the quagmire exploded bringing with it a huge scarlet monster that appeared before Long Chen's eyes.

This was an enlarged version of an Underground Blood Lizard. Its body exceeded 20 metres and the whole body was littered with blood red scales. The two scarlet eyes were bigger than a face and it looked extremely terrifying!

“It is actually an Underground Blood Lizard King! No wonder there are so many Underground Blood Lizards here, it should be because of this leader here!”

Long Chen who was facing the tremendous pressure from the Underground Blood Lizard King, did not retreat even half a step.

After seeing Long Chen killing so many Underground Blood Lizards, the Underground Blood Lizard King had already been struck with rage. Although it could faintly sense that Long Chen was extremely mysterious and strange, it could not quell the anger from its heart!

“This big ugly freak! Seems like he wants to kill me, but to me, you are naught but food!”

Long Chen’s cold gaze flashed and right now his speed was almost ten times faster than before. Whenever he moved his body there seemed to be a blood red shadow formed within the cave. However, Long Chen could see that the Underground Blood Lizard King’s tongue also had a fast speed.

As Long Chen moved, the huge wad of blood red tongue that had brought such an enormous power appeared above his head. Long Chen shouted, then punched out and exchanged a blow with it once but he found that the strength on the Underground Blood Lizard King’s tongue was almost comparable to his own strength. This exchange had immediately sent both of Long Chen’s legs embedded into the ground!

“Oh well, today I have already eaten my fill and I have no time to waste on you! Since learning the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] I have not used it before. Today, I will let you have the first blow.

Long Chen bowed his head, and the scarlet red eyes emitted a strong and cold gaze. Although his palm had already turned into claws, it did not seem to stop the palm formation of the seal and the blood red Qi flowed violently between both of his hands very quickly. A huge pressure was sent towards the Underground Blood Lizard King and as for the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon], it had also been rapidly formed in Long Chen’s hands!

“[Seal of the Ashened Dragon]!”

As the blood red Qi transformed into a blood red mini dragon coiling around Long Chen’s palm, the Underground Blood Lizard King had momentarily felt the invitation of death and hurriedly retreated.

But at this point, the originally dark cave had a blood red flash of light illuminating it and a blood red divine dragon image had darted across and struck the Underground Blood Lizard King’s head. As the deep and low Dragon’s cry had sounded, the Underground Blood Lizard King had already been split into pieces, completely dead.

Huang Grade 7th level, dead!

This had been the strongest opponent Long Chen had ever fought against. He estimated that even if it was Bai Shiji, against this Underground Blood Lizard King, he might not gain any advantage at all!

After killing this Underground Blood Lizard King and realising the smell of blood permeating the air, Long Chen did not let the opportunity go and he hopped on its back and used [Blood Transmuted Qi] technique. At this moment, an enormous amount of blood from the Underground Blood Lizard King's body had already welled up.

The amount of blood had amounted to countless tons, but under the voracious appetite of the technique, he refined and removed about 90% of the impurities after which he transmuted the pure blood essence into Qi and assimilated it into his dantian!

Huang Grade 7th level blood essence was not a laughing matter and Long Chen had immediately felt that his Qi had risen very quickly to a critical point.

Earlier he had a starved feeling but now it was a bloated feeling. The wait Long Chen had for the breakthrough to the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had finally arrived!

He then sat cross-legged on top of the Underground Blood Lizard King. In that instant all of the Qi had transformed into a blood red dragon and roared, charging towards the sixth Dragon Vein.

What made Long Chen astonished was that the blood red Qi dragon seemed to have its own intelligence. It was savage and reeked of blood. Long Chen's Qi had already risen to the peak of the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, so when he tried to breakthrough it was relatively easy as that choked Dragon Vein was too weak to resist the rush of the blood red Qi dragon.

Not even a minute later, that sixth Dragon Vein had been broken through and

an enormous amount of natural energy had entered Long Chen's body. Right now his strength was completely of the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!

Before the demonic beast hunting competition he had finally entered the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and feeling that brimming energy, Long Chen had finally smiled.

After making such a huge disturbance, Long Chen did not dare to stay here any longer and he hurriedly went towards the exit and into the previous cave. What made him feel depressed was that he did not know what to do about his appearance right now.

Right when he was fretting over this matter, he suddenly felt a strange itching sensation. The scales and spikes on his body had actually withdrawn back into his body gradually and he once again resumed his original appearance.

However, when he had gotten rid of the transformed shape, he could feel that the Inherited Blood Essence which was spread throughout his body had slowly retreated and finally formed a small red dot between his eyebrows.

The colour of the blood red Qi, which had the quality of ten times more than normal Qi, had also faded; however, the remaining Qi had fine linings of blood red and as for the quality, compared to normal Qi it is higher by 4 times or so!

The sharp rise in Long Chen's strength earlier, had now slowly disappeared.

However, the him right now compared to other sixth level Dragon Pulse Realm cultivators is still much stronger than them. Adding on to his practice of using [Seal of the Dragons], Long Chen believed that even if it was Bai Shiji of the

seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he could still deal with him!

Long Chen had felt a great pity for that transformation leaving his body, because that was where he was at his strongest, however that appearance would not allow him to live on in this world, so there was no choice.

“I don’t know if I can still transform, but this Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant is so magical, I think it should be possible.”

Even without changing his form, his strength should already be enough for the demonic beast hunting competition.

After Long Chen had removed that transformation and everything had returned to normal, only then did Lingxi impatiently question him: “Long Chen, which dragon does your Inherited Blood Essence belongs to?”

Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon

Actually Long Chen himself did not know what kind of situation he was in. As soon as they returned to the cave, Long Chen sat down cross-legged and checked the conditions of his own body while Lingxi flew out from the Lingxi Sword.

Earlier, that horrific turn of events had actually scared her half to death. Even now, her face was still pale as she looked at Long Chen with concern.

Long Chen had already broken through the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. His Qi, in terms of quantity, is already matched with Yang Lingyue and the rest but the quality is already 4 times stronger than their Qi.

Which is to say, just based on Qi alone, Long Chen can draw Qi 4 times stronger than the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. This is almost half of the strength of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

Adding on the [Celestial Core Technique], which still proved to be a little useful, and his innate fighting martial technique, Long Chen is confident that he is able to deal with Bai Shiji.

If he were also to transform into the changed body shape, his Qi's quality will be 10 times stronger, and his physical body's strength will also rise dramatically. It may even be possible to fight someone of the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

Long Chen was secretly shocked. Based on the [Blood Transmuted Qi] technique alone, the Inherited Blood Essence should also have many secrets and

uses that have not been utilised. This was but 1/1000th of the Inherited Blood Essence and it had already let him reach this kind of stage. If he were to fully inherit all of it, what kind of realm would he be in?

Long Chen thought of so many things that even he himself had become distracted. Only then did he ask Lingxi a question.

“Xiao Xi, am I considered a Dragon Warrior now?”

Seeing Long Chen, who had been distracted for a while, having a reply, Lingxi was not that anxious anymore. She nodded, saying obediently: “Although I don’t have much understanding of Dragon Warriors, from your appearance earlier, it is likely that you have become one. Oh right, earlier I asked what kind of Blood Essence you inherited. Is it the Ghost Shadow Blood Murderous Dragon? I have read some records previously and this Ghost Shadow Blood Murderous Dragon’s appearance is rather like yours.”

Long Chen had no clue as to what Inherited Blood Essence the blood droplet belonged to. As he was about to say he did not know, a few words mysteriously appeared in his mind and Long Chen subconsciously repeated each word one at a time.

“Immemorial.....Blood.....Spirit.....Dragon.....”

As these words were spoken, Long Chen suddenly felt his blood rise excitedly. It was a kind of immense pride which had let Long Chen feel an absurd confidence in himself.

“Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon?”

Lingxi mouthed these words repeatedly and suddenly her eyes rounded as if in a state of disbelief. She blankly looked at Long Chen, her mouth gaping so wide she looked like an old person.

No matter how ugly she looked right now, Long Chen felt that it was so cute that he could burst.

“What’s up, Miss, have you taken a liking to this young master?”

Lingxi did not even hear his words, her voice trembling as she said: “You.....You are sure that it is Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon?”

Only then did Long Chen felt something was amiss, and he solemnly asked: “Indeed it is, is there a problem?”

Lingxi still had the look of disbelief on her face, shaking her head and saying: “Impossible, Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon. This is a legend of legends..... It is definitely impossible.....”

Although Lingxi was still in disbelief, Long Chen was very sure that the Inherited Blood Essence did belong to the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon, so he said: “Xiao Xi, tell me, are there any problems if it is Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon?”

Lingxi muttered and said: “You don’t understand, legends have it that eons ago the whole of Long Ji Continent was ruled by the Dragon Gods and there were millions and millions of dragon species! Do you even know what kind of magnitude millions and millions of dragons species are? As vast as the Long Ji

Continent was, it had already been filled with all kinds of Dragon Gods and the amount of dragons then is several tens of times more than the humans on this earth today. Almost each and every one of them is a peak of all existences!”

“As for the millions and millions of dragon species peak experts, that magnitude has never been reached by humans ever since the humans started forming tribes. In the immemorial past, the most ancient times of Long Ji Continent, there was a myth that there were 10 great lineages of supreme dragons. A total of 10 Dragon Gods. They all had the most overpowering existences and were also known as the 10 Magnificent Ancestral Dragons!”

After talking up to this point, Lingxi raised her head and looked at Long Chen, slowly saying: “Amongst the 10 Magnificent Ancestral Dragons, the Ancestral Dragon that was the most bloodthirsty and destructive was the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon that you have just spoken of!”

At Lingxi’s words, Long Chen was also stunned. In his heart, the expert did not take on any sort of form. He merely felt that the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon was a peak existence on Long Ji Continent. As for how strong it really was, he did not know.

Lingxi shook her head and said: “That’s why I said it’s impossible. The Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon vanished millions and millions of years ago. How can his Inherited Blood Essence be stored into a regular secret scroll? The barrier on the secret scroll can even be broken by me.....that’s why it’s impossible.....”

After listening to what Lingxi had said, Long Chen did not feel that confident anymore.

“Forget it, who cares what kind of dragon he is, he is still suppressed by the

Dragon Jade Pendant. Right now, I will follow my father's wishes to become a Dragon Warrior and learn the remarkable ability of the [Blood Transmuted Qi] which will madly increase my cultivation speed in the future. As for the Qi that my father left for me from before, it will no longer be as useful as raising my cultivation level compared to myself!"

"However, the quality of Qi has increased by four times. If I were to breakthrough a realm, compared to people of the same level, it might be more difficult by four times, or maybe even ten times, so I cannot be satisfied with my current state....."

Long Chen stood up, and held the pixie sized Lingxi in his hands and said: "Miss, anyway I have become stronger again, who cares about any broken dragon. What matters is that I will have the ability to protect you. As for those medicines with spirit healing properties, it won't be so few in numbers next time. You have saved my life twice. What happens next will be the time that I repay you!"

Only after hearing Long Chen speak did Lingxi recover from the shock regarding the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon. Looking at Long Chen who was so confident, she slowly became perplexed as she could not figure out the mysteries hidden inside the body of this young man beside her.

"After becoming a Dragon Warrior and learning the super ability, indeed he will have a great future ahead. Who knows, he may even be able to find a way for me to recover my physical body....."

Their relationship had been growing closer and closer with the days they spent together. Finally, on this day, she found that she could not leave him.

After placing her on his shoulder, Long Chen smiled and said: “Alright, today the matter of breaking the barrier on the [Seal of the Dragons] is finally over and the demonic beast hunting competition is not too far away. These few days I had better cultivate a little more.”

Bai Shiji’s image appeared in front of him, and Long Chen clenched his fists and said coldly: “This time, we won’t know whether your [Dark Heavenly Finger] or my [Seal of the Dragons] attack is stronger! At that time I will definitely give you, who assume that victory is assured, a surprise!”

A total of eight days had passed as Long Chen cultivated meticulously until he was familiar with the strength of the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Only then did he stand up, preparing to return to the Yang Family.

After finally increasing his strength, Long Chen had more confidence towards the demonic beast hunting competition.

“Nine days ago, I publicly injured Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong.. I even ridiculed Yang Xueqing. After returning to the Yang Family there will most likely be people who want to find trouble with me, but I am Long Chen, so how would I be afraid?”

At this time, it was nearing noon and as Long Chen walked into the Yang Family’s residence through the big door, a guard stepped forward and said: “Young Master Chen, Founder Yang has invited Bai Family’s Master and the members over tonight for a feast and now the feast is about to start. Founder Yang had requested for you to go to the Hongwu Hall right after you return home.”

Hongwu Hall was where Founder Yang invited esteemed guests over.

After hearing that Founder Yang had actually invited the Bai Family's founder over and had even invited others, Long Chen felt repulsed inside his heart as he knew Bai Zhanxiong and the rest will definitely be there.

Looking at the demonic beast hunting competition which was about to start, Long Chen did not know what tricks Founder Yang was playing. However, his relationship with Bai Family's Master was indeed close. It had already been known to many in Poplar Town that both Founder Yang and the Bai Family's Master were life and death brothers.

Very soon, Long Chen arrived in the Hongwu Hall and it was extremely boisterous inside. On two long sandalwood tables, there lay various exotic delicacies and pretty maids could be seen shuttling back and forth in between.

On the main table, Founder Yang sat together with his 3 children and as for the other side, the one who sat at the front was a short, fat and naive looking old man. His head was filled with white hair and, coupled with his very red face, it looked like a picture of a white craned red-faced young boy.

[TL Note: White haired, young boy with a red face: Chinese idiom describing an older person with a very youthful complexion]

This was the master of the Bai Family. Although he was rather old, his strength was not weak and his cultivation was at the peak in Poplar Town.

Below the master of the Bai Family, there sat two middle aged men: one was the third son of the master, Bai Zhanxiong and the other was the fourth son, Bai Zhanfeng.

During the intra-family competition, they had also been to the Yang Family residence. The Bai Shidong who peed in his pants, was this Bai Zhanfeng's son.

As for the other table, the younger generation had been seated there. For Yang Family it was Yang Wu, Yang Lingyue and Yang Lingqing. As for Bai Family, it was Bai Shiji, Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong. Beside them sat a cold looking, handsome young man. Long Chen could detect a very dangerous aura by looking at him.

The person Long Chen was looking at turned out to be the very famous and strongest of the younger generation in Poplar Town, Bai Shichen.

And for today, the experts of both the young and elder generations of the two families were present.

This banquet had already started not long ago, and Founder Yang and Bai Family's Master had erupted in laughter. However, this laughter was stifled immediately as Long Chen walked in.

And at this point, all the gazes were directed towards Long Chen.

The Bai Family's Master did not react much, but both of the middle aged men's expressions in the Bai Family had turned cold. Yang Yuntian and Yang Xueqing's expressions were sinister. As for Yang Qingxuan, he was faintly smiling, the same expression as his father.

The younger generation of the Bai Family harboured only hatred for Long Chen and the gaze of Bai Shiji was the most vicious. However Bai Zhixing and Bai

Shidong were actually a little afraid of Long Chen. However, after seeing Long Chen, Bai Shichen maintained his cold gaze, like the blade on a sharp sword.

Long Chen had indeed not arrived at the best of time, so he was able to create such an effect. At this point Founder Yang had immediately recovered, laughing loudly and saying “Chen Er, you have finally returned. Alright, now everyone is gathered. Chen Er you may sit at that table!”

After the Founder Yang had spoken, the people seated at the table he had pointed to all stared intensely at Long Chen.

“Hey, your human relations are really bad. Only that young sister Yang Lingqing acknowledges you.....” Lingxi happily said as she rejoiced in his misfortune.

Bai Shichen

Under the beckoning of Yang Lingqing, Longchen sat by her side. However, ever since he had arrived, the Yang Family table could still retain an amiable atmosphere around it, but in Long Chen's area, this was not possible.

A group of people were staring, but nobody had actually picked up their chopsticks.

The situation here could obviously be seen by the other tables but they turned a blind eye and continued to drink and jest.

Long Chen loathed these kinds of atmospheres the most. In fact, he would rather be drinking with the courtesans from the Emerald Jade House than to stay here for a moment longer.

Therefore, after a short while he stood up and said: "Everyone, I am full so I will just leave first."

With the elder generations of both families around, Bai Shiji and the rest could not do anything to Long Chen in public so they could not wait for Long Chen to leave.

Seeing Long Chen show such disrespectful behaviour in public, they were all secretly rejoicing at his misfortune.

As expected, at this moment Founder Yang shifted his gaze onto Long Chen and said: "Chen Er. Don't leave yet, come here."

Not knowing what tricks Founder Yang was going to play, Long Chen walked to his side. At this time everyone had put their chopsticks down and the Bai Family's Master smiled jovially at Long Chen.

Founder Yang patted Long Chen's shoulder and said: "I heard that you have a conflict with Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong?"

Long Chen replied blandly: "I wouldn't dare."

As this moment, the Bai Family's Master laughed and said: "Brother, the young ones are always passionate. Having some conflicts are normal occurrences, as long as they don't harm the life or cause internal injuries, it's fine. Weren't we all the same back in the past? How about this, Shidong, Zhixing, both of you come here....."

Under the beckoning of the Bai Family's Master, both of them walked over trembling and shaking. They stood across Long Chen but they did not dare look him in the eyes.

Both of the middle aged men from Bai Family, seeing their own younger generation members having no backbone, could not help but frown. However the Bai Family's Master was magnanimous, smiling as he said: "Young ones, don't be anxious. Having a conflict is very common, back then I wouldn't have known Yang Brother if we did not fight. Come come. Both sides apologise, in the future you'll all be good friends."

Founder Yang also smiled and said: "That's right, Long Chen hurt them so he should apologise and then the conflict can be forgotten. The Bai Family and the Yang Family are so close like brothers and having conflicts amongst your own

brothers can be forgotten easily, can't it?"

Founder Yang said these words for Long Chen to hear.

Founder Yang had given him the [Seal of the Dragons], which in turn, gave him such a great benefit. Long Chen was also not one to forget to repay his benefactors and with the demonic beast hunting competition coming soon, his resolution to kill Bai Shiji had become stronger. So he could not think of creating any mess at this point now.

As such he followed both masters and laughed saying: "Grandfather's words are right, a man should not nitpick about such small issues. Come, brother Shidong!"

Before the other party could react, Long Chen gave him a very rough hug and even patted his back.

Long Chen's sudden actions had stunned everyone. At this point Long Chen had followed up and gave Bai Zhixing who was beside them a sudden hug too, adopting a posture as if wanting to tell her a secret. Then stealthily moving his hands to her perky butt, giving it a vicious pinch!

"The other day I have injured this beautiful and moving Miss Bai, I felt regret for my actions and present you this flower as a compensation for it!

Although he had only pinched it tightly for a brief moment, the initial touch did indeed feel better than those courtesans of Emerald Jade House. Long Chen released his grip in due time and then shoved a bunch of wild chrysanthemum flowers, which he had picked up along the road due to boredom when he was

coming home.

Bai Zhixing's back was facing the elders, so to them, it seemed like Long Chen was only giving a halfhearted hug to Bai Zhixing. But on the other hand it was different for the younger generation of the Bai Family. That pinch from Long Chen had been seen by them clearly. Their eyes grew big and had more understanding towards Long Chen's guts.

Murderous intent radiated from both Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen.

This feeling of being locked on could definitely be felt by Long Chen. However, he didn't think anything of it and even gave both Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen a provocative stare. He suddenly met Yang Lingqing's furious gaze, which shocked him into turning his head back immediately.

At this point Bai Zhixing had also stared blankly at Long Chen, her hands held onto the flowers. She did not expect that Long Chen would actually be this bold; she had even forgotten to scream.

And at this moment, Long Chen hurriedly said to the masters of both families: "I still have something to do, so I will first take my leave."

Bai Family's Master laughed lightly and said: "En, if there's something you have to do then go ahead."

Ignoring the gazes of the people sitting in Hongwu Hall, Long Chen walked through the door. Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen exchanged gazes, and seeing Long Chen's fading figure, they both smirked.

“Since you are courting death, don’t blame us.....”

Long Chen who was seemingly pleased with himself, had just left Hongwu Hall and was about to laugh when suddenly there was a sharp pain on his ears to the point that his face had convulsed as Lingxi’s cold voice sounded.

“Scum! That feeling was great wasn’t it?!”

Long Chen’s delight had been pushed to the bottom of the valley and he immediately tried to appease her, saying: “Darling Xiao Xi, I.....Earlier I, yes, I was provoking Bai Shiji, merely a provocation.....”

“You think I am an idiot, I won’t bother with you anymore!”

Long Chen sweated profusely and as he was about to explain, he saw Yang Lingqing who had followed him from behind. Looking at her grim expression, he knew he was about to meet another tragedy.

But who knew, the first thing Yang Lingqing said was: “I am in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm now.”

Her aura, given off by the Qi had also thickened, which felt almost the same as Yang Lingyue’s.

She had an affinity with Long Chen, not only were they born in the same year, same month and the same day but the time both of them entered sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm were around the same.

After entering the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, Yang Lingqing would now be able to reduce the amount of danger she would face in the demonic beast hunting competition. Truth be told, she was the only one Long Chen had cared for in the whole of the Yang Family. Now Long Chen could feel at ease and proceed on his own.

“What good timing, with you around, it’s possible to kill more Demonic Beasts and overtake the Bai Family.”

Yang Lingqing gave him a look that said he was incorrigible. “Can you still joke at a time like this? Could it be that you don’t know that although at the banquet both parties were engaging amiably, Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen will definitely not let you go? I know that recently your strength have increased, but how could you be a match for the both of them?”

Yang Lingqing said anxiously. Looking at this girl who still cared for Long Chen, he too could not bear to show any concern and said: “My strength did indeed improve greatly. Although I can’t say that I can beat them but escaping will not be a problem. Also I don’t exactly have to face off with them. Look at your big brother, I am considered to be rather cunning so how can I die under these two people with an ice cube like expression.

Yang Lingqing did not thought so; she knew the strength of a seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. That might could totally overwhelm that of a sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, not even mentioning Long Chen, who was only a fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

As she was about to speak, Long Chen’s gaze suddenly turned cold, he patted Yang Lingqing’s shoulder and said: “Go back first, I’ll speak to you later.”

Yang Lingqing turned around and saw that Yang Xueqing was actually behind her. She knew that Long Chen and Yang Xueqing's relationship was strange and could not interfere either so she advised Long Chen to be careful and then left.

Looking at her, Long Chen's delightful mood had suddenly turned bad.

Yang Xueqing walked up several steps and measured up Long Chen, although her face wasn't as stone-cold as before, it was still frosty.

"Do you know why my father invited the Bai Family for a feast today? Because our family have been preparing for the wedding. Three days later during the afternoon you guys will enter Big Barren Mountain and I will be married into the Bai Family."

Long Chen knew it was the case and had expected it long before, so he only looked on at Yang Xueqing, not saying a word.

"After I kill Bai Shiji and the news travel, let's see how you can still marry?"

Looking at Long Chen who did not react, Yang Xueqing did not bother with it and continued: "After passing the demonic energy cores to the Lingwu family from the demonic beast hunting competition, you should leave Poplar Town. I heard that not only did you obtained the [Seal of the Dragons] but also 500 pieces of spirit jade. Our Yang Family did not treat you badly on this account so I hope you can stop while you can.

"The [Seal of the Dragons] have to be passed down within the Yang Family so pass it to me now. After you're gone, I will return it to my father."

According to what Yang Xueqing implied, Long Chen understood that she had never treated him as a member of the Yang Family. However, it was fine as Long Chen never felt any homely feelings towards this family either. In any case the secrets in the [Seal of the Dragons] have been fully extracted by him and this broken item has no uses for him anymore. So he took it out from his pockets and threw it into Yang Xueqing's hands.

“What I should have gotten, I have already taken it. You think I want to stay in this broken place? I still have to look for spiritual medicine for my darling Xiao Xi. However after I dispose of Bai Shiji, I really look forward to seeing your expression, you couldn't find me even if you wish to kill me by that time.

Without saying another word Long Chen turned around and walked away.

Yang Xueqing did not expect Long Chen to hand it over so simply. Looking at the [Seal of the Dragons] in her hands and at the prideful figure of Long Chen leaving, she ridiculed : “ What a naive fellow, being unable to gain any advantages, these two skills from the [Seal of the Dragons], how could you have learnt it easily in these few days?”

At this moment her expression darkened, saying: “The things he had done to Bai Shixun, Bai Shiji and the rest will definitely deal with him during the demonic beast hunting competition. He's merely in the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and only relying on an Intermediate Huang martial technique. How can he be a match for them? Although he didn't learn any skills, but he is afterall my flesh and blood. Oh well, I will plead mercy for you from Bai Shiji just this once.....”

“I hope this time; you will know how to repay this favour.”

Turning into a corridor, Lingxi repeated the muttered words of Yang Xueqing to Long Chen. After Long Chen had heard it he kept on laughing.

“Hey, honestly, don’t you honestly care if your mother looks down on you?”

Long Chen simply said: “Being mindful will only make me uncomfortable, so why would I want to endure such a feeling? If she does not think that I am their match and I really got angry over that, then I am really a retard. What I must do is defeat Bai Shiji completely.”

“Alright, I won’t bother with this anymore, but if it were me, I would definitely cry a big mess.....”

Looking back at the courtyard of the Yang Family where Long Chen had lived for years, it looked so familiar yet so foreign at the same time.

Originally this was his house but it never gave him a sense of security. Not even his family members could give him that kind of feeling.

It was not that he had never been sad before, but now he felt numbed and he wouldn’t be so foolish as to show it on his face.

“You’re going to plead him for my behalf, but who will plead me on his behalf...”

As both the marriage and demonic beast hunting competition were approaching, those few youngsters who were participating in the competition were all feeling nervous. As for the others, with the joyous occasion of marriage, they all had smiling expressions on their faces.

Especially for Founder Yang, who after waiting half his life could finally see his own daughter achieving bliss. His mouth was always smiling these days.

One early morning, Long Chen followed Yang Lingqing, Yang Lingyue and Yang Wu. Under Yang Qingxuan's lead, they all headed toward one of the exits of Big Barren Mountain outside Poplar Town.

As for the other disciples, both families agreed not to let them participate because of their inadequate strength. They could barely protect themselves, so if they entered Big Barren Mountain, they might end up being burdens.

This way, each family has sent a total of four people. The Yang Family's strength may be slightly weaker, but killing Demonic Beasts also requires some luck, so the winner and loser is still undetermined.

However, both the Bai and Yang Family masters did not follow the hunting party, and this scene of both parties drawing swords only seemed to be an interlude for the marriage. They both were busy preparing for the marriage, so they let the younger generation do as they pleased in the fight for the mayor position in Poplar Town.

Along the way, Yang Lingyue and Yang Wu walked together while Long Chen

and Yang Lingqing followed behind.

“Hey, do you really have some methods to protect your life?”

Yang Lingqing asked concernedly.

“Only a few clowns from the Bai Family. How can they be my match?”

Long Chen mysteriously laughed.

Yang Lingqing momentarily showed a helpless expression and haughtily said: “Alright then, I can’t be bothered to talk to you anymore. When it really gets dangerous, just call out loudly. If I hear you, I’ll definitely try my best to help.”

Long Chen nodded his head; in fact he did really appreciate this younger sister of his. If it weren’t for the blood ties, he would have made his move by now.

However, after listening Long Chen’s arrogant words, Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue turned back and looked at him, their eyes filled with ridicule. As they turned back, Yang Lingyue looked at her own elder brother and said softly: “Brother, remember what you promised me.”

Yang Wu nodded his head and said: “If the Bai Family does not attack, I will teach him a lesson.”

Both of their voices were extremely soft, so Long Chen and Yang Lingqing could not hear them clearly.

Very soon, they reached their destination, and Long Chen realised that the party of five from the Bai Family had already arrived.

The leader of the Bai Family was the fourth son Bai Zhanfeng, and the other four would naturally be the four participants in the demonic beast hunting competition. Once they saw Long Chen, Bai Shiji momentarily smirked and pointed a finger at Long Chen.

Long Chen knew that Bai Shiji had meant the [Dark Heavenly Finger].

This was obviously a provocation, but Long Chen pretended not to see. Not even giving a glance at Bai Shiji, he instead looked at the person who stood at the forefront. He was the overseer of the demonic beast hunting competition who had come from the Lingwu Family of the Lingwu City.

This person was wearing an embroidered black robe, and there was a mantle on his head. His features were obscured, but his body emitted a faint aura. It was an indescribable feeling for Long Chen.

“How strong is he?”

“Telling a country bumpkin like you will have no effect. Just understand it like this: Your grandfather cannot withstand even a single stroke of his.”

A casual sentence like this made all the hairs on Long Chen stand up!

Maybe to Lingxi, killing his grandfather in a stroke is not a huge deal, but, in Long Chen’s world, what kind of fearful existence could finish the strongest person Long Chen knew, his grandfather, in a single stroke?

He looked at that person with a fixed stare, and the person too looked at Long Chen at this time, seemingly surprised. However, very soon, he never looked at Long Chen again.

At this point Yang Qingxuan cupped his hands and saluted, saying: “Lord Lang, the young ones of the Yang Family have been brought here.”

“En, then let’s depart for Big Barren Mountain. Both of you go back first. Lingwu Family will give you a fair result.”

Yang Qingxuan and Bai Zhanfeng did not dare to disobey his words. It looked like what Lingxi said was true.

Listening to his voice, Long Chen thought of him to be extremely young, almost no different from the youngsters here.

“You must know that there are mountains outside a mountain, and people outside a person. Your so called geniuses in Poplar Town, after reaching the mainland, are only a useless crap in front of the eyes of others.

[TL Note: Always someone stronger]

Lingxi’s words had once again let Long Chen know that his experience was limited. However, they had broadened it this time. Long Chen was very impressed with this similarly aged person who actually had such strength.

Yang Qingxuan and Bai Zhanfeng walked together, and without saying another

word, Lord Lang went towards the Big Barren Mountain. The youngsters looked at each other, and then hurriedly followed.

Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue very soon had walked together with the Bai Family. Yang Lingqing, who saw Long Chen walking alone behind them, wavered, and decided to stay beside him.

At this point, Yang Lingyue was chatting happily with Bai Shiji, and suddenly, she saw that Yang Lingqing had actually walked together with Long Chen. Her face showed fury momentarily, and she said, “Lingqing, come over here. Bai Shichen Big Brother wants to meet you.”

Beside her was Bai Shichen whose cultivation was even greater than that of Bai Shiji. He smiled at Yang Lingqing amiably, and under the ray of the morning light, it was as if an immortal had descended from the heavens. Even Yang Lingyue was slightly moved.

However, Yang Lingqing did not fall for this, and, as she was in a difficult situation, said, “Ling Yue Elder Sister, I still want to say some things to Elder Brother Chen

Yang Lingyue, who had lost face in front of both the guys from the Bai Family, was momentarily unhappy. Seeing Yang Lingyue whose face had changed colour, Long Chen abruptly said: “Lingqing, go over first, in case they don’t let you follow them later.”

He naturally wanted to move alone. If Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue left her behind, the numerous dangers which were lurking in Big Barren Mountain are not too good for her.

Yang Lingqing had also thought of this point. She then cast Long Chen an apologetic look, and then walked in front. Only then did Yang Lingyue had smile and introduce Yang Lingqing to both of the Bai Family's boys.

Yang Lingqing, in fact, had more flavour than Yang Lingyue, so the Bai Shichen, who normally did not speak, told her the bullshit of his past 20 odd years of life when she walked over.

“Wanting to date my sister, later I will castrate you.” Long Chen cruelly thought.

Very soon, they reached Big Barren Mountain.

Lord Lang turned back and said: “Before the sun sets, you guys must hurry back here and hand over the demonic energy cores for me to inspect.”

Suddenly his voice turned cold and said, “I am a member of the Lingwu Family, so don't try to play any tricks in front of me. All of your movements are under my supervision. Only methods using your own hands to kill the Demonic Beasts will count. For every one energy core that is obtained with alternative methods, I will take one life!”

“You don't have to guess how exactly I will watch you. If you wish to play tricks, be my guest. But when you die, don't blame me for it. Also, you can snatch the energy cores from the other parties, and you can even kill them. This has all been permitted by the Lingwu Family!”

This Lord Lang's voice had carried a mysterious magical power to it, and even Bai Shichen, who had the strongest cultivation, had cold sweat forming while

listening to those words.

In fact, the words spoken by Lord Lang had long ago been mentioned and warned by their own family elders. They all had an understanding of the immense background of the Lingwu Family, so they naturally did not dare play any tricks.

“Last time there were people who buried the energy cores beforehand, but in the end, for each core buried, one person was buried.....”

“If you don’t have any questions, let’s go ahead and begin. Seize the day!”

Long Chen understood. Under the watch of this Lord Lang, to obtain an energy core, there were only two ways. One: Kill Demonic Beasts, two: Obtain it from the other party.

At this point, Bai Shiji and the rest glanced at Long Chen coldly and entered the Big Barren Mountain first. As for Yang Wu and the rest, they followed behind hurriedly. Although Yang Lingqing could not put her mind at ease with Long Chen, she had warned him and then left in the end.

“Eight hours’ time is more than enough for me to kill Bai Shiji. And at this point, I shall just take the energy cores from him.”

Thinking of this point, Long Chen wanted to enter Big Barren Mountain as well. However, at this moment, Lord Lang had actually stood in front of him and sized him up. Then he said, “ Not only a month, but you have already broken through 4 Dragon Pulse Realm levels, and even mastered the [Celestial Core Technique] huh?”

Long Chen was really stumped this time.

This mysterious Lord Lang had actually known his matters so well, even including the [Celestial Core Technique]?

As Long Chen was about to ask, he suddenly said: "I will not hold back your time, hurry up and enter. I sense that the Bai Family members have enmity towards you. It's good to be careful."

After talking, his body made a stealth movement and disappeared without a trace. Even his directions were unknown.....

"He knew that I mastered the [Celestial Core Technique], and he was even concerned about my life and death. The voice and figure had some familiarity to it, this person....."

Long Chen suddenly remembered the young man who had given him the [Celestial Core Technique], and he almost cried out in surprise. He was a hundred percent sure that this so called Lord Lang was the one whose beautiful looks could win over many ladies. These bewitching looks even made Long Chen unsure of his gender!

"At that point, I have already felt that his background was immense. However, I never would have thought that he would actually be a member of the Lingwu family. It's no wonder that he came to Poplar Town. Most likely it was to first understand the background of the two big families in Poplar Town. However, the [Celestial Core Technique] he gave me helped me tremendously, and even now, he still warned me. It looks like I, Long Chen's, destiny isn't so bad....."

As he thought of this matter delightfully, he rapidly entered Big Barren Mountain and concealed his presence.

“Those who treat me well, I will return them a hundred times. Lingxi, Lingqing, and that Lord Yang, have all treated me well unconditionally. I will never let them down!”

With his own ability, Long Chen was rapidly progressing in his strength.

“With Lingxi around, finding Bai Shiji is much easier than him finding me. Oh well, I will first let them and the Demonic Beasts tire themselves out. And after taking a stroll at Big Barren Mountain, I will then go claim his life.”

With Lingxi’s strong sense of perception, if Long Chen had met any monstrous Demonic Beasts, he could totally go a roundabout way. Gradually, he entered Big Barren Mountain, and the surrounding forests had slowly become taller. That cold atmosphere slowly turned heavier.

“Big Barren Mountain’s deepest part would have to be Desolate Beast Domain. Last time I went in another direction to get into the Desolate Beast Domain. That’s why I did not pass by Big Barren Mountain.....”

“However, this feeling of emptiness is slowly getting stronger. I think we’re almost at the Desolate Beast Domain.....”

At this point, Lingxi suddenly said: “Hey, in front there seems to be a person’s presence inside a rather concealed cave.”

Long Chen was momentarily stunned and said: “Is it that Lord Lang?”

“No, it’s a fellow of the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and there seems to be a sweet scent coming from there. I know, he must be guarding a tree with a spirit medicine that has not yet ripened!

Soul Diffusion Fruit

Big Barren Mountain was vast; however, the nearest dwelling was Poplar Town which had only two cultivators in the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. They are the Bai Family's Master and Founder Yang. So, when there appeared another cultivator of the ninth level, Long Chen was rather surprised.

"Xiao Xi, what is this whole thing about unripen spirit medicine?"

"All spirit medicine needs to have a certain period to ripen fully before one can pluck it. This is even truer for higher level spirit medicine grades. Now we're a little far away but if we get closer, I can most likely recognise the fruit."

Now, since it was still a little too early to kill Bai Shiji and Long Chen's nature was of one who liked to take small advantages if there was a real treasure, he would naturally not let go of this chance.

However, he knew how difficult it was to face a ninth level Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator who had broken through the Heaven Dragon Vein, so it was better to be careful.

Long Chen sneakily walked amongst the shrubs and after crossing a few hill peaks there appeared a deep valley with flourishing trees. Within the midst of the valley was a pervading, humid, air and just reaching this point, Long Chen felt that he could not breathe smoothly.

"Stop."

After hearing Lingxi's instructions, Long Chen hid behind a tall and unnamed ancient tree. At this point, Lingxi carefully sent her consciousness towards the valley which was filled with many granite caves and a few rare footprints of humans. Lingxi described everything she saw to Long Chen.

"I'm not sure what that is, but I can confirm that it's a Profound grade spirit medicine....."

"Profound grade?"

"Above the Huang grade, will be the Profound grade. To people like you from Poplar Town, the Profound grade spirit medicine is much more valuable than life and I reckon that even if you sold all of Poplar Town, the amassed wealth would not be able to exchange for even a single Profound grade spirit medicine."

Lingxi said it casually, but the emotions in Long Chen's heart surged tremendously.

He knew that in the realm of cultivation there are definitely more levels above the Dragon Pulse Realm and that mysterious Lord Lang should be of that level. He also knew that there are also demonic beasts above the Huang level, for instance the Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf.

Be it divine weapons, spirit medicine, or martial techniques, there are still higher levels.

Normally, any cultivator in a certain realm will complement themselves with a martial technique of the same level and fight demonic beasts of the same level. Spirit medicine however, naturally the higher grade it was, the better. Profound

grade spirit medicine, used by a Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator, would have tremendous benefits.

For the two big families in Poplar Town, if one were to get such a spirit medicine, they will definitely soar in strength and reputation.

With Lingxi's instructions, Long Chen once again crept a little closer and at this point he had almost arrived at one of the granite caves. He could feel an immense aura emitting from someone who was quietly sitting somewhere not far away and he held his breath, not daring to move recklessly.

At this point, Lingxi let out a surprised voice which sounded like a mosquito ringing beside his ears.

"I never thought that will be such a rare item like a Soul Diffusion Fruit Tree and it's even growing the maximum total of 3 fruits....."

"These fruits outer skin are still green, however this Soul Diffusion Fruit ripens quickly and according to my observations it should be about 8-9 days before these 3 are ready to harvest....."

When Lingxi had fully seen the type of spirit medicine and even knew about the maturity period of the fruit, Long Chen knew that he no longer had to wait here anymore.

Taking a deep breath Long Chen was about to leave but at this moment the mysterious man who was guarding the fruit suddenly stood up and walked towards his direction.

Long Chen suddenly broke out in a cold sweat.

In fact, he had not been discovered by that person, but simply his luck was too bad. He just had to encounter the mysterious man when the man had stood up and began stretching his body while taking a look at the surroundings outside.

If that being the case, with Long Chen's strength in the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, if the man were to walk a little closer, Long Chen might have been discovered.

If that occurred and under such a close distance, he would really be in trouble.

Long Chen immediately made up his mind and before the other party could discover him, he used his explosive strength and dashed towards the exit of the valley and hid in the shrubbery!

“Who!?”

That person had a great shock and hurriedly rushed out. The speed of ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm was extremely swift and Long Chen immediately felt a strong wind from behind his back.

The whole shrubbery suddenly exploded and a strong aura came sweeping towards Long Chen. Although Long Chen had constantly changed directions while fleeing, he was still unable to get rid of this fellow.

“This person is guarding the Soul Diffusion Fruit, he should be afraid of me using the strategy of moving the tiger away from the mountain!”

[TL Note: (调虎离山之计) “Strategy of moving the tiger away from the mountain”: Chinese idiom meaning to lure a person away]

Long Chen’s brain worked quickly and thinking of this, he immediately placed his fingers into his mouth and blew a resounding whistle.

As expected, when the whistle had sounded out, the mysterious man momentarily frowned. Seeing that he was still a good distance away from Long Chen, he gave Long Chen an unresigned glare and then turned around!

At this point Long Chen had turned around and looked at the mysterious man. This was a man whose years had almost caught up to Founder Yang and although he was quite elderly, his physique was strong and muscular and the gaze in his eyes was sharp!

Long Chen being able to act quick-wittedly in this situation had let Lingxi become rather impressed. One must understand that the number of people able to think of a method to protect their life at such a critical juncture was, indeed, not many.

Long Chen looked at the figure that was moving away and at the same time asked: “Xiao Xi, what uses does that Soul Diffusion Fruit exactly have?”

“If we were to talk about it, it should be extremely useful for you. Soul Diffusion Fruit is a Profound grade spirit medicine and when you consume it at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, you should be able to rely on the medicinal properties of the spirit medicine and condense your Qi into a Human Dan in your dantian and enter the Deity Dan Realm.”

“Deity Dan Realm?”

Since he started on this path Long Chen has had no knowledge of cultivation and now he was learning that as it turned out, there was a realm after the Dragon Pulse Realm called the Deity Dan Realm and the way to breakthrough to it was not by breaking through the nine Dragon Veins, but to condense his Qi to a Human Dan.

Looking at Long Chen who seemed to both understand and yet not understand, Lingxi helplessly said: “The Deity Dan Realm is split into three levels: the Human Dan, the Earth Dan and the Heaven Dan. and each level is split into the initial phase, middle phase and the late phase so you can categorise the Deity Dan Realm into 9 stages., Oh right, that Lord Lang is actually a cultivator of the Heaven Dan Realm.”

Long Chen had a thirsting appetite for this knowledge. He was, in fact, rather clever and realised that there were 9 levels in the Dragon Pulse Realm and the Deity Dan Realm realm was also split into only 9 levels. He realized that the beginning phase of the Human Dan Realm and Mastery Stage of the Heaven Dan Realm difference is actually comparable to the difference from the first level of the Dragon Pulse Realm to ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

Earlier, Lingxi saying that Founder Yang was no match for even a single strike of Lord Lang’s was actually rather reasonable.

That Lord Lang, who was so young, already had such frightening achievements and once again Long Chen truly understood the saying: “there are always people better than you”.

However, Long Chen was not dismayed. He had a mysterious father, Lingxi, who was rather secretive but was of tremendous help to him, the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, and even the Inherited Blood Essence of the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon. All this is proof of him becoming stronger!

With these items, as well as learning the overpowered [Blood Transmuted Qi] technique, he believed that one day he will reach the standard of Lord Lang.

What Long Chen is really concerned with right now though, are the uses of the Soul Diffusion Fruit.

“This means that if your Yang Family were to get that Soul Diffusion Fruit Tree, most likely 3 Deity Dan Realm cultivators can be nurtured, which is more than enough for a small family like yours to be the overlord of a 100 li radius.”

Lingxi’s words made Long Chen covet it. After all, these Soul Diffusion Fruit are really a rare item to come by and if Founder Yang were to know he would definitely be extremely excited.

Long Chen knew that Founder Yang had been stuck in the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm for many years and only if he obtained the Soul Diffusion Fruit would his cultivation greatly increase, along with his longevity. Basically, it would already be a step towards heaven!

“The ripening date of the Soul Diffusion Fruit is actually just a few days away. Right now, however, I am in the demonic beast hunting competition and my most important task is to kill Bai Shiji. As for whether to tell the news of this Soul Diffusion Fruit to Founder Yang, we’ll decide when the time comes.”

Lingxi nodded her head and said: “The Soul Diffusion Fruit ripening will create a phenomenon and explosively emit a strange scent. The few people in Poplar Town within the higher levels of the Dragon Pulse Realm will be able to sense it and most likely they will fight for it. Even if you say nothing, Founder Yang will also know. However the earliest person who is on a pavilion near the water will first enjoy the moonlight..

[TL Note: (人近水楼台先得月) “Earliest person who is on a pavilion near the water will first enjoy the moonlight” : Chinese idiom meaning to obtain benefits first due to proximity.]

Never imagining that there was even a phenomenon associated with the ripening, Long Chen memorised the location in his heart, and then directed his sight the forest while the gaze in his eyes gradually turned frosty.

“Since we have delayed for a bit, Bai Shiji has most likely fought with the demonic beasts for a while now. Going over now is the best time to claim his life!”

Saying which, Long Chen rapidly headed towards that direction.

Shortly after leaving, Long Chen suddenly raised his head and actually saw Lord Lang sitting on a branch of a tree.

“Those Bai Family younger generation are going to kill the 3 members of the Yang Family. I think you had better go over and help them quickly.”

Long Chen eyes grew big and he almost thought that he had heard wrongly.

“Bai Shichen’s side wants to kill Yang Wu’s side? What exactly happened? When those few bastards came in earlier they were still colluding behind my back, yet now they are killing each other?”

This Lord Lang would definitely not be joking so what he said is definitely true.

Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue did not matter much to Long Chen, but he had to look after Yang Lingqing.

“If anything were to happen to Yang Lingqing, I will definitely bury you few bastards of the Bai Family together with her!”

Lord Lang pointed out a direction to Long Chen and said: “They’re over there, you had better hurry.”

Long Chen gratefully looked at him and, only after saying his thanks, did he explosively use his fastest speed and rushed towards that direction.

After he left, Lord Lang furrowed his brows at his leaving figure and muttered: “Strange, why is there a Beast Warrior’s aura on him? This aura should be that of the Underground Blood Lizards.....No, should be something similar to the Underground Blood Lizard King.....”

Long Chen was extremely impatient and as he rushed forward the surroundings constantly shrank in his view.

It was unclear on what basis the Bai Family wanted to massacre them but Long Chen knew that both families had close ties and if there were no clashes it would be fine. But once someone on one side kills the other, the ties would definitely

be cut and the result would be war until one side was completely annihilated.

“.....Is it because of the position of Mayor that these two Families coveted? But they are hosting a marriage right now.....”

At this moment, no matter how smart he was, Long Chen could not understand what was going on.

By this point, the sound of fighting was faintly audible and Long Chen gaze turned cold. As if a leopard, he moved quickly amongst the forest!

Suddenly, a piece of empty land appeared before his eyes and the two people that were fighting were actually Yang Lingyue and Bai Shiji who had acted like a lovey dovey pair earlier.

Long Chen's eyes scanned the scene and saw that Yang Wu was already on the ground, his face pale and blood flowing from the corners of his mouth, staring in rage at Bai Shiji. As for Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong they stood beside the injured Yang Wu to constrain him.

Bai Shiji, on the other hand, was only messing around with Yang Lingyue. There were a few times when he could have injured her but he never did, only tearing a piece of cloth from her body each time.

As the fight progressed, the clothes on Yang Lingyue's body gradually became less and less and nearly the spring sunshine emerged to bring the world alive. At this moment she cried like she was made of tears, her eyes showing extreme despair and helplessness!

[TL Note: (不多春光乍了) “Spring sunshine emerges to bring the world alive”:
Meaning to have a glimpse of something intimate (in this case underwear)]

“Bai Shiji, you goddamn bastard!”

Heart wrenched, Yang Lingyue screamed as she glared at Bai Shiji who had been tearing off her clothes with one hand.

DBWG – Chapter 32

[Transformed Devil First Finger]

Yang Lingyue looked at that wanton and evil look on Bai Shiji, and her eyes were filled with despair.

She knew in her heart what Bai Shiji was trying to do. Originally she had admired Bai Shiji whole-heartedly and also dreamt of a day when this would happen. But this came too suddenly, and it was done in front of others, including her own brother! Only now did she realize how much anguish she was feeling.

[TL Note: The day; she means *cough* sex *cough*]

“Bai Shiji, why? Why is your Bai Family doing this to us, the one you wanted to kill shouldn’t have been us? Why are you aiming at us? Let go of my sister!”

Yang Wu was already heavily injured, and at this point, under Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong’s restraint, he could not move an inch.

“Elder Brother, save me!”

Hearing Yang Lingyue’s voice full of despair had turned Yang Wu’s eyes bloodshot! But his pain, which could be felt to the bone, had completely sealed all of his movements!

Earlier, Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji teamed up against him in an unexpected and backhanded blow, which was why he could be critically injured so easily.

His eyes were filled with unwillingness as he looked at his younger sister who was about to be shamed. His eyes could almost spew out flames, but at this point all he felt was helplessness!

As both of them faced despair, the trees nearby rustled as there a gust of wind approached. In the next moment, a shadow stood not too far away from Bai Shiji and sized up the scene, his face filled with shock.

It was Long Chen.

Looking at Long Chen that had suddenly appeared, Bai Shiji stopped his assault and viciously glared at Long Chen, smirking as he said: "I was just about to look for you after this matter, but never thought that you would come knocking on the door. I might as well dispose of you first and then enjoy this enchanting beauty without a care."

When Yang Lingyue and Yang Wu, originally saw someone arriving, they had felt a feeling of salvation, but looking at the person that had actually arrived, their faces turned sluggish and darkened.

Long Chen's arrival was as good as not being here.

On one hand, they had close ties with the Bai Family and ostracised Long Chen. However, now that they had actually fallen into the Bai Family's vicious scheme, it would be difficult to avoid being mocked by Long Chen. On the other hand, Long Chen was merely at the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm strength-wise, and meeting Bai Shiji who was at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm was only adding one more member to the death count.

With Long Chen blocking the way, they could still delay their humiliation and death. This was the only use for Long Chen's appearance in their hearts.

Looking at Long Chen suddenly appearing, Bai Shidong and Bai Zhixing momentarily felt a little nervous, but as they realized Bai Shiji was still here, they calmed down.

Especially for Bai Shidong, he had been humiliated greatly by Long Chen earlier but did not dare to take revenge. At this point in time with Long Chen's appearance, he acted like a sheep in wolf's clothing as he said: "Shiji Brother, after you heavily injure him, could you let me end his life?"

[TL Note: Appearing fierce while cowardly at heart, the opposite of the wolf in sheep's clothing basically.]

Bai Shiji did not bother with Yang Lingyue anymore, only looking sinisterly at Long Chen and coldly said: "If I do not accidentally kill him, then you may go ahead."

Looking at Yang Wu's and Yang Lingyue's disappointed faces after his arrival, Long Chen was suddenly so angry that even his nose could turn crooked.

These two fellows were not even optimistic about him, so Long Chen couldn't be bothered to save them. He immediately ignored Bai Shiji's existence and looking at Yang Lingyue, who did not have her clothes worn on properly, he asked: "Where is Lingqing?"

However, Yang Lingyue did not answer him. She was constantly fiddling with what little clothes that she had on herself, wanting to cover up the skin that had

been shown. However, that was only like a cup of water on a burning cart of firewood.

[TL Note:(杯水车薪) “A cup of water on a burning cart of firewood.” Idiom: an utterly inadequate and useless measure]

From what she saw, Long Chen’s arrival could not salvage anything, and she was still immersed in sorrow and panic. Unable to free herself while thinking of having to face this bastard after Long Chen’s death, she felt as if her whole body was going to crumble.

Long Chen was now fuming. He was so furious, not because Yang Lingyue wasn’t optimistic about him, but because he was sincerely concerned about Yang Lingqing!

“Yang Lingyue, Yang Wu, I’m fucking asking you, where did Yang Lingqing go?!”

Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue could not even utter a sound and allowed Long Chen to make a fool out of himself. However, at this point, Bai Shiji, who had been ignored by Long Chen, was gradually becoming angry.

The expression on his face had slowly darkened as the Qi around his whole body circulated explosively!

Walking slowly towards Long Chen, his icy cold tone could make people think that they were in the freezing cold of winter!

“Even at the brink of your death, you still want to play a hero and care for others. You have ruined my younger brother and I had long since wanted to kill

you. If not for my grandfather who had made me tolerate this until today, you would have been long gone to meet that useless dead father of yours!”

“What did you say?!”

Long Chen’s fists slowly clenched. What he disliked to hear the most was someone calling his father trash especially when it came from Bai Shiji’s mouth. This was because Bai Shiji was Bai Zhanxiong’s son and Yang Xueqing had actually treated Bai Zhanxiong dearly!

“That lamentable woman, if she knew that the Bai Family had done such atrocious deeds to the Yang Family’s younger generation today, I wonder what her expression will be!”

Bai Shiji put on an expression as if he was definitely going to win which made Long Chen very irritated. Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue’s stupid actions had filled Long Chen with a stomach full of anger. Yang Lingqing’s life and death was still unknown and he was extremely furious!

Once he thought of Bai Shichen, who wasn’t here, and of that time when he showed off to Yang Lingqing.....

Looking at Bai Shiji, who had done those things to Yang Lingyue, Long Chen had an ominous premonition. Once he thought that his younger sister Yang Lingqing, that had been usually treating him so well could actually come to harm, his whole body’s Qi circulated wildly! His Qi transformed into a faint red colored dragon, and was surging within his six Dragon Veins!

The quintessence of the dragon, which had waned due to the transformation

back into the normal state, slowly emerged once again from his body. He could faintly feel that the blood red Dragon God image which had vanished before from his organs, bones, blood and muscles, appeared once again and ferociously roared!

“If anything were to happen to Lingqing, your Bai Family must all be buried with her! All of you go to hell!”

Long Chen’s eyes started to become dyed with a deep scarlet red color! That faint red Qi had been stimulated and began to overflow from within!

Right now the situation was this. Bai Shiji will evidently not let him go so easily, as such; the only method to save Yang Lingqing was to kill this Bai Shiji in the shortest amount of time possible. This would also fulfil the purpose of Long Chen coming to this Big Barren Mountain!

Seeing that Long Chen’s eyes had emitted such a terrifying aura, Bai Shiji was shocked for a while, and then he smirked and said: “No wonder you dare to stand in front of me, it’s because you have already entered the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm! However, with only this level, you still wish to mess with me? Your progress in breaking through is rather fast, so all the more reason I cannot keep you alive, receive your death!”

As Bai Shiji finished speaking, Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue momentarily glanced over nervously, as in their subconscious mind all they had hoped for was for Long Chen to endure for a little longer.

When they heard that Long Chen was already in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, their hearts happily thought that maybe the descent of helplessness will come a little later and who knows. Maybe they will be able to

hold off until someone saves them!

Finally with a little hope, but despair still surrounded and loomed over them like a trauma.

Once Bai Shiji had finished speaking, he instantly sent an attack flying towards Long Chen without warning!

His aura of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had explosively circulated throughout his body as an immense aura swept towards Long Chen, causing the falling leaves to sway and dance in the air!

However, what made Bai Shiji very surprised was, Long Chen was actually not made to retreat even half a step by this aura!

“As expected, he is going to persist till death? What a stubborn fellow.....”

“Having this achievement at this age, actually you’re not trash. However from today onwards, after meeting me, I’m afraid you can’t even become trash!”

Within Long Chen’s body, the faint red Qi dragon madly howled.

Long Chen discovered that the pressure he originally had to use all his strength to block did not actually have such a huge impact on him right now.

“Really?”

Long Chen coldly laughed and as Bai Shiji charged towards him, his gaze turned dark suddenly, shouting as he charged towards Bai Shiji!

As both of them met each other, it seemed as if two shooting stars collided, with a huge bang, a resplendent starlight had faded away in a blink of eye and the [Five Directional True Devil Fist] vanished as it exploded. Both of them momentarily retreated in a hurry!

This attack of Long Chen had temporarily given Bai Shiji an extremely huge shock. Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue revealed expressions showing pleasant surprise. After all, Long Chen could meet one of Bai Shiji's attack head on which was already considered a pretty good result. One must know that the the longer Long Chen can persist, the higher their chances of escaping will be, so they had looked on nervously and praying that Long Chen could endure for a while longer!

Bai Shiji's voice, at this time, had travelled to their ears.

"I heard that you used the [Falling Star Fist] to a stage of creation after the mastery stage. Indeed it's not bad, to be able to defend against fifty percent of my [Five Directional True Devil Fist]!"

Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue once again had a face of despair. So what if Long Chen had defended against his strike from earlier? It was only at fifty percent of the [Five Directional True Devil Fist]. If Bai Shiji were to use the [Dark Heavenly Finger] with all his strength, then wouldn't Long Chen die in one strike?

Yang Lingyue's face turned pale and Yang Wu helplessly looked at his own sister, being unable to do anything about the situation.

Actually Long Chen was smiling deep inside, because he too had only used half of his strength.

However, he did not have time to waste with Bai Shiji here. At this moment, looking at the arrogant look of self-satisfaction on Bai Shiji he felt nothing but fury in his heart.

“Bai Shiji, you are really the first person in my life that I must definitely kill!”

Long Chen howled furiously inside his heart!!

At this point, he had already tested and confirmed Bai Shiji’s strength and being only a few breaths away, Long Chen no longer wasted any time with Bai Shiji as he didn’t have the time to spare. His Qi surged like a dragon, and at this moment, he suddenly charged towards Bai Shiji and the ground trembled beneath his feet.

In the midst of dashing, his hands swiftly formed a seal motion, and a faint red Qi was rapidly revolving, letting out a whistling noise!

“Bai Shiji, go to hell for me!”

Currently, Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue were staring, astonished at Long Chen especially Yang Wu. He was extremely familiar with the aura of the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon]. Long Chen had, in a short span of ten odd days, already been able to use the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon], whereas Yang Wu had to learn it for half a year. From this alone, one could see that the innate talent of Long Chen, in the aspect of martial technique, was such a heaven defying existence!

“Only a span of ten odd days, the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon], impossible, how could he suddenly have turned into such a genius.....”

These were the thoughts of Yang Lingyue and Yang Wu. Their minds were unable to comprehend the situation and discover Long Chen’s faint red aura, much less understand what kind of difference his [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] had from the rest!

Looking at Long Chen who appeared like a blood red Dragon God and howled as he charged towards him, Bai Shiji was momentarily shocked, but soon it turned into a smirk.

“[Seal of the Ashened Dragon]? A half assed [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] from the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm? How can it be a match for our Bai Family’s [Dark Heavenly Finger]!”

“[Dark Heavenly Finger – Transformed Devil First Finger]!”

A Shocking Conspiracy!

Long Chen shouted, and suddenly turned into a faint red figure resembling a dragon. He brought on an immense aura and charged towards Bai Shiji!

At this point, a black coloured light radiated between Bai Shiji's fingers. This was the first strike of [Dark Heavenly Finger], the [Transformed Devil First Finger]. It had a piercing effect like an arrow of black light as it shot towards Long Chen. When both wild energies collided, a huge burst of energy was dispersed in all directions.

“His half-assed [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] is definitely not a match for Bai Shiji's well-practiced [Transformed Devil First Finger].....”

This thought surfaced on Yang Wu's mind.

Bai Shiji felt that the other party's Qi was not as overwhelming as his, but suddenly, in that instant, Long Chen actually emitted an ancient aura that made Bai Shiji afraid, turning his whole face pale!

Bai Shiji stared widely at his [Transformed Devil First Finger]. In front of the faint red dragon figure, it was retreating continuously, and before Bai Shiji even had the time to react, the dragon figure shattered the [Transformed Devil First Finger], causing an explosion on him. Bai Shiji cried in anguish and spewed a mouthful of blood, crashing to the floor!

Both of his eyes widened with an obvious expression of disbelief.

He simply could not understand. Why did the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon], coming from a mere sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator, have such an immense strength?! And what exactly was that frightening aura?!

Although the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] was weakened, it still hit Bai Shiji squarely, causing disarray among his organs. A pain that could be felt to the bone made him cringe and black coloured blood constantly flowed out of his mouth. Wanting to pick himself up, his fingers powerlessly grasped the soil on the floor, but to no avail!

Originally, Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue had despaired, but at this instant, they became astonished. Yang Wu was so shocked that his mouth gaped open, and he shook his head violently a few times, only to realise that he hadn't been seeing things. He immediately exclaimed: "Impossible, this is impossible!"

Yang Lingyue's eyes widened even further, and the clothes that she clutched tightly in her hands had now dropped onto the floor. Basically, she revealed almost everything, but she was still completely unaware as the shock Long Chen had brought them was simply too great!

"This is impossible.....definitely impossible!"

Nevermind that he had started to practice cultivation or that he had beaten Yang Zhan suddenly. However, Yang Lingyue could never have imagined that Long Chen who was originally a wastrel in her eyes could defeat her. And yet, here he was, viciously beating the person whom she had once thought talented!

"What is this world coming to....."

As for Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong, both of them were too scared to even move.

Bai Shidong thought of what he said to Bai Shiji and suddenly felt his legs turn soft. He seemingly became unable to control his bladder.

At this point, Bai Shiji used all of his strength to struggle, but it had only worsened his internal injuries. He already felt his vision start to blur, and the light rays of the sun seemed to be rather piercing to his eyes. Suddenly, a shadow towered over him from above. Bai Shiji gradually discovered that it was Long Chen.

Suddenly, a hand was choking his throat and feeling the strength of those icy cold fingers, Bai Shiji groggily thought: “Am.....Am I about to die.....Is he about to kill me? Why.....It shouldn’t have ended like this, why?”

But that hand suddenly left his throat.

Long Chen spat at his face, and coldly said: “You son of a bitch, wait for me to save Yang Lingqing before I come back to claim your dog life!”

He was still looking at Bai Shiji but his body had moved suddenly. Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong, who had been guarding Yang Wu, suddenly let out cries.

Bai Zhixing was the first to be knocked down unconscious by Long Chen. As for Bai Shidong, a punch from Long Chen came flying at him and he once again fell to the ground. As his face turned pale, a stench of urine suddenly permeated the air.....

Long Chen gave him a stomp, and he fainted.

“Damn it! You actually peed for me again, each time I see you in future, I will stomp on you. Let me see how many times you can pee for me in a day!”

Saying which, he did not even look at Yang Wu who was staring at him in shock and fear. He turned and looked at Yang Lingyue, who was staring at him blankly. He smiled and said: “Yang Lingyue, showing off that slim and graceful young figure of yours to your own cousin, don’t you think it is a little disrespectful?”

Yang Lingyue suddenly realised that she did not have much clothes on her, and suddenly gave out a piercing scream. She became flustered and picked up the materials on the ground and stared at Long Chen in indignation.

Long Chen did not even have any interest in her and he did not waste any time. He immediately asked: “I’m going to save Yang Lingqing. I’ll hand this place over to you. Restrain these three fellows. Tell me right now, where is Yang Lingqing?”

Yang Lingyue’s face was pale, and at this point Yang Wu actually pointed at a direction and said: “Yang Lingqing headed that way. Bai Shichen was chasing her!”

Long Chen did not waste any time and immediately headed towards the direction Yang Wu had pointed at.

Yang Wu stared at his disappearing back blankly and once again looked at Bai Shiji, Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong. Bai Shiji was still vomiting blood and struggling on the ground, while Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong had fainted.

“Xiao Yue, what do you think? Will he be able to deal with Bai Shichen?”

“Huh?”

At this point, Yang Lingyue had already put on her clothes. However there still wasn't much clothing material and Bai Shidong's robes had already been soiled. So right now, she was helping herself to Bai Zhixing's outer robes.

Bai Family suddenly did this, and Yang Lingyue hated them to the core already.

“What do you think; will he be able to deal with Bai Shichen?”

Only then did Yang Lingyue react and scanned the surroundings, saying in a quivering voice: “Lingqing should not be in any danger.”

Hearing her reply, Yang Wu slowly shut his eyes. He knew that from this moment onwards, the first ranking of the Yang Family younger generation would no longer belong to him but to that young man who had a blood-like Qi. From the moment Long Chen used [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] and beat Bai Shiji, he suddenly had a delusion, as if Long Chen was not human anymore but a blood red dragon.

And dragons had always been the existence of overlords.

This blood red colour was even a representation of killing.

“King of slaughter.” This was what Yang Wu thought of Long Chen.

Beating Bai Shiji had only required a [Falling Star Fist] and [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] from Long Chen. It was not even half a minute. However, Long Chen was still terribly worried about Yang Lingqing.

Bai Shichen's strength was much stronger than Yang Lingqing's. If he did not have those thoughts of messing around with her, Yang Lingqing might have already fallen into his hands!

Once he thought of the possibility that Yang Lingqing could be raped, Long Chen's eyes had almost spewed fire. His whole body's Qi, instead of decreasing after defeating Bai Shiji, had actually risen explosively!

"Long Chen, I can sense their aura, that way!"

Lingxi sent a direction from inside the Lingxi sword. With Lingxi around, Long Chen found it convenient to travel around in this Big Barren Mountain. He explosively used his greatest speed and dashed towards the direction Lingxi had pointed at!

Thinking that he was about to see them, Long Chen was extremely nervous in his heart because he was scared to see the scene that he was the most afraid of!

However before arriving, Lingxi said: "Don't worry, your younger sister is still fine. They're in a discussion right now!"

This sentence allowed Long Chen to temporarily put his worries at ease. However, the killing intent towards Bai Shichen had not lessened.

Now, a huge conflict between both families had arisen. Long Chen and Bai Shichen were the strongest of the younger generation from both sides. Long Chen had hurt Bai Shiji, and Yang Wu was also heavily injured. If they were not to fight at the first sight of each other, then it would be a strange thing.

Hearing that they were still talking, Long Chen lowered his pace and concealed his movements as he walked ahead. Very soon, he saw Yang Lingqing being forced into a corner by Bai Shichen.

At this point, Yang Lingqing's eyes had turned red and her face already had many traces of tears. She used an icy cold look and stared at Bai Shichen, gritting her teeth tightly, her body slightly quivering!

As for Bai Shichen, he was speaking blandly: "Lingqing, you must believe my regards for you. Actually I had seen you many times before. It was just that I never had the chance to be acquainted with you. If you are willing to follow me, you'll definitely be very blissful."

Yang Lingqing only used a loathing gaze to look at him, not saying a word.

Seeing that Yang Lingqing was so stubborn, Bai Shichen's voice started to turn cold.

"Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue have already been trapped by us. Once the marriage starts, your Yang Family will all be served poisoned wine. At this point, the whole family will definitely die without a single one left. Yang Wu will also die. As for Yang Lingyue, I think she will make the wisest choice and choose Shiji!"

“Even Yang Xueqing had chosen my father and has forsaken the Yang Family. I too like you, so if you would follow me, even without the Yang Family, you three girls from the Yang Family can also get along together happily! You must know, the order that my grandfather had given us was to kill all of you younger generations of the Yang Family in Big Barren Mountain!”

Hearing Bai Shichen’s speech, Long Chen’s expression abruptly changed.

“No wonder they were attacking the younger generation of the Yang Family in Big Barren Mountain. So it is the plan of the Bai Family to exterminate us!”

With so many different kinds of information, it stirred Long Chen’s emotions greatly.

That Bai Family Master looked to be a nice guy and indeed had close ties with the Yang Family, but Long Chen would have never thought that he would come up with this sudden move. A person’s heart is indeed sinister.

“What are the objectives of the Bai Family’s Master for doing all of this? Is it done just for the twenty years of mayor position? According to the strength of the Bai Family younger generation, it could be easily achieved. There isn’t even a need to create such a huge scheme!”

Allowing the Yang Family to drink poisoned wine during the wedding, this idea was indeed ingenious. Founder Yang, while marrying his daughter off, was on cloud nine. Even if it was a cup of piss, one can’t say for sure that he would not drink it, much less a cup of wine.

With the elders of the Yang Family dead and the Bai Family massacring the

younger generation here, this move of the Bai Family was extremely vicious and cruel, wiping the whole of the Yang Family in a day.

From the wedding banquet, they have long since set it up. The marriage between Yang Xueqing and Bai Zhanxiong had been an important factor in this whole scheme!

Thinking of Yang Xueqing, Long Chen's eyes suddenly turned bloodshot!

"Although you were cold and distant towards me, I thought that you still had a shred of humanity in you: knowing filial piety, to be amiable to fellow elders and to nurture the younger generation. But I never thought you could be this vicious. You actually helped an outsider to massacre the whole of your family. Yang Xueqing! Is your fucking brain spoilt or something? Do you have an illness?"

No matter how much he thought of this matter, Long Chen just could not figure out why Yang Xueqing acted this way and this was way too far from his threshold ability!

However, even if Yang Xueqing had abandoned the Yang Family, Long Chen will definitely not. He immediately made up his mind. It was imperative to get rid of Bai Shichen right away, save Yang Lingqing, and then retaliate towards the Bai Family!

And at this point, seeing that Yang Lingqing was not persuaded, Bai Shichen immediately said solemnly: 'Yang Lingqing, since you do not want the easy way out, then I will no longer be courteous towards you. Seeing that this moment is just right, let's see what you can still do?!'

Hearing Bai Shichen who had previously put on a noble air, threatening her with a voice filled with menace and lust, Yang Lingqing grimaced and condescendingly looked at Bai Shichen saying: “Originally, I thought you were Poplar Town’s new generation’s strongest cultivator. The other girls and I had idolised you and had been mesmerised by your noble and elegant air... however, I have realized today, Bai Shichen, that you are actually nothing much. I am not mocking you, but myself, for actually idolising a beast like you in the past.”

Yang Lingqing’s condescending gaze had enraged Bai Shichen from his previous calm state and he gritted his teeth as his true nature emerged.

That threatening gesture only served to reinforce Yan Lingqing’s condescension as she gazed at him as if looking at a clown.

Yang Lingqing suddenly said blandly: “Bai Shichen, remember this, even if you were to conquer my body you will never conquer my soul.”

She suddenly thought of a person, her face showing a smile: “However, there’s a person who is much more outstanding than you. Everyone thought of him as a spoilt brat. When he speaks, he sounds like a hooligan, but the depth of his gaze is a thousand times purer than a beast like you.”

Bai Shichen knew who she was referring to and sneered: “You smelly bitch, saying that I am a beast, but you actually harbour feelings for your own cousin, right? Such incestful behaviour, isn’t that worse than a beast?”

Yang Lingqing face turned red and she angrily retorted: “Bastard, only you, would be so dirty-minded. Do you have to harbour feelings for everyone that you approve of? If your mother loves you, does that count as incest?”

At this point, seeing that Yang Lingqing was surprisingly not afraid of him, Bai Shichen’s heart was gradually driven wild and he became aroused. Without saying another word, he pounced on Yang Lingqing. He growled:

“Who cares who you are? After I have conquered your body, why would I still fear that I wouldn’t be able to enslave your soul? Yang Lingqing!”

Yang Lingqing was about to scream but then, her eyes widened at the sight behind Bai Shichen. Bai Shichen was suspicious as to why the person in his arms was not resisting and was still wondering about it when he felt someone standing behind him. He was momentarily frightened as he broke out into a cold sweat and spun around.

Seeing how he was shocked after seeing Long Chen, Yang Lingqing punched him in the waist and took the chance to run towards Long Chen.

“Run!”

She wanted to seize the opportunity and began pulling Long Chen along to escape. But what made her exasperated was that Long Chen’s whole body, as if in shock, had stayed rooted to the ground and no matter how hard she tried she couldn’t pull him away.

At this point, Bai Shichen had already recovered from his shock and the both of them no longer had any chance to escape.

Yang Lingqing knew that Long Chen's nature was obstinate and hot tempered and that if they were to stay here he would definitely have a death match with Bai Shichen. Right now, the only option was to stand in front of Long Chen and, while glaring at Bai Shichen, she whispered to Long Chen: "Hurry and escape, the Bai Family is going to poison Grandfather and the rest during the wedding banquet. We should hurry back to inform them!"

Saying which, her tears began flowing.

Today's events were the greatest torment in her sixteen years of life.

She and Long Chen were born in the same year, in the same month, and on the same day but had different upbringings. She had been pampered since she was young, but Long Chen had fought and stumbled for the past sixteen years instead.

Realizing that this girl actually had once again stood in front of him, with the thought to protect him, Long Chen couldn't help but feel touched. However to him, Yang Lingqing's request to escape, that was impossible.

He, Long Chen, had never let a woman stand in front to protect him.

At this point, Bai Shichen sneered and said: "You are the person that she was referring to? Heaven had given you a path but you chose not to walk on it. You chose instead to break into the gates of Hell. Oh well! Today seeing how both you and my Lingqing have such a fate, I will put up a good performance with her for you."

Yang Lingqing had already implored Long Chen but looking at him, who actually remained completely unconcerned, she became extremely panicked and growled: “Brother Chen, aren’t you a man? Can’t you prioritize the big picture? The lives of grandfather and the rest of the family are in your hands!”

Long Chen lifted his head and gave her a gentle look. He pursed his lips and then pulled her behind him, and his determined voice reached Yang Lingqing’s ears.

“Lingqing, you have grown so well. I, being the big brother, had only stood up for you only once until now. I am quite embarrassed about that. This brat has actually made you cry today! Since your tears flow, I will let him flow out blood....”

“As for grandfather and the rest, give me another half a minute and I’ll be able to settle this.”

Although his voice was calm, his resolution, confidence and decisiveness had stunned Yang Lingqing.

She suddenly thought of that time back in the Cultivator’s Market when she got bullied by Bai Zhixing. Long Chen had stood in front of her then and although his back wasn’t majestic, that steely backbone had actually made her feel indescribably calm and collected.

But what Long Chen faced right now was the number one genius of Poplar Town!

“With Elder Brother taking care of things, you should retreat behind and learn

how I punish bad guys.”

Yang Lingqing nodded her head and retreated into the forest behind them.

Seeing that Long Chen had not let Yang Lingqing escape, Bai Shichen was momentarily flabbergasted and growled: “Boy, using the conventional scenario, shouldn’t you let her escape first? I was prepared to feel touched but unexpectedly your brains have already become rotten.”

However, Long Chen said: “That is because there is no need for her to escape if it’s you I’m dealing with. I only have half a minute anyway. I’ve heard the propaganda that you, Bai Shichen, is the number one genius of Poplar Town, so today I will break that myth in front of my younger sister!”

Bai Shichen sized Long Chen up, and then burst out laughing: “A delusional person.....”

As he erupted in laughter, Long Chen’s impressive aura had already come pressuring towards him and in that moment both of them were ready to strike. As for Yang Lingqing, she hid behind an ancient tree and nervously watched the two.

Although she was sure that Long Chen would not be a match for Bai Shichen, she had this strange feeling that made her believe Long Chen would emerge victorious.

“Although you unintentionally caused my brother’s death, you have always been a huge hero in my heart.....”

This matter had actually been forgotten by Long Chen. It was just Yang Lingqing who had always been remembering that.

When they were about six years old, Yang Lingqing was extremely playful, often leaving the Yang residence and going to the deep mountains to frolic. One day, she met a few wild wolves and it was then when Long Chen had shielded her and helped her to chase those wild wolves away.

Long Chen had been bitten full of wounds at that time, and as for Yang Lingqing, she had simply been scared out of her guts.

The both of them then returned to the Yang Family and Yang Lingqing cried non-stop. It was at this point that Yang Xueqing had assumed that Long Chen had brought Yang Lingqing out, so she furiously berated him.

Yang Lingqing had always blamed herself for this matter throughout the years.

“You have forgotten it but this is actually the third time you have stood in front of me and you have never once fallen.....”

Looking at Long Chen’s figure, she felt as if she had returned to being six again while a scrawny figure held a sharpened rock and had a strenuous battle with a pack of wild wolves. No matter how many bites he received and while fresh blood was still constantly spilling out, he shed not a single tear!

As she thought on, Yang Lingqing felt extremely moved.

At this point Long Chen had given Bai Shichen a death stare. After the exchange of auras earlier between them, he had already probed and discovered

that Bai Shichen was indeed much stronger than Bai Shiji. He might have even stepped half a foot into the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!

Bai Shichen stopped and looked at Long Chen with a rather shocked expression and said: “They all said you were in the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, but you had long ago entered the sixth level and have almost broken into the seventh. As expected, you have greatly concealed your strength but it’s just of this level and you still want to deal with me, who is close to eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm?”

Long Chen had to admit that this was indeed the toughest battle he had ever faced. Compared to the Underground Blood Lizard King from before, although its body was extremely huge and many times bigger, it wasn’t as difficult to deal with as Bai Shichen!

Bai Shichen had already spent over ten years cultivating and his talent had surpassed Bai Shiji. It wouldn’t be so easy for Long Chen to defeat him.

At this point, Bai Shichen stared lustfully at Yang Lingqing and was momentarily fired up. He too, no longer had any time to fool around with Long Chen and immediately said: “I admit that you are indeed a troublesome opponent and all of my other skills apart from [Dark Heavenly Finger] are not able to deal with you. So.....You just have to wait for your imminent death!”

The [Dark Heavenly Finger] again?

Long Chen raised his head and said: “I heard that you have trained your [Dark Heavenly Finger] to the second finger technique? Would you grant me the honor of seeing it?”

Bai Shichen stared blankly for a moment and immediately laughed: “I understand your intentions! You wish to die a glorious death in front of Yang Lingqing right? On account that you have some weight, I will make an effort to fulfill this dying wish of yours!”

[ED Note: “you have some weight”: You are a worthy opponent]

Yang Lingqing was also puzzled by Long Chen, not knowing what tricks he had up his sleeves.

[Dark Heavenly Finger] first finger technique, [Transformed Devil First Finger], was almost similar in strength to [Seal of the Ashened Dragon]. As for this second technique, how could Long Chen block it?

No matter how much she believed in Long Chen, at this point her heart raced wildly.

Thinking that soon he would finally have Yang Lingqing, Bai Shichen was indescribably excited.

He detachedly looked at Long Chen, who seemed to be unafraid of death, and gradually brought up the middle finger of his right hand. A stream of black color suddenly began revolving around it and an impressive aura was sent towards the surroundings!

The energy from this stream whistled loudly as it was revolving and rapidly grew more powerful. Almost an instant later, as if a huge spiral had appeared, Bai Shichen eyes turned cold. Looking at Long Chen one last time as he was about to use the second technique of [Dark Heavenly Finger], he actually saw

Long Chen rapidly forming hand seals!

“Within a span of only ten odd days you have actually already learnt the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon]? I can’t keep you alive any longer!”

Thinking this, Bai Shichen unleashed the full might of the second technique of [Dark Heavenly Finger] and the black spiral grew even larger and a hurricane-like gust of wind had been released into the surroundings!

The tree branches and leaves all exploded into tiny pieces and the mud flew wildly in the air. With a shout, Bai Shichen sent this surging force charging towards Long Chen!

“[Dark Heavenly Finger], [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]!”

[TL Note: Yellow Spring = Underworld. Ancient Chinese believed that the Heaven was black and the earth was yellow. Springs were on the ground, so they were called “yellow springs”. In Chinese culture, this term often refers to the underworld, a place where spirits of the dead live.]

Yang Lingqing’s face was drained of colour when confronted with such a whistling and devastating strike, but Long Chen’s expression remained unchanged!

He was not affected by this second finger technique, but just focused on completing his attack. What was different than before was that currently, his body had erupted with an even more intense aura.

Between his fingers, a total of nine faint red coloured auras had been

traversing and with the completion of the seal there momentarily appeared to be nine Dragon Gods that were being controlled by Long Chen!

Originally, Yang Lingqing had wanted Long Chen to quickly dodge but at this point she actually saw the faintly discernible images of nine blood red Dragon Gods. She had seen this attack before. It was back when Yang Qingxuan had fought and used this strongest [Seal of the Dragons] technique of the Yang Family!

“[Seal of the High Profound Dragon]!”

DBWG – Chapter 35

Have A Lovely Baby Soon!

Yang Lingqing knew that Long Chen had only gotten the [Seal of the Dragons] about 15 days ago.

When they went to the Cultivator's Market, Yang Lingqing felt that the [Seal of the Dragons] was being wasted in his hands. Long Chen was only in the fifth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm after all.

With Long Chen's innate ability for battle, if he had just used the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon], Yang Lingqing would not have been too surprised. However Long Chen used the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] instead.

Amongst the Yang Family, there were only 3 people who could use the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon]. Founder Yang, Yang Qingxuan and Yang Xueqing. Long Chen had already learnt how to use the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, two whole levels below that of Yang Xueqing!

When compared to Bai Shichen, who knew the second finger technique of [Dark Heavenly Finger], it was obvious that Long Chen's talent was much greater.

With the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] that he used at that moment and even though the pressure surging from his opponent was extremely powerful, the idea of Long Chen preparing to use the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] had never crossed his mind!

When the hand seals of the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] was

completed, the nine Dragon Gods images were under the control of Long Chen. They rapidly condensed into one singular dragon containing a strong whirling aura with the faint shape of blood red dragon. It immediately clashed with [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] and the resulting shockwave was many times greater than that compared to the one against Bai Shiji earlier!

Long Chen's proficiency in using the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon], even an amateur like Yang Lingqing, could tell that it was much stronger than Bai Shichen's [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]. After all, for the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], even the trajectory of the attack could not be controlled well by Bai Shichen. He wasn't in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm so using the skill still seemed a tad difficult for him!

However, Long Chen was different. This [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] had seemed even more complete than Yang Qingxuan's. That magnificent aura, coupled with that blood reeking murderous dragon and bloodlust from Long Chen's body, had momentarily turned incomparably huge and had an aura that seemed to grow stronger the more it fought on!

To Bai Shichen's utter disbelief, a swirling image of a Dragon God had dispersed his half assed condensed [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]. In the aspect of technique, he was inferior when compared to Bai Shiji!

That huge dragon aura came whistling as his face turned pale. He tried to escape from the sorry looking situation, however, the huge attack still landed on his shoulders!

Bai Shichen spewed out a mouthful of blood as he crashed onto the huge rock behind him. Suddenly the rock was split into pieces and Bai Shichen's back had been riddled and drilled into by the rock fragments throughout his whole body!

“Impossible!”

Madness filled Bai Shichen’s eyes as he sank into utter disbelief. All he had to show for this outcome were ten thousand words of disbelief!

He was clearly aware of Long Chen’s ability. It was impossible for him to have such explosive battle strength, but the truth was placed cruelly in front of him. The pain in his chest and left shoulder which bore through his heart had told him that it was not an imagination; he had really been defeated by Long Chen’s earlier attack!

“That is the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon]! Impossible, how could Long Chen learn the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] with his current ability?

As he was wildly seething he suddenly saw Long Chen sinisterly smiling right in front of him.

Seeing this smile, Bai Shichen felt goosebumps all over his body. At this moment he finally learned why Bai Shidong and Bai Zhixing were so afraid of Long Chen!

Despite not having much energy left in his body, Bai Shichen was not someone who would admit defeat easily. He dragged his heavily injured body and was about to turn tail and run, but Long Chen’s indifferent voice had already travelled to his ears.

“You wished to hurt my younger sister. So I will return the favor. I am sorry for hurting your ‘little brother’.”

A kick viciously landed on his nether regions and Bai Shichen's face suddenly turned into the colour of a pig's liver. The veins littered across his eyeballs suddenly popped out as he let out a pathetic scream. He crashed onto the floor while his body shrank into the shape of a shrimp, continuously shuddering and rolling about.

Yang Lingqing walked over at this time and seeing Bai Shichen in such agony, she became startled and asked: "Brother Chen, what have you done to him? Why would he be in this much pain?"

"I don't know, maybe his heart could not accept it when he lost to me. Oh right! Lingqing, let us hurry and leave this Big Barren Mountain right now. Bai Shiji and the rest have already been captured by me. If they want to deal with our Yang Family then we will use their heirs as hostages, and charge back to the Bai Family! If they dared to attack grandfather and the rest, for everyone they kill, we will also kill one!"

Speaking of which, the Bai Family was still inside the Yang residences. Yang Lingqing became extremely flustered, as some time had already passed. The sun was gradually setting and if they did not hurry, it cannot be said for sure if the Yang Family and the rest would be able to escape misfortune!

Although Long Chen's strategy was considered to be rather risky right now, it was the only shot they had to save the Yang Family!

If it was only Yang Lingqing, she definitely would not know what to do but with Long Chen acting as the emotional pillar of support, her heart felt much more relieved.

In her heart, Long Chen could even beat Bai Shichen and created such a miraculous ending. What other things could he not do anymore?

Long Chen having captured Bai Shiji, this matter to Yang Lingqing, had not been surprising anymore.

With no time to waste, Long Chen did not care about Bai Shichen who was moaning in pain. Grabbing onto his collar, he brought Yang Lingqing towards the direction where Yang Wu and the rest were at. The two places were in fact not that far away and adding on to the pressing situation, they moved extremely fast.

Very soon they came to the open area where Yang Wu and the rest were. When Long Chen had thrown Bai Shichen, who had been wailing in pain together with Bai Shichen, both Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue minds were numbed.

Against Long Chen, they had only felt fear towards him. Thinking of themselves who had been such an embarrassment, they both could not lift up their heads.

Long Chen took a quick glance around, Bai Zhixing and Bai Shidong had already fainted while Bai Shiji was conscious, however he had been critically injured so he could not move. As for Bai Shichen, it was needless to say what happened to him.

In the future, Bai Shichen most likely would be unable to cook the rice because it cannot be cooked anymore.

[TL Note: He might not be able to reproduce anymore.]

Long Chen raised his head, saw that Yang Wu had already stood up and inquired: “Your injury should most be alright by now, right?”

When compared to the two sorry figures on the floor, the wounds on his body could only be considered as light, so he said: “There’s not much problem with me anymore.”

Amongst the younger generation, suddenly Long Chen was the most impressive individual in the forefront of this large group.

Long Chen did not say another word and lifted both Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji up and indifferently said: “We have to rush down the Big Barren Mountain and back to the Yang residence now! We will first seize these two fellows. As to why, Yang Lingqing will explain to you on our way back!”

After Long Chen had consecutively defeated Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen, even saving them in the process, the two siblings, Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue, naturally did not have any objections.

Bai Shidong reeked of urine and to a young lady like Yang Lingyue, it was naturally an incomparably disgusting matter, so Bai Shidong could only be handed over to Yang Wu.....

The whole lot of them rapidly descended the mountain, along the way, Yang Lingqing told them everything that had transpired.

Yang Wu frowned and said: “How could it turn out this way? The people from the Bai Family are really worse than beasts. However Lingqing, is Third Aunt really that way? It can’t be? I understand the integrity of Third Aunt. I think it is

impossible.....”

Yang Lingyue had been around Yang Xueqing the most so she also curiously said: “I too think that it’s not possible! Third Aunt treats me the best. The spirit jades that I had used previously to break through to the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm were all given to me by her.....”

Yang Lingqing agonised and shook her head saying: “I also don’t know, but it was what Bai Shichen said.....”

As they spoke of Yang Xueqing, they had all unanimously raised their head and looked at Long Chen who was running at the front. They felt the atmosphere surrounding Long Chen’s body was getting heavier. Thus, they momentarily did not dare to speak any more about that.....

“There’s no need to say more about this matter. After going to the Bai Family, we will naturally know everything.”

“Long Chen”’s voice travelled over from the front. Although it seemed nonchalant, but the three people at the back knew how heavy his heart was.

Today was a big day in Poplar Town.

The Poplar town consisted of two main families that controlled the lifeline of the town. Today, it is a big day for the Bai and Yang families; so naturally, it will be a big day for the Poplar town as well.

The thrilling event of demonic beast hunting competition was only one of the key events, but the most joyous was obviously the marriage between the Yang

Family and Bai Family. After all, this was the first alliance marriage between the Bai and Yang family.

Bai Family Master's Third Son Bai Zhanxiong's wife had passed away after bearing his two sons. Bai Zhanxiong, who had been in pain for so many years, had finally waited by Yang Xueqing when she was also widowed and afterwards the marriage seemed like the natural course of events.

To the outsiders it seemed like smooth sailing for Bai Zhanxiong, in reality, it was actually very difficult for him to achieve this.

With this huge matter between Bai and Yang family, naturally the guests that attended were a lot. All the prestigious individuals and groups from Poplar town and its neighbours had come to attend the event. As they all sat together in the same hall, they were all drinking and chatting merrily, the atmosphere was very lively. At this point, the ceremony had already been over and the bride had entered the consummation chamber. As for the groom, he was currently accompanying the guests drinking wine.

"Esteemed guests, I will be the first to drink to salute you all!"

"Bai Brother has a huge drinking capacity like that of a sea!"

"I wish that Bai Brother and Xueqing Sister will grow old together, and forever have common wishes."

"Have a lovely baby soon!"

"I will definitely do my best!"

The group of them guffawed, the atmosphere was extremely lively. There was a guard that suddenly whispered a few words to Bai Zhanxiong. Bai Zhanxiong poured himself another cup of wine before facing everyone and said: "My fellow brothers, today is my joyous occasion, everyone please drink and chat to your heart's content. I have to make a toast to my father-in-law to pay my respects to him, so I will take my leave first!"

Under the merry farewell from the guests, Bai Zhanxiong walked through the corridors and into a main hall. In the main hall, a banquet was also prepared. However, there were not many people there. It only consisted of the Bai and Yang family members.

Because a few of their younger generation had already gone to participate in the demonic beast hunting competition, on numbers alone, it was incomparable to the number of people outside the hall. However it was still rather lively in here.

When Bai Zhanxiong entered, the people from both families had been drinking merrily. He closed the door secretly as he walked in and a few guards suddenly appeared and guarded the exit. Only then did Bai Zhanxiong felt at ease and heartily laughed as he walked towards the founder of the Yang's family. He loudly projected his voice as he said: "Uncle Yang! Oh no, I meant father-in-law! Today, your son wishes to drink with you!"

Bai Zhanxiong had finished entertaining the esteemed guests outside and finally had time to enter the room. Founder Yang was extremely happy and he hurriedly pulled Bai Zhanxiong to sit with him. It could be seen that he was on cloud nine tonight. He drank too much and at this point, his face was flushed red. He pulled Bai Zhanxiong and said: "Back then when you were born, your father and I was still guarding outside the door. To be truthful, my heart

naturally was not lesser than your father's nervousness. After all, we had already agreed for our child's mutual marriage and the two of you just coincidentally were one boy and one girl. However, the heavens had made fun of man and a Long Qinglan had appeared. But now today, both of you have finally gone on the preplanned path. I am extremely elated for the both of you.....”

Saying to that point, Founder Yang suddenly felt a little dizzy and momentarily laughed: “I have really aged and almost obsolete. After only drinking such a small amount of wine, I actually am going to topple over soon.....”

Bai Zhanxiong patted Founder Yang's shoulder and laughed as he said: “Yes, indeed it is time for you to topple over. It's also about time your Yang Family topples over. In the end, this Poplar Town will solely belong to our Bai Family.....”

Nightmare Flower

Founder Yang blinked his eyes and looked dazedly at Bai Zhanxiong.

He felt that the other party had just said something wrong. However at this time, Bai Zhanxiong had actually reached out and patted his cheek, sneering: “Old fellow, the taste of this Nightmare Flower is not too bad, right? Why don’t you try to circulate your Qi now and see if it will give rise to a pain that could be felt right down to the bones?”

After being patted on his aging cheek, Founder Yang finally knew that something was amiss. As expected, he followed Bai Zhanxiong’s suggestion. When he tried to circulate his Qi, he immediately felt his entire dantian twitching as if he were to use just a tiny bit of energy, his dantian would be completely destroyed!

Founder Yang, who was in a bit of a drunken stupor before, instantly woke up. His eyes flashed with a cold gaze and stared with deadly intent at the Bai Zhanxiong who was grinning sinisterly. He had recalled what kind of object the Nightmare Flower was.

It was a kind of poisonous spirit medicine. Its medicinal properties were potent and if a petal were to be directly consumed, it would immediately destroy the cultivator’s Dragon Vein and dantian. But if one were to dilute the petal’s dew, the properties would be lessened a little. The person being poisoned would be fine as long as they did not circulate their Qi. But once they did, then it would cause their dantian to explode.

However, the Nightmare Flower even if it was diluted, there would definitely still be a fragrant scent emitted. Founder Yang clearly remembered that the wine

he drank earlier had a strange scent, but he was in the midst of his happiness, so how could he have had the time to bother about the fragrance in the wine?

By this time, the faces on all the Yang Family members had changed drastically. They too had discovered that when they used their Qi, their dantian would immediately turn as soft and weak as tofu!

Now, all of them understood that, the Bai Family had schemed against the Yang Family and that they have all already been poisoned unknowingly. The poison in the petals of the Nightmare Flower was not to be underestimated. It was reputed to strike terror into the hearts of people but one did not expect the Bai Family to actually use it on the Yang Family who had ties as close as brothers to them!

However, the person who was the most stupefied was Founder Yang. He stared blankly at Bai Zhanxiong then shifted his gaze towards the Bai Family's Master and vehemently said: "Bai Sheng? Why? Have I, Yang Cangqiong, treated you unkindly?"

The face of the Bai Family's Master which was flushed previously now had darkened. He coldly smirked and said: "On the contrary though I had wanted to ask you. I had really wondered how you were able to remain so laughably innocent after all these years?"

He indicated to Bai Zhanxiong by saying: "Xiong Er, go drink your formal exchange of wine between bride and groom before bringing Yang Xueqing here. Today, we shall let them all die together as a family."

Hearing that the Bai Family's Master had actually mentioned the "death" word, the Yang Family members' expressions greatly changed!

Although they could not circulate their Qi, they still quickly gathered together, except for the Founder Yang, Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian who stood at the forefront with ashened faces!

Behind them were the other sons of Founder Yang and of course the elderly, weak women and children. At this moment, Yang Qingxuan went towards Founder Yang ear's and mournfully whispered: "Father, those who even have a shred of Qi, have all been poisoned by this Nightmare Flower! The Bai Family are such detestable bastards!"

Right now, Founder Yang's heart was trembling violently. The words said by the Bai Family's Master previously had left him completely speechless.

He never could have imagined that this brother of his whom he had treated as one his own for his whole life, had completely turned into this character that he could no longer recognised. This brother was using a belittling expression to look at him, Yang Cangqiong!

Moments later, Yang Xueqing whose hair had looked untidy, had already been dragged over by Bai Zhanxiong. They both still had the red wedding costume on and Yang Xueqing who had been dressed up and her makeup on looked really beautifully. However, after seeing her dear father and brothers being surrounded and their pale stricken faces, Yang Xueqing's heart fell to the bottom of a valley!

"Bai Zhanxiong! What are you doing?! Have your Bai Family gone nuts?!"

Without being able to use her Qi, Yang Xueqing was basically, a helpless and weak woman in front of Bai Zhanxiong. Bai Zhanxiong shoved away her hand

that was reaching for him and viciously slapped her before he coldly said: “You better remain quiet!”

Then, he pushed Yang Xueqing towards the group of people where Founder Yang was standing. Yang Xueqing rolled on the ground and her originally beautiful dress and makeup were now all askewed. The red mark on her face was especially unsightly!

Founder Yang immediately supported the agitated Yang Xueqing up. He did not say of another word as he placed her behind him.

After being one of the two masters in Poplar Town for so many years, Founder Yang’s mighty appearance was still not to be belittled, even if he could no longer use his Qi. He raised his head and his gaze from his sunken eyes was sharp and falcon-like as he coldly scanned the people from the Bai Family. At last, his gaze landed on the Bai Family’s Master.

The Bai Family’s Master coldly smirked and said: “Look at your own daughter now! Eighteen years ago, she abandoned my son for a useless trash and now that the trash has died, she now wants to make it up with my son. How can there be such a good thing like this on earth? Is she even still worthy to be with my son?”

Founder Yang still had not said a single word, but hearing these words, Yang Xueqing’s face immediately paled. She had already guessed this would happen but when the other party had said it aloud first, the feeling she felt was unbearable!

Stupefied, she looked towards Bai Zhanxiong, the man who had made a vow to her. Right now though, Bai Zhanxiong did not even care about her gaze and said:

“Today’s marriage was just a method for us to exterminate your Yang Family. I, Bai Zhanxiong, have lived my life so freely. Which woman can I not get? Why would I still want a broken flower like you? Father, we have already achieved our goals, so let us make our move now before the long night becomes just a long dream...”

The fourth son Bai Zhanfeng also laughed at that moment before saying: “Let me conveniently tell you something. The demonic beast hunting competition should be almost over already, however, the amount of demonic energy cores your Yang Family will be handing over should be zero as they wouldn’t have had a chance to slay any beasts before Shichen and Shiji claim their lives.”

Bai Zhanxiong coldly looked at Yang Xueqing and continued saying: “That bastard child you had given birth to, had castrated my son. If it was not for today that we can wipe all of you in one go, that bastard would have died long ago! How do you think I could even tolerate it until now?”

With these two brothers’ words, it was as if a huge thunderbolt from a clear sky had befallen on the Yang Family members!

After hearing that their own sons and daughters have died, a few of the ladies there immediately fainted tragically. The only ones who were strong enough to withstand the mental blow were Founder Yang and Yang Qingxuan. Thinking that Yang Wu and the rest have already died at the opponent’s hands, Founder Yang and the rest suddenly felt as if their hearts had torn into pieces.

Tenaciously staring at the ugly smirks and sneers of the Bai Family members, the members of the Yang Family had all breathed loudly in rage, including Yang Qingxuan who usually had an excellent temper. His eyes were also bloodshot at that moment! The veins on his necks were popping out. If not for Founder Yang who still had some rationality left and blocked him, he would have long ago

charged forward and just stake it all!

One must know that what he had lost was a son and a daughter! This was all of the hard work that Yang Qingxuan sacrificed for his whole life.

“Bai Family, all of you will die a horrible death!”

Yang Qingxuan at this moment was akin to a wild beast!

As for Yang Yuntian who had already lost a son, Yang Lingqing’s performance recently was not bad, and it was also his flesh and blood. Thinking that the kindhearted girl would be gone just like this, Yang Yuntian too had become a ferocious beast as well!

“Bai Sheng, Bai Zhanxiong, Bai Zhanfeng, and you.....All of you are all savage creatures!”

As for Yang Xueqing, she was still in a state of disbelief!

She did not dare to believe everything that had transpired was real. That Bai Zhanxiong had never loved her. The marriage that she had been longing for was actually just a plot to exterminate her family.

Yang Xueqing had become the sinner of Yang Family because of her foolishness!

From such a jubilant occasion to an extremely sorrowful situation, the change in their feelings was extremely huge that the members of Yang Family had found

it difficult for them to breathe!

At this very moment Yang Xueqing thought of death, for only with death, could she escape this place. She would not need to blame herself and that way, be completely free from this suffering!

This was the only route for her today and the only path that she must take!

After being poisoned with Nightmare Flower, Yang Xueqing naturally knew that using her Qi would lead to the rupture of her dantian but right now, this was in accordance to her wishes!

Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian had lost both of their sons and daughters. The Founder Yang had only focused only restraining them and had left Yang Xueqing unattended. The Bai Family watched them as if watching a monkey show so they did not notice Yang Xueqing. Her face revealed an expression of salvation at that moment.

By this time, she had thought of many things regarding her whole life. Her dreams when she was a young lady, the dazzling aura of Long Qinglan when he had first appeared. She too had once received bliss but it came quickly and left thoroughly so she had hated Long Qinglan, including the flesh and blood that was from Long Qinglan.

She herself was not sure, why she had loathed him so much. She had only felt that Long Chen was too similar to Long Qinglan. His body, no matter if it was the looks, mannerisms, gaze, persistence, thoughts and even his soul, they were completely identical to that of Long Qinglan!

Although he was her own son, there was nothing on Long Chen's body that was similar to her, Yang Xueqing. The hatred she had harboured for Long Qinglan who had ruined her life was extended onto Long Chen as well.

Especially when Long Chen's strength had recently been rising astonishingly and the way he displayed his prowess was the same as Long Qinglan back in his days!

Long Chen's pride had pricked her self-esteem.

But now, she knew that she was the one who had been delusioned. It was actually all a farce. When she knew that she had actually brought harm upon the whole of Yang Family, before her imminent death, she suddenly thought of this son and everything of him.

This son's pride was too headstrong. When Yang Xueqing did not care about him and Long Qinglan did the same, he had never once sought even a sign of their care and concern.

Although he was born in the Yang Family and didn't have to worry about food and clothes, he had lived all by himself since he was young as if he was just a stray dog in the Yang Family's residence.

No one had cared about him, no one given him any pointers and there were constant appearances of wounds inflicted on his body.

The first time when she told him that she was going to wed Bai Zhanxiong, his prideful lonely back figure, the unbending gaze in his eyes as he beat Yang Lingyue on the stage, those images had all played in her eyes in sequences.

Until it reached the point that she broke down and cried.

Only at this point when all her dreams shattered, did she realised how much she had let down this headstrong child of hers.

But now, it was too late, because Long Chen had already died at the hands of the Bai Family's younger generation.

“Child, don't be afraid.....I will immediately accompany you now and who knows, maybe in hell, the three of us could still create a beautiful family together.....”

“The regrets towards you in this lifetime, if there is a chance, I will definitely repay it back to you!”

“But right now.....”

She gradually lifted her head, her frosty look fell upon Bai Zhanxiong who was seemingly looking smug and muttered: “I don't want to die and not have any face when I see you, so I must at least kill this devil.....”

The crowd had all clamoured because right now everyone could see that Yang Xueqing had actually charged towards Bai Zhanxiong and looking at the hand gestures, she actually planned to use [Seal of the High Profound Dragon]!

At the same time, the large wooden doors that had definitely been closed suddenly exploded out, smashed into smithereens and flew into the hall. A few

guards were sent flying into the hall too, wailing in agony!

Buried Together

Yang Xueqing's suicidal attack had also shocked the Bai Family members and Bai Zhanxiong, because of his proximity, had not put up his guard at all as he never thought that Yang Xueqing would actually use such a suicidal attack!

As for the Yang Family members, they were even more startled!

Although they knew that today the whole lot of them were going to perish here, looking on helplessly at the death of their own family members, they still felt extremely terrible inside. Especially Founder Yang and the rest, their faces were even more stricken pale!

"Xueqing! Come back!"

Although there was the stern voice from Founder Yang, Yang Xueqing had already made up her mind, so how could halt in her footsteps?

In her eyes, the whole world only consisted of her rising Qi and the smug face of Bai Zhanxiong in front of her!

At this point, the big red and wooden door had been smashed into smithereens and a few guards followed it and crashed into the hall. Under the astonishment of everyone, a few youngsters rapidly charged into the main hall and the leader of the group had given a kick to the guards that were standing in front of them, crashing them into the coiling dragon-patterned pillar in the main hall!

When the faces of these youngsters were recognised, all of the people were astonished!

Bai Family members were even more in a state of disbelief and even the sly and crafty old Bai Family's Master, after seeing such a scene, widened his eyes and inhaled a deep breath, his face filled with shock!

As for the Yang Family members, they had all felt as if they had stepped into a dream, especially Yang Qingxuan and the rest. They originally thought their son and daughter deceased but not one of them had actually died and they were alive and kicking. This revelation had caused them all to be unable to regulate their breathing.

This sudden feeling of having come back from Death's door had caused all of their face to stiffen!

As everyone stared on in shock, Long Chen brought the other three Yang Family members and nonchalantly walked into this main hall!

Yang Wu was holding onto Bai Shidong, whose expression was filled with fear, while Yang Lingqing and Yang Lingyue had Bai Zhixing's life at their disposal. As for Long Chen, he held onto the collar of Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen with one hand each while dragging them into the main hall!

Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen had a substantial amount of blood dripping from them and the loss of blood had already drained their faces of all colour. The ground of the main hall had two huge brush paths of blood which was done by Long Chen as he was dragging them!

As the Bai Family members looked on, this situation was not only beyond their expectations, it was also a ghastly sight to behold!

Especially for Bai Zhanxiong and the few who were fathers of these children. Seeing that their sons were actually on the brink of death and only with a small sliver of life left in them, almost returning to the West, their hearts had all constricted tightly!

[TL Note: (归西) “Returning to the West”: Chinese idiom signifying dying and going to Paradise]

Bai Zhanxiong looked at Long Chen with a disbelieving expression but it gradually turned into a fearsome and murderous glare!

When Long Chen walked in, Yang Xueqing looked at him first and made contact with his darkened expression. Only then did she stop her attack, looking on blankly at Long Chen, which enabled Founder Yang to drag her back.

At this moment, Yang Xueqing still felt as if she was dreaming.

In her eyes, everyone around her had vanished and there was only this young man with endless pride and arrogant, standing in front of her. In his hands, he held onto the spoils of war as he proudly walked through this main hall belonging to the strongest family in Poplar Town!

At this moment, endless remorse and regrets had filled Yang Xueqing eyes!

Long Chen had seen her previous attacked towards Bai Zhanxiong.

Before arriving, the most unbelievable thing that Long Chen had heard was that Yang Xueqing had betrayed the Yang Family and Long Chen could not accept that at all but, looking on right now, it was clear that this was all a lie that Bai Shichen told Yang Lingqing in order to get her in his hands.

Long Chen's tightly bound heartstrings had only then relaxed a little.

However, seeing the Yang Family members' faces and the current situation, Long Chen already knew that they had been poisoned.

Before arriving, Long Chen interrogated Bai Shidong about the various kinds and types of poison and also knew that the antidote for the Nightmare Flower was in the hands of the Bai Family!

Bai Shidong and Bai Zhixing were still conscious at this point and, seeing that they had actually returned back to their family, they cried out anxiously: "Father, Grandfather, save me! Save me!"

Yang Wu and the rest were extremely nervous right now, especially for Yang Lingqing and these two girls but, seeing that in front of them there still stood an unwavering figure resolutely protecting them, only then did they felt relieved!

At this point all of the people could see that in the Yang Family's younger generation the leader was no longer Yang Wu but Long Chen, who had recently risen to fame!

Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji were both cultivators of the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Moreover, Bai Shichen had even been knowned as the

number one genius of Poplar Town these past 20 years but right now these two, the pride of the Bai Family, were actually held in Long Chen's hands like beaten dogs! Can this possibly mean that these two fellows had been beaten by Long Chen?!

This was an extremely preposterous though, so basically no one could have believed it but, at this point, the Bai Family members had been forced to accept this result. During the demonic beast hunting competition, the Bai Family younger generation had been completely defeated.

A huge wave of aura came pressuring towards Long Chen as Bai Family's Master rose from his seat and stared frostily at Long Chen at the forefront, and coldly said: "It seems that you, brat, still have some tricks. You were actually able to reverse the situation and harm my Bai Family members instead during this demonic beast hunting competition! Your nature and schemes are not bad! But, with only using that point, you wish to stand in front of us like this today? You are seeking death!"

Seeing that the most extraordinary young members of his Bai Family had been injured to this extent, the heart of the Bai Family's Master twitched violently.

Bai Shiji spat out blackened blood which obviously meant that he had already suffered severe internal injuries and. Even if he could be saved, he would still need at least a year of recuperation. After that period of time, his cultivation would likely have regressed. Bai Shichen's face was the color of a pig's liver and at this point he was still covering his nether region that was spasmodically jerking. Those who could analyse better immediately knew that Bai Shichen most likely had met the same fate as Bai Shixun.

For the Bai Family, being unable to have offsprings was such a horrifying and blood boiling phrase to them.

It was enough to endure the first humiliation until today, when they would finally be able exact their revenge, but now Long Chen had done it a second time!

Seeing the pathetic state of the Bai Family's younger generation, the Bai Family members were seething with fury!

At this moment, a middle aged man from the Bai Family who was the closest to Long Chen suddenly charged at Long Chen. Although he was unclear of his identity, he could assume that it was probably one of Bai Zhanxiong's younger brothers. Seeing that the man charging directly at him and used the [Dark Heavenly Finger] attack, Long Chen smirked!

That sneak attack from the Bai Family had currently caused all of the Yang Family members to exclaim in shock. Founder Yang and the rest knew the extent of Long Chen's abilities so they disregarded their lives and fervently tried to save him at that moment!

For Yang Xueqing especially, whose emotions had been tossed from the highest point down to the lowest by first seeing that her admired Bai Zhanxiong had turned into a devil and then the outstanding youths Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji being turned into mongrels. Long Chen's position in her heart had risen up quickly!

Yang Yuntian, who was in the crowd, finally moved his gaze away from his unharmed daughter, who was actually so brave today, and felt extremely proud for that. However, when he looked at Long Chen, his expression suddenly changed.

Long Chen harming his son and tonight's matter were of two different things. The agony of the death of his own flesh and blood to the middle aged Yang Yuntian was like a pain that penetrated through his heart!

Seeing that the other family members had taken the initiative and attacked while grasping the timing so well, the Bai Family members all had smiles on their faces.

They were all aware of Long Chen's ability, and reasoned that he must have employed some form of underhanded mean, in order to have these Bai Family youths wind up in such a state.

It had not even crossed their minds that their measures today were the real ones that were underhanded!

Long Chen and the rest were worried that they would have been blocked by the Bai Family members before they could step into the main hall, so they sneakily flipped over the wall. The guests who were still attending the wedding banquet were completely oblivious that from a place not far away from the main hall, a spectacular scene was actually unfolding!

"Be careful!"

Seeing that they could not make it in time, the masses of the Yang Family could only warn and preempt the calm and steadied Long Chen, that, this strike of [Dark Heavenly Finger] was almost as strong as Bai Shiji's. However.....

Long Chen only smirked and lifted both Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji up with ease, placing them in front of him. At the same time, he used one hand and circulated

a faint red aura, which had rapidly swirled and grew stronger in his palm!

Seeing that both Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen were actually in front of him the Bai Family member who had used the [Dark Heavenly Finger] was suddenly flustered and hurriedly stopped the circulation of the technique. At this moment the Bai Family members had all fervently warned: “Zhanyun! Be careful!”

Bai Zhanyun was dazed as Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji had been placed on the ground and Long Chen’s smiling face emerged. Bai Zhanyun suddenly felt that how sinister that laughter was and in the next moment, a faint red image of a Dragon God had crashed into his chest! Bai Zhanyun violently coughed out a mouthful of blood and his face became pale stricken in an instant!

He immediately staggered more than a dozen metres back and crashed into a wall with a loud bang and as he fell, his body was already devoid of life!

Bai Zhanyun, dead!

“[Seal of the Ashened Dragon]?!”

These words had suddenly emerged in everyone’s heart, as everyone knew that when Long Chen obtained [Seal of the Dragons]. He was able use the ability single handedly, what kind of amazing control does he has to do that?

Amongst the Yang Family right now there were only three people who could use [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] with a single hand!

The one who was most stupefied was Yang Xueqing. As if in a daze, she looked at that young man filled with endless spirit and saw the resolution that was in his

eyes as if he could withstand the pressure of facing all of the experts in the Bai Family. Compared to Long Qinglan, who also had boundless potential in the past, how similar was that?

“Could it be that you both, father and child, have been destined to be the bane of my life?”

Thinking of Long Qinglan and then seeing that Long Chen had actually single-handedly used the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] to completely kill a seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator from the Bai Family, this was not such a surprising thing anymore.

To her, no matter if it was Long Chen or Long Qinglan, when they had displayed their extraordinary talent, there was basically no one who could cover their brilliance amongst their peers,.

Like the past where Bai Zhanxiong had been utterly defeated under Long Qinglan’s hands.

Yang Family members were shocked by [Seal of the Ashened Dragon], and Bai Family members looking at Bai Zhanyun who had died so suddenly, their hearts faltered, at the same time fury rose within them!

Especially Bai Family’s Master, Bai Zhanyun was the youngest son he doted the most upon, and he was almost entering the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, but who would have thought he would just die like this!

The tension in the atmosphere had suddenly increased, and basically the Bai Family members of eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and above, had all

explosively drawn their strongest aura, and a wave of pressure which seemed to blanket the sky had come pressing towards Long Chen, but he did not lose his bearings, only gripping the throat of Bai Shiji.

“If you wish to see this young genius of Bai Family die, Bai Zhanxiong, if you wish to see your son die on my hands, then why don’t you try and attack! I guarantee you within a span of a breath; these four will all die without a single one left! Although you can exterminate my Yang Family, but these four youths would have to be buried together with us! Actually I am rather curious, without them, would you still be able to continue the bloodline of Bai Family?!”

Opposing Forces Like Water and Fire

Saying which, Long Chen pressed his fingers tightly onto the throat of Bai Shiji. He even used all of his strength doing so. Bai Shiji, who originally had been severely injured, could not breathe smoothly anymore at this point and his eyes widened. Groggily looking at Long Chen, he suddenly shuddered and another mouthful of blackened blood was expelled. With a frightened expression clearly appearing on his face, his whole body had constantly quivered in terror too.

Seeing Bai Shiji act like this, and along with the frosty look on Long Chen, the Bai Family were frightened and immediately withdrawn.

Seeing that his own son was actually in such a miserable state, Bai Zhanxiong's eyes had almost spewed flames. He gave Long Chen a death stare and demanded: "You had better stop! If Shiji were to die, your Yang Family will all die a horrible death! You too will die miserably, because I will torture you to death!"

Despite this fiery gaze from Bai Zhanxiong, Long Chen was completely fearless of him and he did not loosen his grip on Bai Shiji at all.

"No matter what happens, it will only lead to death. Why would I be afraid of you then? In the worst case scenario, I just have to kill myself. What will you be able to do to me then? However, this injury on your son, Bai Shiji, doesn't seem like it could be dragged on any further. If left unattended, perhaps in less than half an hour time, he will already be dead....."

Long Chen said all of this nonchalantly, but seeing the miserable state that Bai Shiji was in, Bai Family members were all extremely anxious. The two great

future hopes of the family had were both in the hands of Long Chen. Even if it was the Bai Family's Master, he refrained from shooting at the rat for fear of breaking the vase.

[TL Note: To not act against an evildoer to prevent harm from befalling the innocent, similar to not shooting a criminal because of a hostage.

What Long Chen said was extremely right, if these four were to die, even if they could exterminate the Yang Family, Bai Family would not have a next generation anymore. The strongest apart from the four of them, was a youth in the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. He would be completely unable to continue the legacy of the Bai family and replace Bai Zhanxiong and the rest.

At this point, seeing that the Bai Family members were finally frightened by him, Long Chen smirked as he dragged Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen towards Founder Yang.

Bai Zhanxiong was blocking the way between them, Long Chen raised his head and coldly glared at him saying: "Move!"

Bai Zhanxiong naturally would not move, and seeing Long Chen holding both Bai Shiji and Bai Shichen as hostages, he too wanted to follow suit and capture the Yang Family members. However, as he turned around, the Yang Family members had already knew very well what he was up to!

Although they had been poisoned with the Nightmare Flower and if they were to greatly circulate their Qi, the Yang Family members will surely die. However, they could at least achieve a one-time attack. At this moment, Founder Yang suddenly laughed loudly and gave Long Chen an admiring look as he said: "Boy, nicely done! However we won't be your burden. If the Bai Family would dare to

touch us, I will let them taste the might of the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] from a ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator! I want to see how many of these Bai Family members could withstand such a blow!”

Founder Yang had finally awoken from his delusions about the brotherhood and he viciously gave Bai Family’s Master a death glare and hissed: “Bai Sheng, I, Yang Cangqiong, might be truly useless. As I have truly understood the word ‘vicious’ only today with your help. Let me tell you that if you wish to eradicate my Yang Family without paying a price, that will be impossible!”

Bai Zhanxiong could no longer kidnap the Yang Family members and Bai Shiji and the rest was still in Long Chen’s hands. As such, he did not know whether to move forward or retreat, being stuck in an awkward dilemma.

Seeing Long Chen’s hands had already left a mark on Bai Shiji’s throat, while Bai Shiji had already started to foam, he sent murderous stare towards Long Chen and then let him pass.

Only then did Long Chen stand in front of the Yang Family who had gathered together. Currently, the Bai Family members had stood together as well, apart from the Bai Family’s Master standing at the front, the other experts of the Bai Family and the eldest son Bai Zhanlong also gave Long Chen death stares.

This Bai Shichen was Bai Zhanlong’s son and had always been his pride, but seeing his own son in such a wretched state, and not knowing if there was any cure for him, his murderous intent towards Long Chen had not been one bit inferior to Bai Zhanxiong’s!

Both families confronted the other, with Long Chen holding the talented youth duo of the Bai Family standing at the forefront. The Yang Family members

watched on, thinking that the most insignificant member of the family had gone on and become one of the pillars of support for them. For that instant, they felt like they had stepped into a dream.

Yang Xueqing too was extremely moved, in fact she did not know what to say as she stared at Long Chen's back blankly. Although she had very much wanted to step forward and apologise and beg for his forgiveness but the current situation did not allow for this.

However, at this point, Long Chen turned and glanced at her.

The truth was that Long Chen harboured only hatred for Yang Xueqing. Everything that he had done was only to prove himself to her. At this point Bai Shiji had already been defeated by him and Bai Zhanxiong too had been forced back miserably. Everything Long Chen did was only to show it to this woman!

When he turned around and gazed at her, he was planning to flaunt to her and let Yang Xueqing realize who was the real trash. Seeing Yang Xueqing eyes brimming with tears, Long Chen was stumped. Withdrawing his smug expression, he rigidly turned his head away.

He suddenly felt that, at this moment, that woman was so frail. Although Long Chen had always steeled his heart, at this instant, he unexpectedly felt sorry for her.

He felt that he would be able to exert a boundless fighting spirit with the woman behind him looking on. Thus, he turned his sharp and icy gaze once again towards the Bai Family's members.

At this moment, Yang Yuntian who was beside Yang Xueqing, had also stared blankly at Long Chen. He was conflicted between his son's death and the fact that Long Chen had just saved the Yang Family members. These conflicting emotions constantly fought within his heart.

Founder Yang stood by Long Chen's side and looked at the Bai Family's Master and said: "Bai Sheng, you are also an intelligent man. Your Bai Family could have completely wiped out my Yang Family effortlessly today. It's just too bad that the younger generation from your Bai Family were too disappointing. With this result now, it is impossible for you to annihilate my Yang Family. Unless you want to forsake the future of the Bai Family, and watch on as these youngsters die!"

If they were to fight to the death, even if the Yang Family were to perish completely, the Bai Family would also not be left with much people.

Although the Bai Family members were all unwilling, the conclusion had already been fixed. No matter how unwilling they were, they still had to give in as they were unable to change this outcome.

Long Chen coldly said: "If you still have brains, you should bring out the antidote! Our Yang Family can afford to wait, but it seems that Bai Shiji isn't able to wait any longer. From what I see, he shouldn't be able to hold on for more than a minute....."

Bai Shiji was in a precarious situation. If they didn't start treating him immediately, they wouldn't be able to save his life.

Although Bai Zhanxiong was unwilling, especially because of Long Chen's performance, it made him to recall his indignation back in the past. However, he too could tell that his son's life was at stake right now. Hence, he became

flustered and said: “Father, we had failed today.....”

Bai Family’s Master coldly looked at Founder Yang. His heart was extremely unsatisfied with this outcome.

After crafting such a long and meticulous plan, only to find that it was totally ruined by a nobody! How could he accept this?!

Bai Zhanxiong also knew that today’s mishap was due to Long Chen. He regretted as he thought, “When I had sent some people to assassinate him, I found his existence was troublesome as I thought he could only affect Yang Xueqing’s feelings for me. But I didn’t know that in the end, my whole plan would be ruined by him!”

He whispered to the Bai Family’s Master: “Father after this, second Uncle will be free. After inviting some of his Crimson Blood Sacred Sect’s friends to help out, the Yang Family would still be annihilated! We just have to bear for ten days after today’s defeat and win over them. However if we continue, we won’t be able to gain Shiji’s life back!”

What was whispered between Bai Zhanxiong and the Bai Family’s master was repeated to Long Chen by Lingxi.

Long Chen frowned as he knew what they meant from their words. He understood that even after the Yang Family escaped this hurdle, their days won’t be peaceful in the future. Also, he didn’t know how strong the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect that Bai Zhanxiong had mentioned was.

At this point, the Bai Family’s Master swayed.

He also understood that he had completely lost today so he casually waved his hand before he said dejectedly at the Founder Yang: “I can give you the antidote but you better not play any tricks. If any of my grandsons have any problems, the outcome will be a fight to the death!”

The Yang Family was supposed to be the victim today, but they weren’t hurt at all. They got what they wanted to achieve and left safely from the place. After today’s fight, they naturally would head back and once they recovered, the fight would begin again.

Founder Yang was unwilling for any other misfortunes so he said, “I will promise that they will be fine after you hand over the antidote.”

The Bai Family’s Master took out a bottle from his sleeve. It was the antidote to the Nightmare Flower. It was made from boiling the stem of the Nightmare Flower.

The Bai Family wasn’t poisoned today as they had previously taken the antidote already.

The Nightmare Flower was considered to be a Spirit Medicine. As long as the stem and flower petal was consumed together, it would definitely aid in an increase in their power.

“How about this? You give the antidote to us and we’ll release two of them. After we have recovered, we will release the other two.” Founder Yang said blandly.

The Bai Family's Master snorted in disdain at how cautious Founder Yang was. He directly tossed the antidote to the hand of Founder Yang before coldly saying, "Yang Cangqiong, after so many years, you are still such a gutless person. I have lost today but I don't have any more thoughts to toy with you. However, after today you must be careful when you walk out of the Bai Family's door, because we will be like water and flames from now on!"

Founder Yang allowed Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue to release Bai Shidong and Bai Zhixing. These two brats immediately ran towards their father as they wept endlessly.

Founder Yang only cared to open the medicine bottle. After he sniffed the contents inside, he confirmed it was really the scent from the stem portion of the Nightmare Flower.

"Father, let me try it first!" Yang Xueqing suddenly exclaimed.

"This Bai Family has a lot of schemes. We shouldn't believe in them so easily. You are the strongest person on our side, so if you were to fall for their scheme, we will be finished!"

Founder Yong smiled and said, "It doesn't matter. Father has let you down today and humiliated you."

After he said that, he directly consumed a dose of the antidote and gave the bottle to Yang Qingxuan. He sat down and circulated his Qi. His body's vigorous power burst forth again in less than half a minute's time, and a pair of eagle's eyes abruptly opened. When Long Chen saw them, his heart had slightly palpitated.

“The antidote really works! Use it quickly!”

The rest of the Yang Family quickly took the antidote. After half a minute, they too had recovered their strength. The Yang Family’s overall strength was slowly returning back to the same level as their opponents.

Founder Yang indicated to Long Chen. “Just let them have these kids back! There are still opportunities to capture them again. I knew that you were stronger than them from the instant you stepped into the room.”

Long Chen had previously wanted to kill Bai Shiji. More importantly, he had wanted to prove himself to Yang Xueqing. However, after such a big incident, he no longer felt the need to prove anything.

As for Bai Shiji, he was definitely not his match. Now he wasn’t a match, and never will he be, so Long Chen was not interested in his life or death at all.

He casually tossed the bodies and they flew towards the Bai Family.

The Bai family immediately caught them. After looking at the current state of the two young talents of the Bai Family, they grieved. The Bai Family looked at Long Chen as though they were staring at a dead person already.

Bai Zhanxiong handed over his son that was beaten to death to the person behind him. He gazed at Long Chen; his eyes filled with killing intent and said, “You....You’ll definitely not live beyond ten days. You should enjoy as much of your last days while you can.”

“I can also certainly assure you that your grandson won’t live beyond today.”

Long Chen nonchalantly replied.

After today's battle, this incident should be counted as completely over.

The Bai Family had initially wanted to annihilate the Yang Family but Long Chen's appearance had turned the tables around. Not only did he injure the two hopes of the Bai Family, he even allowed the Yang Family to come out completely unharmed. Everyone present at that moment looked at Long Chen with completely different views.

There was respect, appreciation and even fear.

Founder Yang was schemed against by someone he had treated as a brother, almost bringing down his whole family. He never spoke another word to Bai Family's Master. His face darkened as he brought the Yang Family away from the Bai Family.

Yang Xueqing, who was amongst them, was still wearing the red wedding costume.

After leaving the main hall, Long Chen walked at the side while Yang Xueqing and Yang Yuntian walked in front. Long Chen had placed his attention completely on Yang Xueqing and overlooked Yang Yuntian, who was suffering in pain at that moment.

As he thought about how Long Chen had salvaged the whole situation of the Yang Family, he also thought deeply about his son.

He had witnessed every moment of joy, anger, sadness and happiness that his son had experienced as he grew. Yang Yuntian was filled with the memories of his son, whose death had been caused by Long Chen.....

“Zhan Er, Zhan Er, when will I be able to avenge you? He could even kill a person who is on the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. I had promised Father not to touch him before the demonic beast hunting competition, but the competition is over already.....”

“After tonight, I would no longer be his opponent and could never be able to kill him, much less seek revenge for you!”

“Zhan Er, what do you think I should do? You hate him, right? I hate him as well. But today he was actually the saviour of our Yang Family.....”

They were only twenty odd steps away from the big door of the main hall that Long Chen had smashed and during that period, Yang Yuntian was filled with inner conflicts that nobody could see.

Everyone was immersed in the celebration of surviving the ordeal, including Long Chen. He had completely forgotten that Yang Yuntian was someone who had a grudge against him.

At this moment, Yang Yuntian thought of every scene involving his son and the hatred in his heart gradually grew. Thinking that he would no longer have the chance to deal with Long Chen after tonight, Yang Yuntian’s face momentarily turned pale. He clenched his teeth and his eyes revealed the madness he felt.

When He was standing only two steps in front of Long Chen, Yang Yuntian unexpectedly turned around and threw a [Falling Star Fist] towards Long Chen. Long Chen could only stretch out his arms to block the close-ranged attack.

But even if it was like this, that unexpected punch still made the blood in his body churned, immediately sending him flying away from the protection of the Yang Family and directly towards the Bai Family!

This unexpected turn of events shocked everyone on the scene and made everyone from the Bai Family's side laugh wildly to their hearts' content. The Yang Family members all furiously stared at Yang Yuntian who had made that move.

"Second Brother! You're insane!"

Yang Xueqing was instantly startled. However, nobody cared to berate Yang Yuntian, as Founder Yang, Yang Qingxuan, and Yang Xueqing had rapidly moved forward to chase after Long Chen.

Although his arm blocked Yang Yuntian's attack, Long Chen still suffered some injuries and due to that, he could not control his body from flying backwards.

In midair, he thought of his landing point. There most likely would be a bunch of Bai Family members waiting for him there!

A huge fish like Long Chen was sent flying to the Bai Family who all hated Long Chen to the core, especially Bai Zhanxiong and Bai Zhanlong. They could not wait to swallow him whole. At this moment, having been given the chance to kill Long Chen so easily, how could they ever let go of this chance?!

Long Chen was in shock as the top three experts from the Yang Family chased after him. However, they were obviously still a tad slower. Long Chen suddenly turned around and saw that Bai Zhanxiong, who was the closest to him, had an excited yet sinister smile on his face.

On his fingers, a black energy was swirling and looking at the aura, it was at least ten times greater than that of Bai Shiji who used the [Dark Heavenly Finger] previously!

Long Chen was appalled. Yang Xueqing and the rest anxiously warned him from behind. Long Chen, who had just been hit into midair by the [Falling Star Fist], immediately made some hand movements to form the [Seal of the Dragons]!

The most shocking moment that startled everyone was that this time, Long Chen was doing a more abnormal move than the previous [Falling Star Fist] that Long Chen had exhibited previously. He was actually using both hands to individually form the seals of [Seal of the Ashened Dragon]s!

Yang Xueqing, who saw that Bai Zhanxiong was using [Dark Heavenly Finger], paled. She was feeling completely hopeless when an immense aura from the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] surged out from Long Chen's hands. The immense aura incessantly shocked those three members of the Yang Family.

"Double hand seals? How is this possible? Even if it's me, I would not be able to so accurately control this [Seal of the Ashened Dragon]!"

Shock filled Founder Yang's heart, as this was just too unbelievable.

In the past, he had obtained this [Seal of the Dragons] in a mysterious place and had used this [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] for many years. But he never thought that the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] could actually be used in such a manner.

And Long Chen knew that all of this was due to the wonders of the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant. Because of it, Long Chen could grasp the technique of [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] so quickly. He even was able to innovate new techniques and achieve a perfect mastery of the spell!

Even when he was in midair, his speed was extremely fast. When Bai Zhanxiong had struck out using the [Transformed Devil First Finger], a flash of coldness flashed across Long Chen's eyes. He pushed out his hands and a boundless power surged forth. A faint red aura suddenly turned into an image of the Dragon God but this time it was two that were overlapping each other!

And Bai Zhanxiong, this expert of the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, used the [Transformed Devil First Finger] and clashed with him. A large force field was instantly created.

Due to Long Chen being in midair, he was immediately repelled and sent flying and he crashed into a wall at the side. The large wall had unexpectedly collapsed from his collision, leaving a cloud of dust in the air.

Bai Zhanxiong had already charged forward at that moment and very soon he had caught up to Long Chen!

At this point, Long Chen did not sustain many injuries. However, Bai Zhanxiong had already come chasing after him and he was much stronger than Long Chen. But Long Chen was not one to admit defeat easily!

As for the other side, the three experts from the Yang Family had arrived. Founder Yang held Yang Qingxuan back and immediately gave chase, while Yang Xueqing who was worried for Long Chen, ran after them at an even greater speed than Founder Yang!

Founder Yang was unable to stop her so he could only follow and charge out! From the other side, the Bai Family's Master had brought Bai Zhanxiong from the collapsed wall to the main hall. They were immediately stopped and faced with Founder Yang and Yang Xueqing. It was obvious that this was going to be a one on one battle.

Yang Qingxuan stayed behind and protected the other family members but the Bai Family's side still had Bai Zhanlong who was of the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

The Yang Family lacked an eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, so at that moment, Long Chen directly faced off with Bai Zhanxiong.

Bringing the others along, Yang Qingxuan coldly looked at Bai Zhanlong and headed towards the outer area of the main hall. As for Bai Zhanlong, he too brought the experts in the Bai Family, fervently tailing and impeding Yang Qingxuan's movements. As long as Yang Qingxuan did not interfere with the battle between Long Chen and Bai Zhanxiong, that would be enough!

The Bai Family's goal this time around was on Long Chen only.

Long Chen's performance today was too overpoweringly domineering. Long Chen's power had increased at such a fast rate-And the Bai Family clearly knew how terrifying it is to be so gifted. If Long Chen doesn't die now, after two to

three years, the people that would face death would be the members from the Bai Family.

So to them, Long Chen's threat had been greater and towards this genius of an enemy, one must definitely eradicate his existence completely. Only then, they could have peaceful days!

The few members from the Bai Family were extremely well coordinated. The Bai Family's Master blocked Founder Yang; Bai Zhanfeng blocked Yang Xueqing and Bai Zhanlong restricted Yang Qingxuan. This was all to gain time for Bai Zhanxiong to kill Long Chen.

The Yang Family and the Bai Family had shifted the fight outside at this time. For someone like Yang Lingqing, it was impossible for her to be involved so she could only wait impatiently.

Having caused such a huge scene on the wedding night, the conflicting families had caused all the guests who were not overly drunk to come dashing towards this area. Seeing such a scene, they all had disbelief written across their faces, and they all fervently discussed the situation.

"This... What is this situation? Didn't the Bai and Yang Family become a single family? Why are they like this? It looks as though they were archenemies!"

"The Bai Family's Master is facing Founder Yang; that is... Yang Xueqing and Bai Zhanfeng; that's Bai Zhanxiong, who is his opponent?"

"Isn't that the Yang Sanniang's son who is getting rather famous in the Yang Family? He actually dared to fight against Bai Zhanxiong? How is this possible?"

[TL note: Yang Sanniang, third lady – Yang Xueqing.]

“Heavens! What on earth is going on?”

“Look carefully! The Bai Family’s Master and Bai Zhanfeng look like they are restricting each of their opponents. It seems that the actual person they want to kill is Yang Sanniang’s son, but why do they want to kill him? I have heard that Bai Zhanxiong’s son had been castrated by him. Is that true?”

“Just because of this matter, the two families have to battle?”

“Under this situation, this fellow will definitely die without a doubt.”

And at the Yang Family’s side, the members all anxiously looked on at the situation and then they looked furiously at Yang Yuntian. The current situation right now had all been caused by Yang Yuntian, a single person.

Yang Yuntian’s daughter, Yang Lingqing, currently was using an unbelievable look at her own father and said: “Father, I know that he caused Elder Brother Yang Zhan’s death, but he did not do it intentionally. Today, he saved the whole of Yang Family. How could you do this?”

When facing his daughter’s question and also the furious gazes from the family, Yang Yuntian, who was simply ashamed and was unable to show his face, just turned to look away as he didn’t dare return their gazes. Everyone shouted out in shock at that moment as Yang Yuntian had actually looked away.

“[Seal of the High Profound Dragon]?!”

“How is that possible? That brat should only be at the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. How was he able to use the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon]?!”

“What?!”

Even though they were anxious about the battles between the Bai Family Master and Bai Zhanfeng against Founder Yang and Yang Xueqing, they were astonished as they looked at Long Chen at that moment.

Having used the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] of the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm when he was only in the sixth level, this Long Chen was a little too overpowering!

Seeing this [Seal of the High Profound Dragon], the Bai Family members knew that tonight, if they did not kill this devil Long Chen, their Bai Family would be exterminated by him in the future.

“Such an overpowering little devil like him, if I was from the Bai Family, I too would have pledged to eradicate his existence!”

“However, didn’t the Bai and the Yang Families always got along? Could this be because of the mayoral position?”

“It is most likely to be that case.”

When Long Chen unexpectedly used the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon],

madness clouded Bai Zhanxiong's eyes.

The talent displayed by this youth in front of them had already let him reach a stage where his eyes were bloodshot and fearful, as if he was looking at Long Qinglan when he was still alive. Bai Zhanxiong's heart right now was riddled with trauma and at the same time, it had also greatly increased his wild murderous intent!

“Brat! You will definitely die!”

“[Dark Heavenly Finger]! [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]!”

Fury That Burns The Heavens

“Yang Xueqing, your opponent is me!”

Bai Zhenfeng’s roar instantly made Yang Xueqing snap out of her shock. Even though she was currently facing Bai Zhanfeng, her thoughts were only on Long Chen.

The current Long Chen had given her too many surprises. As far as the schemes of the Bai Family, she wouldn’t let it happen. Her previously frozen heart for Long Chen was slowly thawing.

At this moment, the youngster had already taken up the most important position in her heart.

When Bai Zhanxiong unexpectedly used one of his strongest spells, [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], on Long Chen, Yang Xueqing’s expression momentarily changed.

Even she, Yang Xueqing, would not necessarily be able to withstand this move from Bai Zhanxiong, let alone Long Chen who was only in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!

Yang Xueqing was so anxious that she had reached the limit of her patience, but Bai Zhanfeng was like a housefly: No matter how she shoved him away, he would still be there constantly blocking by standing in front of her. Due to Yang Xueqing always focusing on Long Chen’s situation, there was a couple of times where she was nearly hit by Bai Zhanfeng’s moves.

The three experts from the Bai Family were at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm so their abilities were about the same. Bai Zhanfeng wasn't any weaker than Bai Zhanxiong. If Yang Xueqing were to face him without using her full strength, there was a possibility that she would be injured or even killed.

When Founder Yang saw that Bai Zhanxiong had actually used [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] shamelessly to deal with Long Chen, anxiety filled his eyes. At that moment, the Bai Family's Master who was blocking him said laughingly: "Yang Cangqiong, you're so unlucky. Initially, you unexpectedly succeeded! You had such a remarkable talent in your younger generation but you had fallen for my Family's evil scheme to send him into our hands. It is just his luck to die under the hands of Xiong Er, who is at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!"

"Cut your bullshit!"

Founder Yang raged as he fought against the Bai Family's Master but as they were almost at the same level of abilities, he had absolutely no way to save Long Chen.

On Yang Qingxuan's side, he was being similarly restricted by Bai Zhanlong.

Regardless of what was happening around him, Long Chen had already formed the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon]. As everyone saw the steady and powerful attack, they momentarily praised Long Chen because at his age and current level, he was able to complete such a technique. If it was anyone else, such a thing would be impossible.

The image of nine Dragon Gods had violently swirled into an immense aura and whistled as it crashed into Bai Zhanxiong's [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] which was many times stronger than Bai Shichen's. In that battle, the [Seal of the High

Profound Dragon] had broken through it, but right now it was the reverse!

Bai Zhanxiong's Qi was at least ten times stronger than Long Chen's. Even if it was just fighting techniques, one of the foundations of using them was Qi. Currently, Long Chen's Qi was too far away from reaching Bai Zhanxiong's. Thus, even if he used [Seal of the High Profound Dragon], he would eventually be defeated!

The surge of the power gradually diminished until it completely overpowered Long Chen's [Seal of the High Profound Dragon]. The excess power directly collided with Long Chen's body and he instantly felt like being struck by lightning. As if a mountain had pressed down on him, he vomited out a mouthful of blood and fell just like a kite with a broken string.

“Chen Er!”

Many cried out in surprise simultaneously. Founder Yang and Yang Xueqing's expressions had ashened as they fought with their opponents with all they have. It had momentarily caused a larger commotion than the battle between Long Chen and Bai Zhanxiong!

Yang Qingxuan, who initially wanted to help Long Chen, had already been blocked by Bai Zhanlong. They were another two eighth level Dragon Pulse Realm experts that began to fight against each other.

To these two superpowers of Poplar Town, the other factions could only look helplessly at each other. The strongest expert in their families was, at most, only of the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm so how could they participate in such a high leveled battle like this?

“Chen Er!”

This particular shout had made Long Chen regain a little of his consciousness. He could make out that it was Yang Xueqing’s voice. Since he was young up until this very moment, he had never heard Yang Xueqing speak to him in a voice that was filled with concern. She even called out to him so lovingly. Currently his bones felt as if they were falling apart and his internal organs were injured though not as severe as Bai Shiji’s, if he wanted to stand, it would be an arduous task.

However, after hearing those two words, Long Chen felt a boundless amount of power surged within his body. He groaned before he started to stand up from the ground!

No matter how difficult it was and no matter what the additional injuries he sustained in his attempts which made his whole body convulsed, deep down he still resolutely felt that with so many people watching on and this being the first time she had ever showered care and concern on him, he should pick himself up like a man!

In front of everyone’s astonished gazes, Long Chen finally picked himself up. With his legs still unsteady and his vision hazy, he could still make out the brokenhearted and worried expression on the face of this woman as she looked at him. Although she had almost succumbed to Bai Zhanfeng’s relentless barrage of attacks, her eyes were still fixed on him.

Seeing this scene, Long Chen suddenly felt extremely proud of his achievements. He realized that he had finally received the recognition of this woman through his hard work, finally reversing the negative perception of himself as well as for his father!

Previously, in Yang Xueqing's heart, she thought about how talented Bai Zhanxiong and his sons and just how useless Long Chen and Long Qinglan were. However, after seeing Yang Xueqing's agonized gaze, he knew that he had finally won.

Currently, in Yang Xueqing's heart, Bai Zhanxiong and his sons were the ones that were useless, while Long Chen was an exceptional talent that went against the heavens.

"Father, why is my mood currently so good? Is it because I have let out some resentment.....?"

Seeing this woman who was desperately trying to break free to rescue him, Long Chen suddenly found his eyes had moistened and it was at this point that Lingxi's anxious voice sounded: "Bastard, you are already injured. Do you still not want my help?"

Facing such a strong opponent like Bai Zhanxiong, Lingxi could save him but the cost of saving him would probably lead to her death.

Long Chen definitely wouldn't allow that to happen so he coldly said: "Lingxi, it is best for you not to meddle in other people's business. Don't make me hate you!"

That sentence from Long Chen was vicious and it had even hurt Lingxi's heart a little but, but in his heart, he meant well.

Lingxi originally wanted to help with kind intentions but after hearing Long

Chen say those words, she felt wronged and wanted to cry. In her heart, she had already scolded that “idiot Long Chen” over a million times.

At this moment, Bai Zhanxiong had already stood in front of Long Chen and looked at Yang Xueqing who was desperately struggling before looking at Long Chen once again and coldly said: “Your mother and son’s relationship is really touching. However, I wonder if I were to let her watch on as you die by my hands, just what expressions she would have then?”

Seeing today’s situation, Long Chen had already guessed that he was reaching his end soon.

He could deal with Bai Shichen but Bai Zhanxiong was older than him by at least twenty years and it was impossible for Long Chen to increase his strength to meet Bai Zhanxiong’s.

Seeing Yang Xueqing’s desperate looks, Long Chen was already extremely satisfied.

At the Yang Family’s side, Yang Yuntian was already blaming himself while the rest of the Yang Family had worried and respectful gazes as they looked at Long Chen. Being able to arrive at such an exalted stage from being disdained as a spoiled brat had proved that he was a success as a human being.

What Long Chen currently regretted the most was regarding Long Qinglan. He had not solved any of the riddles regarding Long Qinglan and the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant.

Thinking about Lingxi, Long Chen could only hope that after his death, she

would be able to find someone to help her search for medicine with spirit healing properties.

Giving Bai Zhanxiong a frosty look, Long Chen did not have any fear of death at all. He was still unyielding and unbending as he said: “You being able to defeat me is nothing to flaunt about. Today, I have already won. Not only did I win against your useless son, I have also won against you. I know that you have previously lost under my father’s hand and today you are also the loser against me, so what is there to show off?”

Hearing about Long Qinglan, Bai Zhanxiong’s expression became sinister and coldly said: “You said that I lost to that trash? It looks like you still don’t know how that trash died.....”

Bai Zhanxiong’s words made Long Chen’s pupils shrink and, although he was in a groggy state, his eyes seemed to have turned into sharp blades as he sent a piercing gaze towards Bai Zhanxiong.

Bai Zhanxiong laughed out loud and whispered: “I had heard that some trash loved wine as much as their life so I simply had someone to put something in his wine and then I could marry his wife without any hiccups.”

Hearing Bai Zhanxiong’s words made Long Chen feel as if a thunderbolt had come from a clear sky!

Long Chen had never thought about it in this aspect because he believed that Long Qinglan was an extremely intelligent person. Before he died he never mentioned why he was suddenly at his deathbed and Long Chen had naturally also forgotten about it. He just felt that his father’s identity was a mystery. His death was also quite unusual!

Before Long Qinglan died, his complexion darkened and it was obvious that he had been poisoned. Only Long Chen was foolish enough to not notice that!

It was only now, with these series of events happening, that Long Chen realised that Long Qinglan's death was actually the doings of Bai Zhanxiong! It's no wonder that upon Long Qinglan's death, Bai Zhanxiong would appear before the Yang Family and prepared to plot this wedding!

Giving Bai Zhanxiong a death stare and seeing his smug face, a blood red color had wildy blanketed Long Chen's eyes. This blood red dye never withdrew and even the two pupils of Long Chen had, at this time, turned completely blood red too!

A chilly and bloody aura gradually surged out from Long Chen's body.

"Really? So, it was you that had made my father die earlier?"

This truth had caused all of the blood in Long Chen to surge. He felt that his organs were convulsing and those blood red dragon figures that vanished inside his body before had, because of his rage, emerged simultaneously. In an instant, Long Chen's whole body had turned into a nest for dragons!

Endless blood red dragons began traversing on his body!

Bai Zhanxiong had previously felt that there was something wrong about Long Chen but he simply thought that it was due to his rage. What he most enjoyed was seeing Long Chen loathing himself as he looked helplessly at him.

“Truthfully, he should he should have died earlier and when I finally let him die at that time I was already being very merciful. Initially, you were also supposed to die, but there was a little mishap. I thought that you were just a spoiled brat and it would be simple to just casually send someone after you. I never thought that you were so stubborn and would be able to survive. Regardless, after today, you will be able to unite with your trash father. This is obviously because I am such a kind person!”

Looking at him, Long Chen was speechless.

“Father, if you have told me earlier, I would have worked harder and not let that grandson live until today!”

“Even though you don’t care about his life or death, I care. Bai Zhanxiong.....”

The fury that could burn the heavens as if a huge wave was raging in his body and seeing Bai Zhanxiong’s wild laughter, the blood Qi in Long Chen’s body gradually grew so dense that it almost made him explode!

At that moment, the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant shook violently and the Inherited Blood Essence that was beneath had once again been absorbed by it!

Seeing that Bai Zhanxiong seemed to have said something in front of her son and that Long Chen's eyes had turned into a crimson blood red colour, Yang Xueqing's anxiety reached new heights.

Bai Zhanfeng was still restraining her shamelessly. Their strengths were equal so when Yang Xueqing had been distracted from worrying about the safety of Long Chen, it was even more impossible for her to breakthrough his impediment.

Suddenly, there were gasps of astonishments.

“Everyone, quickly look at what is happening to that boy's body!”

Momentarily, everyone concentrated their gaze on Long Chen's body. At that moment, Bai Zhanxiong also felt that something was amiss. His expression changed as he realised that if he did not kill Long Chen, something dreadful might happen!

It was a [Dark Heavenly Finger] that struck in close proximity this time. Long Chen had been completely unprepared and the Yang Family members were all furious yet were helpless as they saw this scene!

However, in the next instant, there was a layer of red light that appeared beside Long Chen. Bai Zhanxiong's finger technique had actually been deflected away by the light. Bai Zhanxiong's entire body staggered back in mortification. His looks of astonishment were rather amusing.

At that moment, Long Chen had once again delved into his sea of consciousness and from his vision; he could see that the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant and Inherited Blood Essence had once again fused together!

The Dragon Jade completely turned blood red at a rapid rate. The blood red blood Qi containing the nine Dragon veins reappeared. And one sliver of the blood red energy once again circulated in the dragon patterns of the Dragon Vein!

Long Chen momentarily let out a jubilant expression. It was just like the previous time when he had learnt the divine ability [Blood Transmuted Qi] which seemed heaven-defying. Right now, it was on a different path of circulation. This means that he would learn a new type of divine ability which would be rather decent!

While watching the path of circulation, Long Chen had also circulated his own faint red Qi. Even though he was still in his sea of consciousness, he could clearly feel that his body was drastically changing. He could also hear the alarmed outbursts of the people around him.

When the Dragon Jade had completed the circulation in his body and separated from the Inherited Blood Essence again, Long Chen felt that his newly discovered divine ability was almost complete.

An ancient thread of information flowed into Long Chen's mind. By the time Long Chen discovered what the name of this divine ability was, he had already withdrawn from his sea of consciousness and looked at his own body.

Currently, he had blood colored scales and sharp spikes protruding out from

his entire body. His energy had increased tenfold. The Qi which had originally been a faint red, had now completely turned blood red.

Everyone was stunned from watching the massive changes to Long Chen's body and even the battle of Founder Young, and the rest had gradually come to a stop.

"These are the same changes as the previous night. The difference is that from now on I can control this transformation...."

"This is.....[Dragon Soul Transformation]!"

After feeling that his power had increased boundlessly, Long Chen smirked. He knew that everyone was astonished at the current changes of his body. There was perfect silence for a couple of breaths before someone unexpectedly muttered: "...This should be the Beast Warrior's shapeshifting technique. When did he become the legendary Beast Warrior?"

The three syllables 'Beast Warrior' instantly appeared in numerous people's mind. They could feel that Long Chen had drastically become more powerful. In the crowd, there was a mix of happiness and sadness.

Bai Zhanxiong, who had previously been slightly frightened was still standing in front of Long Chen but after seeing that terrifying murderous blood red aura, his complexion had turned pale white!

Before everyone snapped out of their shock, Long Chen had already locked his gaze on Bai Zhanxiong. Under the startled gazes of everyone, he turned into a blood red shadow that shot towards Bai Zhanxiong!

When he was in motion, both of his hands were rapidly forming the seal. There were a total of nine clear, blood red images of Dragon Gods that were violently traversing around his hands. They were giving off frightening dragon roars and the violent energy created from both of his hands made a lot of people feel that it was too sinister and cold!

When Long Chen used his now matchless strong body and the enormous yet strange Qi to form the most powerful [Seal of the High Profound Dragon], his body's aura would cause even an expert who was at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm to feel suffocated!

“This is such a strong move. It will be difficult for even experts who are at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm to use that move!”

An eighth level Dragon Pulse Realm expert from a second rate family in the Poplar Town exclaimed in astonishment.

When the Bai Family's Master saw that Long Chen had unexpectedly used such a powerful move, with his higher insight, he knew that move was more than just terrifying. His expression instantly changed and he exclaimed: “Zhan Er! Quickly dodge that attack!”

However, it was already too late. After seeing Long Chen suddenly becoming so powerful, Bai Zhanxiong just couldn't believe it. When he tried to kill Long Chen previously, it was deflected by the blood red light. Now, he clearly felt that light had disappeared, giving him another chance to kill Long Chen, so he did not intend to dodge him!

“Bastard, your father died by my hands. Today, you will definitely also die

under my hands. This is the fate of your family. Your struggles are futile! The previous [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] did not kill you. So, now I will let you taste it again!”

[Dark Heavenly Finger – Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]!”

“Oh really?”

As he charged forward rapidly, the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] had already been completed and an immense energy brought an aura that could seemingly pierce the heavens. Long Chen had seemed to turn into a nine blood red Dragon Gods as he howled and advanced towards Bai Zhanxiong. The path he stepped on had sent the stone tiles on the pavement to be smashed into pieces, flying into the air!

“Father, you must have thought that it was too shameful to have died under a petty creature like Bai Zhanxiong so you didn’t tell me about it. However, I will be able to avenge you today!”

Nine blood red dragons had momentarily caused the ground to tremble. At that point, Bai Zhanxiong’s [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] already reached Long Chen. Previously, the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] was able to hit Long Chen but now the situation was fully reversed. This time, it was completely shattered into pieces by [Seal of the High Profound Dragon]. The energy from the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon], at this point, had squarely hit Bai Zhanxiong, whose face was filled with madness and disbelief. All his clothes and possessions on his body were shredded into pieces immediately!

“Xiong Er!”

“Third brother!”

“Third younger brother!”

The few experts from the Bai Family wanted to assist Bai Zhanxiong but at this moment, Founder Yang and the rest sneered and obstructed the Bai Family’s advancement in sync.

However, as the Yang Family saw that Long Chen becoming so powerful, they were extremely excited, especially Yang Xueqing. Currently, in her heart, it was completely filled with the valiant appearance of Long Chen. That bloody yet perfect [Dragon Soul Transformation] had made her feel extremely proud of Long Chen!

“The me before, had I really been wrong by this much? What was I thinking before? After all, he is my son.....”

After Long Chen had beaten the eighth level Dragon Pulse Realm Bai Zhanxiong in the open, the smaller factions who were watching on, had at this time kept mum out of fear.

Producing such a devilish genius with such heaven defying abilities, in the future Poplar Town’s ranking of Bai Family as the first and Yang Family in second, would most likely be reversed.

They were all staring at the blood red figure and swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

“This, is he still the spoilt and useless brat from before?”

The disparity from the current him to the previous him made every one of them feel like their mouth was parched and tongue scorched.

At this point, the drama had taken on a whole new direction. Earlier it was the Bai Family members who had constrained the Yang Family but now Long Chen had reversed the unfavourable situation. Long Chen's [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] had injured Bai Zhanxiong critically and the masses were all now anticipating what Long Chen would do next.

In the Yang Family, when Yang Yuntian looked at that blood red figure, he crouched on the floor painfully. He knew that in his life, he would never be able to avenge his son anymore.

The current Long Chen seemed to be like a roc that had flown towards a sky where it was forever impossible for him, Yang Yuntian, to touch him.

[TL Note: (Expression), Out of his league]

As for Yang Lingqing, she was also looking at this person who had protected her. Tears had been brimming in her eyes since long ago.

In her heart, Long Chen right now, had become an omnipotent god.

"Brat, let go of my son!"

Looking at the critically injured Bai Zhanxiong who was grabbed in Long Chen's hands, the Bai Family's Master was greatly appalled and his shrill voice had

sounded out.

Seeing his pained look, Long Chen sneered.

“Sins by the heaven can be forgiven, but if you sinned, you must die!”

After that, he looked at Bai Zhanxiong who was in his hands. Bai Zhanxiong currently looked just like Bai Shiji in the morning. His complexion was devoid of colour and he spat out a mouthful of blackened blood. A pair of frightened eyes looked towards Long Chen, and as disbelief turned into despair, he pleaded.

“Plea...please forgive me! I am begging you. I don’t want to die.....”

Seeing that Bai Shanxiong unexpectedly did not have a backbone, Long Chen looked down on him even more. He plainly said, “If you knew this would happen, you wouldn’t have said that you were the one that killed my father. However, now that I know the truth, even in death, I won’t let you die easily!”

As his words neared the end, Long Chen’s voice became increasingly louder. Those who were present all heard that Long Qinglan was actually murdered by Bai Zhanxiong.

It was no wonder why Long Chen’s gaze was filled with such hatred!

“If you want to blame it on someone, then blame yourself for not killing me immediately and even letting me find out about the truth which made me terribly furious! However, I won’t make the same mistakes as you!”

In front of Long Chen's frosty look, Bai Zhanxiong already had an ominous premonition. The crimson red in Long Chen's eyes had caused his whole body to shudder uncontrollably. He began to cry out mournfully as he could already feel as though the blood inside his body had currently all turned into knives and pierced every bit of his flesh and skin. All of the eerie scales from Long Chen had absorbed them into his body!

This was the first time Long Chen used [Blood Transmuted Qi] on a human, and what's more, with the subject still alive!

"Since you were the one who killed my father, I will take special care of you. Bai Zhanxiong, have a great time enjoying the sensation!"

At this moment, Bai Zhanxiong's shrill screams and pleading had caused everyone's hearts to feel a chill running down their spine. Seeing that blood red and ice cold figure, they had all retreated several steps behind.

When he heard his son giving out such a heart piercing scream, the eyes of the Bai Family's Master turned blood red and he bellowed in rage, "Yang Cangqiong, get out of my way. If you don't release my son, your Yang Family will be seeking death!"

Founder Yang's expression remained impassive, he continued to engage him and said: "On the contrary, though, I had wanted to ask you. I had really wondered how you were able to remain so laughably innocent after all these years? If it was Bai Zhanxiong who had beaten Long Chen right now, would you have stopped this fight?"

Founder Yang had returned the words that were given to him by the Bai Family's Master. In his heart, he felt it was extremely invigorating as actually the

one that was the most depressed tonight was him. Today, his dreams of the numerous years of brotherhood had shattered. Even though he didn't mention it verbally, it had greatly impacted him.

Tonight, Bai Zhanxiong's piercing scream had been engraved deeply in hearts of everyone and that moment they saw that fresh red blood had actually broken through underneath Bai Zhanxiong's skin and excitedly rushed into Long Chen's body. Everyone inhaled a huge breath of air and felt numbed in their heads and towards Long Chen's methods, they had really been perturbed!

Bai Zhanxiong's blood vessels had also contained a huge amount of energy. The Qi had been refined by [Blood Transmuted Qi] was even more immense than the spirit jade or demonic energy cores that he had fed on. At this point, the blood of Bai Zhanxiong, who was at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, had all been completely absorbed by Long Chen and a vast amount of energy surged from within his body. Long Chen was momentarily elated!

"It is the time to breakthrough to the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and into the Human Dragon Vein!"

A King Of Slaughter

When Bai Zhanxiong's shriveled and wizened body fell powerlessly to the ground, the whole area was in absolute silence.

Violent roars from the Bai Family's Master could be heard. However, even if he was filled with hatred, in front of Founder Yang, it was impossible for him to break through that encirclement.

With Bai Zhanxiong's death, it could be considered that the Bai Family's operation had completely failed.

As they fought in front of the crowd, the Yang Family had exposed the Bai Family's evil schemes. All of the other middle and lower ranked factions in Poplar Town now understood the reason that led to this situation.

If the Bai Family had been successful tonight and became the overlord of Poplar Town, nobody would have dared to say a single vicious and merciless comment about them. But, it just so happened that the Bai Family's plan had failed. Even the top level experts in the Bai Family such as Bai Zhanxiong had lost their lives, so the reputation of the Bai Family had fallen completely to the bottom. They had already guessed as to what the rankings would be with the Yang Family coupled with the devilish genius Long Chen!

Furthermore, when they saw that Long Chen had unexpectedly broken through to his Human Dragon Vein, this further confirmed their thoughts.

The blood red Qi dragon surged within Long Chen's body and the amount of Qi that had been refined from Bai Zhanxiong's body did not pale in comparison to

Long Chen's original amount. Under such an immense energy, although the Human Dragon Vein was longer and much thicker compared to average Dragon Veins, there wasn't any resistance!

The blood red Qi dragon path was as easy as a hot knife cutting through butter. After a minute, a dragon's cry resounded immediately as the Human Dragon Vein had been broken through.

Long Chen was still under the [Dragon Soul Transformation] state. Currently, his Qi was increasing rapidly. Due to his Qi quality which was now ten times stronger than other cultivators, even though he was at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, his Qi's destructive power was already similar those at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!

After including his [Dragon Soul Transformation]'s form, his actual battle strength reached a sky high level. Only Long Chen would be able to deeply understand how powerful he currently was!

When he was still in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he could already kill Bai Zhanxiong who was at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. His current strength had basically gone up at least ten times! That bloody and murderous aura reeked from head to toe and made everyone sweat in fear.

Long Chen had completely surpassed his generation's level and reached the supreme level in Poplar Town. Furthermore, today, even though he was furious, when the Bai Family Leader saw the bloodshot gaze in Long Chen's eyes when he stood up, he had genuinely resigned to his fate!

When Long Chen stood up, the battle tonight was meaningless to continue.

Only then did Founder Yang and the rest throw off their opponents and gathered with Yang Qingxuan and Yang Xueqing as they looked dazedly at the current Long Chen!

No matter how much they knew that Long Chen would only get stronger and stronger, their emotions still surged in astonishment!

The Yang Family was unwilling to continue the fight and right now, the Yang Family still had such a devil like Long Chen. If they were to continue fighting, the Bai Family would only increase in casualties and so the Yang Family didn't continue the fight. Although the Bai Family was currently enraged, under the restraints of the Bai Family's Master, they too did not dare to continue.

Since it was unnecessary to stay, Founder Yang looked at Long Chen and said: "Chen Er, let's head back home."

Long Chen still had the thought of killing everyone of the Bai Family here today, but seeing that impassive face of the old man, he knew there was no longer the need to do so.

Founder Yang had a good relationship with the Bai Family for a long time, so after all the drastic changes today, it was definitely extremely painful for him.

Bai Family had been heartless towards the Yang Family, but the Yang Family had already killed Bai Zhanxiong and Bai Zhanyun, even critically injuring Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji. There was no more need to continue killing.

Only then did Long Chen withdraw from his [Dragon Soul Transformation]. The Qi in his body now returned to the faint red colour, but it still had the quality of

four times stronger compared to an average cultivator.

Long Chen's handsome and refined disposition right now made it completely impossible for them to relate him to the earlier form of a king of slaughter.

However, the current Long Chen gave off a slightly more familiar feeling to the Yang Family. When Long Chen entered the encirclement of the Yang Family, they were all looking at him with respectful gazes. This special treatment had left him feeling overwhelmed.

He suddenly found that Yang Xueqing was currently smiling as she watched the group of people clamour around Long Chen. When Long Chen looked towards her, she lowered her head in embarrassment. The only emotion she had left in her heart was regret. As for Yang Yuntian who was standing at a side, his face was filled with torment and he did not speak a single word.

Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue were currently walking beside Long Chen. Yang Lingyue awkwardly said: "I really have to thank you for what you have done today. You not only saved us, but also the entire Yang Family. We are all filled with gratitude towards you. The purpose as to why I am talking to you is that I want to apologise for making things difficult for you and humiliating you previously. I am really sorry. I hope that we will become good cousins just like how you and Lingqing are. Is that alright?"

Yang Wu nodded his head as well and said: "I'm really sorry. Back in the past, we were all short sighted and thought you were the stain on our Yang Family's name. I would have never imagined that you are actually the real hero. You taught us not to judge a book by its cover. I'm really thankful for that!"

This feeling of being looked up to had honestly made Long Chen feel a little

embarrassed. His personality was that if someone treated him well, he would treat them better. However, if they were unkind to him, he would treat them even worse.

“Alright, you don’t need to say any further. There is nothing to be thankful for as I had only wanted to exact my revenge, and I conveniently gave you guys a helping hand.”

Long Chen’s mannerism and expression were both extremely hilarious. Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue, as well as a few members from the younger generation, only then loosened their heartstrings and broke into laughter.

Long Chen raised his head and saw that Yang Qingxuan was smiling gently at him. Long Chen knew that Yang Wu and Yang Lingyue came over under the encouragement from Yang Qingxuan.

Long Chen didn’t have any prejudices against this uncle of his. Yang Qingxuan had always treated him neither good nor bad. Long Chen’s motto was that if he was not mistreated by that person, he wouldn’t hate that person.

Sensing the fervent and concerned gazes from the surrounding people, Long Chen suddenly felt the warmth from the Yang Family. His previous performance as a spoilt brat was really rather disappointing.

After that, he looked at the lonesome figure of Founder Yang who was walking solitarily at the forefront, leading the way. He had been approached several times by Yang Qingxuan but Yang Qingxuan was rejected. Finding his persuasion was useless, Yang Qingxuan then thought of letting Long Chen give it a try. The current Long Chen’s position in the family was soaring. He was not just at the level of the first person in the younger generation anymore.

As he walked beside Founder Yang, he actually discovered that the old man's eyes were red. After being betrayed by his brother, whom he had shared many years of brotherhood with, and risking ending his younger generation's lives, the impact on him was immensely great.

Seeing Long Chen walk up to him, Founder Yang looked at him before looking at the Yang Family's house that they were quickly approaching, and he muttered: "There's no reason for you to try and persuade me, as I know what I have to do in the future. However, kid, let me give you a warning. When you are out creating a name for yourself in the future and have someone you can call your brother, you must definitely be clear of his intentions by checking if his heart is made of poison or blood....."

Long Chen thought for a moment before he said: "I know. Your heart is filled with blood and that old man Bai's is just a container of poison."

After returning to the Yang Family residence, Founder Yang sat at the leader's position before pulling Long Chen to sit beside him. The rest had also taken their seat. Even though they saw that Long Chen was sitting at such a special position, they didn't have any objections in their hearts.

Founder Yang sipped his tea lightly and said: "Today's matter was mostly my fault, so I want to apologise to all of you. As an elder, I have nearly led all of you to your deaths!"

Yang Qingxuan tightly clenched his fist and said solemnly, : "Father, you do not have to reproach yourself. We all know that we can't blame you for this. If we really want to find faults, it is that Bai Sheng's heart was too vile, and he has the heart of a wolf and lungs of a dog!

[TL note: Cruel and unscrupulous.]

“That’s right, Grandfather. We all understand.”

After seeing that the younger generations understood him, Founder Yang felt slightly better. As he gazed at them, he was elated that even after the Yang Family had experienced such an ordeal, they weren’t hurt at all. Everyone knew that it was only due to one person’s strength and resolute determination to salvage the crisis!

Founder Yang’s gaze finally landed on Yang Yuntian, whose head was lowered at this point. His gaze turned cold before he said: “Yuntian, stand up.”

Yang Qingxuan knew that after returning home, his father would harshly berate Yang Yuntian. However, after seeing the old man’s ashened face, he was temporarily at a loss for words. Actually, if not for Yang Yuntian’s final stunt, today’s matter could have already been over. It was because of Yang Yuntian that the Yang Family and Bai Family engaged in such a huge battle. They also nearly lost the largest contributor to the Yang Family today.

“Yuntian, what do you have to say?”

Yang Yuntian raised his head, at this point he was extremely collected, and sighed. He looked at Long Chen and Founder Yang as he said: “Father, I have nothing to say. Today, I just wanted to exact justice on behalf of my son, but I have failed completely. There will never be a chance in the future.”

“Pa!” Founder Yang slammed his hand on the table. The younger generations

immediately kept quiet due to fear.

“Don’t you even have a tinge of guilt? Our internal strife should be resolved within our family. Since when did we ever have to borrow an enemy’s hands to get rid of our own family members?”

Yang Yuntian wordlessly bit his lips.

Seeing his disappointing actions, Founder Yang was so furious that his nose crooked, and he angrily said: “Even though the main cause to Zhan Er’s matter was Chen Er, it was also because Zhan Er’s heart was not firm enough to face that setback. With such a fragile mindset, even if it wasn’t Chen Er, he would still die at someone else’s hands in the future. It is the father’s fault for any mistakes he made. It is your fault, but you shirked and pushed the responsibility onto others. Is this our Yang Family’s style of doing things?”

After hearing Founder Yang’s words, Yang Yuntian completely woke up. He made a painful expression and clenched his fist. He thought: “What Father said is right. I had spoilt Zhan Er all these years. If I didn’t let him do whatever he liked and stood up for him for every minor matter, his personality wouldn’t be so weak.... Yang Yuntian, the person that harmed your son all along was actually yourself.....”

This led him to fall into an abyss of reproach and agony that he could not free himself from.

Founder Yang saw the painful expression Yang Yuntian had, and being a father himself, how could he not know of Yang Yuntian’s suffering. He sighed and told Long Chen, “He was the one that got you into trouble. You can decide on how you want to punish him for that.”

When Founder Yang handed over the final decision to Long Chen, everyone was mildly surprised. However, after thinking about it, they thought that it was reasonable. They looked at Long Chen with anticipation. The Yang Family had already experienced such an ordeal, so truthfully, the masses of the Yang Family did not wish for anyone to further be punished. However, Long Chen's personality was a little unpredictable. Today, Yang Yuntian had almost caused his death so having some resentment was normal.

Seeing everyone looking at him, especially Yang Lingqing, her pleading expression softened Long Chen. He also knew that if he wanted to continue staying in the Yang Family, he had to completely resolve the matter regarding Yang Yuntian.

Under the anxious gazes of the masses, Long Chen stood in front of Yang Yuntian.

"I have indirectly caused your son's death, so initially I was at fault. However, you nearly caused my death today. Since we're both in the Yang Family, I also do not wish for our feud to carry on. How about we call it quits?"

Dragon Breed

From what Yang Yuntian understood about Long Chen's personality, such as how he had dealt with the Bai Family, Yang Yuntian knew that Long Chen was the kind of person who sought vengeance for even the smallest grievances suffered.

This time, Yang Yuntian had almost caused his death. Afterwards, Founder Yang handed the final decision over to Long Chen and Yang Yuntian knew that his fate would be more or less tragic.

Yang Yuntian knew that a person like Long Chen would never let someone who wanted to take his life near his side.

However, Long Chen's words had completely befuddled his expectations.

The other members of the Yang Family heaved a breath of relief after hearing Long Chen's words. Yang Xueqing had happily smiled too, and sweetly looked at Long Chen.

The reason why Long Chen let Yang Yuntian off the hook was simple. Firstly, when Yang Zhan died, even though Long Chen didn't expect him to commit suicide, he was still the primary cause for it. His actions had led to the death of Yang Yuntian's son so it was normal for him to seek vengeance.

So, Long Chen did not think that Yang Yuntian's behaviour today was that preposterous.

The second reason was because he was the father of Yang Lingqing. Right now, Long Chen had a good relationship with Yang Lingqing. He cared dearly for this cousin of his, so naturally he would not humiliate her father at this point in time.

As for the third and most important reason, it was that from today onwards, Yang Yuntian is no longer his match.

Raising his head and looking at Long Chen, Yang Yuntian was still in disbelief as he said: "Are you sure? You want to call it quits between us?"

Long Chen nodded his head and said: "I only hope that you keep your promise. I do not want to suffer at your hands as I continue living inside the Yang residence. Otherwise, I would be better off killing you."

Looking at this youth and remembering his rapid and drastic changes, Yang Yuntian was still unable to believe what he saw.

Long Chen's superior character had already exceeded his expectations, so he could only absentmindedly nod his head and say: "What I, Yang Yuntian, have agreed to do will definitely be done."

Founder Yang watched this grandson with appreciation and also nodded in approval from deep within his heart. His heart was relieved, and only then did he say: "Alright, since this has already been settled, our entire Yang Family must stick closely together in the future and join forces to fight against the Bai Family. If someone from our family were to hinder this effort, I will be the first to punish him!"

After surveying his surroundings once more, Founder Yang sighed before he

said: "I am a little tired. Today, everyone should head back to rest. For the next few days, no one should go out of the house at their whim without my orders. Do you understand?"

At Founder Yang's orders, the group all nodded their heads and took their leave. However, Long Chen suddenly said: "Grandfather, wait a moment, I have something to say."

He looked at Yang Xueqing when he said this, but Yang Xueqing was most likely extremely embarrassed and remorseful tonight, as she had not raised her head at all.

Founder Yang said solemnly: "Chen Er, if you have something to say, we will all listen to it."

"Grandfather, before Father died, he told me to change my surname to Long. I wish for everyone to call me Long Chen from now on. I hope Grandfather will let me fulfill Father's last wishes."

Long Chen's words made everyone a little nervous, especially Yang Xueqing, and her body shuddered a little, but she still did not raise her head.

Long Chen had no strength nor had power in the past, so he could not declare about what Long Qinglan entrusted him. However, his strength had greatly increased after tonight's matter and he knew it was time.

Founder Yang looked nervously at him. "Chen Er, are you saying that you want to leave the Yang Family? Are you blaming us for mistreating you?"

Long Chen shook his head and said: "I don't have that idea, half of my blood still comes from the Yang Family and me being in the Yang Family will not change. I only wish to follow my father's surname."

On one hand, it was the dying wish of Long Qinglan, and there was also Long Chen's persistence. Founder Yang naturally had no reason to decline as long as Long Chen was not leaving the Yang Family. He nodded his head and said: "If that is the wish of Long Qinglan, then please carry it out accordingly."

After finally completing Long Qinglan's dying wishes, Long Chen nodded his head elatedly. The rest of the family gradually bid their farewells to Founder Yang and trickled out, and Yang Qingxuan was the last person to leave the place. He turned his head back and said: "Father, you're also tired today, so you should go and have a rest too. Tomorrow, you will still need to take over the mayoral rights. The Bai Family might cause a disturbance."

Founder Yang shook his head and said: "Let me have some peace for a while and properly condition the state of my mind. Xuan Er, take your leave first."

Yang Qingxuan could only grudgingly agree without a choice.

Tonight was destined to be a sleepless night.

After Long Chen bade his farewells, he continued walking. But after a while, he discovered that Yang Xueqing had scaled over the wall. Earlier, Founder Yang had instructed that no one was to leave the Yang residences without his permission and he never thought that this fellow, Yang Xueqing, would actually just ignore it.

The greatest reward that Long Chen had today was that he was able to make that woman look at him in a different light.

After being separated from her for sixteen years, Long Chen finally felt that blood was truly thicker than water. To him, this was extremely great news. Right now, Yang Xueqing had left the Yang Family. Long Chen was still rather concerned for her safety and followed her.

“Xiao Xi, where did you say she was going?”

“You scoundrel, I don’t want to speak with you!”

Long Chen suddenly felt cold sweat from his pores. Earlier he was afraid that she would strike and put her own life at risk, so he said some rather spiteful words though he never would have thought that this girl would still bear grudges. Long Chen could only coax her: “Be a good girl, earlier my mouth had spouted some nonsense. You just have to treat me as though I am a foolish donkey. Alright? Woof Woof Woof!”

Ling Xi snorted with laughter, and then pointed at him, saying: “That is a dog’s barking, idiot. A donkey makes this sound: Hee-Haw”

“Huh? So you are actually the donkey!”

“You....., go and die!”

“Great heroine, please spare my life!”

Finally after having a hard time coaxing Lingxi, Long Chen's ears did not have to be subjected to her tortures anymore. Lingxi had made the Lingxi Sword turn into an ear pin again and attached to his ear so that she could torture him anytime she liked.

But at that moment, he saw that Yang Xueqing had already walked out of town. Long Chen hurriedly chased after her.

After walking for some distance, he suddenly felt that the path was rather familiar. Actually, wasn't this the route to Long Qinglan's tomb?

Long Chen did not bring Yang Xueqing here before, but she already knew where it was. With her authority in the Yang Family, finding a tomb outside of the town was a very simple task.

Soon, Yang Xueqing was standing in front of Long Qinglan's grave. She stood there in a daze, staring limply. Long Chen watched her from a distance.

He too did not know what this woman was here for.

However, Yang Xueqing did not say a single word and just sat on the floor. Resting on the gravestone, she stared at the remote stars dotting the sky in an enchanted manner. With the twinkling starlight reflecting in her eyes and pure white cheeks, it made her look extremely mesmerizing.

Seeing the image of his mother leaning against his father's grave as she gazed upwards, Long Chen felt a little moved. To him, this sweet and tender moment was a sight he had never seen before.

“She is muttering to herself,” Lingxi said suddenly.

“What is she saying?” Long Chen hurriedly asked.

Lingxi listened for a while, and then mimicked her intonation and words.

“.....If you didn’t treat me badly before, I wouldn’t have loathed you and even hated my own son. Long Qinglan, in my eyes, you’re insane.....”

Long Chen was startled. So all along in Yang Xueqing’s eyes, Long Qinglan had actually been a madman? Why did she think that way? Long Chen had always thought it was because Yang Xueqing had despised Long Qinglan for turning into trash that she abandoned both father and son. Was there actually was something else to it?

Long Chen had a peek at Yang Xueqing’s despondent and suffering expression. At that moment, Lingxi continued to repeat what she heard: “...After looking through countless kingdoms and cities, you found such a girl like me that met your requirements just to have an heir. I knew that you were so high up beyond my imaginations, but you still didn’t have the right to trample on my feelings...”

“Today, Chen Er finally said that he wants to change his surname to Long. No matter what, I am still not your match. Maybe in your eyes, a mere mortal woman like me, was absolutely incompatible with a superior being like you.”

Yang Xueqing’s words left Long Chen completely astonished.

Only today, did Long Chen finally learn the reason for Yang Xueqing’s detachment. It was not that her nature was cold and indifferent, but that Long

Qinglan had instead brought her so much heartache.

Long Chen already knew that Long Qinglan came from an incredible place. His status must also have been extremely high. The strength Long Qinglan previously had was definitely not what everyone thought it to be, at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. When he was at Poplar Town, he was merely pretending to be so.

Long Chen could guess the reason for the matter. Long Qinglan's cultivation was ruined by the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, but he did not wish for it to end like this, so he thought of producing an heir, a descendant who could use the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, and then he found Yang Xueqing.

What happened next was exactly as how Yang Xueqing described. It's just that after Yang Xueqing knew the truth, she could not accept the fact that she was only a tool for reproduction.

Long Chen was of Long Qinglan's flesh and blood, but to Yang Xueqing, he was someone who had robbed her of her happiness and feelings. The harder she fell for Long Qinglan, the more hatred she felt towards him.

That all resulted in today's situation. Yang Xueqing only discovered that she had still lost to Long Qinglan when Long Chen, who had been muddling along without any aim before, finally revealed his brilliance.

In end, she was merely a pitiful, lovesick woman.

At this instant, Long Chen's previous hatred for Yang Xueqing finally abated.

Long Chen had now reached a stage where he could finally feel relaxed. In the Yang Family, his two greatest conflicts, Yang Yuntian and Yang Xueqing, were now resolved. He did not have to live like before, where everyone only gave him cold gazes. Now, with the group of them staying tightly knitted together in order to fend off enemies, this feeling that Long Chen once yearned for resurfaced suddenly.

“Father, I know of your painstaking efforts, but you also have areas where you did her injustice and let her down.”

“It is alright. I will help you redeem your wrongdoings.”

Reflecting upon the entirety of Yang Xueqing’s life, Long Chen’s eyes became teary. She was indeed a little pitiful. When she fell in love, she didn’t think that she was merely thought of as a tool to rear an heir. The second time, when she thought she had finally obtained happiness, she was tricked and it even resulted in harming her father and brothers.

After thinking back at how he treated her previously, Long Chen felt that he was also in the wrong.

“She is crying so pitifully. Long Chen, I, I also feel like crying.....”

Under the moonlight, Yang Xueqing had lowered her head and was crying. Her soft and pitiful sobs made Lingxi sympathize with her. Long Chen tightly clenched his fist, and sighed.

“It is about time I lessen my hatred towards her.....”

Scarlet Tailed Fox Demon

Yesterday was the demonic beast hunting competition, and today was the announcement of results for the mayoral position in Poplar Town.

A big ceremony like this should be held in front of the various factions and families. The sun had just shone its first rays of light, but there were already tens of thousands of people gathered in the Poplar Town Square.

These people were all well-known people in Poplar Town, and they included all the influential nobles within the five kilometer radius of Poplar town.

The mayoral position of Poplar Town was determined by the younger generation of Bai Family and Yang Family during the demonic beast hunting competition, and from this, one could see that the Lingwu Family held the individual abilities of each family in high regard.

Poplar Town's two biggest families had not arrived yet, but those who were present were discussing the huge commotion yesterday.

This incident had already been spread throughout Poplar Town.

The two subjects that greatly astonished everyone were the evil schemes of the Bai Family and the youth from the Yang Family who had such heaven-defying abilities.

“You guys didn't see it so you wouldn't know about the blood red scales armour that had covered his whole body, and those spikes that are even sharper

than your saber. Bai Zhanxiong couldn't even take one blow from him. [Dark Heavenly Finger – Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], had been completely crushed by the Yang Family's [Seal of the High Profound Dragon], and now everyone is saying that this fellow is already ranked as the 3rd expert in Poplar Town.

“One of the three top experts at the age of 16? He really is a devil. He is even more astonishing than Long Qinglan.”

“The two so-called geniuses of the Bai Family naturally pale in comparison against such a talented genius.....”

“Everyone, please stop talking. The Bai Family has arrived.”

At this point, the crowd split and allowed a path between them. The Bai Family's Master was at the forefront, wearing a dark expression as he walked into this huge field.

Seeing the Bai Family look so ferocious, the numerous factions kept quiet due to fear. However, they were secretly snitching behind the Bai Family's back.

After all, everyone idolises righteous heroes. For someone who planned to kill his own brother, they were destined to be disdained by everyone.

Once the Bai Family had arrived, the atmosphere of the crowd became extremely gloomy. Then, someone shouted suddenly: “The Yang Family members are here!”

The crowd split and opened a path to welcome them, calling out to Founder Yang and the others with pleasantries. Founder Yang and the others returned

the courtesies, and at this point, most of the people had cast their gazes on the rumored talented genius. Seeing his appearance, they all had praises and exclamations for him.

“He looks to be sixteen years old, but has such accomplishments.....”

“My child has only reached the fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. He has been arrogant this couple of days. If I let him see this youth, he will then know that there is always someone stronger no matter how strong he is. A true genius should look like this.”

The Bai Family members noticed that the crowd was silent when they came, but everyone cheered and called out when the Yang Family members arrived.

Originally, this glory should have belonged to the Bai Family, but they never thought that the Yang Family would have taken it from them. The expressions of the Bai Family members suddenly darkened even further, as if they were turning into cast iron.

This Bai Family had become such a ‘black’ family.

[TLN: (Wordplay) Bai is white, and mentioning Black means total opposite, signifying the drastic changes and perception surrounding the Bai Family]

Long Chen’s current gaze was focused towards the Bai Family. There weren’t a lot of people from the Bai Family that came today. Only Bai Sheng, Bai Zhanlong and another aged elder who had a sharp featured face, which had startled Long Chen.

“Huh, isn’t that the old fellow who was guarding the Soul Diffusion Fruit Tree?” Lingxi asked suspiciously.

Long Chen had only caught a glimpse of the features of this old man, but he believed that both he and Lingxi would not recognise the wrong person.

After sizing up the elder’s appearance, Long Chen realized that there was a red dot between his eyebrows.

There was also a red dot between Long Chen’s eyebrows, but that was the 1/1000th drop of Inherited Blood Essence that resided between his eyebrows and had formed a faint coloured mark. If one did not scrutinise it closely, it would be hard to notice it. However, the red dot on this old man’s face was painted on with some special ink, and was extremely eye grabbing even under the sunlight!

Long Chen previously saw that Bai Zhanxiong had used women from Emerald Jade House to make deals with a couple of people who had a red dot between their eyebrows. Those people had a red dot between their eyebrows which was identical to that of the elder’s!

Yesterday night, Long Chen had heard Bai Zhanxiong mention Second Uncle and Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. This old fellow has pretty similar features to the Bai Family’s Master, so he must be the so-called Second Uncle. Furthermore, he was the one that was guarding the Soul Diffusion Fruit Tree.....

After linking up the recent events, Long Chen immediately had a much better understanding.

“Just before the Soul Diffusion Fruit ripens, it will give rise to a strange phenomenon. At that time, there will be battles to get the fruit held near it. The Soul Diffusion Fruit will be very crucial to both the Yang Family and the Bai Family. The Bai Family was afraid that Grandfather will be able to snatch the Soul Diffusion Fruit or that the news of the Bai Family obtaining the Soul Diffusion Fruit would spread, so last night they carried out their plot to eliminate the Yang Family.”

Previously, Long Chen had still thought that every move of the Bai Family was for the mayoral position, but the explanation had been rather implausible. Today, he finally understood the truth behind this matter.

At this moment, the old fellow looked at Long Chen after the Bai Family's Master pointed at his position. The old fellow looked surprised as if he had recalled something, and he frostily gave Long Chen a death stare.

Long Chen knew that the old fellow was able to recognise him as he was actually the person that discovered the Soul Diffusion Fruit yesterday. After Long Chen knew about the Soul Diffusion Fruit, he would naturally tell the Yang Family so the gaze from the old fellow was instantly filled with killing intent!

He lowered his voice and whispered some words to Bai Family's Master, and Bai Sheng's expression changed abruptly!

They had never guessed that Long Chen had stumbled across the Soul Diffusion Fruit during the demonic beast hunting competition. Now, the news regarding it had most likely reached the ears of the Yang Family!

After discovering the Soul Diffusion Fruit, they had decided to annihilate the Yang Family who was an obstacle to them, but they overlooked the possibility of

Long Chen unexpectedly finding out and present the Yang Family with news of the Soul Diffusion Fruit!

This way, the Soul Diffusion Fruit that they would definitely have gotten might now meet with some unexpected hindrances, and this made the Bai Brothers harbour hatred for Long Chen!

At present, Founder Young had also taken notice of the old man. He immediately frowned before saying: “This is bad. That person is....Bai Sheng’s stepbrother, and is known as Bai Li. He has always been at Yuanling City and had never communicated with Bai Sheng much. However, he unexpectedly came to Poplar Town this time around.....Two experts who are at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.....”

He could still deal with one Bai Sheng but Founder Yang would not have any confidence if Bai Li, who was of similar strength, was included.

However, he heaved a sigh of relief as he remembered that he still had this devilish genius, Long Chen, by his side.

He was not sure of Long Chen’s current strength either, but he thought that if Long Chen could even beat Bai Zhanxiong to the death, then he might also be able to endure some time in Bai Li’s hands!

Founder Yang still did not know about the matter of the Soul Diffusion Fruit and naturally, he did not know the meaning behind Bai Li’s appearance. He did not know why the Bai Family tried to plot against the Yang Family either.

However, Long Chen’s brow furrowed. Naturally, the Bai Family would not

dare to create a commotion with Lord Lang here today. But Long Chen knew, they would definitely have to face Bai Sheng and Bai Li on the battlefield as they fought over the Soul Diffusion Fruit!

Long Chen had the confidence for dealing with those two experts but Bai Zhanxiong mentioned the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, which made him feel uneasy.

For Lord Lang to have that much power at a young age, it was clear that the average strength of the experts in Yuanling City was much higher than Poplar Town's. If Bai Li had any standing in Yuan Lin City, then he would know many experts. If he were to be involved in the battle for the Soul Diffusion Fruit, then the Yang Family....

Long Chen, who initially thought that he could take it easy, instantly felt pressured again.

He knew that, after the ripening of the Soul Diffusion Fruit, there would definitely be a huge battle, and the Bai Family methods were not lacking. As for Long Chen who was in the Yang Family, there were already more people who had to be protected, and many consequences to worry about. If they really had to have a death match with Bai Family, Long Chen knew that his current ability was still lacking if he wanted to protect many people.

As for Yang Xueqing, after what had transpired last night, Long Chen wouldn't allow anyone to harm her even though he had not completely forgiven her.

However, Long Chen had killed a lot of the Bai Family's members. The Bai Family definitely wouldn't be able to forgive the Yang Family easily. Currently, this was the heavy burden Long Chen had in his heart.....

“In approximately eight days, the Soul Diffusion Fruit will be ripening. What can I do in this span of eight days to achieve a complete victory.....”

The two brothers from the Bai Family were currently glaring at Long Chen with gazes filled with murderous intent. While Long Chen remained unyielding, there was suddenly disturbance in the crowd. Long Chen instantly discovered that a person had appeared on the originally empty platform!

That’s right; it was someone whom the Yuanling Family of Yuanling City had sent, the mysterious Lord Lang.

Today, he still had the cloak on, concealing his appearance.

Actually, the masses of Poplar Town all knew that this Lord Lang’s voice sounded extremely young, and his estimated age was not very old. He could be thought of as an even more talented, heaven-defying genius.

When he first saw Lord Lang, Long Chen was unable to determine his gender at a glance. At that time, he found that Lord Lang’s personality was rather kind and helpful, albeit being a little shy. It may have been due to official business, but when they met yesterday, Lord Lang intentionally made himself to be cold and detached when he wore the cloak.

The time hadn’t actually run out when Long Chen had held the youths of Bai Family in captive and they left the Big Barren Mountain afterwards, but Lord Lang had obviously been biased towards Long Chen and had ended the demonic beast hunting competition before the stipulated time.

Thus, Long Chen was extremely grateful towards this Lord Lang.

Although Lord Lang might not think the same, Long Chen had already placed him as a very important person in his life. That inexplicable feeling was unlikely to be wrong.

Currently, everyone was focusing on Lord Lang alone. Lord Lang's muffled voice sounded out from within his mantle.

"Bai Family's Bai Sheng, Yang Family's Yang Cangqiong. Step forward."

Bai Sheng and Yang Cangqiong didn't dare disobey Lord Lang's order so they obediently walked up to stand in front of Lord Yang. However, they didn't even glance at one another.

"Now I will announce both families' achievements in the demonic beast hunting competition."

Lord Lang opened his right palm, and the masses hurriedly looked over, and found a small yellow pea sized demonic energy core, and momentarily laughed loudly.

"Yang Family..... Number of energy cores, one! From the Scarlet Tailed Fox of the first level Huang grade!"

Everyone present was startled. The younger generation was defeated so terribly yesterday. When they looked at that single pitiful energy core, they thought that it was obtained by the Bai Family. They didn't expect that it would be the Yang Family instead. This immediately made them look at each other as

they thought: “Will the control right of Poplar town be given to the Bai Family? This.....”

Thinking that the mayoral position would actually go to the vicious and cruel Bai Family, the masses all felt a shudder in their hearts. In the future, they would probably be unable to live out their days in peace.

At that moment, Lord Lang started to speak. Everyone who was discussing the matter hastily shut their mouths.

At this point, Lord Lang scanned the surroundings and opened the palm of his left hand. The masses looked over nervously, but found out that there was absolutely nothing in his hand!

“Bai Family.....Number of energy cores, zero!”

The expressions of the crowd instantly became incomparably bright.

Everyone actually had a prediction of the fierce battle between the two families this time. They had all thought that the Bai Family would be able to obtain the energy core of an Huang grade demon at the eighth level and that the Yang Family would not fare as well, at most only obtaining a seventh level Huang grade energy core at most. They never imagined that the outcome of the battle would be that the Yang Family would obtain a first level Huang grade energy core, while the Bai Family returned empty handed.

Long Chen chuckled as none of them were hunting the demons during the demonic beast hunting competition. That Scarlet Tailed Fox’s energy core was just something that he conveniently obtained when he was heading down the

mountain.

DBWG – Chapter 45

I am Hot-blooded!

In the contest for the mayoral position between the Bai and Yang family, the Yang Family had only gotten the one energy core from the Scarlet Tailed Fox and it had granted them victory. To the whole of Poplar Town, this was a piece of hot news that was fervently discussed during meals.

Everyone felt as if they were in a dream.

“If my family’s youths had been granted the opportunity to enter this demonic beast hunting competition and successfully dodged the youths from the Bai and Yang Family, then our family might even be holding the mayoral rights now.”

Many people thought that way.

Although they had already known the results, the Bai Family members’ faces still turned ashen when Lord Lang announced the results for the right to the mayoral position.

Bai Sheng did not say another word and left the stage to join his group of Bai Family members, coldly looking at Founder Yang who was standing in front of Lord Lang.

At this point Lord Lang’s crisp voice sounded: “The Yang Family has now obtained the mayoral rights, and hence hold the governmental role in Poplar Town. Yang Cangqiong will be the first mayor of Poplar Town. Poplar Town is a town governed by my Lingwu Family, and the mayoral position represents the authority of the Lingwu Family. If any of you were to challenge the authority of

the mayor, it would be akin to challenging the honour of my Lingwu Family!”

With the protection of the Lingwu Family, Founder Yang could be considered the overlord in Poplar Town right now.

Although he wore a cloak, the frosty look in Lord Lang’s eyes still sent shivers down Bai Sheng and the others’ spines. They knew that Lord Lang’s words were more or less directed at them.

“Giving me a warning, huh, but if my Bai Family was to have 3 members in the Deity Dan Realm, wouldn’t these mayoral rights just become meaningless? Also, if I were to kill Yang Cangqiong, would the Lingwu Family even remember this small place called Poplar Town?”

“Oh well, you guys already know about the Soul Diffusion Fruit, so let’s just have a battle for it. If you were to die in Big Barren Mountain, how would the Lingwu Family know that we were the ones who committed the deed?”

Thinking this, Bai Sheng eyes revealed a vicious expression and Bai Li, who was standing beside him, also revealed a smiling face which harboured evil intentions towards Founder Yang.

At this point, Lord Lang took a dark yellow coloured cloth pouch, which actually had a blood red coloured seal engraved on it and a mysterious spirit energy emitting from it.

Seeing this strange pouch, both Bai Li and Bai Sheng’s pupils contracted, and the others too let a coveting expression.

“It’s actually a cosmos pouch!”

Yang Qingxuan, who was beside Long Chen, also let out an excited gaze and seeing Long Chen’s skeptical look, he then said: “The cosmos pouch has a magical effect and can contain things, don’t belittle this small pouch. The space inside is probably as big as a pavilion, it is a cultivator’s necessity when they travel! This cosmos pouch, can more or less fit in all the valuables of our Yang Family inside.”

After hearing Yang Qingxuan words, Long Chen had then finally remembered that there was such an object like this.

Indeed, if one were to travel outside while carrying so many valuables, it would definitely be more convenient with the cosmos pouch. Long Chen recalled how much of a hassle it was when he had to carry the 500 spirit jades on him that time.

At this point, all of the gazes were coveting the cosmos pouch. Lord Lang continued announcing: “The Yang Family has become the government in this town, and this is all conferred by my Lingwu Family. If the Yang Family are able to bring forth some achievements and manage the mayoral position well, the Lingwu Family may have more to confer!”

The Lingwu Family’s rewards will naturally not be petty, and although many people have already acknowledged that the Yang Family should hold the mayoral rights in Poplar Town, they were still rather envious of the Lingwu Family’s conferment, especially the Bai Family members. After seeing that what originally should have been theirs land into Founder Yang hands, the armrest of the chair Bai Sheng was sitting on was crushed into pieces.

Right now, the title has been conferred and rewards have been given. Lord Lang then said to Founder Yang: “If you work to your utmost, there will definitely be reciprocation! I will return to this Poplar Town at a later date.”

Seeing that Lord Lang was about to leave, Founder Yang hurriedly said: “I bid you farewell, Lord Lang!”

However, he never thought Lord Lang would turn his vision towards Long Chen and then say: “You follow me.”

Long Chen was stumped. He then followed Lord Lang behind the plaza and into a small alley. Over ten thousand people looked blankly at Long Chen as he followed Lord Lang, not knowing what Lord Lang had in mind.

“Could it be that Lord Lang wants to bring him back to Yuanling City to nurture him after seeing his innate talent?”

This possibility was what everyone had on their minds.

Even Founder Yang had this thought right now. But deep in his heart, he would be extremely happy if Long Chen was able to receive better nurture.

As for Bai Sheng and Bai Li, they both looked at each other and furrowed their brows.

“Second Brother, do you think Lord Lang wants to bring him along?”

Bai Li smirked and then said sarcastically: “You are thinking too much, he is

merely at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. In Yuanling City, that is only considered trash, At his age, there are already a ton of cultivators at the late phase of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and Lord Lang is a super genius in the Lingwu Family. That runt only has the role of a clown in his eyes.

Only after hearing Bai Li's words, did Bai Sheng heave a sigh of relief. However, when he recalled that the rewards were conferred to Founder Yang and that Yang Cangqiong became the mayor of Poplar Town, he was extremely unwilling to accept it.

Because Lord Lang did not say he was leaving yet, these ten thousand people did not dare to leave, and so they waited anxiously.

Lord Lang only took off his cloak after walking into the alley, revealing a face with beautiful features. And after removing his cloak, the stern and cold demeanour had instantly vanished, and what replaced it was a childish aura.

This change was a little too abrupt, and Long Chen could barely react. His thoughts were rather obscene, and since he considered himself to be slightly familiar with Lord Lang, he did not make do with any formalities, smiling and asking: "Why did Lord Lang look for me? Could it be that you have fallen for me?"

Lord Lang's expression suddenly turned to stone. After a while, he then smiled bitterly: "Do you always speak so disrespectfully all the time? Don't call me Lord Lang, after listening to you guys calling me this the past few days, I feel extremely uncomfortable. I am called Mo Xiaolang. You can just call me Xiaolang."

Mo Xiaolang?

Long Chen muttered and repeated this name a few times, and he suddenly felt several hundred times closer to Lord Lang. Thus, he sized up this youth, and seeing that Lord Lang was staring at him blankly, he said: “Why are you looking at me?”

Mo Xiaolang looked a little embarrassed and said: “Seeing that you have actually turned into a Beast Warrior and that you could actually obtain a method to cultivate in the ways of a Beast Warrior in this small Poplar Town, I am rather surprised. However, this is your secret, so it is not appropriate for me to ask. Being able to go from the second level of the Dragon Pulse Realm to the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm in a month or so of time, your talent is not ordinary, so I wanted to ask you if you are willing to go back with me to the Lingwu Family. I think you will be able to obtain better fostering.

Mo Xiaolang seemed to hold his talent in high regard. Long Chen knew it, and had expected these words just now.

Long Chen did indeed want to go to a greater haven and cultivate himself, however, there were still things for him to do in Poplar Town right now so he could only say apologetically: “Honestly speaking, I am extremely appreciative and touched that you recognise my worth, but I still have things to do in Poplar Town, so.....”

Mo Xiaolang pursed his lips and said: “Is it because of the Soul Diffusion Fruits? Indeed, it is rather untimely right now, I have to rush back to Yuanling City to settle some matters, otherwise I could have gotten those Soul Diffusion Fruits for you.”

Long Chen was stumped at this point; he always felt that this youth in front of

him was rather nice. Could it just be because he had seen Long Chen saving a little kid's life before, or did this fellow actually have.....a weird orientation?

Long Chen's hair stood on ends, and his gaze towards Mo Xiaolang changed a little.

Seeing Long Chen's expression change, Mo Xiaolang scratched his head in bewilderment and asked: "Are you afraid of me snatching away the Soul Diffusion Fruit? The Soul Diffusion Fruit is already of no value to me, so you don't have to worry. However, if you want to fight for this Soul Diffusion Fruit, then come to Yuanling City in the future. Obtaining the Soul Diffusion Fruit is indeed greatly beneficial for you."

Seeing that this fellow's apprehension was heightened, Long Chen finally knew that he had been too viscious.

However, this Mo Xiaolang had good intentions, so Long Chen hurriedly said: "If the matter in Poplar Town is resolved, I will probably go to Yuanling City."

Mo Xiaolang nodded his head and said: "That is fine too." Then he frowned and said: "Those two old geezers from the Bai Family are not weak in strength and it is not appropriate for me to strike, so you had better take more caution. Entering the Human Dan Realm before you come to Yuanling City would be your best bet."

Then, he actually took out another cosmos pouch and said: "Take this as a gift for meeting you; it will be more convenient for you when you travel next time."

Seeing that this youth was so serious and meticulous, and that his every tone

of speaking had contained care and concern for Long Chen, Long Chen was extremely touched.

He took the cosmos pouch and then looked at Mo Xiaolang with eyes filled with sincerity, and he said seriously: “This is not considered a gift for meeting me, if not for the [Celestial Core Technique] that you gave me before, I would not have such accomplishments today. Xiaolang, I really have to thank you for that.

Mo Xiaolang was a little embarrassed, but then he smiled and said: “To me, the [Celestial Core Technique] no longer had any use. You being able to use it to the full potential can be considered doing it justice. Since that’s the case, I will first return to Yuanling City. This cosmos pouch has my insignia, if you bring it to Lingwu Family, naturally there will be people who will bring you to see me.

Long Chen nodded his head.

Mo Xiaolang looked at him for another moment and then said: “I still don’t know your name.”

Long Chen was startled and said: “I am Long Chen.”

“Why is your surname Long if you are a member of the Yang Family?”

“.....My mother is from the Yang Family and my Father’s surname is Long.”

Mo Xiaolang nodded his head and said: “No wonder.”

Long Chen was still rather confused. Why would this Mo Xiaolang treat him

this well? At this point, seeing that Mo Xiaolang was about to leave, he then asked uncontrollably: “Giving me the [Celestial Core Technique] and this cosmos pouch, why do you treat me so well?”

As if anticipating Long Chen’s question, Mo Xiaolang gave a faint smile and then said blandly: “To be honest, I am not sure of it myself either, but sometimes the feeling that you give me is rather similar to my elder brother’s. He was rather rowdy in his mannerisms, and often instigated me to do bad things when I was very young, peeping at the maids of my residence when they were showering, or lying to my father about having been kidnapped by someone.....”

Mo Xiaolang’s face had revealed an expression of happiness when he said this; however, speaking of these scandalous things in front of Long Chen seemed rather inappropriate, so he smiled awkwardly.

So this was the case.....

Long Chen smiled and said: “You are already so powerful. I’m sure your elder brother must be stronger than you, right?”

Very soon Mo Xiaolang face darkened, and then hatred was replaced in his eyes. He clenched his fist, and then shook his head, saying: “Originally he was more powerful than me, but he is dead, they are all dead.....”

Long Chen was startled, seeing this agonised expression on Mo Xiaolang, he thought of his own feelings back when Long Qinglan died. He bit his lips, sighed and then said: “Sorry, I brought up your tragic past.”

“No worries. It is only that I was useless, and am not able to take revenge for

them even now. Right now I still have some matters to settle in Yuanling City, so I have got to go. Remember to look for me when you come to Yuanling City!”

“Definitely!”

Seeing the Mo Xiaolang’s leaving figure, Long Chen suddenly thought of the words said by Founder Yang.

“Kid, let me give you a warning. When you are out creating a name for yourself in the future and have someone you can call your brother, you definitely must be clear of his intentions by checking if his heart is made of poison or blood.....”

Suddenly, Long Chen lips curled at the corners of his mouth.

“I am hot-blooded. Xiaolang, what about you?”

Phantom Glass Sword

When Long Chen reappeared again, Founder Yang had a mildly disappointed look on his face. He knew that Lord Lang seemed to only mildly appreciate Long Chen's talents.

The Bai Family members heaved a heavy sigh of relief. If Long Chen was to follow Lord Lang back to Yuanling City, even if they were able to get rid of the Yang Family members, they would still be afraid of Long Chen achieving tremendous progress in Yuanling City and coming back to seek revenge.

"When even a talented individual like him is not accepted into the Lingwu Family, one can see how high the pedestal is for the requirements to enter the Lingwu Family!

At this point, Founder Yang had already regrouped with the rest of the Yang Family members. Now that Founder Yang had become the mayor of Poplar Town, the various factions had all hurriedly gathered around this side, while the Bai Family's side was rather sparse.

"Chen Er, where is Lord Lang?"

"He has already returned to Yuanling City."

Hearing that Lord Lang had already gone, the masses all expressed their congratulations to Founder Yang and left.

The ten thousand people were prepared to leave this field, but at this moment,

the Bai Family members had actually walked to where the Yang Family members were. At the forefront were Bai Sheng and Bai Li. Their cold gazes were on Founder Yang and Long Chen, and their eyes were filled with fury and unwillingness.

Looking at the Bai Family members who had put up such an overbearing front, it was obvious that they were here to stir trouble.

At this point, as the Bai Family members got closer, Long Chen could feel it more clearly. The strength of a mighty ninth level Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator.

When only a short distance was left to the Yang Family, the Bai Family members halted in their footsteps.

Bai Sheng and Bai Li both had darkened expressions. At this point they faced Founder Yang, who showed no fear despite facing these two experts.

At this point Bai Sheng sneered and said: “Yang Family? Mayor? What a load of bullshit.”

Founder Yang could not be bothered to speak with him. However, Long Chen was extremely displeased with their appearance, so he smirked and retorted: “You two little Bai dogs were wagging your tails when Lord Lang was here. After he has left, you want to bite?”

The behaviour of these two Bai experts had been described beautifully by Long Chen, and the others all guffawed momentarily. Having actually been publicly shamed by Long Chen, these two Bai experts’ faces immediately turned more unpleasant.

They looked at each other in the eye and then Bai Li looked towards Long Chen and said: “What an articulative bastard, thinking of yourself as a genius, but never knowing that the difference from a real genius is 180,000 miles away. Lord Lang did not take you in, which is your misfortune. In eight days. I can predict that you will only live for another eight days.”

When he mentioned the number eight, he smirked.

Long Chen knew he was talking about the battle for the Soul Diffusion Fruit.

However he still put on a skeptical look and said: “This little Bai dog’s words, as a human being I naturally don’t understand its words.”

Bai Li’s face momentarily coloured with embarrassment and fury, but Bai Sheng restrained him and whispered: “Second brother, this bastard is very articulate. Bickering with him will only anger ourselves, and anyway it won’t be much longer before their whole Yang Family will perish. We don’t have to compete like this with them here today.”

Bai Li coldly laughed and said: “Oh well, we’ll let them be smug for another few days, and then.....”

“Oh right, Second Brother, is your brother from the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect dependable? We are not a match for his strength, what if.....”

“Big brother don’t worry, if it’s my brother I can naturally depend on him and with his ability as a Deity Dan Realm, the Yang Family, no matter if its Yang Cangqiong or this so called genius, are just like clowns in his eyes.

Bai Sheng indifferently gave both Founder Yang and Long Chen another glance, imagining that they both would be corpses in the near future. He sneered in his heart and thought: "Right now you guys are still happy. When the time comes and you see each and every member of your Yang Family dying, then you will regret ever being born into this world."

Seeing that both families were about to fight, the hearts of the masses were extremely nervous. But after seeing that the Bai Family members had only said a few words and then walked away with their tails between their legs, the masses had all laughed, because the performance of this Bai Family was just too pathetic.

But only Long Chen furrowed his brows. He had a premonition that the battle for the Soul Diffusion Fruit would have huge collateral damage, and if one was not careful, the whole of the Yang Family might be consigned to eternal damnation!

If it were two months ago, Long Chen wouldn't be too concerned about the Yang Family if anything happened, but now when he finally had someone he needed to protect here, the life and death of Yang Family had already been closely intertwined with the fate of his life.

"So..... Bai Family. Only when you are eradicated completely, can I be at peace."

Returning to the Yang Family, Founder Yang once again gathered everyone over. One reason was to put in order the procedures as a mayor, and the other was about the reward.

At this point, Founder Yang had detained Yang Qingxuan, Yang Xueqing, Yang Yuntian, Yang Wu and Long Chen. He took out the cosmos pouch and said: “This is the reward from Lingwu Family. I have already inspected it. It is separated into 20,000 spirit jades, 3 pieces of deity jades, and also an advanced Huang grade spirit sword, plus an advanced Huang grade swordplay technique scroll.

As he said that, Founder Yang revealed an expression of glee.

Without even mentioning the 20,000 spirit jades, something that was almost equal to all of Yang Family’s wealth, each of the deity jades was the concentrated form of countless spirit jades. Basically each of these deity jade’s spirit energy was equivalent to the energy contained within 100,000 spirit jades! Based on these rewards, it was already akin to 50,000 spirit jades.

Deity jades, usually only a Deity Dan Realm cultivator would be able to afford one.

Each deity jade could be exchanged for 10,000 spirit jades, but 10,000 spirit jades may not be able to be exchanged for 1 piece of deity jade. This was because the rarity of deity jades was much higher.

With these 3 pieces of deity jades, the cultivation of the Yang Family members could be greatly increased. As such, when they all heard of them gaining these 3 pieces of deity jade, they were all shocked, yet elated.

Furthermore, when they heard that they had gotten an advanced Huang grade spirit sword and an advanced Huang grade swordplay technique scroll, their expressions were even more ecstatic.

One must know, what the Yang Family has in their possession is only an advanced Huang grade [Seal of the Dragons]. Now in the aspect of monetary wealth and technique, both have been doubled. Coupled with the advanced Huang grade spirit sword, it was even more amazing.

There were only a few of these spirit swords in Poplar Town, not to mention an advanced Huang grade spirit sword. With this spirit sword and the advanced Huang grade swordplay technique, their might would definitely be greatly increased!

At this point, Founder Yang took out the swordplay technique scroll, and naturally, he took out the advanced Huang grade spirit sword at the same time. It was as if it was forged with glass, containing a tinge of azure. A grand aura emanated from this spirit sword, which felt extremely sharp!

The sharpness of this blade can definitely cut a strand of hair in two if one dropped onto it.

“This sword is named Phantom Glass Sword!”

The Yang Family members looked at this Phantom Glass Sword, and they all exclaimed in amazement because this spirit sword contained a huge energy wave. If it was used for battle, one’s strength would definitely achieve a higher level!

“As for this advanced Huang grade swordplay technique, its name is [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash]!”

Just based on this name only, one would know that it was not a simple sword.

Thinking of this [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] scroll, it would definitely not pale in comparison towards the [Dark Heavenly Finger] or [Seal of the Dragons] and if coupled with this Phantom Glass Sword, it might even be stronger!

Founder Yang looked at everyone and said: “Today I have held you guys back, because I want all of you to decide as a whole, who this Phantom Glass Sword and [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] scroll should belong to. The swordplay technique can definitely be practiced by many, but there is only one Phantom Glass Sword, so..... Right now I am of old age, and I have already spent a lot of effort to learn the [Seal of the Dragons]. Now, I only wish to concentrate in breaking through the Deity Dan Realm. Therefore this Phantom Glass Sword will belong to one of you.”

Then he looked at Long Chen and said to the rest: “Chen Er has done the family a great service this time, so I will hand over this Phantom Glass Sword to him, what do all of you say?”

Seeing Long Chen obtain this Phantom Glass Sword was naturally what everyone had in mind. Yang Qingxuan and the rest had all nodded their heads in unison. However Long Chen said: “Grandfather, having the [Seal of the Dragons] is enough for me, and I am not planning to learn swordplay technique yet. Why don’t you hand over this spirit sword to someone else.”

One reason why Long Chen did not want this Phantom Glass Sword was because he already had [Seal of the Dragons] which was of a similar level. The other reason was that Lingxi is the expert with swords and with her around, Long Chen did not plan to learn the [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash].

What he needed was an even stronger technique and the Yang Family would need this [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] more than he did.

Seeing Long Chen speak determinedly, Founder Yang thought that even if Long Chen had learned the [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] his strength might not be any greater than with the [Seal of the Dragons], so he nodded his head. He looked towards everyone else, and at this point Yang Qingxuan bitterly smiled and said: “Father, I am the same as you, the [Seal of the Dragons] is more than enough, and learning this [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] will only be biting off more than I can chew.”

Yang Xueqing too nodded her head. Right now only Yang Wu and Yang Yuntian had not spoken. Yang Yuntian, seeing both his brother and sister expressing their opinion, also said: “I have not reached the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and my [Seal of the Dragons] is not yet mastered, not to mention this [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash].”

Yang Wu too said: “I am in the same situation as Second Uncle, and we will speak of it when I master [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] in the future.”

At this point Long Chen suggested: “The two people who have not learnt [Seal of the Dragons] are Lingyue and Lingqing, and they are both in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. This [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] scroll, let them practice it first and then see who will first master it successfully, and then hand over the Phantom Glass Sword to one of them, how about it?”

The Yang Family members knew that Long Chen and Yang Lingqing’s relationship was close, yet Long Chen was not biased towards Yang Lingyue and actually let them earn the ownership of the Phantom Glass Sword with their talent. This can be considered being completely impartial and fair.

Founder Yang nodded his head and said: “Then let us do that. As for the spirit

jades and deity jades, I will first hold onto them, and distribute them based on merit. Chen Er had some accomplishments today, so I will hand over a deity jade to him.

Naturally the members here did not object.

Long Chen had not seen any deity jades before, so he did not reject it and directly took the deity jade from Founder Yang's hands. A second later, a dense and natural spirit energy assaulted his nostrils, and with a light whiff, Long Chen felt his whole body relax.

Founder Yang laughed and then said to the masses: "Right now the Yang Family has become the government in Poplar Town. Qingxuan and Yuntian, follow me to handle some trifle procedures, the rest may take their leave now."

Yang Xueqing and Yang Wu nodded their heads, but as they were about to leave, Long Chen suddenly said: "Wait."

With bewildered expressions, they all looked at Long Chen who had inhaled deeply and said: "Grandfather, do you know what item the Soul Diffusion Fruit is?"

Hearing the name of the Soul Diffusion Fruit, Founder Yang's body momentarily shuddered and then he excitedly said: "You know of the Soul Diffusion Fruit's location?"

DBWG Chapter 47

A Male Prodigy's Three Pisses

Only then did Long Chen tell everything he knew about the Soul Diffusion Fruit to the rest of them. Founder Yang's excited expression changed and he furrowed his brows when he heard that the Bai Family had discovered it too.

Long Chen did not speak of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, for fear that Founder Yang might panic.

At last Founder Yang exhaled loudly and said: "So it was because of this Soul Diffusion Fruit that Bai Sheng wanted to exterminate my Yang Family. It is no wonder. Since ancient times, people can die for wealth, and birds die for food.

Soon after, his face turned cold and said: "Since the Bai Family has become our Yang Family's archenemy, if they were to obtain the Soul Diffusion Fruit and allow Bai Sheng to breakthrough into the Deity Dan Realm, then my Yang Family will definitely perish without a doubt. So for this Soul Diffusion Fruit, I, Yang Cangqiong, must definitely fight with him for it!"

Yang Qingxuan too nodded his head and said: "A total of 3 Soul Diffusion Fruits. If the Bai Family obtains even one, our Yang Family will no longer have any standing in Poplar Town. It seems like this battle cannot be avoided. Right now, the Bai Family has two cultivators in the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, as well as in the eight level. As for our Yang Family....."

All of the people directed their gazes at Long Chen, and Founder Yang nervously asked: "Long Chen, what exactly is your level of ability now?"

Originally, the Yang Family had a slight edge over the Bai Family, but they never thought that Bai Li would suddenly appear. And Long Chen was the biggest variable in the Yang Family, so they were all extremely concerned with his ability.

Long Chen thought for a while and said: “Grandfather, if we were to battle, you just have to deal with Bai Sheng. As for the rest, and any unforeseen circumstances, let me deal with them!”

Long Chen’s words meant that he already had the ability to deal with Bai Li. Founder Yang heaved a sigh of relief and said: “If that’s the case, then we are barely able to match our enemy’s strength. However, the variables in the battle are extremely great, so we had better prepare during the next few days. If the Bai Family is not exterminated, I cannot rest nor eat in peace.....”

If any of the so called Crimson Blood Sacred Sect were to come, then it would definitely not be an evenly matched fight, but a one-sided match instead. Looking at this old man’s ageing face, Long Chen could not bear to tell him this truth.

“Oh well. I will just work a little harder, and if there are any unforeseen circumstances, I will ensure that our Yang Family does not come to any harm as long as I am alive!

Long Chen laid on his own bed.

“Hey, are you still thinking of the battle for the Soul Diffusion Fruit?”

Lingxi emerged from the Lingxi Sword and looked curiously at Long Chen, who was seemingly deep in thought.

“There isn’t much to think about. Right now, I am in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and after [Dragon Soul Transformation], the reinforced body and tenfold quality of normal Qi, naturally I would not be afraid of Bai Li. However, if that Crimson Blood Sacred Sect were to send even just a ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator, then our Yang Family would most likely meet with misfortune.”

Lingxi stood in front of his chest, and after looking at Long Chen for a while, she said grudgingly: “A fellow like you, last time you hated your mother so much, but now you can’t wait to fight to protect her. What a weird person. I have long told you: how could there be a mother in this world who does not love her son. Only you thought cynically.”

Suddenly, Long Chen got up from his bed and said to Lingxi: “Go back in. I am going out.”

It wasn’t easy for Lingxi to appear, so she did not comply and pursed her lips, asking: “You should be practicing your cultivation diligently, what are you going out for?”

Long Chen did not reason with her and walked out of the room on his own. Lingxi furiously looked at Long Chen and could only helplessly return back into the Lingxi Sword.

“Xiao Xi, how much longer will the effects of the Dream Spirit Grass last for?”

Suddenly asked this by Long Chen, Xiao Xi said a little bitterly: “I don’t know. Probably about ten days or so.”

Long Chen nodded his head. Right now he had a decent level of strength, and even if he did not use [Dragon Soul Transformation], he was already unbeatable in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Exiting the Yang Family, he immediately headed towards the direction of the Bai Family whilst concealing his tracks. Lingxi momentarily asked nervously: “Hey, what are you going to the Bai Family for?”

“A scamp like you wouldn’t know a thing about what I am about to do!”

Lingxi was momentarily so annoyed that she could not be bothered with him anymore.

Very soon, they arrived at the Bai Family and Long Chen hid at a covert area and said: “Xiao Xi. Later when I go in, if there are any eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivators from the Bai Family appearing, give me a warning.”

“No, I don’t even care if you die.”

After coaxing for a long while, only then did this little princess change her mind and agree to help. Long Chen had actually regretted it a million times, he decided not to say such spiteful things to Lingxi in the future.

After sneaking into the Bai Family, Long Chen carefully moved around, and Lingxi was unable to curb her curiosity, asking: “Hey, what are you looking for exactly?”

“Looking for Bai Shidong.”

Lingxi thought of the prodigy that peed twice in his pants, and thinking of it, she found it extremely funny. But he did not know that Long Chen was looking for him. After a while, Lingxi suddenly said: "Found him, he is sleeping in that room."

It was almost noon now, and Bai Shidong was actually still sleeping, Long Chen was really impressed. Following Lingxi's guidance, he entered the room, and as expected, Bai Shidong was still sleeping soundly. He had even drooled all over his pillow, and the blanket had been kicked onto the floor.

Without saying another word, Long Chen immediately wrung his neck and forcefully shook him awake. When Bai Shidong opened his drooping eyelids and suddenly saw the devil Long Chen of a nightmare who was wringing his neck at the moment, he was so frightened and scared silly that he wanted to scream. But his neck was grabbed tightly by Long Chen, and a not single sound could be produced.

"Don't move, and don't make any noise. If not, die."

Bai Shidong quivered and finally woke from his slumber. Not daring to move anymore, he looked at Long Chen, his eyes brimming with tears.

Seeing this disappointing and unpalatable expression, Long Chen got furious and said: "Stop weeping like a wimp! I will just ask you a question, and if you obediently answer, I will naturally not claim your life. But if you try to do anything funny, Bai Shichen and the rest will be your role model!"

Thinking of the miserable state of Bai Shichen and the rest, Bai Shidong suddenly turned pale. Long Chen knew this fellow did not have any backbone at all, and could not be bothered anymore. He asked: "Tell me, how did you get the

Dream Spirit Grass?”

After hearing the three words ‘Dream Spirit Grass’, Lingxi finally knew of Long Chen’s purpose, and thinking that he had actually placed himself in danger by entering the Bai Family’s residence for her, Lingxi was extremely touched.

“Bad guy, why didn’t you say so earlier. If you did, I wouldn’t have been angry with you.....”

Lingxi had a very sweet feeling in her heart.

Long Chen’s question made Bai Shidong speak out urgently: “I’ll tell you, I’ll tell you. It was sold to me by the Liang Family’s Master, Liang Chen. You should know him?”

Liang Chen? Long Chen had some inklings of who he was. He was the master of a small faction in Poplar Town, and his strength had reached the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

Now that he had already found out what he wanted to know, Long Chen prepared to leave the Bai residence. However, if he were to just leave, this Bai Shidong would immediately call for help. That would definitely cause trouble, so making Bai Shidong unconscious was necessary.

After Bai Shidong finished talking, he thought that Long Chen would not hurt him, but who knew that when he looked at Long Chen’s eyes, there was a vicious gaze. He was so scared that even his soul flew away, and at this point, Long Chen already sent him a punch, knocking him out.

Turning away, the smell of piss suddenly infiltrated his senses, and Long Chen felt that he could immediately fall onto his knees and prostrate in front of Bai Shidong.

“I have seen you a total of three times, and each time you have rewarded me with piss. Such an extravagant gift. I feel so pampered.....”

Seeing this scene from inside the Lingxi Sword, Lingxi also had chuckled to no end.

Very soon, he left the Bai Family. Only then did Long Chen head towards the Liang Family. The Liang Family was situated at a corner in Poplar Town, so only after a while, did Long Chen manage to get there.

The master of the Liang Family was a big-sized man. When Long Chen had killed Bai Zhanxiong, he had been there and had also been thoroughly frightened by Long Chen’s methods. At this point, seeing Long Chen looking for him, he was a little afraid as he welcomed Long Chen into his residence and received him warmly with wine.

Long Chen went straight to the point and said: “Liang Family Master, this time I’m looking for you mainly because of the Dream Spirit Grass. I heard that Bai Shidong had bought a Dream Spirit Grass from you, so I was wondering if you still had any left? If it’s about money, I will definitely not treat you unfairly.

Hearing Long Chen speak of the Dream Spirit Grass, Liang Family Master revealed a bitter expression and said: “My sincere apologies. I have only stumbled across a Dream Spirit Grass once in my life, and I sold it to Bai Shidong. If you want more Dream Spirit Grass, I don’t have any solutions for it.”

Long Chen was not someone to give up that easily, so he continued asking: “Then could you let me know how Liang Family Master came across this Dream Spirit Grass?”

Seeing that Long Chen seemed to want this Dream Spirit Grass rather badly and in the Poplar Town, the Yang Family was now the overlord, naturally the Liang Family Master wanted to establish some connections so he said: “It was in the Desolate Beast Domain. I can roughly point out the location of the Dream Spirit Grass to you on a map. However, Young Master Chen, the dangers in this Desolate Beast Domain are aplenty.....”

Long Chen interrupted him and said: “If you were to give the map to me, I will definitely repay you in the future!”

Only then did the Liang Family Master nod his head and allowed his second brother to host Long Chen, while he went to prepare the map.

After an hour, Long Chen held the map and walked out of the Liang residence, heading back to the Yang Family.

“Hey, there isn’t much time left till the ripening of the Soul Diffusion Fruit, and right now, the Yang Family needs you the most. And you still want to go to the Desolate Beast Domain to find the Dream Spirit Grass for me?”

“The Soul Diffusion Fruit indeed does have around eight more days before it ripens, and I want to take this opportunity to try and get you some spirit healing medicine. During the battle for the Soul Diffusion Fruit, I don’t know if accidents will happen, and if I were to die, at least you can endure a little longer with the spirit medicine.....And this should give you a little more hope to survive.”

Seeing Long Chen thinking for her, Lingxi suddenly felt like sobbing, and although there were no tears, she still cried to her heart's content.

Long Chen felt cold sweat form and said: "Girl, what are you crying for, I am only saying that I might die. It's not like I have already died!"

The main purpose in returning to the Yang Family now was to bid farewell to the members. However, Yang Xueqing was not in the residence, and Founder Yang was out in town busy handling the matters of the mayor's role. Only then did Long Chen look for Yang Lingqing, and this girl was studiously reading the [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash].

Long Chen's arrival gave her a shock.

"What are you looking at? Hiding it behind you, could it be some erotic material?" Long Chen teased Yang Lingqing.

Yang Lingqing's face darkened and she took out the [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] scroll, saying: "Look at it and tell me if this is an erotic picture. How is there an elder brother like you who is always so improper."

Long Chen casually flipped a few pages and remembering that Lingqing and Yang Lingyue were competing for the Phantom Glass Sword, he wanted to give her some pointers. He never expected Yang Lingqing to snatch the scroll back already and say: "Don't even think of wanting to help me. This is a fair match between Lingyue Elder Sister and me. If you were to help me, my victory won't be that splendid, and naturally, I wouldn't be able to say that I am better suited for the Phantom Glass Sword.

Seeing the stubborn temper of this girl, Long Chen suddenly felt that her attitude was somewhat similar to his.

“It’s no big deal if I don’t teach you, since I can’t be bothered. Oh right. Lingqing, I am going out for the next few days. When Grandfather and the rest return, do help me convey this message to them and say that I will definitely return at the most crucial moment.”

Yang Lingqing looked at Long Chen suspiciously and said: “What is the most crucial moment? Where are you going? Why so mysterious? It couldn’t be the Emerald Jade House, could it?”

Burning Heavens Mountain Plains

This was first time Long Chen entered the Desolate Beast Domain from the Big Barren Mountain. Previously, he ended up here because of Lingxi's wild flying and they had stumbled in from who knows where.

The last time he entered Desolate Beast Domain, Long Chen could barely deal with a fourth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator. Now that his strength had risen dramatically, if he used [Dragon Soul Transformation], he could basically catch up and fight evenly with a ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator.

With this strength, as long as Long Chen does not meet an overpowering beast like the Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf, he should not be in any danger.

In the Big Barren Mountain, the strongest demonic beast was only at the eighth level of the Huang grade. But the Desolate Beast Domain was a different matter. Although the beasts would naturally get stronger the deeper one enters, one could not eliminate the possibility that some stronger monsters might choose to go for a stroll in the outer area.

For instance the Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf. It did not belong to the area that it had appeared in last time.

So even now with a certain level of ability, Long Chen was still extremely cautious.

There was a foggy mist inside the Desolate Beast Domain and an endless sight of grey mountains and strange dead trees. An aura of desolation permeated the

air and the atmosphere reeked of blood. Unknown demonic beast remains littered the ground. Some had decayed longer than others, a few which would disintegrate into fine dust with only a light touch.

Entering this place once again had made Lingxi a little afraid. Originally she was resting on Long Chen's shoulder but after seeing this image of desolation she hurriedly returned to the Lingxi Sword.

"From the map, the location of the Dream Spirit Grass is in the outer area of Desolate Beast Domain, unlike the previous time when it was much deeper. That location is called the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains. Let's rush over there now; at the most it will take us just half a day to get there."

After confirming the location and direction and with an acute perception from Lingxi to lead the way, if they were to encounter any strong demonic beasts, they could hide far away. If it were weak demonic beasts then they would just charge through it. So basically the journey was extremely smooth.

Half a day's time gradually passed.

"The Burning Heavens Mountain Plains may be on the outer area of the Desolate Beast Domain, but its size is extremely huge too. It's not certain if there are still any Dream Spirit Grass left. It looks like we have to look for it carefully."

"If there isn't any then let us go back first, that Soul Diffusion Fruit....." Lingxi said worriedly

"Damn, we haven't even started looking and you said there isn't any. You have no will at all."

Although the sky in Desolate Beast Domain was always dark, there were still differences between day and night. Normally during the night, due to visibility issues, it tends to be a little more dangerous.

Long Chen observed from afar that there was a group of mountains that were black in colour. However the night was approaching soon, so it was not suitable for them to continue walking.

“Oh well, it will be very difficult to find the Dream Spirit Grass at night. Let’s carry on our journey tomorrow morning.”

Lingxi used her sensory perception on the surroundings, and this actually drained her spirit energy. She too was extremely tired, so when Long Chen said to rest she heaved a sigh of relief.

“In Desolate Beast Domain, the lairs and caves of demonic beasts are littered everywhere. I have to find a lair and get rid of the demonic beasts inside, so that there will be some safety.”

After making up his mind, Long Chen began his search, and in the vicinity there were many mountain plains, so these caves were easy to find. Once Long Chen got rid of the fifth and sixth level Huang grade monsters inside, he began to clean up a little. Then he started a fire and prepared to barbecue some meat.

At this point Lingxi had already gone into deep slumber.

When the flame had just started, there came some scratching noises from outside. Long Chen stood up and at this point two robust looking men entered

the cave. Upon seeing that there was actually a young man inside, they were startled. One of them who had a large physique, and wore a demonic beast pelt, ridiculed and said: “You young brat, actually dare to come to Desolate Beast Domain, your guts aren’t small.”

The other was a skinny and cultured looking man. He sized Long Chen up and laughed as he said to the person beside him: “He seems to be already in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. If only he knew his place, who knows he could have become a respected figure somewhere when he matures, what a pity.....”

Both of them never give Long Chen another look, treating him like air and completely ignoring him. Then, as if minding their own business, they entered the cave and sat beside the fire that Long Chen had started.

Long Chen inwardly sized up these two men and he put a frightened expression on his face. These two people most likely discovered that someone was here, so they entered out of curiosity. Upon seeing that Long Chen’s strength was merely at the seventh level Dragon Pulse Realm, it posed no threats to them at all, so they were at ease, and conveniently stayed in this cave.

“Both of them are merely in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, which isn’t a match for me. However it seems like they frequently visit this Desolate Beast Domain and should be rather familiar with the area. I should use this opportunity to find information about the Dream Spirit Grass and these two people aren’t Bai Shidong. Violence may not be a good solution. Right now they are making light of me, I might as well act like a ‘grandson’ right now.”

[TL Note: (装装孙子) To pretend to be a grandson who listens attentively and does things as an elder’s wishes]

Thinking of which, Long Chen immediately put on his 'grandson' demeanour and eagerly moved to where the two people were and said flatteringly: "Long Chen, pays his respect to Big Brothers. Both Big Brothers have such a profound level of strength. I, as your younger brother, am extremely impressed. Since we have met by fate and we seemed to be fated to come across each other's paths in Desolate Beast Domain, it is my extreme honour to meet you. May I know the names of these two Big Brothers?"

Originally these two thought that Long Chen would have been one of those arrogant and solitary kind, like a brat who belittled others based on their small achievements. They never thought that Long Chen was actually like a little manservant, as the proverb says, one does not reach out to hit a smiling person. If Long Chen was furious at these two for invading his cave, they could have just killed him. But Long Chen actually smiled jovially and approached them, which made them feel nonplussed.

Seeing the gaze filled with respect on Long Chen's face, they looked at each other in the eye, and then the larger man said blandly: "I am Chen Xiongzhou and this is Feng Mingyang. We both come from Yuanling City."

So they were actually from Yuanling City! Long Chen always had placed Yuanling City in high esteem, now he could ask about the kind of existence that Yuanling City was.

"So it is Big Brother Chen and Big Brother Feng! Seeing the appearance of both Big Brothers, it seems like you have frequently visited the Desolate Beast Domain. Being able to come to these dangerous places often, your younger brother is extremely impressed. I loved to explore and take risks since I was young and this time I mustered enough courage to come to Desolate Beast Domain. I never expected that this Desolate Beast Domain was lurking with so

many dangers. If I haven't met both of you, I wouldn't know how to survive past this night."

Long Chen said these words with extreme conviction and sincerity, adding on a few phrases of flattery. These two men felt rather good about themselves and the contempt that they had held for Long Chen, now lessened.

"It's not like your Big Brother Chen wants to berate you, but with your age and ability you are simply courting death by coming into this Desolate Beast Domain.

After waiting for Chen Xiongzhou to finish speaking, Feng Mingyang stroked his beard, and also used a seniority tone to reproach Long Chen: "This kid is rather quick witted, however to survive in this world that is not enough. If you did not meet your Big Brothers and instead it was someone else, seeing a small kid like you here, they would most likely rob you of your wealth and claim your life!"

Long Chen hurriedly agreed, and even scolded himself for having no brains. Saying if he did not meet these two kind hearted Big Brothers, his corpse would definitely be lying in Desolate Beast Domain.

However he was extremely aware that these two people had actually wanted to kill him. If not for his quick witted actions, these two would have already taken his life.

What happened next was Long Chen hurriedly flattering them, about an hour later, both of them had felt extremely good from his flattery. They only felt that this Younger Brother, Long Chen, was very sensible and knew quite a few things.

"Oh yes, Younger Brother Long Chen. By camping here did you mean to enter

the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains?”

Long Chen nodded his head saying: “Indeed.”

Feng Mingyang nodded his head saying: “I never thought that even you would be able to sense that there’s something amiss at Burning Heavens Mountain Plains. These days Brother Chen and I have been observing the outskirts of these plains. The Burning Heavens Mountain Plains’ temperature suddenly increased to such a high degree, which seemed extremely strange. Even for us, we don’t dare enter. As for you with only seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, your guts are a little too much.

Long Chen was startled, and after a while he laughed bitterly : “To tell you the truth, the reason why I came to Burning Heavens Mountain Plains wasn’t that I discovered any abnormalities. Actually I just wanted to look for Dream Spirit Grass, do you know where they are in Burning Heavens Mountain Plains?

Hearing that Long Chen did not know about the changes in Burning Heavens Mountain Plains, they felt extremely frustrated for divulging this news. However after remembering that Long Chen was only in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, even if there were any treasures appearing in Burning Heavens Mountain Plains he wouldn’t be able to obtain it, so they felt a little comforted.

“These two are obviously here to look for treasures. Seeing a stranger like me here, they were naturally wary of me, and would want to silence me.....”

Long Chen’s goal was Dream Spirit Grass, so he did not want any unnecessary trouble. As such he hurriedly told them of his main goal.

Hearing these three words, Dream Spirit Grass, Feng Mingyang nodded his head and said: “The Burning Heavens Mountain Plains indeed have plenty of Dream Spirit Grass. We have been here to harvest some before, and roughly know of the location.....”

Long Chen was elated, he never thought that by acting like a ‘grandson’ he would gain such useful news and hurriedly said: “Could both Big Brothers kindly lead the way for me?”

Both of them exchanged glances. Right now it was only the two of them who knew about the changes in Burning Heavens Mountain Plains. With Long Chen’s appearance, they had actually wanted to finish him off when they first entered the cave to prevent any troubles from arising. But after seeing Long Chen’s young age, and already suspecting his grand background, they did not dare to strike first. After listening to Long Chen who had no concern with the changes in Burning Heavens Mountain Plains, along with Long Chen’s flattery being extremely comforting to them, they said: “Oh well, originally we wanted to inspect it tomorrow morning, there’s no harm in bringing you along. However dangers lurk at every corner in Burning Heavens Mountain Plains. Once the Dream Spirit Grass is found, you had better leave the place earlier to avoid dying in this place!”

Hearing this warning, Long Chen pretended not to have discovered that underlying meaning, and said gratefully: “Thank you Big Brothers, if I were to obtain the Dream Spirit Grass, I will definitely repay the both of you.”

He was extremely clear of what these two had in mind. After all, he had been mixing around for 16 years and could be considered as an extremely sly and cunning fellow.

“As both Big Brothers came from Yuanling City, could you tell me more of the

Lingwu Family?”

Seeing Long Chen abruptly asking this question, and also seeing that there was still some time before the sun rises, Feng Mingyang began to say out of boredom: “Don’t tell me you wish to enter the Lingwu Family? With your strength at this age, if after a few years you are in the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm you would be able to.”

“Are Big Brothers are also planning to enter the Lingwu Family?”

Chen Xiongzhou nodded his head and then sighed, saying: “One must pass a test if they wish to enter the Lingwu Family. One of the requirements is that the age cannot surpass 30 years old, while the strength has to be at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. Both of us are nearing 30, so this is our last chance. If we do not reach the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm before then, we will lose the qualifications to enter Lingwu Family.

Long Chen was inwardly surprised. In Poplar Town, a ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator can be considered as the top expert. But at Lingwu Family the requirement just to enter was already the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, along with their age of under 30. This disparity was extremely huge.

Seeing this shocked expression on Long Chen’s face, Chen Xiongzhou said: “It seems like you have not been to Yuanling City before and you will definitely not be able to imagine how big Yuanling City is. It is akin to a small country, with the city’s central as the core. A radius of 500 li around it belongs to the city district, and from the east to west city walls, there is approximately a distance of 1000 li. At the center of Yuanling City there are two districts, and each district is 1/5th of Yuanling City. One of these districts is where the Lingwu Family resides, Lingwu City!”

“The numbers of registered members in Lingwu Family amounts to over 20,000 people. Each of them is above the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. It is split into the inner and outer family. When people like us pass the test, we will only be able to join the outer family; the real experts in Lingwu Family are all the inner family members and have various inherited bloodlines of the past hundreds if not thousands of years. Actually only that inner family can be truly considered a real member of the Lingwu Family. As for us joining Lingwu City, is actually just the role of a hired helper, but even if it is a helper, it is really a great honour.”

Speaking of the Lingwu Family, they both had yearning expressions.

Long Chen was thoroughly in shock.

“Twenty thousand people.....All with strength of ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and above? I never thought that this Lingwu Family would actually be this grand, and Yuanling City is only one of the counties within the Central Granary State. If it is already this big, then what about the Ten Thousand Nation Domain that father and Lingxi had mentioned! And that Long Ji Continent, how huge will that be?”

The vast and boundless world momentarily made Long Chen feel helpless.

Suddenly he remembered that Xiaolang is also in this Lingwu Family.

“I don’t know if Xiaolang is an outer or inner family member of Lingwu Family.....With his talent, most likely he is part of the inner family.”

At this point Chen Xiongzhou growled: “Only by becoming an outer family member of Lingwu Family, my family will be protected by them. This is not the type of protection given to their prefectures, but is akin to sending top level experts to get rid of any archenemies you may have! And that is only for getting into the outer family. What’s more, if your performance is great, you’ll immediately rise in prestige!”

Long Chen recorded these words in his mind.

At this point his feeling of helplessness disappeared, and remembering that he still had the Dragon Jade and that mysterious Inherited Blood Essence, he was once again filled with confidence.

“That Inherited Blood Essence, if it really belonged to the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon, what have I to be afraid of? One must know that it belongs to one of the ten Magnificent Ancestral Dragons.....”

Violet Mirage Spirit Beast

“Younger Brother Long Chen, although we know the rough location of the Dream Spirit Grass, the Desolate Beast Domain has a vast area, and Burning Heavens Mountain Plains isn’t small either. Even if we’re in that area, we might not be able to find the Dream Spirit Grass.”

As he walked to the front, Feng Mingyang suddenly turned his head and spoke to Long Chen.

At this moment, the large Chen Xiongzhou also turned back and said: “However, both of us want to inspect the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains, so we can help you look for it along the way. This Burning Heavens Mountain Plains has countless dangers, so going along is too dangerous for you. It’s better to follow us.”

Long Chen hurriedly nodded his head, saying: “Both Big Brothers have extraordinary talents; it is really my honor to be able to enter the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains with you.”

Actually, Long Chen knew what they were planning to do. They did not wish to kill Long Chen, but if he were to search alone and some treasures appeared in the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains, who knew if Long Chen would luck out and find one. Thus, they wanted to keep Long Chen by their side and send him away after finding the Dream Spirit Grass.

“Long Chen, these two fellows seemed to treat you pretty well.”

Lingxi could not see the underlying meaning behind their actions and spoke

excitedly. After all, it was Long Chen who was seeking for spiritual medicine for her.”

“Silly woman, what would you know?”

Long Chen scolded her in his heart and then followed behind the two, stepping on the scorching grounds of what seemed like the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains.

The rocks and mud in the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains were completely black, and as sturdy as metal. Long Chen was extremely surprised that the Dream Spirit Grass would grow in a place like this.

As they approached the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains from afar, Long Chen felt that the temperature was indeed very high. As he stepped onto the plains for the first time he discovered that it was several times hotter than the hottest summer day in Poplar Town and realized that if an ordinary person were to come here, they would definitely be unable to endure for such a long time and would die.

“According to our memories, the Dream Spirit Grass should be in that direction. Let us go there first.”

The three carefully tread on the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains together and although Chen Xiongzhou and Feng Mingyang were keeping a lookout for any Dream Spirit Grass, their main purpose was to inspect the phenomenon in the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains. At this point, Feng Mingyang raised some black mud and sniffed it, and then he furrowed his brows and said: “There is indeed some charred smell in this mud. Although the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains is known as ‘Burning Heavens’, there is no actual fire so how can this

charred smell come about?”

Hearing him speak, Chen Xiongzhou was also extremely perplexed.

However, the both of them were still unable to solve the mystery, so they could only continue walking. To them, they wanted to finish Long Chen’s cumbersome task first.

Long Chen also wished that they would hurry and help him with finding the Dream Spirit Grass since he had to rush back to Poplar Town after it was found.

After several hours, they even met a seventh level Huang grade demonic beast, but it was easily dealt with by Chen Xiongzhou. When Long Chen saw the method, he felt that the people of the outside world were not so simple, as what Chen Xiongzhou used was an extremely strong, advanced Huang grade martial technique!

“In the past, many people have found Dream Spirit Grass in this area so we should look for it here too. Each of us should try to stay within sight of the others as well, so we can assist each other if there is any danger. Long Chen, you are still young and inexperienced in battle, and do not know the dangers in Desolate Beast Domain. If there is any danger, just shouting loudly will do.”

Feng Mingyang instructed Long Chen once again and they finally started searching the area, but it was obvious that these two guys were inspecting the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains.

The Dream Spirit Grass was only needed by Long Chen, so he didn’t plan to count on them.

“Hurry hurry, I want to eat a lot of Dream Spirit Grass!” Lingxi kept urging.

But it was a rare treasure after all, and normally people chanced upon it, unlike Long Chen who was actively seeking it. Although there was indeed Dream Spirit Grass here, one can imagine the chances of stumbling upon it.

Although they were rather diligent and kept walking deeper, a total of four days passed and they still ended up empty handed. At this point, Long Chen frowned, and began feeling anxious.

As it was an extremely important matter, if they could not find it within another half a day, he needed to rush back for the battle of the Soul Diffusion Fruit since he was one of the main fighters and without him, the Yang Family would definitely lose badly.

At this point, he should have already been back at the Yang residence. Coming out to look for the Dream Spirit Grass for Lingxi’s sake was already rather risky. Now, five days had already passed, and because travelling back to Poplar Town requires a day, it would nearly be time for the ripening of the Soul Diffusion Fruit.

Seeing that Long Chen was still unable to find any, Lingxi could only comfort him and say: “Hey, I am really not afraid of death. Anyway, it’s enough now. Since I was able to survive for so much longer, I am very happy.”

Long Chen did not reply to her, and continued looking for it on the charred plains.

Lingxi's sensory perception was great and if there were any Dream Spirit Grass, she would be the first to discover it.

As for the other side, seeing the youth who was at a distance away to the left of them, both Chen Xiongzhou and Feng Mingyang glanced at each other, and Feng Mingyang said: "It has already been some time. I originally thought we could just find a Dream Spirit Grass and dismiss him, but I never thought things would turn out this way....."

Chen Xiongzhou looked at the charred earth and said: "These past few days the temperature of the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains has been rising, and I seem to have this feeling that something may be approaching. It could be the appearance of a treasure. And with Long Chen still here, I'm worried something unexpected might happen."

Seeing that his friend's eyes had let off a vicious light, Feng Mingyang probed and asked: "Why don't we wipe him out immediately? That way we can have peace of mind. I have always felt that there is an unknown factor of Long Chen's that makes people feel fearful."

Chen Xiongzhou looked at Long Chen's silhouette, and his eyes gradually turned vicious. At last, he finally nodded his head and asked: "Are you going to strike or should I?"

As Feng Mingyang was about to say that he'll do it himself, he saw some flickering of a faint purple light from some distance away and licked his lips, saying: "Forget it, I see the Dream Spirit Grass. Let us dismiss him."

Both of them rapidly headed towards its direction and, as expected, under a crevice in a huge rock was a stalk of Dream Spirit Grass.

“Long Chen, Oh Long Chen, I never thought that this stalk of Dream Spirit Grass would save your life.”

While Long Chen was in the midst of searching, Lingxi suddenly caught the scent of the Dream Spirit Grass and excitedly rushed towards the direction she had pointed. She never thought that she would be greeted by the two guys holding onto a stalk of Dream Spirit Grass, smiling as they walked over. Feng Mingyang said: “Younger Brother Long Chen, at last we have found a stalk of Dream Spirit Grass! Since you need it so badly, I, your Big Brother, will give it to you. In the future, do come to Yuanling City and look for me!”

Long Chen took the Dream Spirit Grass and although he did not really fancy them, he still but he still thanked them and said: “Thank you Big Brothers Feng and Chen. Long Chen will definitely repay this favour someday!”

Chen Xiongzhou waved his palm and said: “That isn’t necessary. However, Long Chen, do you know the way out of this Burning Heavens Mountain Plains?”

This sentence was obviously meant to dismiss Long Chen. Long Chen also understood, and although he still had a little more time to search for the Dream Spirit Grass, both Chen Xiongzhou and Feng Mingyang did not seem as if they would allow it, so he said gratefully: “I naturally know. I still have some pressing matters to take care of at home, so I must rush back after obtaining the Dream Spirit Grass. Big Brothers, see you again if fate decrees!”

Saying this, he packed the Dream Spirit Grass and said his farewells to Feng Mingyang and Chen Xiongzhou.

“On behalf of this Dream Spirit Grass that you two have given me, I will not

bother with you, however, this Burning Heavens Mountain Plains is so huge, I can look for some on my own too.”

It was only just a stalk of Dream Spirit Grass and was definitely not enough for Lingxi to live much longer. So for this girl Lingxi to live on longer, what Long Chen needs is Dream Spirit Grass, and naturally, the more the better.

Along the way, Long Chen handed the Dream Spirit Grass over to Lingxi to refine and very soon, a stalk of Dream Spirit Grass entered her stomach. Lingxi emerged from the sword, appearing unsatisfied, and pitifully looked at Long Chen, quietly saying: “I.....I still want more.”

Suddenly hearing such words would make one think of indecent things, and seeing that exceptional beauty Lingxi, wicked thoughts surfaced on Long Chen’s mind. But just as he thought these things, he remembered that Lingxi was only two centimetres.....

“Let’s look for another half a day and if there isn’t any more, we’ll have to return home.”

“En, okay.”

To refrain from meeting both Chen Xiongzhou and Feng Mingyang again, Long Chen headed in another direction. It was at this moment, however, that he noticed something beneath his feet.

“The further I head in this direction, the higher the temperature of the mud.....”

Long Chen had known that the two were exploring and inspecting the phenomenon of the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains these past few days but his mind had mostly been focused on recovering the Dream Spirit Grass. Now, as he discovered he was moving in the right direction, he continued walking on.

“Hey hey, wait a minute.....”

Lingxi was originally flying along with him, but she now stood in front of his face blocking him and said in a low voice: “There is something there. Listen to my instructions and let us look at it carefully.”

Normally, what Lingxi sensed were generally good items, for instance, the Enchanted Hill Ginseng that had given Long Chen tremendous help the other time.

Long Chen held his breath and quietly went in the direction that Lingxi had pointed to. At this point, Lingxi had already returned back to the sword, and a light yet excited tone sounded.

“It seems to be a Violet Mirage Spirit Beast! This is a little first level Huang grade demonic beast, but it specialises in illusions and has the strongest spiritual force of all the Huang grade demonic beasts. With such a huge spiritual force, it would usually be the result of spiritual medicine.”

“So, this Violet Mirage Spirit Beast can lead us to a place with more spiritual medicine?”

Following Lingxi’s directions, Long Chen soon saw the full body of the Violet Mirage Spirit Beast. It was a purple rat species that was roughly the size of a

kitten and emitted a misty light, as if a layer of mist covered its whole body. This light made people unable to see its appearance properly, apart from the pair of faint purple eyes that kept swiveling, which appeared to be extremely cute.

“Scare it and let it run home, and then follow it from afar.”

One may just be able to find the location of quite a few spiritual medicines with this method. Although Lingxi was normally a little scatterbrained, her idea was genius.

Long Chen walked a little closer once again and the Violet Mirage Spirit Beast finally discovered him. Seeing Long Chen's appearance, it gave a shrill scream and then the mist surrounding it exploded, and it actually turned into a fiendish looking Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf!

Burning Heavens Raging Flames

“Such petty tricks, you dare to display it in front of your lady, me! Long Chen this is a fake!”

Without Lingxi, Long Chen might have been intimidated by this sudden change. After all, the trauma left by the Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf in his heart was too great. But right now, he knew that this beast here was the Violet Mirage Spirit Beast. So even if he was staring at the Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf, he charged ahead nevertheless!

As for that Violet Mirage Spirit Beast who saw that Long Chen was not afraid of even the Moon Devouring Demonic Wolf, was momentarily so frightened that it ran with its tail between its legs. After running for awhile it changed back into its original form, that fleshy butt kept swaying before Long Chen’s eyes. If not for Lingxi, who told him to chase it and maintaining a distance, he would have caught up to it in the span of a breath and kicked this Violet Mirage Spirit Beast away.

With the Violet Mirage Spirit Beast leading the way, after about three odd hours, Lingxi excitedly exclaimed: “Long Chen, Long Chen! I sensed a very concentrated scent, there are at a lot of Dream Spirit Grasses!”

Lingxi was elated and Long Chen was happy for her, however he had another concern. The deeper he treads, the surrounding temperature got higher and the charred soil on the earth faintly revealed the red glow of fire below.

“What exactly is happening in this Burning Heavens Mountain Plains?”

As he was chasing the Violet Mirage Spirit Beast, Long Chen continued to observe his surroundings. These blackened parts of the plains, seemingly and gradually changed colour.

“Screw this, I just need to obtain the Dream Spirit Grass. Whatever this phenomenon that the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains has going on is none of my business!”

At this point Lingxi gave a startled cry and Long Chen immediately raised his head. In his vision, there was a huge crater on the ground, and this depression seemed to have been formed by a meteorite. At this point the Violet Mirage Spirit Beast suddenly dived into this huge crater!

More importantly, in the deepest area of this depression, a strong aroma could be detected. Long Chen convulsed from this sweet scent. Staring at it again, the crater was actually filled with Dream Spirit Grass as if a sea of purple grass was formed. Seeing this, there should at least be hundreds of stalks.

Long Chen had almost turned dizzy from this sight, much less to mention Lingxi.

“I.....I want. Hurry hurry, pick them for me!”

Seeing so many Dream Spirit Grasses, even Lingxi did not know what stage her spiritual force would grow into, so she couldn't even speak clearly at this time.

Long Chen also wanted several more stalks of the Dream Spirit Grasses, but he never thought that there would actually be hundreds of stalks gathered here. This amount actually exceeded his mental capacity, so his actions were lagged.

After Lingxi's anxious reminder, he dashed towards the depths of this depression as quickly as a tornado!

These hundreds of Dream Spirit Grass made Long Chen momentarily forget about the temperature. It was so high that the air around him already contained sparks. Around the perimeter of the Dream Spirit Grass, a small black coloured metal slate the size of a palm was intensely shaking and flames were emitting from it!

In the process of going forward, Long Chen had already sensed that something was amiss. At this point he suddenly saw that at the heart of all the Dream Spirit Grass, a pile of flames were set ablaze, violently burning the surrounding Dream Spirit Grasses. Instantly all of the hundred stalks of Dream Spirit Grass were engulfed by the flames!

Lingxi was so horrified that she turned pale, and frantically urged: "Long Chen, in the hearth of the flame, there is a very strange object. Its destructive nature is immense, quickly escape!"

Even though the fire had already spread towards him, Long Chen had already gotten this far and the Dream Spirit Grass was just before his eyes, how could he just turn back and run now? He clenched his teeth and upon seeing that the fire continued to grow larger, almost swallowing all of the Dream Spirit Grass whole, Long Chen suddenly shouted and used the [Dragon Soul Transformation]!

As he ran, the blood red scales on his body gradually emerged. Under a span of a breath's time, he was in a complete state of [Dragon Soul Transformation]!

Right now his speed increased by ten times, and with a shout he had appeared right in front of the Dream Spirit Grass. However in the next instant, the flame

too increased its speed, and swallowed him whole!

“Long Chen!”

Lingxi’s face was drained of colour within the Lingxi sword.

As her voice sounded, Long Chen was already swallowed whole by the flames. At this moment she was at the peak of anxiety because she had no idea exactly how strong the flame was.

Right now, in her heart, Long Chen’s actions had already been deeply engraved. She knew, right from the start, Long Chen could have avoided this. Yet he still risked his life and dashed into the fire, just for the sake of the Dream Spirit Grass which could prolong her life!

Long Chen was no relative of hers, but there were absolutely no qualms about sacrificing himself for her. This had never happened before in her life! Thinking that Long Chen could suffer from injuries or even die, her heart twitched violently and grief came pouring out from her!

She suddenly sensed that Long Chen was moving, and although the speed of the fire was fast, it was also spreading in all directions. As Long Chen rushed in and bent his back, the flame had already come pouncing on him!

However, it was the [Dragon Soul Transformation] that saved him. Long Chen rapidly escaped from the encirclement of flames and when he had finally rushed out; he discovered that even with the [Dragon Soul Transformation] in effect, his whole body was still afflicted with pain!

Thankfully that dazzling body of red scales had not been burnt, however the raging flames behind his back still came chasing after Long Chen with a tremendous speed. He had no choice but to shield his head and run, and as he ran, he finally placed the Dream Spirit Grass that he clenched tightly in his arms into the cosmos pouch.

“Long Chen.....”

Seeing that Long Chen had used his body to salvage 5 stalks of Dream Spirit Grass before finally escaping, Lingxi felt like crying again. This kind of feeling of being taken care and loved for had let her, who had lost her physical self, feel extreme warmth.

“Hey, I am really thankful.....”

“Thank my ass; if you were to strike it rich next time, you only have to treat me to a good time!”

Originally she was thinking that this fellow was rather lovable, but with that one sentence, it had once again revealed his scoundrel characteristics.

At this point the flame that was spreading apart had turned into a sea of fire when Long Chen had escaped the depression. As he turned back, the huge flames continued to set everything ablaze. It was like an epidemic, which headed in all directions!

“Lingxi, earlier I saw a metal slate, and the flames seemed to come out from it. What do you think that metal slate could be?”

As they were leaving, Long Chen had already stowed away the Dream Spirit Grasses. With these 5 stalks of Dream Spirit Grasses, combined with Lingxi's current rate of consumption, there was at least a period of time where Long Chen did not have to worry about Lingxi's survival, and he could spend his time finishing his other urgent matters.

However, thinking of all that hundred stalks of Dream Spirit Grasses, Long Chen was extremely unwilling to accept the fact that they're gone.

If only his speed had been quicker earlier, who knows if he might've been able to obtain more!

"I too sensed that a very strong Yang energy, at least it was extremely strong against you. But earlier we were in a hurry so I did not examine it carefully....."

Lingxi also felt extremely regretful as she thought of the enormous amount of Dream Spirit Grass that had been lost. If she could have gotten it, her spirit might be able to recover back to the state when she had just lost her physical body.

By now Long Chen already created a large distance from the crater, so he turned his head back to look. He saw the sea of fire that was continuously spreading across the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains. At this moment, countless demonic beasts were escaping the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains, which was a rather pitiful sight.

"I don't know exactly what that metal slate was; it could actually create such a gigantic flame! If this carries on, the whole of Burning Heavens Mountain Plains may very well be set ablaze. Also, the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains will really burn right up to the heavens!"

During the moment he halted to take a look at it, the flame soon caught up with them. Long Chen had already gotten a few Dream Spirit Grasses, so he knew there was no need to linger on Burning Heavens Mountain Plains any longer.

“The metal slate should be a treasure, if one can control it, it could have endless benefits. But this flame is simply too big and right now it has already covered a radius of ten li. If this flame continues increasing, the whole of Burning Heavens Mountain Plains might very well be filled with flames, and I will too be unable to obtain that metal slate. So it is only a waste of time.”

Thinking of this point, Long Chen rejected the thought of obtaining the metal slate. Today he could have gotten many stalks of Dream Spirit Grass, but coincidentally it was destroyed by the metal slate, and this metal slate was unable to be obtained by him, so he felt extremely frustrated.

As he was about to leave, Lingxi suddenly let out a shout.

“Look, that flame is already retreating!”

Long Chen turned his head, and saw that the sea of fire showed some signs of waning. Originally it had rapidly expanded, yet now it shrunk quickly.

“Anyway there is still time. Long Chen, why don’t you take a look? Who knows, you might be able to find out what that metal slate is.”

Lingxi spoke the thoughts that were on Long Chen’s mind, and right now the flames were indeed shrinking. He still had ample to get back to the Yang Family,

so Long Chen was not in a hurry and proceeded to turn around.

As the sea of fire got gradually smaller, it had almost all headed back into the depression earlier. Right now, Long Chen was heading back to the area where the Dream Spirit Grass were, while being concealed.

The sea of fire had only spread for half an hour or so, and the time it took to shrink was also half an hour. Very soon Long Chen had returned to where he was previously, and he was feeling rather excited now.

“Quickly, hide! The two Big Brothers from earlier are here.”

At this point Long Chen was still in a state of [Dragon Soul Transformation], and he was very clear who the two Big Brothers were. Earlier this devastating scene had happened in the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains, so how could Feng Mingyang and Chen Xiongzhou not know about it?

They were originally here to look for treasures, and when the sea of fire appeared, they knew that it had to be some sort of treasure.

Whether or not the metal slate had posed any dangers, Long Chen did not know, but right now there were two people to test that danger as guinea pigs, so he was extremely relaxed. If it was really some sort of treasure, Long Chen would not hesitate to just snatch it from them.

The flames grew smaller and very soon Long Chen and the other two arrived at the depression. Although Long Chen had discovered the both of them, it was not true of the other way around. When the flames have completely vanished, the two immediately headed towards the centre of the depression!

Long Chen wanted to stick his head out and peek, but never expected that the scene was that both Feng Mingyang and Chen Xiongzhou were having a huge battle. They both stared at each other with bloodshot eyes, as if condemning each other's death.

Long Chen was stunned, as he thought of the two earlier, who had still called each other brothers.

“Is the allure of treasures so great? Bai Sheng can scheme against that old fellow and these two brothers can kill each other for it.....”

Mysterious Metal Slate

At this point, the strange phenomenon in Burning Heavens Mountain Plains gradually vanished and Long Chen was able to feel that the temperature of the earth beneath his feet had decreased too.

As for the two in battle it should have been after seeing the metal slate, which was the source of this heaven-defying flame, that made them kill each other for greed.

“Chen Xiongzhou! You don’t want your life anymore! I have told you earlier, let me have it this time, and if I were able to reap its benefits, naturally I will share them with you!”

“You think I am a fool? After obtaining it I’m afraid the first person you’d kill is me huh? This metal slate can invoke such a huge fire, so how can it be a simple item?”

“Good! Good! If you are so stubborn in wanting to die then don’t blame me, Feng Mingyang, for being vicious!”

“[Forward Fiendish Rising Punch]!”

The two of the eighth level Dragon Pulse Realm experts had, at this point, brought forth all of their skills, and started a death match with each other!

Seeing their constantly changing expressions, Long Chen thought of what Founder Yang had said before: “The world is governed by martial techniques,

and if one places too much faith in a brother, there will come a day when he will pay the price. However, if it is someone who is hot-blooded, then it is a different story!”

This match was extremely intense and both of the eighth level cultivator, had battle strength that was a little higher than Bai Zhanxiong. Thankfully, it was happening inside the Desolate Beast Domain so there was nothing much to be destroyed. Otherwise, their battle would have caused a huge mess!

Both of them had similar strength and it all boiled down to who had the better reflexes. Feng Mingyang’s body was much more agile than Chen Xiongzhou so in the end Chen Xiongzhou had an extremely unwilling expression as he was killed by a punch. Feng Mingyang was drenched in blood which suggested that he was in a critical state!

But thinking that he had finally defeated Chen Xiongzhou and managed to obtain the strange metal slate, his eyes blazed with desire.

“Chen Xiongzhou, I gave you the option to not fight with me for it, but you don’t know your place and it serves you right that you’re dead! However don’t worry; after I obtain this mysterious metal slate my cultivation will progress rapidly and I will take good care of your wife and son! After all, your wife is much prettier than mine!”

As he spat several times on Chen Xiongzhou’s corpse he never imagined that there would have been some blood mixed in with it. Feng Mingyang was startled by the sight and, after giving another vicious look at Chen Xiongzhou, only then did he slowly limp towards the mysterious metal slate.

Thinking of the metal slate which had caused such a huge phenomenon, he

became extremely excited!

“This scum, earlier he had called him brother but then killed him for the treasure, and now he still wants to hit on the dead person’s wife! Long Chen!”

Seeing that Feng Mingyang had this kind of character, Lingxi was extremely furious and the big pair of eyes on her miniature body showing an extremely disgusted expression.

Seeing that Lingxi had commanded him to attack, Long Chen did not hesitate. At this point, he was already under [Dragon Soul Transformation] and his strength was much stronger than Feng Mingyang. Suddenly, a red gust of whirlwind appeared in front of Feng Mingyang and the metal slate was positioned behind Long Chen. Feng Mingyang had to get past him to get it!

“Beast Warrior?!”

Feng Mingyang eyes revealed a shocked expression but after seeing Long Chen standing in his path for the metal slate, which he had fought and killed for, his expression instantly revealed signs of madness and even though he was critically injured he still wildly charged towards Long Chen.

“You wish to defeat me in your current state?”

Long Chen smirked and with his formidable [Dragon Soul Transformation] his speed had a huge boost, letting him becoming even more agile. At this point, Feng Mingyang who was only several metres in front of him, wanted to drag his heavily injured body and wildly use a martial technique on Long Chen. Instead, his whole body was sent flying by a punch from Long Chen!

After being hit by Long Chen along with his already severely injured body, he spurted a mouthful of blood and neared his last breath, never being able to get up ever again.

Long Chen knew that if he did not save Feng Mingyang, Feng Mingyang would definitely die in this Desolate Beast Domain. Also, since he already punched him why would he save him?

Feng Mingyang struggled to keep his eyes opened and as he saw Long Chen who was approaching closer he unwillingly asked: “You.....Who are you?”

Seeing the extreme unwillingness in his eyes, Long Chen thought of when he had pretended to be a ‘grandson’ for so long and he sneered in his heart as he removed the [Dragon Soul Transformation].

As he saw Long Chen’s true identity, Feng Mingyang face was first filled with utter shock and disbelief, then swiftly turning into extreme unwillingness. Under this shocking revelation he, who had been on the verge of death, finally stopped breathing and went to the Yellow Springs.

[TL Note: (Chinese): Yellow Springs – The Underworld]

Seeing his corpse, Long Chen sneered and said: “Earlier both of you wished to kill me and now you can’t blame me since Chen Xiongzhou contributed to your death.”

“Hey, he gave us the Dream Spirit Grass before and yet we killed him like this, isn’t this too bad?” Lingxi hesitated.

“Not all good things have to be repaid. For people like them who had only wanted to get rid of me for the benefits for fear of me taking what they had wanted, this is almost like a deal and there is nothing to feel bad about.”

Lingxi’s face darkened and said: “Then, I had saved you twice earlier, and now you are searching the Dream Spirit Grass for me, is this considered a deal too?”

Long Chen was stunned and said in an annoyed manner: “Do you have the brains of a donkey?”

“You then!”

“Alright.....I won’t argue with you, however, Xiao Xi.....”

Seeing this glowing miniature figure that was wrapped in mist on his shoulder, Long Chen said indifferently: “If this was a deal, I wish that it would continue forever and never stop.”

Hearing the meaning behind Long Chen’s words Lingxi’s face turned red, either from anger or embarrassment.

At this point, Long Chen was standing close to the metal slate and it had already lost all signs of life, turning into an ordinary metal slate. Long Chen picked up a rock from the ground and threw it at the metal slate.

Seeing that there were no signs of activity, he then carefully made contact with the metal slate and was surprised to discover that this mysterious metal

slate was actually rather cold.

Long Chen knew that the boundless sea of fire earlier had been started by it and, according to his deduction; this metal slate should have been extremely hot.

At this point he scrutinised the metal slate and saw that there was a carving of a sun's image on it and other than that there was nothing else.

“Lingxi, are you able to tell what this is? Are there any strange things around it?”

Lingxi frowned as she flew a circle around the metal slate and then shook her head and said: “I am not sure, but there is an immense strength locked inside it and I think it seems to be an item from the primordial past. It seems to be some kind of key to an expert's inheritance.....”

“The primordial past? Which is to say, the period after immemorial past when various sects were established? The times when there were super experts from various families? I heard that the experts from that time had all left behind many legacies, is this true?”

[TL Note: Currently 3 kinds of past, 太古– immemorial, 中古 – primordial, 远古 – ancient. Will differentiate with explanation when more information is gotten]

“Indeed. However, this is only my guess. What you have is only a key, not the treasure trove; therefore it is of no use temporarily. Therefore, you better stash it first and then return quickly to the Yang Family.”

Long Chen was thinking along the same lines and he nodded his head, while placing the metal slate into his cosmos pouch. As he was about to leave, he saw the corpses of Chen Xiongzhou and Feng Mingyang who had died not long ago. The atmosphere still reeked of blood and Long Chen was still under [Dragon Soul Transformation]. At this point, his blood was boiling as if getting hold of a delicacy and his originally bloodshot eyes now had a red aura leaking from them.

“What’s wrong?”

Seeing Long Chen’s dazed state, Lingxi anxiously asked.

“They are already dead and the blood here is wasted. If I were to use [Blood Transmuted Qi] I might be able to bring my strength up a notch.....”

Long Chen’s mannerism of speaking now was as if he was holding himself back but he still could not resist and eventually spoke of his desires.

At this point the blood red Dragon God images on his body were wildly howling and each of them opened their mouths wide, forming an enormous spirit force, encouraging Long Chen to move forward and use [Blood Transmuted Qi] on the corpses.....

Sensing that something was amiss, Lingxi violently activated the Lingxi Sword, hurting Long Chen and bringing him back to his senses. She then said sternly: “Hey, I’ll tell you something and you had better listen carefully.....”

Long Chen did not know what had happened earlier and only knew that after he saw the two corpses his whole body had entered a very famished state, as if a delicacy was right in front of him. If not for Lingxi who was with him, most likely

he would have used [Blood Transmuted Qi] on both Chen Xiongzhou and Feng Mingyang's corpses!

Actually, ever since he had gotten this [Blood Transmuted Qi] divine ability Long Chen had always felt that using this technique on a human was rather inappropriate because this is a technique which forcibly seizes their life force to gain strength. It was much too savage and brutal!

As for why Long Chen had used it on Bai Zhanxiong before, it was because he had loathed the man to the extreme.

According to his moral code, seizing someone else's blood to replenish oneself was not a desired method. It was alright with demonic beasts but if used on humans, it might invoke the wrath of the masses.

"I don't know what kind of dragon breed your Inherited Blood Essence belonged to but most likely it belonged to an evil dragon. This [Blood Transmuted Qi] method is tainted with too much blood. With a single look, one can infer that it is an ability of an evil dragon. Being in Poplar Town there won't be many experts around you. However, if you were to go elsewhere to a larger place, you had better not use this technique in front of the public or else those experts would use these reasons of exterminating evil to dispose of you....."

"And if you use it too often it might cause some side effects on your body. This kind of bloody natured Dragon God is normally filled with brutality and intentions of killing and I am afraid that one day you might lose yourself, so you had better take notice of this fact....."

Lingxi's words were like a cudgel (hammer/mallet) that had hit Long Chen's head repeatedly.

Back when he had first learned the [Blood Transmuted Qi] he was extremely elated and went on a murderous rampage through the Underground Blood Lizard hoard. However, he had never once thought that this technique would result in any side effects. Now that he reflected on it, he would definitely lose himself if his sole purpose was to be stronger no matter the cost.

On the path of cultivation, a steady improvement was extremely important. The kind of techniques that can increase the Qi very quickly would cause the foundation in cultivation to be weak. Thinking of these points, Long Chen also thought that he had better use less of [Blood Transmuted Qi]. After all, there were many methods to become stronger, and using [Blood Transmuted Qi] wasn't the only method.

“Even if I use less of [Blood Transmuted Qi], my pace of getting stronger will not be lessened!”

Seeing that Long Chen had already changed his mind, the worry that had clouded Lingxi for a while now had finally dispersed. She smiled and said: “This is for the best, let us return to Poplar Town right now. Although I had estimated that it would take eight days for the Soul Diffusion Fruit to ripen there still might be some discrepancy in the time.....”

“.....”

Long Chen's curses reverberated in the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains.....

Reverse Scale Of A Dragon

From the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains to Big Barren Mountain, Long Chen had already travelled for a day.

Very soon he reached Big Barren Mountain and realised that there seemed to be no changes. This showed that the Soul Diffusion Fruits had not ripened yet and the battle between the Bai and the Yang family had not started. Only then did Long Chen heaved a sigh of relief.

“Thankfully the Soul Diffusion Fruits have not ripened yet. Lingxi, next time if there is something as important as this, if you aren’t too sure, I beg of you to clarify.....”

“I know already! You’re so long-winded!”

Long Chen then stopped his nagging and thinking of the Soul Diffusion Fruit which was ripening soon, the Yang Family members should be very nervous during this time. It was of vital importance for Long Chen to regroup with Founder Yang and discuss the matter of the Soul Diffusion Fruits.

Very soon, Long Chen entered Poplar Town and found that there were much fewer people on the streets. It was not as bustling as before and although everything was rather serene, Long Chen sensed that it was the calm before the storm.

Even if the Yang Family had become the prefecture of Poplar Town, the Bai Family still had two experts of the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm which meant that their strength was still a little stronger than the Yang Family.

And right now, the Lingwu Family people had already left and the Bai Family was unwilling to admit defeat. Many of the people in Poplar Town knew that the two families, which were originally so close, had now turned into arch enemies and there would most likely be a huge battle for power!

This was why there were few people on the streets, which turned Poplar Town into a rather quiet town.

Soon, Long Chen saw the huge doors of the Yang residence. However, there were about a dozen guards at the door and they all had nervous expressions. Long Chen suddenly had a bad premonition and accelerated his footsteps.

At this point, the guards saw him and one went back to report the news. As for the others, they came forward and said: “Young Master Chen, Founder Yang said to look for him immediately once you returned!”

Their anxious expressions caused Long Chen to feel even more worried so he practically ran into the residence. Soon, Founder Yang and the rest of the family met him and, seeing the steely expression on Founder Yang’s face, Long Chen knew that something was amiss. He scanned everyone’s faces and saw that they all had their brows knitted and saddened expressions on their faces. It was only then he noticed that Yang Xueqing was not amongst them!

“Grandfather, where’s my mother?!”

Seeing that Long Chen’s expression had turned into one of fury, Founder Yang grabbed his arms and then pulled him to take a seat on a stone stool beside him. Founder Yang then said: “Chen Er, I’ll tell you, but you better not act rashly because there is still a method to salvage the situation.....”

A blood red aura leaked out of Long Chen's eyes because from Founder Yang's words, he already 100 percent confirmed that something had happened to Yang Xueqing!

Although the relationship between the both of them was still complicated, Long Chen would still never allow anyone to hurt her!

Only after hearing that Founder Yang said that there was a way to save her, Long Chen coldly said: "Grandfather, tell me, I am not a rash person. Tell me everything that happened and I will listen to your opinion before taking action!"

Founder Yang nodded his head and there was a mix of sadness and anger in his expression, he said: "It happened yesterday. Yang Xueqing continued to leave Poplar Town on her own but she was discovered by the two old geezers from the Bai Family. Right now, she has been captured and brought back to the Bai residence! Don't worry, they haven't killed her yet so there is still a chance! Chen Er, blame me, your grandfather, for being useless. I went to the Bai Family and even fought both of the brothers but I was alone so obviously I wasn't their match! However, I can assure you that your mother is doing fine!"

So things had actually turned out this way?

Just recently, he wanted to forgive Yang Xueqing and thought that he would protect this woman in the future, but after leaving for only a little while she was actually kidnapped! To Long Chen, this was a provocation that raised his fury so high that it could burn the heavens!

Ever since Long Chen killed Bai Zhanxiong, Yang Xueqing frequently visited Long Qinglan's grave. At that time, Long Chen did not think much of it but he

would never have thought because of this that Yang Xueqing was kidnapped!

“Kidnapping my mother, yet not killing her. Bai Family, although I don’t know what you are trying to achieve, but if my mother comes to any harm I, Long Chen, will drink your blood and devour your flesh!”

Thinking of Yang Xueqing, his rage slowly built up inside of him and the blood red aura slowly crept up to the top of his head. Seeing Long Chen’s current appearance, the Yang Family members all kept quiet out of fear!

“This won’t do! My mother is still in their hands and the Bai Family hate me down right to the bones. If I were to waste any more time, who knows what might happen to my mother! If something did, even if I kill all of the Bai Family members, nothing can be salvaged!”

Thinking so, Long Chen viciously raised his head and looked at Founder Yang saying: “Grandfather, I wasn’t around earlier and let misfortune befall my mother. This is all my fault! Now that I’m back.....I’ll bring the fight to the Bai Family!”

Founder Yang also had this plan in mind and, thinking that they would definitely battle for the Soul Diffusion Fruit, the fact that his daughter was in their hands made him extremely worried. Although he believed that Long Chen wasn’t Bai Li’s match, he coldly said: “Chen Er, this time let us make a trip there together. I want to see how the Bai Family can handle this grandfather and grandson duo! Qingxuan, you defend the residence of the Yang Family, and while I’m not around and something happens to the Yang Family, I will make you account for it!”

Founder Yang and Long Chen wanted to go to the Bai residence to fight and if

there were no experts to hold the fort in the Yang residence, who knows if something might happen. Although Yang Qingxuan had very much wanted to go with them, for the sake of everyone else he still nodded his head. At this point, Long Chen had already rushed out with Founder Yang.

All of the Yang Family members clenched their fists tightly and watched their disappearing figures.

At this point Yang Yuntian, who had been frowning, saw the similarly furrowed brows on Yang Qingxuan and bitterly said: “Big Brother, both of the Bai Brothers are a good sixty years older than Long Chen. With sixty years more of battle experience, how could he be a match for them? Will our Yang Family perish this time?”

Yang Qingxuan shook his head and said: “I too am not sure. Let heaven decide their fate.....”

Hearing Yang Yuntian saying the word ‘perish’, the faces of Yang Wu, Yang Lingyue and the rest had all been drained of colour and although the others avidly talked about it, some had even started sobbing.

At this moment, as Yang Lingqing stared blankly at Long Chen’s back, she saw that Long Chen was so flustered. It was obvious that he cared for Yang Xueqing and seeing that both mother and son were able to recover from their previous relationship made Yang Lingqing extremely happy.

She silently waited for Long Chen to bring back Yang Xueqing safely!

At this point, the blood red aura that was covering Long Chen had increased by

several times more and even Founder Yang could feel that Long Chen's body was exuding a dense and fiendish aura!

This aura even made Founder Yang mildly afraid!

"Chen Er, right now your mother should be fine so you must stabilise your mind and not do things rashly. If you accidentally hurt your mother because of that, you will only be more remorseful!"

Long Chen also understood this point, but how could the anxiety and rage inside him be quelled this easily?

He could only nod his head, saying: "Grandfather, I am fine. However, I will give the Bai Family a good time today!"

Founder Yang did not know how to respond and very soon the both of them arrived at the Bai residence. Long Chen started to become wary because, at this point, there were no guards stationed at the gates of the Bai residence and as he kicked open the gates right away, he was surprised to find that the whole interior was vacant!

"Long Chen, there is no need to search anymore. Right now, there isn't anyone in the Bai Family residence at all....."

Long Chen had done a check of the entire residence by the time Lingxi's voice sounded!

Founder Yang's face was impassive as he walked over and coldly said: "These Bai Family members had actually all left! Chen Er, what do you think they are

trying to do?”

At this point Long Chen forced himself to control his raging fury and made an effort to use logic to handle the problem. However, once he thought of the repulsive faces of the Bai Family members and that Yang Xueqing could be in danger right now and how she was actually a rather pitiable woman, the murderous intent in his heart only grew!

He had already made a promise in his mind to protect her but now he was unable to keep to it. This feeling made him feel extremely stifled and his animosity towards the Bai Family only increased!

“I have mentioned it before, never ever provoke me! If you do, you will all die horrible deaths much worse than Bai Zhanxiong’s!”

Seeing the fury in Long Chen’s gaze, Founder Yang did not know whether to feel relieved or angry. He was relieved that there was no more estrangement between both mother and child but angry that the mending relationship of mother and son had now been broken by the Bai Family!

Right now, Long Chen had already thought it through saying: “The Bai Family had already sent everyone away. Most likely because they were afraid of us massacring their family members or hold them as hostages! I do not believe the Bai Family could let go of the Soul Diffusion Fruit so I think that their experts are all at Big Barren Mountain! Grandfather, we have to hurry over there!”

Founder Yang thought about it too and he instantly felt that it all made sense. As the both of them prepared to go to the Big Barren Mountain, there was a rainbow coloured light that emitted in that direction. A concentrated aroma dispersed and covered the entire Big Barren Mountain and even spread towards

Poplar Town!

“Long Chen, Long Chen! It is the time for t the Soul Diffusion Fruit to ripen! Hurry over there now! With this phenomenon happening it won’t be much longer before it ripens!”

“Soul Diffusion Fruit, huh?”

There was a blazing gaze in Long Chen’s eyes.

“If I have not guessed wrongly, you guys wanted to hold my mother as a hostage and threaten me during the fight for the Soul Diffusion Fruit, huh?”

Long Chen muttered to himself and saw that Founder Yang furrowed his brows, saying: “The Bai Family members hate us to the core, and the reason for capturing Yang Xueqing is to threaten us.....At that time we will only be concerned about Yang Xueqing’s life.....”

“Using my mother’s life to threaten me?”

Thinking of Yang Xueqing, the blood aura seemingly rushed into Long Chen’s sea of consciousness and Lingxi could feel that concentrated and ruthless aura. She suddenly thought of a saying: “He who touches the reverse scales of a dragon will definitely die!”

[TL Note: (逆鱗) Reverse Scale: The Chinese Dragons do contain a rough spot, a Reverse Scale below their chins. When it is touched, it causes them to rage and devastate the earth with their rampaging power. This is their weak spot.]

Right now, Long Chen was already a Dragon Warrior and he had obtained the Inherited Blood Essence from the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon. He was already branded with the mark of a dragon and now the Bai Family had touched his reverse scale, it resulted in Long Chen having such a blood reeking aura that seemed to come from the heavens!

He who touches the reverse scales of a dragon will definitely die!

Looking at the direction of Big Barren Mountain, Long Chen inhaled a deep breath of air and then wildly dashed towards it!

Behind Long Chen, seeing his aura constantly on the rise and looked as if it was ready to explode at any given moment, Founder Yang let out a gratifying expression. But, once he thought of the Bai Family who might use Yang Xueqing to threaten Long Chen, he frowned and the worry in his heart began to grow.....

“All along, Long Chen knew he wasn’t Bai Li’s match and with the constraints of Yang Xueqing, could it be the end for our Yang Family?”

DBWG Chapter 53

Ripening Of The Soul Diffusion Fruits

Having just returned to Poplar Town, Long Chen never thought that he would be headed back towards Big Barren Mountain so quickly. This time, however, a heavy murderous intent was brought along with him.

“Mother, I will definitely rescue you.....”

By this time, the aroma of the Soul Diffusion Fruit had already blanketed the whole of Big Barren Mountain. Even people from Poplar Town had stepped out of their doors with shocked expressions on their faces. As they smelled the sweet scent lingering in the air, and by simply breathing in, they felt a little more refreshed.

A regular person would be unable to detect where the aroma was coming from but a few experts gradually discovered the location.

At this point, in the Yang Family residence, the members were still gathered together awaiting news of both Long Chen and Founder Yang. Suddenly seeing the rainbow light from Big Barren Mountain shining, Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian both knew that the Soul Diffusion Fruit actually chose to ripen at this moment.

Yang Qingxuan’s face changed.

The youths of the Yang Family did not know of the Soul Diffusion Fruit so they could only discuss this phenomenon amongst themselves. However, Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian walked towards a corner, and with Yang Yuntian’s

face darkening as he said: “With the Soul Diffusion Fruit ripening at this time, the Bai Family’s two old geezers would most likely not be at the Bai residence now. I reckon that when Father and Long Chen get there they would not find anyone.”

Yang Qingxuan did not think of this but after being reminded by Yang Yuntian he suddenly understood, bitterly saying: “So, their purpose all along was not to kill Xueqing but to threaten our Yang Family in the battle for the Soul Diffusion Fruit? Our Yang Family’s strength was always weaker than theirs, I have no idea how Chen Er is coping now. If this keeps up, my Yang Family will not have much chance of victory.....”

Yang Yuntian clenched his teeth, saying: “Big Brother, our family right now is going through a great catastrophe, are we just going to wait here? Although my strength is insufficient, I don’t wish to die like this. My guess is that most likely our Yang Family will be finished this time, but our bloodline cannot be broken. Why don’t we brothers gamble on this one last fight and let Wu Er bring the old, the weak, the women, and the children out of Poplar Town?”

Yang Qingxuan’s thoughts were all tangled up in knots as he looked at Yang Wu, Yang Lingqing, and the rest, saying: “Right, we can die but the Yang Family cannot be without heirs. Even if we are to lose this time, if our younger generation manage to leave Poplar Town and make a comeback, at that time we shall have them avenge us!”

Seeing the usually calm and collected Yang Qingxuan agreeing to this risky idea, Yang Yuntian knew that he approved. He looked at the Yang Family masses and sighed while saying: “I never thought that because of this Soul Diffusion Fruit, our Yang Family would wind up being defeated at the hands of the Bai Family. Luckily, before Father left, he had placed all of the precious belongings into this cosmos pouch. With this, Wu Er and the rest will be able to achieve growth rapidly and ten years later, who knows, they can avenge us!”

Seeing Yang Yuntian not afraid of death, Yang Qingxuan patted his shoulder as he sighed too: “Second Brother, despite these past few years, I still underestimated you. I never thought that you would have more bloodlust than me. My thoughts before were just to wait for death here. Now that Father has most likely entered the Big Barren Mountain, the battle will not last long, so we better hurry! However.....What you just said, I will rectify it a little.”

“What?” Yang Yuntian was startled.

Yang Qingxuan looked towards Big Barren Mountain and said: “Our Yang Family’s talented genius is not Wu Er but Chen Er, so our main purpose for going to Big Barren Mountain is to fend off Chen Er’s opponent and let him escape. We will then have him regroup with Wu Er and the rest. With Long Chen around, in 5 years’ time we shall punish the Bai Family and have our revenge!”

Hearing that it was Long Chen, Yang Yuntian helplessly sighed and said: “I admit that what you said is right, he is indeed an extraordinary genius. Alas he is still too young; if not for this our Yang Family might not lose!”

As Yang Yuntian sighed, Yang Qingxuan had already gathered Yang Wu, Yang Lingyue, and Yang Lingqing and prepared to give instructions for them to leave Poplar Town.

Seeing his son that was gradually maturing, Yang Qingxuan eyes had a hint of tears and he patted Yang Wu’s shoulder. Choking with emotion, he said: “Wu Er, you have turned 21 in a flash and it is time for you to bear the burdens of this family. Listen to me, your Father, I am going to hand over an important task to you.....”

Not knowing what Yang Qingxuan meant by this, Yang Wu and the other two youths looked at each other in dismay.

Seeing the youthful and vigorous spirit on their faces, Yang Yuntian pursed his lips and tears welled up in his eyes too. He knew that the hardships these youths would have to undergo in the future would most likely be plenty.....

“Today you three will shoulder an important task and if something goes wrong, you are to bring your heads back to me!”

“And this important task is: To be in charge of transporting our defenseless Yang Family members.....”

With the rainbow coloured light as a beacon, it was a clear path for Long Chen and Founder Yang to take.

Very soon they rushed into Big Barren Mountain and headed towards the valley where the Soul Diffusion Fruit was!

At this point, Founder Yang and Long Chen did not know that Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian had already arranged to transport the elderly, weak, women and children away from Poplar Town. However, if Founder Yang were to know of the actions of this pair of brothers he would most likely be extremely gratified.

He appreciated Long Chen’s formidable might but compared to someone much older, he was after all, still too young. What he needed was time to grow, not participate in a bloody battle amongst a few old men.

Such a dangerous battle as this should have been helmed by the older

generation and what Long Chen needed to do was to exhibit his potential and grow quickly into a super expert. Rather than him dying prematurely like this, by that time the Bai Family would collapse even without him attacking.

However, at this point Long Chen's blood was boiling and Founder Yang knew that he could not be stopped so he helplessly said: "Chen Er, later we must act according to circumstances and not rashly. Being rash will not only hurt yourself, but also your mother!"

Long Chen nodded his head and said: "Grandfather, please be at ease, I know my limits."

As he spoke these words he had already calmed down.

Founder Yang heaved a sigh of relief as he heard that Long Chen had become much more collected than before,. However, he was unable to detect the coldness present in Long Chen's words.

Looking at this unbending yet valiant grandson, Founder Yang was extremely gratified and at the same time extremely impressed. He had decided that if they fell into a trap, he was willing to sacrifice his own life for Long Chen to live on safely.

Very soon, both of them arrived at the valley. With one look, Long Chen found the granite cave located in the deepest region and the Soul Diffusion Fruit Tree which was emitting a resplendent rainbow light. The rainbow rays came from three different sources, signifying the three Soul Diffusion Fruits.

"The Soul Diffusion Fruits are, right now, on the verge of ripening. Once they

do, the tree will wither completely and turn into nothingness. The tree has already started to decay and I think it won't be much longer before they are fully ripe."

Seeing this scene, Lingxi was also a little nervous and she trembled as she spoke.

Frankly, Lingxi was extremely angry that Yang Xueqing had been captured by the Bai Family. The Bai Family previously used such a sinister method to plot against the Yang Family and even now used this kind of dirty method of holding a hostage. This made Lingxi despise them and, since her current emotions were basically on the same page as Long Chen's, she could empathise when Long Chen's spirit had emitted frostiness and rage.

"These two bastard old geezers, let Long Chen teach you a lesson and beat you till you piss and crap in your pants!"

Lingxi waved her little fist inside the Lingxi Sword.

As they entered the valley, Long Chen could see the landscape of the whole cave. It was at this point that the gazes of the people who saw Founder Yang and Long Chen turned cold and they stood up.

Long Chen's eyes scanned the surroundings and saw that it was Bai Sheng and Bai Li, these two brothers. As for the rest, who knew where the Bai Brothers had hidden them since they weren't there.

Actually, it was better this way. If Bai Zhanfeng and Bai Zhanlong were also present here, the opponent would have two more members which would be

more troublesome.

However, a suspicion still struck Long Chen's heart.

“These two cowards of the Bai Family, did they invite someone from the so-called Crimson Blood Sacred Sect?”

It seemed as if that was not the case, so Long Chen estimated that after the Bai Family had captured Yang Xueqing they felt assured of their win against the Yang Family. Therefore, they did not bother to invite the members from Crimson Blood Sacred Sect since they could divide the Soul Diffusion Fruit amongst themselves.

Each of these Soul Diffusion Fruits was extremely precious and, unless absolutely necessary, the Bai Family would never just give them away like this.

Long Chen could see Yang Xueqing behind the Soul Diffusion Fruit Tree. At the moment, her hair was ruffled as she leaned against the wall of the granite cave. He could see a unique kind of steel chain that was tied around her and the red scars from the chafing it caused.

Fortunately, she was still conscious and most likely did not suffer from any injury. When she saw Long Chen and Founder Yang arrive, her eyes moistened.

Seeing Long Chen and Founder Yang coming, the Bai Brothers snickered. The hatred they held for the Yang Family, especially towards Long Chen, was so immense that no matter what price they had to pay, they wanted to kill Long Chen on this day!

Capturing Yang Xueqing but not killing her was solely to increase the chances of killing Long Chen today!

The last time they fought with the Yang Family, their careful and meticulous planning was all ruined by Long Chen. This time, they wanted to exterminate the Yang Family and dominate the whole of Poplar Town. To obtain the ripened Soul Diffusion Fruits, the Bai Family had made plenty of preparations!

“If I still do not kill you, with all these preparations, then I Bai Sheng have been living in vain all these years! Although the ripening of the Soul Diffusion Fruits was earlier than expected, this won’t change the fact that I will kill you!”

Seeing the cold gazes of Long Chen and Founder Yang who were approaching, Bai Sheng signalled behind his back and said in a low voice: “Let us brothers first meet these two trash!”

His voice was so low that even Lingxi could not hear it from afar. Then, Bai Sheng and Bai Li gave each other a look and went towards the direction Founder Yang and Long Chen were coming from.

“With our double-layered preparations, I don’t believe that I would be unable to kill you! Xiong Er, Yun Er, father will avenge you today! Shichen and Shiji, grandfather will seek revenge for you today too!”

“Originally, there was no need to prepare so much since just us brothers should be able to deal with the both of you. However, this hatred in my heart will never allow me to commit even the slightest of mistakes!”

“Yang Cangqiong, go to hell.....”

DBWG Chapter 54

Claiming A Dog's Head!

Right now, it was already noon and although it was autumn in August, the sun was still blazing hot.

In the southeastern side of Poplar Town, there was a group of people moving along a path under a forest and there were a few huge but simple horse carriages which contained some luggage. In this group of people, most of them were the old, weak, women and children, and their faces were very pale.

“Mother, why must we leave Poplar Town?”

“I don't want to go to grandmother's place, boo-hoo.....”

A few of the children made a scene, but being pulled by their parents, they could only advance reluctantly.

At this point, the group stopped, and at the forefront, two middle aged man with bloodshot eyes turned around. It was Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian.

Behind them were the trio Yang Wu, Yang Lingyue and Yang Lingqing.

They had just left Poplar Town and because they were archenemies with the Bai Family, they did not create a huge scene before leaving.

Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian looked at the three youths, clenching his

teeth Yang Qingxuan said: “The three of you better listen well, if you are unable to protect the bloodline of my Yang Family, even when I turn into a ghost I will not forgive you!”

Yang Wu was still doing fine, but by this time Yang Lingyue and Yang Lingqing were sobbing silently.

Both of the girls looked at their respective fathers who had bloodshot eyes and, thinking of what they had said, they knew that most likely their fathers were going to die.

Thinking of the Yang Family’s future and the responsibility on their shoulders, they were all filled with agony and sorrow.

They had lead worry free lives since young and never thought that they would meet with such a catastrophe where the three youths had to lead the defenseless members away.

As for the experts of the Yang Family, they all left to deal with the enemy and the ending was that they might never return. How could these two youths bear a grievous life and death parting like this?

Although Yang Qingxuan did not say it, the wives of the Yang Family men already somewhat heard of the news. After thinking of the unavoidable outcome, a few of them started to sob and very soon most of them were crying too.

“What are you crying for! If you cry anymore I’ll kill you!”

Seeing this gloomy atmosphere, Yang Yuntian used a steely face and scanned the group. Although Yang Yuntian's strength was not excellent, his might was extremely strong so these women and kids all feared him. As he started to get furious it had scared them enough to stop crying, as though they knew deep down that this time the Yang Family would be completely finished.

Compared to Bai Family, who originally was the superpower in Poplar Town, they were still a little inferior.

Seeing that the group had turned quiet, Yang Qingxuan then blandly said: "Don't think too much of it, moving all of you away from Poplar Town is only to keep you safe. By doing this, we can be more at ease in our battles and it's not certain that our Yang Family has already lost! When we defeat those madmen and vile thieves, we will return to look for all of you!"

"The movement this time will be completely in the control of Yang Wu and the two of them, if any of you disobey orders and hinder the movement then do not blame me, Yang Qingxuan, for not giving you face! I won't say much anymore, Second Brother let us go!"

After having entrusted the task, Yang Qingxuan looked towards Yang Wu and the two while nodding his head as he said gently: "Wu Er, Yue Er, Qing Er, the future of Yang Family will depend on you three. I believe that you all will do a great job because you are the younger generation of our Yang Family and there are no cowards amongst the Yang Family younger generation!"

Yang Wu held back his tears as he nodded and said: "Father, don't worry. Even if I were to give up this life of mine, I will properly handle this matter. But, you must promise me that you will come back safely....."

“Yes, Father, I cannot do without you.....”

Yang Lingyue’s face was drained of colour.

Yang Lingqing looked at Yang Yuntian, and then looked at Yang Qingxuan. Although she was grieving too, there was still a very strong faith in her gaze. There was a person she believed in, that would absolutely not let the Yang Family perish in this calamity.

Although it was just a baseless faith, still she held on to it. Long Chen had given her many surprises before, and completed many tasks that she thought were impossible to have done.

Before they left, Yang Qingxuan suddenly said to Yang Wu: “If Long Chen is able to come back, everything will be decided by him in the future. However, if he is being rash, even if you were to die, stop him!”

Saying this, without waiting for Yang Wu to react, Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian rapidly vanished from their vision, leaving Yang Wu, Yang Lingyue and Yang Lingqing looking at each other with bitter expressions and feeling extremely terrified and helpless.

“Let us go. We still have to live on.”

Yang Wu’s eyes trembled; he clenched his teeth and directed the group to advance. As for Yang Lingyue and Yang Lingqing both, no matter how helpless or pained they were, they could only grit their teeth and persevere at this point.

“Heaven please bless my Yang Family, bless my grandfather, bless my father

and first uncle, bless.....him.....”

Under the guidance of the 3 youths, the group of people moved along in an orderly manner. However, at this point, two figures in black leapt from a tree above them, smirking as they looked at each other in the eye.

“The Yang Family actually let these younger generation escape huh? The Bai Family left several dozens of my brothers guarding at Poplar Town but never thought that they would be here. Let us go, we have to tell the rest. When the Bai Family, Bai Zhanlong, and the rest are here, won’t these few fellows all be wiped out cleanly?!”

“I heard that the Bai Family’s Master had given the only two high grade medicine in his possession to Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji for consumption, and that the wounds that Bai Shichen suffered from before have fully healed. I’ve heard that he regained his manhood, and his strength is about to break through the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. As for Bai Shiji who had sustained such heavy injuries, he too has recovered from them.....”

“Did you see whether Yang Lingqing is in that group there, or not? Young master Bai Shichen seemed to be interested in Yang Lingqing, and last time his balls were cracked. Now that his balls have fully healed, who knows whether once they get the news he would be immediately able to put his balls to good use.....?”

“I don’t really know if it can still be used.....”

Seeing Yang Xueqing, Long Chen had already forcibly contained his extreme fury. This was because it was only then that he would be able to exhibit his greatest fighting strength.

At this time, both groups drew nearer into this valley and he was squarely facing both the Bai Brothers together with Founder Yang..

“Chen Er, why do you think that they had captured Yang Xueqing but not hurt her, and even not use her to threaten us?”

Long Chen also thought of this point, but very soon he had some answers in his heart. So he said: “I’m guessing that they are overconfident in their abilities and will only use their trump card, which is my mother, to threaten us when they lose. However in such a close distance, how can I let them have this chance?”

“Chen Er, how confident are you against Bai Li?”

Seeing the bright and clear eyes of the Bai Family’s Master’s younger brother Bai Li, who was gradually approaching, Long Chen knew with one look that he had undergone plenty of fighting and killing. Long Chen’s fury and hatred had slowly found something to vent on and with Founder Yang’s sudden question, Long Chen did not say another word and rushed towards Bai Li!

Seeing that Long Chen acted first, the originally tense atmosphere had turned explosive and Bai Li was forced away by Long Chen. At this point Founder Yang and Bai Sheng, having transitioned from good brothers to archenemies, once again exchanged blows and fought wildly!

After the initial exchange of blows with Bai Li, Long Chen was quickly suppressed by his opponent’s immense Qi and his whole body was blown back. When he saw that Long Chen had actually been put in such a miserable state, Bai Li was shocked for a while and then wildly laughed and said: “With just this level you had actually thought of yourself to be in the same level as me? What wishful

thinking! To prevent you from bragging and cheating others about how you are such a genius, today I can only claim your dog head!”

Seeing that Long Chen had actually been blown away so easily by Bai Li, Founder Yang confidence had lowered. Long Chen, who was pushed into a corner by Bai Li, surprisingly raised his head and smirked: “You only won the casual exchange of blows, what is there to be so smug about? It looks like the Bai Family is only of this plebeian level. As for the dog head, whoever’s head is cut off today, that will be the dog head!”

In the process of speaking, Long Chen had already used [Dragon Soul Transformation]. When Long Chen had previously used the [Dragon Soul Transformation] at the Yang residence it had shocked both Bai Sheng and Bai Li, not to mention that the distance now was even closer. Seeing the blood red scales and spikes emerging from Long Chen’s body, it reminded the Bai Family Master of his son who had died miserably and he felt his rage rising!

“Second Brother, remember to avenge for my son this time!”

Seeing Long Chen, who was clad in an armour of blood red scales, shock first came to Bai Li and after that he excitedly licked his lips as he said: “So you are actually a real Beast Warrior! However, even the strongest Beast Warrior is only able to overcome 1 level of strength. I have broken through the Heaven Dragon Vein, how someone like you can understand that realm.....”

“Don’t worry Big Brother; this kid to me is just a piece of cake. Although he has the same shape shifting technique as a Beast Warrior, with one look I can tell that this kid’s transformation is not extremely pure. Plus, the demonic beast that it was refined from is also unclear. If he cannot even compare to a true Beast Warrior how can I, Bai Li, allow him to escape?”

He had some suspicions towards Long Chen's appearance, but at this point Founder Yang was already engaged in an intense battle with Bai Sheng. Therefore, Bai Li only coldly sneered and moved his legs. A gust of wind then came heading towards Long Chen along with an enormous whirlpool that seemed to be made of liquid. It was as if a yellow river had instantly appeared in front of Long Chen's eyes!

"The strength of a ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator is not something you can comprehend, you little doggy!"

"[Dark Heavenly Finger] – [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]! Spin spin spin!"

Long Chen was far too familiar with this [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]. He had seen Bai Shichen and Bai Zhanxiong use it before and now Bai Li used it too. Although the might compare to Bai Zhanxiong was stronger by several times, Long Chen was no longer the same Long Chen that dealt with Bai Zhanxiong. Seeing this vicious attack headed towards him, Long Chen was not flustered in the slightest.

The boundless energy and the blood red Qi that had a tenfold quality compared to his opponent, gave Long Chen endless assurance and confidence!

After entering the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, this was the first time Long Chen met an expert such as Bai Li. This match would be able to stimulate all of the fighting ability in his body and equipped him for a death match with the opponent!

"Previously, I used [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] to shatter Bai Zhanxiong's [Dark Heavenly Finger – Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]. This time, let me

use the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] and break your [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], otherwise how can it show the progress that I, Long Chen, have made.....”

DBWG Chapter 55

[Heaven Piercing Finger]

Feeling the aura of [Seal of the Ashened Dragon], Bai Li sneered loudly.

“It seems like you’re using [Seal of the High Profound Dragon]. I heard that Xiong Er’s [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] was defeated by it. This time, let me reverse the situation and show you what a true [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] looks like!

“Oh really?”

Very soon, under the rapid hand seals made by Long Chen, there was a whistling red aura formed in his hands and a blood red dragon image coiled on his arms that were faintly similar to the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon. This dragon image, as if alive, had a pair of frosty eyes which stared at the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], holding a look of contempt!

Upon seeing that Long Chen was actually using the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] against a [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], Founder Yang who was fighting with Bai Sheng widened his eyes instantly. He wanted to prostrate himself in front of Long Chen for being so gutsy. But, guts alone were not enough. Founder Yang, having spent several dozens of years immersing himself in the techniques of the [Seal of the Dragons], knew that the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] would never be able to block the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]! Anxiety clearly showed on his face at this moment!

But everything happened in just a blink of an eye.

With a ferocious roar, Long Chen's whole body tightened and under the immense pressure of the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] momentarily released all of its might.

With his body emitting an enormous amount of strength, as if Long Chen had turned into a humanoid demonic beast, he charged towards the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring]!

That red flash of a figure had momentarily turned into an image of a blood red Dragon God, and it seemed like Long Chen had crashed into the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] with his body.

The [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] contained a huge whirling energy, while the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] was an attack that pressed forward without hesitation. Instantly, as these two forces collided violently, the sand and rocks flew around and the branches of trees were broken, as leaves danced in the air!

Bang!

Both of them violently shook and retreated hastily. By using the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] against the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], Long Chen was still at a disadvantage therefore the distance he had retreated was further. Blood was boiling within his body and, compared to Bai Li, he was in a worse state. However, under the support of his reinforced and tempered body, he could easily suppress all of these small injuries!

As for Bai Li, although he had not suffered much from injuries, because Long Chen had only used the [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] against his [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] and then received it well, he was extremely shocked. At this point he was extremely humiliated as well!

This just added another layer of rage on top of his fury.

“Brat! You are indeed seeking death.....”

In the beginning he thought that he could finish off Long Chen easily and then join up with Bai Sheng to kill Yang Cangqiong. This plan worked only up to the first exchange of blows because now, he was extremely shocked.

Although Founder Yang who saw this scene was now less surprised by Long Chen’s heaven-defying talents, he still had a shock. Seeing the indifferent face on this boy, who seemed not in the slightest bit afraid of Bai Li, he suddenly felt that there might be some hope for the Yang Family today!

Looking at Bai Li, Long Chen’s mind was extremely clear. He did not know how to compete further with Bai Li in strength. He knew that the [Dark Heavenly Finger] had a total of three techniques which was why it was so overpowering. If Long Chen wanted to defeat Bai Li, then he must definitely face the third and final technique.

If he used the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] to fight against the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring], it would definitely create a huge gap as there would still be the third finger technique. By that time Long Chen would be affected psychologically. Right now, though, he had taken a risk and gave that psychological pressure to Bai Li instead!

At this moment, Bai Li was extremely furious and the aura on his body continuously rose. Long Chen could faintly detect that he was most likely preparing for the final attack!

“Your broken [Seal of the Dragons] has only two moves while there are three for my Bai Family’s [Dark Heavenly Finger]. As such, no matter what, your Yang Family is no match for my Bai Family.....”

At this moment, Bai Li smirked and a sharp concentrated energy like a sword revolved around his fingers. That black razor sharp aura formed perfectly straight on his fingers and as the aura grew larger Founder Yang could even feel it from afar.

“This is the aura of the final technique of the Bai Family, this fellow Bai Li, he is actually using it on a younger generation.....”

Although he was fearful in his heart, but at this moment Bai Sheng was holding him back so he had no methods to save Long Chen at all. He could only pray that Long Chen would be able to endure this final technique!

Only after he saw Bai Li’s third and final technique, did Long Chen start forming his strongest [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] yet. Last time his strength was not even in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, so he was unable to fully demonstrate the might of such an advance martial technique. However it was different now because not only was his Qi fully sufficient, even the quality was tenfold higher than regular Qi!

This concentration of dense Qi’s might of which was more than 10 times stronger than before, coupled with his reinforced [Dragon Soul Transformation], let off an aura that amazed the other three. Long Chen’s [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] appeared to be not in the slightest bit inferior to Bai Li’s final technique!

At this moment, within the granite cave, Yang Xueqing looked anxiously at Long Chen. Her eyes were originally indifferent but ever since Long Chen arrived, they slowly regained their vigour. When Long Chen stood in front of her and blocked the [Nine Orbits Yellow Spring] with [Seal of the Ashened Dragon], her face revealed a faint smile.

This youth who was in the beginning a brat with no good points, had now grown up to become like this. It made her extremely surprised. Now, when all of the shock was gone, only immense and boundless pride remained in her heart.

“This..... is my, Yang Xueqing’s, son. Before, I had cast him aside to Long Qinglan but he is indeed my son. He is already this powerful now, surpassing me and becoming a focus in the whole of Poplar Town.”

When she saw that Long Chen had used [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] to go against the final technique of [Dark Heavenly Finger], she knew that it was the strongest technique of both sides and the winner was still undecided!

Yang Xueqing’s anxiety reached new heights at this moment and her arm, bound by the metal chains, had tightly clenched its fist!

Bai Li charged towards Long Chen!

A huge whistling sound made by the wind came rushing over, and Long Chen even felt the earth trembled. The images of nine blood red coloured Dragon Gods appeared like nine individual [Seal of the Ashened Dragon] techniques, and rapidly spiraled around Long Chen’s body, while an immense aura spread out to all directions!

With Bai Li's movement, Long Chen shouted as well, circulated the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] while lowering his head and charging wildly towards his opponent!

Right then, the whole area under this valley was riddled with impressions made by Long Chen as mud flew in the air. Bai Li coldly looked at Long Chen, however, because the attack in his hands had already been completed!

Everything happened in a flash!

"In front of our Bai Family's [Dark Heavenly Finger], the [Seal of the Dragons] is just a dog's fart!"

Howling, a blinding light was projected from Bai Li's arms. It was as if a razor sharp blade had come piercing towards Long Chen!

"[Dark Heavenly Finger – Heaven Piercing Finger]!"

Seeing such a powerful attack, Long Chen did not panic. He wildly circulated his Qi and, under the blood red Qi's circulation, the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] made a faint and mysterious change. It was as if Long Chen's blood was infused with this [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] and the nine Dragon God images turned scarlet! They roared, one after the other, as if having an intelligence of their own!

What Long Chen felt right now was basically an energy he could barely control, as his blood started to boil. That whistling final attack of the [Dark Heavenly Finger] no longer seemed so terrifying to him!

“[Dark Heavenly Finger – Heaven Piercing Finger] huh? Under the [Seal of the Dragons], you are destined to be devoid of light!”

With a loud bang, the images of the nine Dragon Gods came whizzing and condensed into a destructive energy that was thrust out by Long Chen!

“[Seal of the High Profound Dragon]!”

Bang!

This time, both sides was using their strongest technique. This was the biggest showdown the both of them ever made, so the current battle scene was much more horrifying compared to before!

With such a terrifying showdown, it naturally filled the whole air with dust and smoke. Both Founder Yang and Yang Xueqing furrowed their brows deeply since Long Chen’s life and death right now was unclear.....

“Yang Cangqiong, in front of my Bai Family’s [Dark Heavenly Finger – Heaven Piercing Finger], your Yang Family’s [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] is only bullshit! That little bastard is already dead and you are next!”

Bai Sheng’s wild laughter sounded in Yang Cangqiong’s ears and at this moment he did not even look at Bai Li’s battle, launching an all out aggressive attack towards Yang Cangqiong!

He knew the extraordinary abilities of his younger brother and even he was unsure of being Bai Li’s match. What was there to fear from a little runt like Long Chen?

This final exchange of blows of Bai Li and Long Chen had made part of the valley collapse. Under the nervous gaze of Founder Yang and Yang Xueqing, the dust slowly dissipated. Looking at the scene, the shocked expressions of Founder Yang and Yang Xueqing quickly turned into ones of joy!

“Chen Er, well done! You are really the pride of my Yang Family.....”

As Founder Yang spoke these words, Bai Sheng mocked and asked: “Did you think you could divert my attention just by saying this?”

He continued his barrage of attacks on Founder Yang. Actually, Bai Sheng admitted to himself that he and Founder Yang were of equal strength so this time he was simply waiting for Bai Li to finish Long Chen off before joining him to deal with this old geezer!

After Founder Yang finished speaking, Bai Sheng immediately guessed the intentions behind his words and concluded that Founder Yang was attempting to trick him!

With a wave of his arm to fend off Founder Yang’s attack, he turned and looked behind, excitedly saying: “Second Brother, after you have dealt with Long Chen, hurry and join me to dispose of this.....”

As Bai Sheng spoke, he saw the situation on the other side at this moment the smoke and dust cleared. Between the two, only one was left standing, while the other had actually spurted out blood and flew to somewhere near the granite cave. This latter’s face was extremely pale and his whole body was convulsing on the floor. It was obvious that he suffered from heavy injuries. And for Bai Sheng, how could he not recognise his own brother, Bai Li?

After Long Chen defeated Bai Li, he did not say another word and directly rushed to where Yang Xueqing was!

After such an unbelievable thing happened, Bai Sheng did not have time to process his thoughts. As he saw Long Chen's actions, he hurriedly exclaimed and said: "Brother Xue Yuanzi hurry, help!"

Xue Yuanzi

The moment Bai Sheng had shouted the name Xue Yuanzi, Long Chen immediately knew that something was amiss!

He originally thought that after winning the fight with Bai Li he could rescue Yang Xueqing and obtain the Soul Diffusion Fruit. However, at this moment it seemed that something unexpected was about to happen.

Long Chen had always been suspicious of why the two Bai Brothers would capture Yang Xueqing but not use her against them. Now, it appeared that someone else was hiding inside the granite cave, seemingly of high status and power. It seemed that the Bai Brothers had only invited this expert over on the off-chance that some unexpected events occurred and what just happened definitely constitutes an extremely unlikely turn of events!

The Bai Brothers would have never expected this outcome, Bai Li being defeated by Long Chen.

Bai Li, who was hit by Long Chen's [Seal of the High Profound Dragon], did not lose his consciousness at this point. His face was extremely pale and he gazed manically at Long Chen and sneered: "Kid, I never thought that you would actually be able to defeat me. However, you would never guess that although my Bai Family did not expect this outcome, we still made ample preparations. I believe Xue Yuanzi will let you know the meaning of 'suffering' and 'agony'....."

As Bai Li said these words, Long Chen already felt an immense aura coming from the depths of the granite cave. This super expert went undiscovered by even Lingxi and it appeared that Yang Xueqing, who was close to the Soul Diffusion Fruit Tree, did not know of it either.

So, when everyone felt that stifling aura, Yang Xueqing, who had been unbelievably elated as Long Chen had beaten Bai Li, turned extremely pale. She panicked and said to Long Chen: “You.....Hurry and go, you will definitely not be able to beat this person, bring my father and leave!”

She had a panic stricken face, but Long Chen did not move.

“This Xue Yuanzi is most likely from the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. I wonder what his strength is at.”

At this point, Long Chen did not feel very confident.

In his heart, Xue Yuanzi could be a ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator, or even an existence that surpasses the Dragon Pulse Realm!

“If his strength is over the Dragon Pulse Realm then, with my current strength, I will definitely die! Not to mention saving my mother or obtaining the Soul Diffusion Fruits!”

Long Chen understood the situation clearly but he also knew that there was no backing out at this point. Although Yang Xueqing still put on a frantic expression, the unbending will of Long Chen and his responsibility did not allow him to retreat even half a step back!

“Don’t say anymore! I am not someone who escapes easily!”

As he growled and spoke to Yang Xueqing, Long Chen coldly looked at the

faintly smiling person that walked out from the granite cave.

Upon seeing the determination in Long Chen's eyes Yang Xueqing, who was originally panic stricken, suddenly stopped. The reason was that she abruptly felt that this youth had long exceeded her vision and as to what his true character was, she knew nothing at all.

And by this time, the person named Xue Yuanzi walked out. As he walked past Bai Li, he first looked at him and then at Long Chen. He then frowned and said: "You are able to beat Bai Li. Although it isn't such a bad feat, many people in Yuanling City are able to achieve the same. However, in such a small place like this you should be considered as a genius."

He was extremely honest in his evaluation towards Long Chen. After sizing Long Chen up closely, he clicked his tongue and nodded his head saying: "This body of a Beast Warrior isn't too bad and if I were to guess, it should belong to the Underground Blood Lizard's soul. It's not bad, but today you have hurt my men and even want to fight for the Soul Diffusion Fruits with me. Now that you have already created enmity between us, I don't think I can let you leave here alive....."

Long Chen also coldly sized up this person.

His figure was as skinny as a matchstick and he wore a black robe. It seemed like his age wasn't too old, approximately 30 years or so. His eyes, however, were extremely sinister and between his brows was the red dot, the trademark of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. Also, another special feature was that his hair and brows had faint signs of red colour.

At this moment he was clicking his tongue and sizing Long Chen up, showing

that he was not worried about Long Chen at all.

However, Long Chen did not feel stifled by this.

From this person's appearance, Long Chen knew that he was much stronger than Bai Li and Bai Sheng. Also, he saw Long Chen's age and ability to beat Bai Li but he was not in the slightest bit surprised. This showed that he had experience in seeing things like these.

"Someone who has such experience will definitely be a strong person. At the very least someone who surpasses the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm....."

Thinking thus, Long Chen felt helpless.

However, the disdain in the opponent's eyes and his disregarding expression made Long Chen feel extremely indignant.

"My mother is just in front of me along with the Soul Diffusion Fruit. I have even defeated Bai Li! How can I be willing to be defeated here?"

Seeing this strange yet vicious looking Xue Yuanzi, Long Chen clenched his fists tightly and the gaze in his eyes was frosty as he met Xue Yuanzi head on.

Xue Yuanzi noticed the unwillingness in that gaze and momentarily laughed. He nonchalantly ruffled his hair and sneered: "You are really like a newborn calf who does not know fear towards a tiger. Merely beating such a retard like Bai Li and you think you are invincible. Indeed, you are not someone who has seen the outside world and do not know your place."

He immediately turned around and looked at Yang Xueqing and his gaze filled with lust. He rubbed both of his hands together and said: “This lady here is your mother? There is, indeed, that unbelievable appeal in her which I am extremely fond of.....”

Turning back, Xue Yuanzi spoke to Long Chen expectantly: “Your mother’s sex appeal is still there and your talent isn’t too bad either. How about this, you and your mother follow me back to Yuanling City and I promise I won’t kill you then. What do you think?”

Everyone understood what that eagerness in Xue Yuanzi’s gaze implied.

At this moment the most furious were the Bai Brothers. Bai Sheng was still fighting with Founder Yang and Bai Li, who was still conscious, gave a look of disbelief towards Xue Yuanzi. Bai Li furiously shouted: “Xue Yuanzi, you promised us that you will kill them! What do you mean by saying those words?”

Xue Yuanzi smiled happily and looked at Bai Li, saying: “What other meaning can I have? I, Xue Yuanzi, will do whatever I please. Don’t tell me that I have to report everything I do to a trash like you? Bai Li, from the time I entered the Human Dan Realm you and I were no longer equals and yet you still foolishly believed that I would help you?”

Hearing these words, Bai Li instantly sucked in a deep breath and said: “Xue Yuanzi, so many years of friendship and today you actually spouted these words, really.....”

“Heavenly punishment? Divine judgement? Okay now, Bai Li, don’t say such silly things that amuse me. I really wonder how you were able to remain so

laughably ignorant after all these years?”

What Long Chen did not expect was that this Xue Yuanzi, who looked to be merely 30 years of age, was actually similar in age to Bai Li, which meant he was about 60 odd years old.

However.....

Long Chen eyes squinted.

“You damned old fellow, actually want to hit on my mother? And even want to adopt me as your son?”

Looking at the frightened expression on Yang Xueqing, Long Chen was heartbroken. He felt that it was because he wasn't strong enough that she had to be this frightened right now. Maybe it was due to the thoughts of torture in her future but Long Chen had actually seen suicidal thoughts in her mind.

With her, Yang Xueqing's, current abilities, naturally no one could stop her from committing suicide.

No matter how much pressure Xue Yuanzi had given Long Chen, after seeing that frightened look on Yang Xueqing's face he knew that it was time for him to straighten his backbone.

Actually, it should be Long Qinglan's role to protect her right now but seeing as Long Qinglan wasn't there any longer, Long Chen knew he had to shoulder this responsibility.

“Old man, this damned old geezer wants to violate your woman. You, who are so awe inspiring to me, if you are there watching from the heavens then bless us all and pray that we are able to escape this calamity.....”

Bai Li's wild shouts were exchanged with Xue Yuanzi's smirk and although it had not matured, Long Chen's frosty voice sounded out with absolute determination beside Xue Yuanzi's ears.

“You old fart, you want to be my father? Seeing your appearance, even if you come begging me to accept you as my grandson, I will still feel my status lowering!”

This insult by Long Chen momentarily stunned Xue Yuanzi. Seeing the cold gaze gradually emanating from Long Chen, he felt that Long Chen might as well have been spitting words made of ice.

“I thought you might have some brains, but never think that you're just a donkey. Foolish people have no right to live on this earth. Oh well, I will send you to your death. But don't worry; I will definitely do a great job to replace your father in loving this elegant beautiful mother of yours.....”

At first, Bai Li thought that Long Chen would take advantage of this opportunity and establish a connection with Xue Yuanzi. He never thought that Long Chen would reply Xue Yuanzi in this manner. He was shocked at first and then he helplessly laughed at himself and said: “Although this brat from Yang Family has a blood feud with me, he still has some backbone. Sadly, no matter how much backbone he has, after meeting a Human Dan Realm cultivator he will still have to die prematurely. After all, Human Dan Realm is an existence with strength surpassing the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm by ten times!

Although Xue Yuanzi had said he would send Long Chen to hell, he never attacked him. Instead, he walked over to Yang Xueqing's side. Yang Xueqing, who wore a horrified expression at first, had now changed into an expression of resolution after hearing Long Chen's words.

Xue Yuanzi used his finger to lift her porcelain white chin and looked at Yang Xueqing whose eyes were filled with fury. He then cackled and said: "What a young and tender woman! I heard that you have been living like a widow for so many years, I imagine that you must be feeling a little itchy? Big Brother, I am really so sorry for appearing this late!"

He turned around and looked towards Long Chen, shaking his head while saying: "I could have treated both of you, mother and son, well. Alas, your son wasn't tactful so I can only destroy him before I can be at peace."

At this moment, Long Chen walked towards him one step at a time and his surging blood red Qi was constantly boiling within him. One could see the madness and rage within his crimson coloured eyes!

"You old geezer, release her....."

Xue Yuanzi laughed and said: "What did you say?"

"I said....."

Feeling the countless blood dragons that howled within him, Long Chen abruptly raised his head and bellowed: "I want you to release her!"

DBWG Chapter 57

Secret Sword Art – [Dream Returning Fairy]

Seeing that Long Chen was actually not afraid of death, Xue Yuanzi slowly squinted at him.

He violently swung his hand and dragged Yang Xueqing with his fingers while slamming his palm on the granite wall. Despite Yang Xueqing having the Qi protection of an eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator, blood was faintly streaming down her forehead!

This sight of crimson blood had completely ignited the fury in Long Chen's heart!

"Xue Yuanzi, you actually hurt her?!"

Xue Yuanzi sneered: "She's just an abandoned widow, so what if I did? What can you do to me? Don't tell me you are going to kill me? Looking at this posture of yours, brat, are you going to take action? Oh well, let me show you the difference in power between the Human Dan and Dragon Pulse Realm!

After saying this, an extremely enormous Qi on Xue Yuanzi's body was fully drawn. Right now, Long Chen felt that the person in front of him was no longer human, but a demonic beast with an earth shattering aura that seemed to cover the entire planet. This aura even made Long Chen unable to breathe!

"What an aura! Even if I use all my energy, there is absolutely no chance of winning!"

Xue Yuanzi merely displayed his aura and it had already made Long Chen unable to move. In this instant, the aura in his bloodshot eyes surged and constantly reminded him that if he did not wish to die he could only hurry and escape. Despite this, when he thought of Yang Xueqing who was still by his side and the blood that was dripping down from her forehead, Long Chen's blood boiled!

“Who cares what fucking ‘Human Dan Realm’ you are! In front of me, you can only die!”

At the same time, Lingxi was extremely frantic inside the Lingxi Sword on Long Chen's ear. Seeing that the Human Dan Realm opponent was about to strike, Lingxi could only anxiously remind Long Chen: “Long Chen, I beg of you, don't put up such a brave front right now! He is not someone that you can fend off with your strength! If you are this stubborn, not only will you die but the rest of us too!”

“Shut up!”

Long Chen coldly stared at Xue Yuanzi and said in a frosty voice: “My mother is still there so how can I only persevere for this short while? Lingxi, you better go. I think the energy from the five stalks of Dream Spirit Grass will be enough for you to find a way to continue living!”

Suddenly, Lingxi's face turned extremely pale. She looked at Long Chen in disbelief, never thinking that Long Chen would actually say these words. She broke down and sobbed: “You.....You scoundrel! I am not someone who is afraid of death! I.....”

“Then shut up for me!”

Long Chen had no bad intentions towards Lingxi at all. He being this stern to her was because of the current angst that he was feeling.

Right after Long Chen and Lingxi had exchanged their words Xue Yuanzi, who was holding down Long Chen with his might, noticed that Long Chen was courting death and blabbing away even when he was unable to move. Originally, he actually did appreciate Long Chen a little but now it had turned into anger. He viciously looked at Yang Xueqing who glared at him in disdain, saying: “After I kill your son, I’ll return and have a good time with you!”

After saying this, his figure vanished before Yang Xueqing’s eyes.

“Chen Er, be careful!”

As Yang Xueqing’s shrill voice sounded out, Long Chen had already realised there was a person standing in front of him. He had prepared an even stronger [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] than the one he created for Bai Li and sent it crashing into Xue Yuanzi!

Unfortunately, Xue Yuanzi was not even slightly surprised at seeing such a powerful attack from Long Chen. At the same instant, his face darkened and he sent a fist with crimson light flying towards Long Chen!

This crimson light looked extremely normal, but it’s destructive ability was there. As the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] and Xue Yuanzi’s fist containing the crimson light crashed against each other, Long Chen helplessly realised that, although the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] was a magnificent martial

technique, it was still powerless in front of the enormous corrosive ability in the crimson blood! Under an attack powered by a Human Dan Realm cultivator, the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] shattered and that enormous crimson light energy crashed into Long Chen and sent him flying!

“Chen Er!”

“Chen Er!”

“Long Chen!”

As a few frightened voices had sounded out, Founder Yang’s and Yang Xueqing’s faces abruptly turned pale. Yang Xueqing was unable to move and Founder Yang was being held back by Bai Sheng so he could not rush to Long Chen’s aid either. Both of them were only able to watch as Long Chen flew through the air.

The other shout was of course by Lingxi. Seeing that Long Chen was actually injured and had even vomitted a mouthful of fresh blood, Lingxi felt rage rising to the extreme in her heart!

Lingxi, who originally thought she was about to die, had actually managed to spend time together with Long Chen for this period of time and experienced so many things together with him. There was laughter and even tears. Gradually, she had developed a dependent feeling towards this youth!

She was completely immersed in Long Chen’s current feelings so when she saw Long Chen, who was critically hurt trying to save this mother of his who once looked down on him, Lingxi’s heart shattered into many pieces.

Lingxi was extremely panic stricken and did not know what to do at this point. Xue Yuanzi's cold laughter sounded at that moment and he strolled towards Long Chen, his face carrying a look of contempt.

“With just this small achievement and you already think you are so invincible, people like you who don't know their place will always die a horrible death. You, runt, aren't the first nor the last. However it is still the first time that I, Xue Yuanzi, have had the opportunity to end a little genius life like yours, one which was destined to have some accomplishments when it's just the beginning.”

The blood reeking aura of this person had made Lingxi, whose cultivation had almost dropped to zero, shudder in waves. Thinking of the miserable state Long Chen was in and seeing that smug face of the bad guy, however, gradually intensified her rage!

“If you bully him.....Then you deserve to die!”

Seeing Xue Yuanzi, Lingxi gradually lost her sense of identity. In her heart it was as if the person Xue Yuanzi had harmed was not Long Chen, but her.

At this moment, Long Chen felt a wave of enormous energy rushing into his body and ruining everything inside. This wave of energy had caused him to lose consciousness for a split-second and, seeing the current state of his body, he knew that death was imminent!

If he were to die here, no matter if it was Yang Xueqing or Founder Yang, and even Lingxi, they would all perish here with him. If they died, the other Yang Family members would most likely be unable to survive as well!

There was a heavy responsibility on his shoulders but the regretful thing was that right now, he had absolutely no strength to resist and fight back. Although he had gained tremendous improvement recently, it was still not enough!

“Only by being a true expert can one then protect the people close to them. I, Long Chen, am obviously nowhere close to this stage yet!”

“I am really unwilling to just die like this. There are still many things for me to do, I.....I have to become stronger!”

Long Chen was madly howling in his heart but at this moment the energy sent from Xue Yuanzi had already entered his internal organs. Suddenly, there was a huge devouring force that emanated within his body that directly consumed Xue Yuanzi’s strange corrosive attack

Long Chen however, had only gotten paler.

The reason for this was because in that instance he felt that there was a huge appetite stored somewhere inside of him that was countless of times stronger than his own. At this moment, Long Chen understood that everything he had encountered before was unable to appease its hunger!

Long Chen knew deep-down that this appetite belongs to him and right now he felt extremely famished. What he needed was an amount of energy so unthinkable it would allow him to become the most extreme of existence: A Dragon of the myths!

“The quality of this, Xue Yuanzi’s, Qi is somewhat similar to mine, containing a

bloody aura. However, his quality is only two fold of the average cultivator's. It's not even close to mine, even when I'm not using [Dragon Soul Transformation]!"

Suddenly thinking on the fact that Xue Yuanzi is a member of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, and remembering that he had previously seen Bai Zhanxiong selling the courtesans from Emerald Jade House to these people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, his brows furrowed.

"It is very likely that this faint red Qi they cultivate in has got something to do with the courtesans from Emerald Jade House!"

Long Chen woke up from his half-conscious state only after fully absorbing Xue Yuanzi's attack on his body. Just as he was wondering why Xue Yuanzi had not claimed his life, he opened his eyes and saw that the Lingxi Sword had once again rapidly grown larger in front of his eyes!

Amongst the astonished expressions of everyone, a white foggy mist pervaded the air. The elegant body and disposition of Lingxi, her long white dress, the hair that looked like a waterfall, and that fragrance that soothes people, all appeared in front of Long Chen once again!

Similar to the previous two times, her back was again facing Long Chen. Each and every movement was executed with determination and without a moment of hesitation!

Long Chen heart's surged with emotions at this moment. He was well aware that Lingxi only had 5 stalks of the Dream Spirit Grasses as her lifespan. As far as how long it could last for, he did not know himself. It was extremely disadvantageous for her to use her spiritual force at this time. Also, if Xue Yuanzi was too powerful for her and she ended up using too much energy, she might

very well dissipate into thin air!

Tears brimming in his eyes, Long Chen was moved as he hollered: “Xiao Xi, don’t do this, come back!”

Lingxi fidgeted, however she never turned back. Long Chen was able to see her extreme beauty clearly, and under the astonished gazes of Founder Yang and the rest, her gaze flashed coldly within the mist!

At this moment Xue Yuanzi, who was charging towards Long Chen to finish him off, suddenly saw a strange girl stand in front of him. Although he was surprised, the welling energy in his hands never stopped!

“[Blood Smearing Revolving Void Punch]!”

Instantly a blood palm print that could split the heavens and tear the earth came charging towards Lingxi, who was defending Long Chen, and Long Chen’s anxiety reached to the heavens. However, everything happened in a flash and when Xue Yuanzi used [Heaven Piercing Finger], a clear and distinct voice rang in everyone’s ears!

“Secret Sword Art: [Dream Returning Fairy][Jolting Heavens Dancing Blades].....”

A flash appeared in front of Long Chen’s eyes and the mist surrounding Lingxi started to move. Very soon, the figure of a sword appeared from the mist, as if there were countless girls dancing wildly, and brushed past Xue Yuanzi’s body. Then, everything returned to normal.

Everyone was astounded.

Long Chen looked blankly at Lingxi, who had now turned into a tiny ball of mist and entered back into Lingxi Sword. Under her control, she transformed the sword into an ear pin and attached itself onto Long Chen's ear. As Long Chen began to panic, her frail voice sounded.....

“Don't worry; I'll be fine after sleeping. However this simple attack used 3 stalks of the Dream Spirit Grasses' energy so I cannot stand up for you so easily anymore.....However, you idiot, I am really not someone who is afraid of death.....Wuuu.....”

“This silly girl.....”

To save him, she had even risked her life! How could Long Chen not understand this?

Long Chen knew that the words he said before had hurt her.

However.....

Long Chen looked blankly at Xue Yuanzi standing in front of him.

Eight Proctors

Lingxi's appearance had caused Bai Sheng and Founder Yang's battle to come to a halt.

The moment Lingxi disappeared, both of them held Long Chen in a different light than before.

If one were to say that previously they only approved of Long Chen's talent, now they were more curious about his mysteries and even somewhat impressed.

Lingxi had once appeared during the intra-family competition but Founder Yang never thought that this mysterious item could actually be that powerful. He blankly looked at Long Chen and felt extreme pride and satisfaction.

"Having such a grandson like this in my life, even if I, Yang Cangqiong, were to die today, I will die without regrets. However, Xueqing and the rest don't deserve to die at all....."

To Bai Sheng, what had happened was obviously not a good thing at all.

He was not feeling confident right now so he hurriedly looked at Xue Yuanzi and said: "Brother Xue Yuanzi....."

Xue Yuanzi remained motionless and no one knew what he was doing at this moment. However, seeing no signs of injuries on his body, Bai Sheng only thought that he was somewhat curious due to Lingxi's appearance.

Therefore, Bai Sheng continued and said: “Brother Xue Yuanzi, I think that we can discuss this. I, Bai Sheng, am willing to still honour our agreement of giving you one Soul Diffusion Fruit. If you have an interest towards beauties, I think our Bai Family women wouldn’t be inferior to those in the Yang Family? Elder Brother, you don’t have to mind about this wilting flower Yang Xueqing. As for the genius Long Chen, he hates you to the core. No matter how you nurture him, he will only backstab you in the end.....”

At that point, Founder Yang frowned even harder. Seeing that Xue Yuanzi did not refuse his suggestion, Bai Sheng gave another provocative look at Founder Yang.

“It looks like the heavens want to wipe my Yang Family. What a pity for Long Chen, he is only sixteen.....”

Founder Yang inhaled deeply.

He looked at Xue Yuanzi who was not moving and back to Long Chen. Thinking of the power disparity between the both of them he knew that there was not much hope anymore.

“Earlier, that mysterious girl who appeared in front of Long Chen seemed to have used a very powerful sword technique. Unfortunately, it seems to have no effect against Xue Yuanzi.....”

Founder Yang was not clear about the current situation.

Xue Yuanzi looked to be fine and seemed to have been moved by Bai Sheng’s words. Naturally, Bai Sheng turned smug and looked towards Long Chen and

Founder Yang, saying: “If Brother Xue Yuanzi agrees to my suggestion, I request of you to kill this kid.....Huh?”

Right at this moment, Bai Sheng suddenly saw a drop of fresh blood falling from between Xue Yuanzi’s brows. As he looked closer, he noticed an extremely fine wound in between them as well as another drop of blood coming from the back of Xue Yuanzi’s head.

Bai Sheng was so startled that he was momentarily rendered speechless.

The situation right now was obvious. The reason why Xue Yuanzi did not speak was not because he was unwilling too, but because a hole had already bore through his head. Although the wound was extremely tiny, it clearly could take a person’s life away!

Xue Yuanzi, dead?

An unthinkable thought surfaced in Bai Sheng’s mind while Xue Yuanzi’s corpse crashed onto the floor.

Long Chen had discovered long ago that Xue Yuanzi’s body was devoid of life. Seeing him crashing to the floor, Long Chen was in extreme awe of Lingxi’s strength and mystery and was also grateful.

“I’m afraid that Lingxi’s background, including the power behind it, is extremely immense.....”

Long Chen looked at Bai Sheng and saw that he was still in shock from Xue Yuanzi’s death. When he saw Long Chen he shook his head, saying: “This can’t

be! Xue Yuanzi is an expert of the Human Dan Realm, how could he been beaten by you guys?! Even if it was that mysterious girl, this is impossible.....”

Seeing Xue Yuanzi’s corpse, he suddenly thought of something and was extremely elated. He laughed and said to Long Chen and Founder Yang: “Now that Xue Yuanzi is dead, your Yang Family will definitely die. Xue Yuanzi is one of the eight proctors of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect!”

Long Chen did not expect Xue Yuanzi to have such a high position inside the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. However, now that things had already turned out this way, he could only accept his fate!

“Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is a thing of the future, right now the more important task is to kill these two vermin of the Bai Family!”

Right now, Founder Yang had also recovered from the shock over Xue Yuanzi’s death. He knew how horrifying the consequences would be from killing someone from the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect but since the deed had already been done, the task at hand was more important. They needed to save Yang Xueqing, kill the Bai Brothers, and obtain the Soul Diffusion Fruits!

Looking at that youth, Founder Yang once again thought of him from a month ago. He remembered when the enormous improvement in Long Chen’s progress had caught him unprepared.

“Chen Er, the joy that you bring me is more than just ‘good’. Each time you have been in a crisis, you have tried your best. You are basically the saviour of our Yang Family! This grace, how can this old geezer ever repay it?”

After Xue Yuanzi died, Founder Yang and Long Chen knew that they had to end this quickly.

At that moment, Founder Yang held Bai Sheng back while Long Chen prepared to rescue Yang Xueqing. Long Chen did not expect Bai Li to suddenly stand up and rush to Yang Xueqing's side and place his hands, which were dyed in blood, on her head!

“Brat, take another step and I will tear this woman to pieces!”

When Bai Li said these vicious words, Long Chen immediately halted in his steps. The Bai Brothers regrouped and Founder Yang furiously stood alongside Long Chen.

It was really ‘one thing after another’.

Long Chen coldly looked at the two while tightly clenching his fists.

“As expected the old ginger is spicier than the young ginger. Bai Li was definitely not as injured as you thought he was and only pretended to be in that state. Most likely it was to use my mother as his trump card at the most crucial point. I was completely unprepared for this cunning thoughts of his!”

[TL Note: (姜还是老的辣) – Old ginger is still spicier than the young ginger”: Idiom meaning that experience counts]

Thinking so, Long Chen reprimanded himself. He did indeed place all of his attention on Xue Yuanzi earlier and neglected the threat of Bai Li. He never once expected that this old fellow would pretend to be in a severely injured state!

“In the future, when I hurt someone, I cannot be merciful. It is better to be sure. Benevolence will only result in such an ending!”

Now, Yang Xueqing was being held hostage by Bai Li. If Long Chen were to strike, Bai Li would definitely be able to end her life in an instant. By then, even if Long Chen killed these two brothers and obtained the Soul Diffusion Fruit, the agony would definitely haunt him throughout his life!

He would never be able to forgive himself!

Long Chen was already extremely furious when Xue Yuanzi had hurt Yang Xueqing and it was not easy for Lingxi to kill Xue Yuanzi earlier, but it did allow his rage to subside. Now, though, Bai Li's actions invoked fury within him again that could burn the heavens!

Sensing Long Chen's rage, Founder Yang gripped his arm and said: “Chen Er, don't move and endure. Let me deal with these sudden foxes!”

He then looked towards the Bai Brothers, saying: “Bai Sheng, Bai Li, don't attack first. Tell me any conditions you have and if it is not too excessive we will be able to agree!”

Bai Sheng and Bai Li looked in each other's eyes and, seeing that they held the trump card, began to smugly smile while understanding each other's intentions.

At this moment, Bai Li's palm was circling around Yang Xueqing's head and the blood on it had already dyed Yang Xueqing's black hair to red. Ignoring Long Chen's venomous stare, Bai Li slowly and casually said: “Very simple: this three

Soul Diffusion Fruit will belong to my Bai Family, and this little bastard here must break one of his arms.”

Founder Yang and Long Chen were dumbfounded. Founder Yang would be unwilling to give all three Soul Diffusion Fruits away. And to break one of Long Chen’s arms, that is not even worth mentioning.

The plan of the Bai Family was well thought out. With three Soul Diffusion Fruits, both of them would be able to breakthrough into the Deity Dan Realm. However, they were afraid of this genius Long Chen. For them to be able to sleep peacefully before breaking through they needed to weaken him by breaking one of his arms. Once they had successfully entered the Deity Dan Realm, the Yang Family would definitely be exterminated!

Founder Yang coldly said: “It seems like you have no sincerity at all. Such a ridiculous request, there’s no point in it. After knowing me for so many years, Bai Sheng, you know my character best. My condition, at best, is only two Soul Diffusion Fruits. If this does not suffice then today I, Yang Cangqiong, will go through a life and death struggle and have a fight to the death with your Bai Family! You will then see, at that moment, if the members who die the most will come from your Bai Family or my Yang Family!”

With Long Chen’s strength above Bai Li, the Yang Family now could be considered to have surpassed the Bai Family. If they were to have a life and death struggle, the results were clear to both Bai Sheng and Bai Li.

So they looked again at each other and Bai Sheng solemnly said: “Two Soul Diffusion Fruits, so be it. However, we have another condition. Before we enter the Deity Dan Realm, Yang Xueqing will momentarily reside at my place. She has married my son anyway so she can be considered to be my Bai Family member.”

This was the final allowance that the Bai Brothers could make since, even with the Soul Diffusion Fruits, they would likely meet a tragic end without a hostage.

Realizing that she had once again implicated her family members, Yang Xueqing was extremely anxious and angry. Unfortunately, the metal chains that bound her were too tight and she had no chance of escaping Bai Li's grasp!

"Father! Don't listen to them! Don't worry about me! These two bastards of the Bai Family will not be satisfied with this. If you allow them to enter the Deity Dan Realm, how will there be a chance for survival for our Yang Family!?"

Yang Xueqing said this to Founder Yang with tears brimming in her eyes and then gave another yearning gaze at Long Chen. The complexity and sadness held in that look made even Founder Yang's heart ache. He knew clearly the sufferings of his daughter for her whole life.

"Father, forgive me for being unfilial. I will be unable to take care of you during your old age. The benevolence you have given me, I will repay it in the next life!"

"Chen Er....."

Looking at Long Chen, Yang Xueqing could no longer hold back her tears and they streamed down from her porcelain white face.

"I, your mother, must say sorry to you.....If there is a next life, I promise I will definitely love you tenderly.....Goodbye!"

After saying this, Yang Xueqing revealed a joyous look of salvation. Bai Sheng's and Bai Li's faces instantly changed because they both knew that at this moment she was going to commit suicide!

DBWG Chapter 59

Eighth Level Dragon Pulse Realm!

Founder Yang understood the meaning behind Yang Xueqing's words.

He had wanted to make a trade off with the Bai Family originally, but it was obvious that both parties would never reach mutually satisfactory terms. As for Yang Xueqing, after seeing that she had led her family into danger again and coupled with the remorse she had for her treatment of Long Chen, she felt terrible inside. Hence, she thought of sacrificing her own life to save them.

"Xueqing! Stop! I know how to deal with them, don't do anything rash!"

Founder Yang's shout made Yang Xueqing halt her movements.

This made Bai Sheng and Bai Li, who were using her as their lifeline, heaved sighs of relief. At this point, Yang Xueqing smiled miserably.

"Father, don't think of lying to me, I clearly know how much the Yang Family can do. Today, these two old dogs of the Bai Family are holding me as hostage and only with my death will everything they have turned to naught....."

There was an agonised expression on her face as she looked at Long Chen for one last time. She only wanted to have a closer look at this son of hers before she died but Long Chen's strange actions made her puzzled and she stopped her movements.

At this time, Bai Sheng and Bai Li as well as Founder Yang, all stopped to look

at Long Chen.

Long Chen turned around and went to the corpse of Xue Yuanzi.

He knew that if this continued the Yang Family would undoubtedly meet with a tragic end, so he only had one chance!

“Xue Yuanzi..... Lingxi told me not to use [Blood Transmuted Qi] on anyone easily but this time I am left with no other choice. This old geezer is not anyone good either, so I won't hold back anymore!”

Long Chen's eyes flashed and, looking at Xue Yuanzi's corpse, he suddenly felt an incomparable hunger coming from his stomach.

He clearly understood that as long as he did not make the first move on the Bai Brothers they wouldn't strike at Yang Xueqing first. After all, Yang Xueqing was their lifeline. If she was hurt, Long Chen would fight with them to death and there would be no good ending for either side!

During this period of time he might as well absorb the blood of Xue Yuanzi and allow his cultivation to progress!

After thinking this far, Long Chen moved once again. Although he had decided earlier not to use [Blood Transmuted Qi] easily, this was a crucial moment and he had no other choice.

Long Chen momentarily emitted a blood reeking, killing aura from using his divine ability [Blood Transmuted Qi]. This strange, yet terrifying presence, made Bai Sheng and Bai Li inhale a deep breath!

Very soon they noticed that on the surface of Xue Yuanzi's skin there were countless drops of blood that, as if having their own mind, happily emerged from Xue Yuanzi's body. Shortly after appearing, they were absorbed into the blood red scales on Long Chen's body!

Long Chen gradually absorbed the essence of Xue Yuanzi's blood with [Blood Transmuted Qi]. Xue Yuanzi was an existence that Long Chen was not a match against and was the strongest opponent that he had ever fought. His cultivation was in the Human Dan Realm, which was much stronger than the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and the energy contained in his blood was several dozen times greater than Bai Zhanxiong's!

In the process of using [Blood Transmuted Qi], a huge amount of impurities were expelled from Long Chen's body. Only the finest essence from the blood was absorbed, turning into blood red Qi as it traveled into the center of his dantian. The Qi in his dantian expanded endlessly! This kind of impressive speed, this overwhelming strength, made Long Chen feel like he was about to explode!

"The blood essence of a Human Dan Realm cultivator is indeed no small matter!"

That enormous amount of blood red Qi wildly surged inside Long Chen's Dragon Vein. Once again, he could feel that his body had turned into a nest for countless blood dragons as they howled while devouring this blood red Qi.

When Xue Yuanzi's blood essence was completely absorbed, his corpse became mummified. At this moment, the blood soaked aura emitting from Long Chen was magnified by several times. Now, the energy in his body was akin to a large sea and he barely had any control over it!

“Such an enormous amount of Qi! It is time to breakthrough to the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!”

Thinking of this, Long Chen immediately started circulating the Qi!

To the Bai Brothers, Long Chen’s actions seemed foolish but at the same time extremely gutsy!

At this point, Bai Li was already injured. If he wasn’t, Bai Sheng could have held Founder Yang back and let Bai Li kill Long Chen who was in the midst of cultivating. Unfortunately for them, it just so happened that Bai Li was injured and neither of them could figure out if Long Chen had any fighting abilities left. Thus, they just looked at each other without daring to move.

“Second Brother, this little devil is already so strong! If he is able to enter the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm now.....”

“Don’t be afraid, Big Brother! As long as this woman is in our hands it doesn’t matter how strong he is. Also, when the news of Xue Yuanzi’s death travel back to the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect the Yang Family will definitely be in for a good time! Let us just focus on obtaining the Soul Diffusion Fruits!”

Bai Sheng nodded his head.

Founder Yang did not expect that Long Chen would attempt his breakthrough to the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm at that moment. Fortunately, the two Bai Brothers did not dare risk attacking Long Chen. Seeing this, his tension eased and, since Long Chen was about to become stronger again, he began to

feel a little excited.

Suddenly, two voices rang out and broke the equilibrium. Everyone present looked and saw that the voices actually belonged to Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian.

They had just arrived at Big Barren Mountain after sending the youths of the Yang Family away. However, they never thought that scenario would turn out this way in just fifteen minutes after the phenomenon in Big Barren Mountain!

At this moment, Bai Sheng and the injured Bai Li were holding Yang Xueqing as hostage. Beside them, the Soul Diffusion Fruits glowed with a rainbow coloured radiance. The leaves of the trees were almost withered, indicating that the ripening time was near. At this crucial moment, Founder Yang was facing both the Bai Brothers while Long Chen sat further away from them actually cultivating!

There was a corpse beside Long Chen that had lost its original look, causing Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian not to be able to tell who it belonged to. The current situation was entirely different from what they had imagined.

“The battle has already stopped and that Bai Li is actually injured. Could it be that Chen Er injured him and then began attempting to breakthrough to the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm?”

Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian thought of this, but they had made the trip with the resolution to die. Originally, they wanted to have one last fight to the death and couldn't fathom that the battle already stopped.

Looking at Long Chen, Yang Yuntian and Yang Qingxuan both shook their heads.

“Bai Li injuries were most likely caused by Father. It appears that Chen Er is fine though, so at this moment the both of us should fend off the Bai Family and let Chen Er regroup with the other party and escape!”

As they formulated their thoughts and walked towards Founder Yang, he immediately gave them a cold stare and asked: “Why did you guys come? Where are the other members?”

Yang Qingxuan panicked and said in a low voice: “I had already let Wu Er and the rest bring the youths, the old, the weak, the women and children away from Poplar Town. Coming here, we only wish to help Chen Er escape so that he may one day seek revenge for us!”

Founder Yang nodded his head and then shook it quickly, blandly saying: “If I were you I would have done the same thing, but you guys have underestimated Chen Er.....”

Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian were shocked and, looking at Long Chen who was in the midst of cultivating, they asked with suspicion: “Father, you mean to say that Bai Li was injured by Long Chen?”

Founder Yang nodded his head saying: “You guys help think of an idea. Yang Xueqing is still in their hands and we want to be able to take the Soul Diffusion Fruits and escape safely, it’s not easy.”

Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian, who were still in shock of Long Chen beating

Bai Li, recovered their senses and turned furious at the sight of their younger sister's pale complexion!

“Bai geezer, hurry and release my sister! If you have any conditions just state them!”

Hearing that Yang Qingxuan had spoken similar words, Bai Sheng laughed loudly and said: “Your Yang Family's love is more solid than gold, which is rather touching. However, if you don't act according to my wishes then I will let you suffer the pain that I did!”

Yang Qingxuan's face darkened while he said: “What is your condition?”

Bai Sheng viciously laughed, replying: “I mentioned it to your father earlier: Two Soul Diffusion Fruits, and when we enter the Deity Dan Realm, we will return Yang Xueqing back to you.”

If they were to enter the Deity Dan Realm then Yang Family would definitely perish. Hearing these words, Yang Qingxuan's face darkened even more.

“Are you guys still undecided? Yang Cangqiong, you might have time, but I don't really want to stay and waste any more time with you. If you don't agree, then let us all just die here! I have already lost two sons so today I'm going all out!”

Bai Sheng was being outrageously overbearing but the three men from Yang Family could not do anything about it. As for Long Chen, who was in the midst of cultivating, they had all almost forgotten he was there.

Only Yang Xueqing's gaze still remained on him.

She had wanted to die immediately, at first, but seeing Long Chen attempting to breakthrough, Yang Xueqing harboured a glimmer of hope for him!

Yang Qingxuan lowered his voice and said to Founder Yang: "Father, carrying on like this is not a solution. This Bai Li is currently injured and if we are to drag it out any longer and let him recover, then no one will be able to stop him. At that point....."

Just when Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian were a little shaken and Yang Xueqing had begun to despair, a sudden earth-shattering dragon's roar sounded!

A rush of magnificent aura was displayed and Yang Qingxuan, Yang Yuntian and the rest could barely stand firmly on the ground. At this moment, everyone wore shocked expressions on their faces. Long Chen, who had just broken through to the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, stood up!

The scarlet scales and sharp dragon spikes looked extremely fiendish. What was most oppressive though, was his aura. The moment Long Chen opened his eyes, his pair of scarlet pupils sent a shiver down their spines!

Feeling this overflowing energy, Long Chen smiled in his heart.

"If I were to use [Dragon Soul Transformation] in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, I will definitely be much stronger than anyone else at the same level....."

A tenfold quality of Qi and the reinforced body of this [Dragon Soul Transformation] were trump cards that Long Chen could count on to be stronger than people of the same level!

Right now, the strongest method Long Chen had was not [Seal of the Dragons], but rather the combination of his [Blood Transmuted Qi] and [Dragon Soul Transformation]. These methods came from the Inherited Blood Essence and Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, respectively, and from this alone one could see how mysterious they both were!

Long Chen's gaze fell upon Bai Li, who was holding Yang Xueqing captive.

Seeing such a magnificent aura coming from Long Chen's body, Bai Sheng's and Bai Li's scalps had begun to go numb.....

"Kid, I know you have become stronger but you better not move. If not, I cannot guarantee Yang Xueqing's life....."

Seeing Long Chen, who was gradually approaching them, Bai Li's voice turned a little shrill.

As for Bai Sheng, his eyes quivered a bit seeing the [Dragon Soul Transformation]. It was a perfect instrument for slaughter.

"You two old dogs....."

Long Chen, who was carrying this deep hatred within him, was akin to a super predator at this moment and walked towards them one step at a time. When all of his rage had reached its highest point, Long Chen's figure suddenly vanished

and in the next instance Bai Li was flabbergasted as he found his back to be slightly cold.....

Puchi The sound of a spike piercing a heart.

DBWG Chapter 60

All Of You, Die!

Looking at the current Long Chen approaching the two Bai Brothers, even Founder Yang did not dare stop him.

He had a faint suspicion that Long Chen would give him a pleasant surprise in a moment. As for Yang Yuntian and Yang Qingxuan, they were so shocked when they felt Long Chen's enormous aura that it was difficult for them to even stand on their feet.

Only now did they realize that the Yang Family being able to survive until now, making the two Bai Brothers put their status down and resort to kidnapping, was not because of Founder Yang but rather because of this devilish genius Long Chen!

Although Long Chen was now in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he had a strange shapeshifting ability which let his strength far exceed that of a normal cultivator. Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian also deduced that Long Chen had become a Beast Warrior but as for the specifics, even they were unsure.

Many things had happened recently and Long Chen was usually not around at Yang residence, so they never had time to ask.

“Chen Er will most likely exceed any expectations I had of him.....”

The three men from the Yang Family collectively sighed. This was especially true for Yang Yuntian who had long since been in awe of Long Chen's rapid progress in cultivation.

Long Chen's current appearance made Bai Sheng and Bai Li panic stricken. However, what they had never expected was that Long Chen's speed could actually be so quick! In the blink of an eye, Bai Li suddenly realised that Long Chen had disappeared!

In the next moment, he felt a chill at his back and then it had started to hurt. Following this, a wave of overwhelming force rushed into his body. The bone drilling pain in his heart made Bai Li convulse and, as he lowered his head, he noticed a blood red spike withdrawing from his chest. Bai Li's face turned even paler.

"This.....I have.....Impossible....."

Although he was filled with utter disbelief, the piercing pain from the hole bored through his body had let Bai Li realise that he was most likely about to die. His consciousness slowly faded and his world turned darker.

He suddenly became aware of the shocked expressions of Founder Yang and the rest, who were looking behind him. Although Bai Li was extremely curious and wanted to see who was behind him, he did not have much time left, and his increasingly fuzzy consciousness made him feel extremely weary.

However, thinking of who could be behind him, his eyes suddenly widened. He realized that the person who had killed him, was actually the runt, Long Chen, who he had never cared about from the start!

However, it was too late. When he finally recalled this piece of information, his consciousness once again took another hit. In the midst of endless hatred and unwillingness, Bai Li died.

After being flung off by Long Chen, the corpse fell onto the ground and crashed in front of Founder Yang and the rest!

At this moment, everyone finally recovered their senses. Founder Yang and the other two looked at the wide eyed corpse, and then looked back at Long Chen who had spat a mouthful of spit on it. They were extremely shocked and could not speak.

[TL Note: (死不瞑目) Wide Eyed Corpse: Chinese Idiom referring to someone who dies with grievance and regret/shock remaining.]

In the instant that Long Chen had killed Bai Li, Bai Sheng was extremely shocked. When his brother's corpse was flung onto the floor, he felt incomparable rage, which quickly turned into endless fear.

He immediately turned tail and attempted to run. He knew that Yang Xueqing was his only lifeline. But, as he turned back, an icy cold grip had already clasped onto his neck. That Qi, with an enormous and strong grip that was not a whit inferior to his, let Bai Sheng understand that if he made even the slightest movement, he would definitely die!

Bai Sheng was slowly lifted off the floor while in Long Chen's grasp. Looking down at the blood red pupils, he was thinking of how Bai Li died. Bai Sheng, who lived for so many years, was finally afraid and the shadow of death was lingering over his head.

He was so terrified that his face turned ashen and he hurriedly begged, saying: "Please let me go! I promise that I will bring all of my Bai Family away from Poplar Town and hand you all of the Bai Family properties!"

Long Chen laughed coldly, not agreeing nor denying.

At this moment, Founder Yang had come to terms with the reality that Long Chen had killed Bai Li. Everyone hurriedly gathered around Long Chen and, looking at the miserable state of Bai Sheng, the three members of the Yang Family all felt extremely satisfied, especially Founder Yang. Seeing that this traitorous brother of his, the one he had acknowledged his whole life had finally landed in his clutches and his emotions surged wildly.

“Chen Er, you know what to do, right?”

When Bai Sheng had pleaded, Founder Yang coldly looked at him and blandly asked.

Founder Yang’s intentions were extremely clear: Bai Sheng was not allowed to exist on this earth anymore.

Bai Sheng furiously stared at Founder Yang, saying: “Brother Yang, we have been brothers our whole lives! Are you going to be this vicious now? On the account that I have helped you so many times before, how about repaying the grace and letting me go this one time?”

Founder Yang sneered and said: “The very night you placed the Nightmare Flower in my mouth, we were no longer brothers. Chen Er, do not drag this any longer, take action now.....”

With Founder Yang’s last three words, Bai Sheng’s tears had begun to fall. He felt the pressure on his neck started to increase, and seeing that Long Chen and

the Yang Family members did not plan on sparing his life, he knew that it was forfeited.

He thought of how he had meticulously planned his attempt to exterminate the Yang Family, twice, but still ended up defeated by their hands. By Long Chen's hands. Seeing this youth that was destined to have a great future ahead, Bai Sheng was extremely unwilling in his heart. What he regretted most was not killing this genius Long Chen before he made any progress in cultivation.

"Xiong Er, if only you were more vicious in your methods back then, our Bai Family would not have to meet with such an ending today. Long Qinglan was extremely mysterious to us all those years ago. We should have all along realised that his son would not simply be just a useless brat."

Bai Sheng despaired as he thought this..

However, looking at Yang Xueqing, Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian, Bai Sheng momentarily laughed wildly and said: "Kill me if you want, but the azure sea metal chain binding Yang Xueqing's body is impossible to be opened without a key or an advanced grade spirit sword....."

Bai Sheng originally thought he could threaten the Yang Family members by saying this. After all, if Yang Xueqing was forever bound by these chains, she was as good as being dead.

What made Bai Sheng lose all hope was when the Yang Family members all looked at each other and smiled. Yang Qingxuan then said blandly: "It seems like this Bai dog doesn't know, the conferment from the Lingwu Family contains an advanced grade spirit sword!"

By now Bai Sheng had given up all hope, how could he not know that he had no more chance to leave this place anymore.

However thinking of that thing, Bai Sheng suddenly felt extremely relieved. He looked the Yang Family members with a crazy expression and exclaimed: "Kill me if you want to, I, Bai Sheng no longer want to live anyway. However I'm afraid the only Yang Family members remaining will be the few of you. Haha..... Yang Cangqiong, we still have heirs in our Bai Family, but as for your Yang Family, it seems like the bloodline will be stopped. This time, I haven't lost to you!

As Bai Sheng said these words, the expression on Long Chen and the rest all changed abruptly. Founder Yang knew that Yang Qingxuan had instructed the rest to leave Poplar Town but, after listening to Bai Sheng, it seemed like it was all within the expectations of the Bai Family. After remembering Bai Zhanlong and Bai Zhanfeng weren't here, the Yang Family members' brows had all furrowed. As for Yang Qingxuan and Yang Yuntian, the shock was so great that they could not even stand properly!

Seeing the agonised expression on their faces, Bai Sheng laughed hysterically and said: "With the speed of Zhanlong and the rest, after so long, who knows if all of the other Yang Family members have died by now! Your Yang Family still lost in the end!"

Yang Qingxuan cast a furious gaze on Bai Sheng and then looked towards Founder Yang and said with sorrow: "Father.....Wu Er and the rest....."

Long Chen had never thought that things would end this way. The rage in his heart grew and, seeing that despite his imminent death this old man was still so smug, Long Chen immediately used all of his force and crushed the neck of Bai Sheng while he was still alive!

To think that one of the experts in Poplar Town were to die in this manner, under the hands of a 16 years old youth, was something no one could ever expect.

Long Chen could never have imagined that he would become the super expert in Poplar Town in just over a month's time. The credit of this achievement was due to the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant and the mysterious Inherited Blood Essence!

“Grandfather, I'll leave the Soul Diffusion Fruits and my mother to you. Lingqing and the rest might be in trouble so I will run with my utmost speed and save them now!”

Looking at this youth, Founder Yang nodded his head solemnly.

Right now, they believed in Long Chen more than anyone else. He had replaced Founder Yang as the pillar of support for the Yang Family.

If it were several months ago and someone prophesied this moment, everyone would have definitely thought that person to be a lunatic. However, the truth was now in front of everyone.

Tears welled in Yang Lingqing's eyes.

All of the old, the weak, the women and children in the Yang Family were all huddled together and trembling. At this point, the only people who barely had the ability to fight back were three: Yang Lingqing, Yang Lingyue and Yang Wu.

But their opponents right now were the eldest son, Bai Zhanlong, the fourth son Bai Zhanfeng, as well as Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji who had recently recovered.

At this moment the four of them laughed and looked towards Yang Lingqing and the other two. Amongst them, Bai Shiji smirked and said: “How is it? Lingqing, Lingyue, have the both of you made up your minds? Right now, your Yang Family is thoroughly finished. Only by following me and my elder brother will you have a chance to live!”

On the side of the Yang Family, under the attack of the four from Bai Family, Yang Wu had already fallen.

At this moment he was lying in Yang Lingyue’s arms and his face was extremely pale. The traces of blood at the corners of his mouth had reappeared even though he wiped it away and it was clear that in this exchange he was more severely injured than before!

Yang Lingyue cried, her tears falling down like petals of blossom flowers. She gave Bai Shiji a look of loathing and said: “What abilities do you two brothers have by ganging up on my brother. All of your Bai Family are bastards! Only being able to resort to underhanded means such as bullying the weak and women!”

Bai Shiji however was not flustered after being told off by Yang Lingyue. He smiled and said: “It looks like your stupidity is not average. In this world, only the results matter not the process. Right now, your grandfather and that little bastard, have definitely ,100 percent, been slain by my grandfather and the expert from Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. As for us here, we have to finish exterminating the remaining trash of the Yang Family members before returning to celebrate. It seems like time is running out so I will no longer waste any more

of it. As for the both of you girls, we will just resort to violence to bring you away. For the rest, all of you must die!”

Regarding the matter of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and Yang Xueqing being a hostage, Yang Lingqing had already overheard them earlier. Thinking that they would all perish and that the mighty Yang Family was meeting its end, their hearts all shattered.

If not for Yang Qingxuan, who had instructed them right before he left, these silver spooned children would not be able to endure until this moment.

At that moment, Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji started walking towards the Yang Family members and suddenly, the women and children screamed. Looking at the rest of the family members behind her, Yang Lingqing gritted her teeth and said to Yang Wu: “Big Brother, hand me the Phantom Glass Sword.....”

“Bai Shichen.”

Yang Lingqing walked a few steps and stood in front of everyone. She coldly looked at the two youths from the Bai Family and gritted her teeth while holding back her tears, boldly saying: “Are you sure that you want me to leave with you?”

Bai Shichen was stumped. He looked at Bai Shichen and then smiled and said: “Lingqing, have you finally thought things through? This is a great decision. You can live together with Lingyue at our Bai residence. You’ll surely have a great time there, don’t you think so?”

Yang Lingqing did not seem to have heard his eager persuasion. She held back her tears and said: “They are very simple, but I have two conditions.”

Bai Shichen’s curiosity was aroused, saying: “What conditions? Let me, Big Brother, hear it?”

Seeing this young lady standing at the forefront, all of the Yang Family members started crying. At this point Yang Lingqing said decisively: “The first condition is to let them go. All of our Yang Family’s experts have all died at your hands. These people here will never be able to pose a threat to you. Unless... your Bai Family is afraid of this group of women and children?”

Bai Shichen looked at the crying members of the Yang Family. Although he had orders from his grandfather, thinking of Yang Lingqing who would be willing to

follow him, he decided to agree to this first condition.

“I’ll just promise her now and when she is in my hands, won’t it be the same if I kill them later? What a pity. Although Yang Lingqing is such an uncommon beauty I, Bai Shichen, am not someone who will mind the thoughts and feelings of a woman. After I have played with you enough, I’ll send you to the Emerald Jade House or maybe even the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect!”

Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji were both thinking the same thing as they looked at each other, laughed, and then agreed to Yang Lingqing’s condition.

“Although I have strict orders from my grandfather I am willing to disobey him just for your sake and I’m sure my father will understand as well!”

Bai Shichen and Bai Shiji were extremely relaxed. At that moment they were certain that Bai Sheng and Bai Li have definitely defeated the experts of the Yang Family. Furthermore with the Bai Family’s four experts here of which two were in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and two in the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, these defenseless Yang Family members in front of them could be killed easily. Since they were rather bored they wanted to play with them for a little while.

Bai Zhanfeng, who was behind Bai Shiji, frowned at this moment asking Bai Zhanlong who was beside him: “Big Brother, if they carry on playing like this and wasting time I wonder if it’ll affect any of Father’s plans?”

Bai Zhanlong laughed and said: “Xue Yuanzi is an expert of the Human Dan Realm and is a dozen times stronger than that old geezer Yang. Coupled with Father and Second Uncle, how will the Yang Family have a chance to survive? Shichen and Shiji have just recovered and must have some trauma from it so let

them fool around for a while. When they're tired of it, they will naturally stop. The main reason for this is to let them be rid of their trauma. After all, that little bastard from the Yang Family is a little too overpowering.....”

Thinking of that youth, Bai Zhanlong frowned and also sighed gently.

“If our Bai Family were to produce such a genius, how great would that be.....?”

Under the supervision of Bai Zhanlong and Bai Zhanfeng, Yang Lingqing withstood all the pressure and coldly stared at Bai Shichen with loathing in her eyes. At this moment Bai Shichen asked: “Lingqing, tell me, what your second condition is?”

Yang Lingqing then took a sword from Yang Wu. The sword, which was sheathed, had an emerald like hilt with an immense aura emanating from it. Seeing it, both Bai Zhanlong and Bai Zhanfeng frowned.

As they were puzzling over the origin of this sword, Yang Lingqing carried it and walked in front of Bai Shichen. She gritted her teeth and finally said: “Bai Shichen, listen carefully, my second condition is for you to defeat me!”

Hearing Yang Lingqing words, all of the Bai Family members were shocked.

Bai Zhanlong and Bai Zhanfeng recovered quickly and smirked as they looked at each other. As for Bai Shiji, he laughed even more heartily. Regarding Bai Shichen, upon hearing the request which did not seem like a request, he chuckled, saying: “I can definitely fulfil this request, don't be afraid Lingqing, I will definitely not harm you!”

The Bai Family members easily agreed. On the Yang Family members' side, hearing Yang Lingqing made such a request, all of their faces changed expressions. Yang Lingyue knew that Yang Lingqing wasn't a match for them so she broke down crying and said: "Lingqing, no!"

However, Lingqing had already made her decision and her eyes were filled with determination. Glancing back at the Yang Family members one last time, Yang Lingqing thought of many things, the joy and happiness and all the bits and pieces of the days spent with them. Finally, she thought of Long Chen, the man who had once reversed the situation and saved the entire Yang Family with his own hands.

"Elder Brother, you are my role model. Today, I will show them what I have learned from you....."

As she thought of Long Chen, a very strong resolve ignited in her heart. It was as if he was standing right beside her, giving her encouragement, and her slender body was filled with endless energy.

She resolutely turned around and grabbed the hilt of the sword. Seeing the determination and tenacity in her eyes, Bai Shichen had a sudden vision and actually visualized Long Chen's figure from Yang Lingqing's body!

One must know that Long Chen was his nightmare.

"Bai Shichen, you are really crazy....."

Bai Shichen mocked himself and then softly pushed Bai Shiji back. He then

used a gentle voice and said to Yang Lingqing: “Alright Lingqing, come at me. I’ll play around with you. But don’t worry, I will treat you tenderly.”

Bai Shichen’s smiling expression was like a welcoming sun that provided warmth but Yang Lingqing felt nothing but utter disgust. Inhaling deeply, her gaze turned cold. Suddenly, she rapidly charged towards Bai Shichen!

Bai Shichen smiled, since everything was within his control.

Seeing Bai Shichen getting closer and closer, Yang Lingqing lips slightly curled at the edges and when she was about 10 metres away from him she drew the Phantom Glass Sword at an extremely fast speed!

Bai Shichen still had a gentle and smiling demeanour as he approached Yang Lingqing, having no thoughts of attacking her. Suddenly both Bai Zhanfeng and Bai Zhanlong, who were behind him, frowned. In the same instant Yang Lingqing unsheathed her sword they all felt that something was amiss. Instantly, the resplendent light reflected by the blade shone brightly!

In Bai Shichen’s eyes, Yang Lingqing had already turned into a phantom and she no longer looked real anymore. As the blade flashed, each strike looked like a gorgeous flower and made one unaware of whether they were real or fake. Each flower was sculpted beautifully and was extremely exquisite.

In Bai Shichen eyes, this was a performance, not a sword technique!

“[Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash].....[Mirage Blade Blossom Shadow]!”

When Bai Shichen finally discovered the mortal attack, under Yang Lingqing’s

full strength, it had already landed on his body. The aesthetic flowers from before had turned into countless razor sharp blades, each filled with heavy killing intent, and had all locked on to Bai Shichen.

“Chen Er, hurry and dodge!”

Bai Zhanfeng’s and Bai Zhanlong’s voices travelled from behind and Bai Shichen realised that things had gone awry. Right now, to him, Yang Lingqing was no flower but a sharp blade!

Yang Lingqing was only in the sixth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm but, when she used the advanced Huang grade Phantom Glass Sword coupled with [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash], her might completely exceeded the realm of the sixth level, jumping directly into the eight. What was most important was that Bai Shichen did not think highly of Yang Lingqing so it was only when she had almost struck him that he reacted.

But, it was all too late. Under the extreme panic, Bai Shichen was terrified. This strike from Yang Lingqing had far exceeded his expectations!

Currently, he felt exactly the same as when he fought with Long Chen. As he thought of Long Chen he felt his stomach flipped and an unfathomable fear. Long Chen was akin to a devil which had crawled right into his heart!

To him, Yang Lingqing now was no longer Yang Lingqing ,but Long Chen!

Everything had happened in a flash and Bai Shichen only managed to use half of the [Dark Heavenly Finger – Transformed Devil First Finger] to defend against Yang Lingqing’s [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash]. Unfortunately for him, how

could a complete [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] using the Phantom Glass Sword be that simple?

Under the astonished gazes of everyone, each and every light reflected from the blade demolished his finger technique. Under Yang Lingqing's cold and determined look, countless blade lights wildly fell onto Bai Shichen's body, which forced him to let out an ear piercing screams that numbed the scalps of people present!

Hearing his screams, Bai Zhanlong and Bai Zhanfeng were both heartbroken, they both let out furious roars and madly dashed towards Bai Shichen to rescue him. But by now, Yang Lingqing had already sheathed the Phantom Glass Sword and rapidly retreated.

In her eyes, there were tears, blood and determination, but absolutely no regrets nor fear.

In the masses of the Yang Family, they were all quiet and looked at Yang Lingqing with shock. As for the opposite side, Bai Zhanlong and Bai Zhanfeng had already arrived in front of Bai Shichen, and at this moment Bai Shichen's eyes widened and disbelievingly looked at Yang Lingqing.

On his body, the clothes had been shredded to multiple pieces, and when Bai Zhanlong touched Bai Shichen's body, he was momentarily stunned.

Because right now, Bai Shichen's body was split in many pieces, and fell to the ground with a crashing sound, and blood stained Bai Zhanlong's clothes and eyes.

Seeing that Bai Shichen actually died so tragically, as well as the many pieces of his corpse, the Yang Family children all screamed and some even vomited.

When Yang Lingyue saw the corpse, her mind turned blank. She had absolutely no idea what had happened and never thought that Yang Lingqing would be able to kill Bai Shichen. All she could see was the image of Bai Shichen's corpse that had imprinted in her mind and caused her stomach to flip!

Yang Wu was also stunned. He silently raised his head to look at the slender girl standing in front of them and bit his lips tightly.

“Lingqing, nice one.....”

Although Yang Wu had whispered, Yang Lingqing had heard it clearly. She never expected that she would one day kill someone. It was her first time and also the most unbelievable killing in her life!

There was an endless fury and hatred in her heart and only with this did she believe that she had not let down the Yang Family and the mandate Yang Qingxuan gave before he left.

Bai Zhanlong entered a state of fury as he saw the way his son died. However, Yang Lingqing wasn't even slightly afraid as she looked at the 3 Bai Family members who suddenly seemed like devils. She simply gripped the Phantom Glass Sword tightly while her eyes filled with determination.

“Elder Brother, my performance would definitely let you be satisfied huh? When I go to the Yellow Springs, I can finally brag to you.....”

Thinking of that person, Yang Lingqing closed her eyes and her mouth curled up slightly.

She suddenly recalled the time, back when she was six, when Long Chen stood in front and defended her.

“Is this my Elder Brother who has protected me since I was young?”

When Yang Lingqing opened her eyes, Bai Zhanlong and the rest had already turned into devils rushing towards her. The aura from the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had completely sealed all of her movements!

At this moment, Death’s shadow enveloped every one of the Yang Family members.

Finally, Yang Lingqing could not control herself and cried.

Because from afar, she saw a blood red figure wildly dashing down Big Barren Mountain!

The Proud Son Of Heavens

Nobody expected Bai Shichen would actually die under Yang Lingqing's hands. After he saw his son who was completely fine, being mutilated into pieces, Bai Zhanlong's mind turned blank. All that remained in his mind was a single word: Kill!

When he turned around and saw this girl from the Yang Family, her slender figure defending the Yang Family members at the front, Bai Zhanlong did not dare to believe that his super powerful and genius son had actually perished under her hands!

One reason that contributed greatly to this was that Bai Shichen had underestimated Yang Lingqing. An even bigger reason was the sudden rise in her power!

With his son's death, Bai Zhanlong turned insane. Bai Shiji, who was standing not far away from Bai Shichen, also had a pale complexion. As for Bai Zhanfeng, his face turned steely while he used a venomous pair of eyes to look towards the Yang Family members.

“Not a single one of the Yang Family members will leave this place alive!”

Bai Zhanfeng gritted his teeth and said these words. Bai Zhanlong was now akin to a wild dragon and madly charged towards Yang Lingqing!

[TL Note: His name is, 白展龙, or Bai Zhanlong, and the 龙, or “long”, part of his name means dragon.]

The strength of the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm was like a huge wave surging while Yang Lingqing was only a small raft amidst it. Under this tempest, her only ending was death.

Since she already knew that it would result to that, Yang Lingqing could only resign herself to her fate. She was not scared of death but rather that her actions would implicate the others. She was extremely heartbroken and as she despaired the sudden red flash of a figure had charged into her sight!

Instantly, Yang Lingqing's heart lit up with joy. Her originally tightened heartstrings had now completely loosened. Seeing this figure, she felt extremely serene.

“Chen.....Elder Brother.”

When she saw the familiar figure, she already knew that it was Long Chen. If Bai Zhanlong's speed was like a whirlwind then Long Chen would be like a hurricane. He had instantly passed both Bai Zhanfeng and Bai Shiji and headed straight towards Bai Zhanlong!

As an enormous aura from his back came pressing towards him Bai Zhanlong, who was toying with Yang Lingqing's life, finally turned around and recovered from his blind rage. This aura made him realise that even if he were to kill Yang Lingqing, the next to die would be him.

Bai Zhanlong did not know exactly who it was behind him but, naturally, he simply cared for his own life. He hesitated for a while, and during this period Yang Lingqing had managed to retreat backwards. As for Bai Zhanlong, he once again charged forward several steps but suddenly the threat from a fatal attack came enveloping his body!

He was dumbstruck as he turned around. What made his eyes widen drastically was that a blood red figure had suddenly appeared in his eyesight. Bai Zhanlong only saw a silhouette and the full power of the attack, which was too strong to be blocked, hit directly on his body!

As the fatal attack struck and hurt his whole body, Bai Zhanlong was in so much pain that he could barely breathe. Although he had only seen the silhouette of a red shadow, Bai Zhanlong already knew who it belonged to.

Long Chen. Only Long Chen possessed this armour of blood red scales. This realization made Bai Zhanlong feel a sense of helplessness.

From just one hit by Long Chen, his defenses were completely shattered. Bai Zhanlong knew that not only he was defeated, but the Bai Family too!

If the Bai Family was not defeated, there was no way Long Chen would be able to appear here with such enormous strength!

After throwing out another blow, Long Chen directly hit Bai Zhanlong who was on the ground. As his chest suffered another punch from Long Chen, the spikes on Long Chen's fist deeply pierced through it and caused his chest to become a gruesome, bloody, and contorted mess!

A mouthful of blood spurted out, and quickly dyed his whole face red. Bai Zhanlong endured that immense pain and tried his hardest to open his eyes. Unfortunately for him, his whole vision had already turned red and gradually became smaller. He faintly discovered that in the upper region of his sight was a piercing red sun and under the sunlight, a blood red figure lightly swept past his body. The image of a perfect armour of blood red scales was reflected in his dim

eyes.

“You.....”

Only then did Bai Zhanlong’s world turned pitch black.

After beating Bai Zhanlong to death, Long Chen came before Yang Lingqing. Seeing that little girl who was sobbing quietly, Long Chen dotingly embraced her while Yang Lingqing hugged tightly onto him and cried even more vigorously. Her tears soaked Long Chen’s clothing.

When Yang Lingyue, who was behind them, saw Long Chen appear and use such tyrannical might to kill Bai Zhanlong, she was so moved that she couldn’t breathe.

The position that Long Chen held in her heart, since the time he had beaten her on the stage, had already risen rapidly. Up till today, Yang Lingqing had long ago placed him as the pillar of support in the Yang Family, as well as her own personal support!

As for Yang Wu, his face that was originally devoid of colour finally had some health back. He breathed in deeply and, after seeing the blood red figure under the sun, bowed his head completely.

“Only he will be the true and proud son of the heavens. Before him I, Yang Wu, will simply be a mortal man.....”

All of the Yang Family members looked at the current Long Chen. They had let go of their feelings of despair instantly. In the past they could have never

imagined that one day Long Chen would become their saviour. Whenever Long Chen appeared, they understood that they were completely out of danger and that the Yang Family would always win.

There were many complicated, yet moved, expressions from the masses when looking at Long Chen.

As Long Chen was caressing Yang Lingqing's hair, a gentle voice entered her ears.

"Lingqing, I am sorry that brother came so late this time and made you suffer....."

Yang Lingqing, who was originally very tense, now relaxed. Her heart was completely filled with joy and relaxation. She felt the need to tell Long Chen of the boundless grievance she held, but just couldn't bring herself to do it.

"You don't need to say anything; I know what it is that you want to say. This time you were extremely brave. As expected, you are the sister of me, Long Chen. As for the bad guys, who bullied you, there is only one ending for them and that is death....."

When they saw that Bai Zhanlong had only received two attacks from Long Chen yet died miserably from that, Bai Zhanfeng and Bai Shiji no longer felt anger but instead deep fear towards Long Chen.

They did not have the ability to think of how Long Chen escaped from the Bai Family's inescapable net or why he would be this strong. After Long Chen's appearance and his forceful killing of Bai Zhanlong, their hearts were all

completely devoured by fear!

Bai Shiji would never have imagined that the soft and immature brat from before would now cause him to be in such a fearful state. He was the same as Bai Zhanfeng, breaking into a run and running as fast as they could!

As he ran away, Bai Zhanfeng's mind finally cleared. However, the clearer he felt, the more fearful he got.

"How did he appear here? How can he be this strong? Could it be that Father's extreme preparations cannot finish him off? The Human Dan Realm cultivator was actually not his match? This is impossible, how can this kid be so terrifying?"

The waves of emotion in Bai Zhanfeng's heart surged and by this point he had already run all the way down Big Barren Mountain. When he finally thought he was safe, a flash of red suddenly appeared in front of him and blocked his path.

Bai Zhanfeng's complexion instantly changed!

"Under my hands, you still think of escaping?"

Long Chen's frosty voice entered Bai Zhanxiong's ears. Just after Bai Zhanfeng heard Long Chen's words, the figure in front of him disappeared and he felt a power directly enter his body, making his perfect body instantly ravaged into a ruined corpse!

"Why me?"

After Bai Zhanfeng uttered those words, his internal organs were ruptured by Long Chen's [Nine Fingers of the Wind Devil]. Very soon, his consciousness faded into nothingness and his eyes widened with a clear look of disbelief in them.

As the corpse toppled, Long Chen shook his head.

"There is no reason to ask "why?". As long as you are our enemy, you must meet your demise."

Once again, he disappeared from that place and headed towards Bai Shiji who had run quite a distance already. Bai Shiji, who was running with his maximum speed, was completely unable to outrun Long Chen whose speed was like a violent gust of wind.

At the time Bai Shiji had entered the Big Barren Mountain, he saw Long Chen was only chasing after Bai Zhanfeng and so he heaved a sigh of relief. His gaze turned sinister as he said: "Yang Family, by letting me escape today, I, Bai Shiji, will definitely train and endure any hardships. The day I succeed, will be the day your Yang Family will perish!"

"Is that right?"

When the voice sounded behind Bai Shiji, his face instantly paled and he felt a strong power applied on his body. As he faced such an enormous pressure, he was completely defenseless against it and was dragged backwards!

He knew that it was Long Chen who was dragging him.

Bai Shiji had never tried to move at such a speed and even Bai Sheng had never

ran that fast while carrying him. As he ran, he could only feel the wind blowing and only hazily noticed his surroundings.

At this moment, Long Chen stuck his face right in front of him. Seeing the frightened and despair-filled look on Bai Shiji, he laughed and said: “Since you said it like this, all the more reason I cannot spare you.”

Hearing these words from Long Chen scared Bai Shiji into peeing in his pants. He soon realized that he was captured and taken back to where all the Yang Family members were. Seeing so many cold gazes fixed upon him, Bai Shiji’s mighty aura faded away into nothingness. He miserably knelt on the floor in front of Long Chen and said with tears streaming down his face: “Please spare me! Even if I, Bai Shiji, have to slave my whole life and serve you I am willing to! I beg of you to please spare me, I will never dare do it again.....”

Seeing such a pathetic figure from Bai Shiji only made Long Chen look down on him even more. Long Chen suddenly remembered Bai Shiji’s previously haughty looks. It was an irony that he was now kneeling before him and begging for mercy. His heart felt deeply rueful.

“All this was because of power. Father would never ever harm me and his words were all golden nuggets of wisdom. I definitely cannot be satisfied with my current level. Otherwise, one day I will be the one kneeling in front of others.”

Looking at Bai Shiji’s actions, the Yang Family could only feel disgusted.

Especially Yang Lingyue. Previously, in her eyes, Bai Shiji was an elegant young man and was countless times more outstanding than the “useless brat” Long Chen. Yang Lingyue had once pictured Long Chen kneeling in front of Bai Shichen, never the other way around. It was more pathetic than she had ever

imagined.

Thinking back to the previously mighty Bai Shiji and how he had injured her brother Yang Wu, Yang Lingyue only held extreme rage towards him. Especially since she did not know if Founder Yang and the rest were still alive. The killing intent she held for Bai Shiji was the greatest amongst the Yang Family members.

Suddenly, Long Chen looked at Yang Lingyue and plainly said: “Sister Lingyue, you’ll kill him!”

Hearing Long Chen suddenly, Yang Lingyue was initially stunned.

“Lingyue, you should go and kill Bai Shiji. It is about time that you start to grow up.”

Yang Wu’s voice slowly travelled from her bosom. She looked at her heavily injured brother and then at Long Chen and Yang Lingqing. Thinking that Yang Lingqing had actually killed Bai Shichen by herself, Yang Lingyue was extremely impressed with her. Now, would she be able to kill Bai Shiji by herself?”

After hearing those words, Bai Shiji’s expression changed. As he saw Long Chen’s cold expression, he already knew that he wouldn’t have any hope left. Therefore, he wanted to use Lingyue as his hostage. But, how could Long Chen not anticipate his actions?

Bai Shiji barely moved before he was given another punch to his chest which made him fall to the ground. He felt that all of the bones in his body had fallen apart as the pain spread and made it impossible for him to move.

“Lingqing, lend me a sword.”

Yang Lingyue’s icy voice entered Bai Shiji’s ears. Instantly, Bai Shiji was so scared that his face was drained of colour. He hastily said: “Lingyue, please don’t be like this. You mustn’t.....I really love you. If not, why would I have given you that emerald necklace and that pair of earrings previously?”

After Bai Shiji finished speaking, the emerald necklace and shiny earrings were thrown in his face. Through the silver glitter of the jewellery, Bai Shiji saw an even larger glint of the Phantom Glass Sword. After exhaling, Bai Shiji felt an icy cold material pierce through his heart.

In his semi-conscious state, Yang Lingyue’s beauty once again appeared in his vision. Very soon, however, his entire world gradually dissipated.

Piercing the Phantom Glass Sword through Bai Shiji’s heart, Yang Lingyue collapsed on the floor and blankly laughed: “Bai Shiji, you had said it before: “Only by digging your heart out will I be able to know if you placed me inside your heart.” Now that I have finally done it, I see it clearly and the answer was: No.....”

Long Chen patted her head, saying: “Don’t be silly. That kind of person’s heart is filled with only dog’s blood. How could he have the heart of a beauty like you?”

DBWG Chapter 63

Crimson Blood Sacred Sect!

Almost every important figure of the Yang Family was present in Hongwu Hall and at this moment they all were seated.

The people, who had just experienced a hair-raising battle, had returned to Poplar Town. They finally put an end to the fight and all of the Yang Family members got the feeling that they had just been released of a heavy burden.

This time, the Yang Family had undergone a hell raising experience. Fortunately, no one was hurt. Everyone knew that this was all due to the efforts of one person so, at this moment, while sitting at the Hongwu Hall, all of them occasionally glanced at the youth that was sitting there quietly.

The strife with the Bai Family had finally ended and the Yang Family obtained a total victory, crushing the main forces of the Bai Family. As for the other members of the Bai Family, they had all escaped. These children and women posed no threat at all to the Yang Family anymore, so they all knew that the Bai Family could be considered to have perished completely this time.

After Poplar Town experienced this enormous storm, the other factions faintly heard bits and pieces regarding the battle. After knowing the outcome, all of them recalled someone in their heart: Long Chen.

The Bai Family plotted against them twice but it was due to Long Chen that they could overturn the crisis and obtain victory. One could put it this way: without Long Chen the Yang Family members were, most likely, ghosts and spirits in the Yellow Springs.

The Yang Family was clearly aware of this point. At present, when they looked upon Long Chen's face, they found that it had changed drastically from a month ago.

Those respectful, yet fearful, gazes caused Long Chen to be deeply moved.

Founder Yang, who was sitting at the head position, recovered from his deep thoughts at this point. His eyes scanned everyone and finally landed on Long Chen, saying: "My Yang Family has met with two calamities. In the end, no one died from them. We can even say that no one was even hurt. All this can be credited to a single person."

From Founder Yang's speech, it was a little choked on his emotions. Everyone knew his heartfelt gratitude and excitement.

"It is him who defeated the Bai Family younger generation in the demonic beast hunting competition and rescued you. It is also him who then used those youths as hostages to save us who were poisoned. As for today, it is him who defeated Bai Sheng and Bai Li and even the expert of the Human Dan Realm, once again saving everyone....."

Being very emotional, every eye in the crowd had moistened with tears. This was especially true for Yang Xueqing. After experiencing so many things, her heart was already very fragile and, looking at that calm and collected youth, her emotions stirred more than anyone else.

He was, after all, her flesh and blood and she had looked down on him previously.

However, it was undeniable that her underestimating him was the strong driving force in Long Chen doing his best to become strong.

Founder Yang nodded towards Long Chen and said: “Chen Er, your performance has rendered me at a loss. I don’t know how to repay you. I am aware that none of us ever treated you or your father well. However, you are able to not bear grudges and even risked your life for us. Honestly speaking, this old man has never been moved before but just saying ‘thanks’ now will not be enough to convey my feelings. I can only say that the Yang Family is your real family in the present and in the future. We will try to rectify and make it up to you for all of the wrongdoings that we did to you in the past.”

Every word that Founder Yang said was from his heart and all of the Yang Family members were in favor of them.

Suddenly being so appreciated, Long Chen was at a loss. He hurriedly laughed and said: “Everyone, please don’t look at me like that! Although I am very handsome, I don’t think I deserve such revered gazes from everyone.....”

Long Chen’s cheeky speech made the girls of the Yang Family break into laughter. Yang Qingxuan and the rest shook their heads but the corner of their mouths expressed their amusement.

“Why are you so complacent? If it wasn’t me that gave you a hand to kill that guy, would you be here today?!”

Lingxi, who was in the Lingxi sword, had already woken up and mocked him as she pouted. One could tell though, by looking at her happy face, that she was actually very elated that Long Chen had this day.

Founder Yang shook his head and smiled, saying: “Chen Er, you are not a calculative person. By saying those words, it seems that I have been unreasonable. Alright, let me talk about something more realistic. Right now, Poplar Town no longer has the Bai Family so in the future this Yang Family will be the ruler in this town. When we eliminated them, we reaped huge benefits and one of them was to get these 3 Soul Diffusion Fruits. Chen Er, these 3 Soul Diffusion Fruits are all based on your efforts so how you want to distribute them is solely up to you!”

Founder Yang’s gaze looked sincere and Long Chen knew that he was serious. However, he hastily waved his hands and said: “Grandfather, you’re the leader of this family. You should be the one to do this...”

“Stop speaking like this. Where will I be able to place my old face at? If you still treat me as your grandfather, you must take these Soul Diffusion Fruits.”

Saying this, he took out the Soul Diffusion Fruits from the cosmos pouch. Long Chen helplessly said: “Alright then let me distribute them. There are three of them. I am sufficed with only one. The other will be given to you, Grandfather. We need a Deity Dan Realm expert to hold the fort so this Soul Diffusion Fruit is for you. As the head of the family, you cannot reject it no matter what.”

Hearing the resolution in his speech, Founder Young understood what he meant and nodded his head.

The Yang Family only had him at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm at the moment. He was the only one who could enter the Deity Dan Realm within the shortest period of time and support the family.

“As for the last fruit....”

Long Chen shifted his gaze to Yang Qingxuan and Yang Xueqing. When he looked at Yang Xueqing, his eyes stopped for a while. He wanted to give it directly to her so that Yang Xueqing could become stronger and be in less danger.

However, he understood that the stronger one was the stronger adversaries they would face. So he said: “Now, the two in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm is First Uncle and my mother so let’s decide it like this: The Soul Diffusion Fruit will belong to whoever has their breakthrough first.”

The Yang Family definitely wouldn’t have any objections to Long Chen’s decision.

To them, family safety is the most important. Regarding who was the one becoming stronger, it did not matter to them at all. After these two calamities all of the Yang Family members had finally united and stuck together as one.

Founder Yang’s gaze moved to the entrance. As he looked out, the sky had gradually turned scarlet in colour. The glow of the sunset covered the sky, making it looked exceptionally beautiful.

“When the sun rises tomorrow, my Yang Family will really be reborn...”

Founder Yang envisioned a brand new Family appearing in Poplar Town. This Family would not only have experts of the Deity Dan Realm, but also a super genius.

With Founder Young's support and Long Chen's enormous potential, all of the Yang Family felt extremely at ease.

However, as everyone was immersed in their joy and happiness, Long Chen frowned. After distributing the Soul Diffusion Fruits, he knocked on the table, blandly saying: "Everyone, the deceased Xue Yuanzi in the Big Barren Mountain was one of the eight Proctors of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect in Yuanling City....."

Thinking of this matter, Yang Qingxuan's expression changed as well. He probed and asked: "Xue Yuanzi wanted the Soul Diffusion Fruits by sneaking in here. If that's the case, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect shouldn't know that it was us who did it right?"

Founder Yang also furrowed his brows while shaking his head and said: "They will definitely investigate someone of the Proctor level dying. Xue Yuanzi and the Bai Family were close and at this moment it will be very easy for them to trace everything to Poplar Town. Furthermore, many people already know about what happened in this place....."

With Founder Yang's words, the rest of the Yang Family's members turned pale again. The previously relaxed atmosphere turned anxious once more.

Yang Qingxuan bitterly smiled as he shook his head: "It looks like our Yang Family has so many setbacks. Father, do you know what the current situation with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is?"

Founder Yang's face darkened as he said: "The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect may not have such a huge reputation in the vast Yuanling City, but is definitely of status for us in this area. It is known that the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect has a

total of eight Proctors and four Grand Elders whose strengths are at least in the Human Dan Realm. As for the four Grand Elders, they are all at least in the late phases of the Human Dan Realm. Moreover, according to some rumours the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect Patriarch has already entered the super horrifying Earth Dan Realm!”

Founder Yang’s words caused the Yang Family members to inhale a breath of cold air and Long Chen’s expression had become extremely unsightly.

“To go against a Bai Family and a Xue Yuanzi was already a strenuous effort for us Yang Family. If we are to go against this Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, even if a small family like ours is to die ten thousand times, it will still not be enough. Today I may be able to protect the Yang Family, but who knows for the future?”

“After just entering the Deity Dan Realm, I will still not be able to match up to any of them. Moreover, there are people who are at the later phases of the Human Dan Realm. Those who are more advanced than the Dan Realm... I don’t even want to think about it. Is the Yang Family going to meet its end already?”

He raised his head to glance at Yang Lingqing and Yang Xueqing. They were the ones that Long Chen had sworn to protect.

Long Chen would begin to feel confident in himself after looking at them. It could be said that the immense task had resolved him to forcefully carry on.

“I can’t watch them die under my watch. It will be better if I just die before that happens...”

The pressure he felt instantly became much heavier. Hearing “Earth Dan

Realm”, these three words, Long Chen initially felt hopeless but soon became filled with fighting spirit.

“Anyways, I will do my best. If they want to annihilate the Yang Family, they must walk over my dead body!”

Long Chen understood that he was currently the strongest in the Yang Family so he definitely couldn’t hide from this fight!

Everyone in the Yang Family, including Yang Qingxuan, was gloomy and worried when thinking about the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. To console themselves, they could only hope that the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect would not discover that Xue Yuanzi had died under the Yang Family’s hands.

Founder Yang was not that naive. He knew the notoriety of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. If that bunch of ruthless people knew that it was the work of the Yang Family, the suffering that the Yang Family would experience wouldn’t be as simple as family extermination.

“I must hurry and enter the Deity Dan Realm. If the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect discovers it then, even if I were to fight to death, I must send Chen Er and these children away. With Chen Er’s strength, I believe that the Yang Family will flourish in the future and seek revenge for us. It shouldn’t be a difficult thing!”

Thinking to here, Founder Yang’s appearance showed his determination.

Long Chen, who had remained quiet until then, suddenly spoke. Everyone lifted their heads wondering what he wanted to say.

Long Chen also thought about the information he got from two people, Chen Xiongzhou and Feng Mingyang, while he was in the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains.

“The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is in Yuanling City. If they discover what we have done and take action, it will at least take a period of time. Furthermore, the first expert that they send over should not be that powerful. If Grandfather manages to enter the Deity Dan Realm, I think we might be able to handle it.”

“The most important thing is that the Lingwu Family in the Yuanling City will often recruit new Outer Family disciples. My potential isn’t considered too bad so I should be able to enter the Lingwu Family as one. When I do, I will be considered part of the Lingwu Family and they may give us greater protection. To me, only by going to that place, I can improve faster. Therefore, I have decided to go to Yuanling City!”

Setting Off

“I previously heard from someone that if you join the Lingwu Family, they will specially arrange to exterminate the enemies of the newly joined members. Although the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is much stronger than us, against such a colossal monster like the Lingwu Family it is not enough to even fill the gaps between its teeth.”

Every member of the Yang Family listened attentively to Long Chen’s words.

At this moment, Founder Yang raised his head and asked: “Chen Er, are you sure about this?”

Long Chen nodded his head solemnly and said: “There is no longer anyone here in Poplar Town that is our match. One reason for my decision is the expansion of my growth. As for the other, it is to deal with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. Therefore, I have already made up my mind.”

Founder Yang knew exactly how great Long Chen’s strength was right now. At least below the Human Dan Realm, there were no opponents for him anymore.

It was well known that a genius can only grow in a stressful environment. If Long Chen stayed in a small town like Poplar Town he might only have this small level of achievement throughout his entire life.

Looking at the other Yang Family members once again, Long Chen could see their touched and unwilling expressions.

At this moment, Long Chen's proposal to go to the Lingwu Family was mainly for the Yang Family. He had been thinking of how to save everyone and this time he even decided to travel on a long journey to find the solution. They all felt extremely moved and appreciative of his actions.

To tell the truth, in the past the Yang Family members treated Long Chen horribly but he was able to let bygones be bygones, which made all of them respect him.

"Since this is the case, Chen Er when do you plan to leave?"

"The threat of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is still imminent, so it cannot be delayed. I wish to leave tomorrow. Grandfather, do try your best to use the Soul Diffusion Fruit and enter the Deity Dan Realm. With that, when the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect sends some of its people to come and investigate, our Yang Family will have some form of resistance. I will make haste and quickly enter the Lingwu Family."

"So you're leaving tomorrow?"

Both Yang Xueqing and Yang Lingqing felt extreme reluctance.

After the battle of the Soul Diffusion Fruits Yang Xueqing's and Long Chen's relationship had mended.

"The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is located in Yuanling City. I think that after I enter Yuanling City it will be easier for me to understand them better. Therefore, I have decided to leave at dawn tomorrow."

The Yang Family members nodded their heads and, since Long Chen had already decided, they, naturally, did not object.

Now, with Long Chen taking the vanguard against the threat of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, they were a little more relieved.

Although they knew that Long Chen was not yet a match for the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, they still found solace in their hearts.

The night descended quickly.

Long Chen was in his room packing his belongings and suddenly there was a knock on the door. As he opened it, he noticed Yang Xueqing standing outside and she asked: "Can I come in?"

Long Chen smiled and said: "Of course you can. What mother is not allowed in her son's room?"

With Long Chen's smiling expression the atmosphere around the two turned lively. Yang Xueqing sat on the wooden chair and, as she was about to speak, Long Chen said: "Don't even think about apologising. It doesn't matter to me anymore. Currently, I also no longer blame you for that. I am leaving tomorrow but you don't have to miss me too much. Isn't it just only Yuanling City? I can return home anytime."

Yang Xueqing looked at this imp and rolled her eyes saying: "What nonsense are you saying? The Lingwu Family is governing the whole of the Yuanling City and the security is extremely tight over there. How could you enter and leave as you please? Chen Er, I come here only to tell you that when you get there you

must do your best to restrain yourself. If you make a huge mess while your strength is not enough, sooner or later you will suffer.”

“The Lingwu Family is such a colossal existence after all. Rumours have it that there are experts who are over the Deity Dan Realm. These experts are existences that can destroy the heaven and earth. Although, right now, you are number one in Poplar Town, when you get to Lingwu Family you will be at the bottom of the ladder. I do not wish you dead, so you must be extremely cautious……”

Seeing the worried expression on Yang Xueqing’s face, Long Chen was extremely moved and noted her words in his mind.

“Experts who are over the Deity Dan Realm? Existences that can destroy the heaven and earth? How terrifying would that be? I admit it; I have been a little arrogant after my quick progress in cultivation. It seems like I have to tone down a little. No matter where I go, there will always be people stronger than me.”

Hence, Long Chen nodded his head while saying: “En, I have already remembered all of your words. Please be at ease. As long as I am around there will be nothing happening to the Yang Family.”

When Long Chen said those words, Yang Xueqing suddenly felt that he was a man with an indomitable spirit.

Such a feeling caused her to be a little flustered. She thought back to the days when she was pregnant with Long Chen, feeling as if it was just yesterday. In this short span of time, Long Chen had grown up. Though everything else remained the same, her son had changed completely.

“Alright, I will say no more. Please sleep early, I am heading back....”

Saying which, Yang Xueqing stood up to leave. She was afraid that if she stayed any longer her heart would be unwilling to leave.

“Mother.....” Long Chen subconsciously called out to her.

Yang Xueqing was startled. She smiled sweetly as she promptly replied: “My purpose for coming here was because I longed to hear you call me. It has been so long since you last called me that way.....”

“There will be many more chances in the future. Who knows when you will begin to find it vexing to hear after hearing it so frequently?”

Yang Xueqing lovingly looked at him and laughed: “The way you call me, even if I grow old till death, I will never find it bothersome.”

When she finished speaking, she did not linger and headed outside. Suddenly, she turned her body and said: “I saw that girl, Lingqing, sneaking out of the residence a while ago. I don’t know where she went but she said that it is to prepare a gift for you.”

Yang Lingqing?

This silly girl. She unexpectedly mastered one of the moves of the [Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash] and also killed Bai Shichen today. Long Chen was extremely impressed.

His relationship with Yang Lingqing was extremely great and, seeing that he was about to go to Yuanling City, this girl should have been very reluctant.

“What gift is she getting me?”

Holding on to this thought after Yang Xueqing left, Long Chen started packing the things inside his cosmos pouch.

With regards to his financial situation, he barely had a deity jade. Although he was still considered wealthy in Poplar Town, when he goes to Yuanling City he will be as poor as a pauper.

There were also a few energy cores but they belonged to a few Demonic Earth Hounds and the Phantom Star Wolf and could not be sold for a lot. The only item that was of value was that single Soul Diffusion Fruit that he had.

“Right now, I’m still in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. I am unable to use this Soul Diffusion Fruit and am completely unable to deal with the vicious people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. However, if I were to enter the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm I could immediately consume this Soul Diffusion Fruit and enter the Deity Dan Realm. With my Dragon Soul Qi of tenfold quality and [Dragon Soul Transformation], at that moment my battle strength will definitely increase by a substantial level!”

“Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.....”

Founder Yang was thinking of giving a number of deity jades to Long Chen. However he had rejected them as he rationalized that these few pieces of deity jades at Yang family was much more useful than giving them to Long Chen.

“Hey, how much longer can your Dream Spirit Grass last?”

Lingxi calculated, and said worriedly: “Previously, there were six stalks of Dream Spirit Grasses but three were used up in the last battle. If there is no further mishap we can still manage for another two months or so.....”

Long Chen knew about Lingxi’s concern for him. Should there be any attacks that were irresistible, she would definitely come to his rescue. However, these three stalks of Dream Spirit Grass were barely sufficient for Lingxi and perhaps they were only sufficient for one more attack.

Deep down in his heart, Long Chen was unwilling to allow Lingxi to help.

“In the next two months, I will try not to get into any dangerous situations and at the same time find more medicine with spirit healing properties.”

Long Chen became distressed thinking about all these things.

Protecting the Yang Family and the survival of Lingxi’s life had become two of his mission that must be accomplished.

“Lingxi’s current situation is still extremely dangerous. It seems that I will need to invest more time and effort in this matter. This silly girl, how can i bear to let her leave me.....”

“Speaking of which, I, Long Chen, am still very poor.....”

After understanding this fact, the allotted time gradually passed. Long Chen once again packed some clothes and luggage. He opened his room's door and saw that the Yang Family members were already outside waiting.

He quickly scanned through the crowd. Realising Yang Lingqing was not there, Long Chen hurriedly asked: "Where is Lingqing?"

Yang Yuntian forced out a smile, shaking his head, and said: "This silly girl said she was preparing a gift, but has yet to return. If you need to leave now, I'm afraid she will not be able to send you off."

"Let's go outside first to continue our talk."

Long Chen was clueless as to what Yang Lingqing was up to. Under the various questions of worry and concern showered on to him, Long Chen and the rest very quickly left the Yang residence. It was at that moment that the sun began to rise and mild golden sunlight shone down on the earth, extending to Long Chen's feet.

The crowd waited for a while, however Yang Lingqing was nowhere in sight. With a heart filled with anxiety, as soon as Founder Yang moved to ask Long Chen to stop waiting, the cry of a horse came sounding from the distant horizon.

Long Chen looked afar and spotted this silly girl, Yang Lingqing, who was rushing over to the crowd on a two metre tall majestic horse. Very quickly, she arrived in front of everyone.

The crowd was eagerly looking towards the tall and majestic horse. It was completely black from head to tail, had firm muscles, strong and powerful legs,

and every breath it made was tough and steady from practice. On the neck there grew a long and black horse mane, and had a pair of eyes that displayed haughtiness and endurance, along with a tinge of red color.

On both its head and legs there were a few black scales. This was seemingly akin to the scales of Long Chen's [Dragon Soul Transformation].

"This.....Isn't this a demonic beast in the fifth level of the Huang grade: the Ebony Scaled Horse?"

Long Chen never thought that the gift Yang Lingqing would give him was actually this Ebony Scaled Horse.

This majestic and awe-inspiring presence of the beast was favoured greatly by Long Chen. What especially interested him was the faint murderous and blood-filled aura that it carried. The horse was definitely to Long Chen's liking.

Yang Lingqing understood his tastes very well. She even went into Big Barren Mountain during the night to tame this beast for him! When the masses saw Yang Lingqing covered in dirt as she hopped down the horse's back, it was clear that she definitely suffered a lot in the process.

The Yang Family had originally prepared a fine horse as Long Chen's mode of transportation but, compared to the Ebony Scaled Horse, it definitely paled in comparison.

Very soon, Yang Lingqing walked in front of Long Chen. While she excitedly looked towards him she chirped: "Elder Brother Chen, this is a gift that I prepared for you. Do you like it?"

Seeing the pretty face of this girl, which still had some mud that was not yet removed, Long Chen felt extremely moved. He laughed heartily as he embraced Yang Lingqing and furiously pinched her cheeks, saying: "Girl, if only you weren't my cousin, how great would that be? I would definitely drag you to bed!"

Saying these words in front of the Yang Family members, Long Chen was not embarrassed in the slightest. As for Yang Lingqing, she was extremely shy and angry at the same time. She pushed Long Chen away and hurriedly ran towards her father's side. When she saw that everyone was looking at her, her whole face flushed red like a ripe apple.

"Alright now, Chen Er, don't bully my daughter anymore. If not, I'll fight with you to the death again." Yang Yuntian laughed heartily.

Looking at the Ebony Scaled Horse Long Chen saw the reluctance in the eyes of everyone. This was including the shy, yet furious, Yang Lingqing, and the gentle gaze radiating from Yang Xueqing. Long Chen did not say another word and mounted the horse.

That Ebony Scaled Horse was so frightened by his powerful aura that it did not dare move.

After taking in a deep breath, Long Chen waved towards the Yang Family members before turning around and headed towards Yuanling City.

At this moment, the sun was scorching in the sky and Long Chen gradually disappeared under the blazing sunlight.

The Ten Great Citadels

With the Ebony Scaled Horse's speed, it would take Long Chen approximately ten days or so to get from Poplar Town to Yuanling City.

He had been travelling half the time while carrying along a sufficient amount of goods with him so he basically never entered the cities that he passed along the way.

Eight days later, there stood a gigantic city with towering walls that seemed quite formidable. Originally, Long Chen thought he had arrived at Yuanling City. When he took a closer look, however, he realized that it was merely one of the Ten Great Citadels by the side of Yuanling City, Yuanyang Citadel.

There were many people with impressive auras and profound eyes walking along the street of Yuanyang Citadel, glancing at the eye-catching merchandise. There were obviously many experts in this area.

"No matter in terms of goods or cultivation this Yuanyang Citadel is superior to Poplar Town by at least a hundred times! To think that it is only a small citadel by the side of Yuanling City!"

Long Chen loudly exclaimed in his thoughts.

Seeing this disappointing act by Long Chen, Lingxi berated: "You country bumpkin who has not seen the world! Wait till you see an Emperor's Domain, then you know what huge really is!"

What is an Emperor's Domain?"

"I am not going to tell you!"

"....."

A bustling inn stood right in front of them that was much taller, several times so, compared to the famous "Rising Sun Inn" in Poplar Town. Seeing the beautiful architecture of this building, he couldn't help but gasp as he walked into the inn.

"It is rather shameful to be seen with him." Lingxi noted in her heart.

What she did not realise was that to an outsider it was only Long Chen who had stepped into the inn. As for Lingxi, she was only a soul in an earring.

A waiter came up to welcome him quickly. His eyes were extremely sharp and, looking at Long Chen's apparel, he gathered that he was some kind of wealthy child from a small town.

Although he was regarded as a wealthy child, in Yuanyang Citadel he was not well accepted and because he had no servants with him, he was disregarded even more. Thus, the waiter spoke with more confidence and a little more brazenly.

"Guest, are you here for a short break or to stay?"

In Poplar Town, Long Chen would normally be welcomed warmly at the inns

and greeted with smiling expressions. This waiter's performance was an unexpected first for him.

However, Long Chen was aware that his current identity was not of any valued status and that keeping a low profile was the best option. Therefore, he did not bother with these lowly people and simply said: "Take my horse to feed while only using the best grains! After that bring me some good dishes, it is late so I want to stay for the night."

Upon seeing Long Chen's Ebony Scaled Horse the waiter was instantly alarmed. He thought to himself: "This country bumpkin can even tame this kind of strong horse. It seems he is rather capable. I have to be cautious at the inn and avoid being disrespectful to him. It is wiser to serve him better!"

Thinking about this, he hurriedly portrayed a flattering smile and ordered the stable lad to bring Long Chen's horse to feed. He then brought Long Chen up to the second floor, to a position where he could lean against a window.

Long Chen glanced out of the window and saw the stable lad of this inn tying up the Ebony Scaled Horse properly and preparing to feed it.

This was his Sister Yang Lingqing's gift to him.

Every time he looked at this beast, there was a sweet feeling in his heart. At this time, he instructed the waiter saying some things which advised them to treat the Ebony Scaled Horse with the utmost care.

"You can be rest assured; our stable lads are all cultivators. Their cultivation levels are not ordinary and they have many years of experience in rearing horses.

When you see your horse tomorrow, your Ebony Scaled Horse will definitely be much stronger!”

After the manservant withdrew he asked:

“Guest, is there any matter?”

As Long Chen was eating, he asked plainly: “Do you know Yuanyang Citadel well? Do you know if there is any medicine with spirit healing properties nearby?”

The manservant was at a loss, stating: “I have been living in the Yuanyang Citadel since young but I don’t really know about medicine with spirit healing properties. You have asked the wrong person for this, my guest.”

Long Chen frowned.

As Lingxi looked at that fellow from within the Lingxi’s sword, only to find him worrying about her matters, her heart felt warm.

“Where do you think I would be able to find these medicines?”

After thinking for a while, the waiter said: “Yuanyang Citadel does not have any spirit medicine market but I know that the Daybreak Merchant Union has everything a cultivator needs. From martial techniques to spirit medicines, weapons and other various interesting items, if you have money, you can buy anything. As for those spirit medicines, I would imagine that there are as many as you need, only that.....”

The manservant sized up Long Chen before emphasizing, “The most important thing to have before heading there is money. If you want to buy something from the Daybreak Merchant Union, if you don’t have a few tens of deity jades you won’t be able to buy anything....”

From his actions, he apparently thought that Long Chen was from a low class place that wouldn’t have much money.

“Daybreak Merchant Union?”

Long Chen didn’t care about this petty person who looked down on people, so he allowed him to withdraw himself.

“Anyways, we are heading to Yuanling City. We will make our goal the Daybreak Merchant Union in the future. However, I currently only have a single deity jade. In terms of spirit jades, grandfather has also given me some but it wasn’t much.....”

Lingxi used a rare gentle tone: “Hey! Why are you in such a rush? We still have approximately two months’ time. I have always survived under these conditions and what’s more, I have you now.”

Long Chen chuckled. “Xiao Xi, you are saying such dubious words. Do you by any chance have designs towards me? Tell me honestly: have you been captivated by my handsome look and are prepared to find the opportunity to marry me?”

“Bullshit! I wouldn’t fall for such an ugly person like you! You’re so disgusting!”

While Long Chen and Lingxi were chatting happily, there was a group of people on horses that stopped on the main street in front of the restaurant.

Their leader was a person wearing luxurious bright-yellow clothes and tall black battle shoes. He was an awe-inspiring young man.

He was roughly twenty years old but his expression was very cold and his gaze sharp, like lightning. His gestures had the dominance of a mighty noble.

The waiter that served Long Chen earlier went forward and welcomed him eagerly, wearing a flattering expression as he greeted the guest. Although the noble youth's face was extremely condescending, the waiter still continued to smile.

"Servant, take our horses and feed them. It must be the most experienced stable lad, using the best grains. You also have to prepare the best dishes. If your service is good, you will have benefits."

Beside the noble and extravagantly dressed young master, there was a bony housekeeper that was busy with the preparations for settling in. Only after that was taken care of did he then bring the young master into the inn. At this moment, however, the youth showed an expression of glee and blandly said: "Waiter, bring me to your stable."

The group of people quickly reached the horse stable which was not far from Long Chen's window.

With one look, that young master immediately noticed the spirited black horse

in the stables with scales. This was Long Chen's Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse.

Seeing this Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse, the young master's eyes flashed as he said: "You wear out iron shoes in the hunting ground, when all the time it's easy to be found! The heavens are really good to me, Huang Xiang. Old Liu, isn't this the rare fifth Huang Grade demonic beast, the Ebony Scaled Horse?"

Housekeeper Liu too sized up the horse and then exclaimed: "Sure enough! This horse is extremely spirited and the colour of the fur is pure, the scales are also lined properly. It is the most excellent amongst the Ebony Scaled Horse. Congratulations, Young Master, for actually acquiring such a great horse in Yuanyang capital!

The other servants all praised him.

Huang Xiang was extremely elated. He walked up to prepare taming this fierce horse.

At this moment, the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse was being looked at by everyone and was extremely unhappy. The horse coldly looked at the crowd and its eyes gradually began turning blood shot.

"Be good little horsey, meeting me is your destiny. If you listen to me, Master Huang, obediently, I will definitely treat you well!"

With his face full of excitement, Huang Xiang slowly got closer to the Ebony Scaled horse.

However, the waiter beside seemed to be at a loss.

He knew that the owner of this horse was Long Chen. However, this young master Huang Xiang's background seemed to be much higher than his. Since he deduced that Huang Xiang is the one that shouldn't be messed with, the waiter knew what he had to do.

He eagerly ran in front of Huang Xiang and flattered: "Young Master, it seems like you really like this horse. However, it belongs to one of the other guest. Why don't I persuade him to give it to you now?"

Huang Xiang was startled and was seemingly annoyed as he said: "Did such a good horse already have an owner? Ordinary folks will only sully this good horse. However, my father warned me to exercise restraint in public. Old Liu, take two deity jades and hand it to the owner."

Hearing "two deity jades" the waiter's eyes flashed and he silently exclaimed that this was indeed a young master with background since he was able to take out two deity jades this easily....."

Housekeeper Liu hurriedly agreed and was about to follow the waiter but by now Long Chen had already jumped down from the window. He was able to clearly see the whole scene made by Huang Xiang, who favoured his horse, from the windows vantage point.

"Even though this Huang Xiang is only slightly older than me, his abilities are actually stronger than Grandfather's....."

Even though he was startled, Long Chen wasn't fearful of him.

He had always been living in the small place like the Poplar town and hadn't seen the world. As he looked at Huang Xiang, he was even more aware that there would always be someone stronger than him.

Seeing Long Chen arriving, the waiter hurriedly received him while using a flattery-filled voice as he hinted towards Long Chen and said: "This guest here, our Young Master Huang, wants to use two deity jades and buy your horse. One must know, this Ebony Scaled Horse is merely of the fifth Huang grade and not even worth half a deity jade, but our Young Master Huang....."

From the words from the servant, it was as though Long Chen had actually made a profit.

As for that Young Master Huang, he continued to gaze at the horse in admiration without bothering to look at Long Chen at all. However, Housekeeper Liu glanced at Long Chen and then indifferently took out two deity jades from a cosmos pouch and threw it at him.

In the end, he added another sentence: "Quickly take the deity jades and go away. If our young master were to think that you were riding such a good horse, he might even break your legs."

After he said that, he no longer looked at Long Chen.

'Ting! Ting!' Two pure white deity jades fell on the ground. However, Long Chen didn't extend his hand to obtain them.

The servant was instantly startled and snapped out of his shock. He thought of rebuking him as he muttered: "He is really useless. He can't even hold on to the

two deity jades.”

Only after hearing that the deity jades had actually clattered on the floor did Housekeeper Liu turned around and sized up Long Chen carefully. When he saw the ridicule in Long Chen’s eyes, he was first startled then he laughed.

“Don’t you know that the circumstances of not being tactful will lead to a bad ending?..... Brat, you don’t even understand this logic?”

DBWG Chapter 66

Wrestling Possession!

If he had other choices, Long Chen wouldn't have offended Huang Xiang.

However, Yang Lingqing used an entire night entering the Big Barren Mountain alone to prepare him this gift. Allowing someone else to forcefully buy it away was impossible.

Yang Xueqing reminded him that if he was not strong enough, he must keep a low profile while travelling.

Long Chen did not want to get into a conflict with Young Master Huang Xiang but he was not one to be easily bullied. The Housekeeper Liu was already giving him vicious gazes at that moment. Long Chen plainly smiled and sincerely said, "To tell you the truth, this Horse is extremely important to me so I can't sell it. If the Young Master really want one, he can catch another. I doubt that it will be difficult."

If he was at Poplar town, if someone were to look at his things and just took it, Long Chen would definitely charge at him without any hesitance.

However, he was on his own in another town, and shouldered a heavy responsibility. Therefore, his actions reflected his maturity.

But if he just continued to give in, people would naturally think that he was easy to bully so after they gained an inch, they would want a foot.

[TL Note: Idiom(得寸进尺) – “Gain an inch and want a foot” means to be insatiable]

Housekeeper Liu initially thought that he could easily send Long Chen away to prevent disturbing his Young Master’s good mood. He never would have thought that Long Chen would go against him.

He had already developed murderous intents for Long Chen. At that moment, he indicated to the few guards. Housekeeper Liu said icily, “From what you are wearing, you must be of a low class status yet you don’t have foresight and knowledge. My Young Master is the direct heir of the Huang Family in one of the Ten Great Citadels of Yuanling City, Huangyun Citadel. I will give you another chance to get lost. If not, not only you, but all of the people related to you will die a terrible death.”

Long Chen was not one to be intimidated by others, so after sizing up Housekeeper Liu, he formulated a plan in his mind.

‘The housekeeper and the few guards’ ability were only at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm so they aren’t my match. However, it looks like the fact that they are of the Huang Family in Huangyun City is true. I can’t afford to offend such factions. Furthermore, this Huang Xiang should be at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. But this is a gift from Lingqing so no matter whom it is, they can’t take it away…….’

As a result Long Chen’s mood darkened, he looked coldly at the housekeeper and said: “Everybody, I already said that this Horse matters a lot to me, does anyone still insist in seizing my possession here at Yuanyang City?”

At that moment, many people saw Long Chen and a group of people in a

dispute, thus surrounded them to watch.

The waiter from the inn noticed that this silly donkey Long Chen unexpectedly broke into a fight with the other party, and hurriedly pulled back, smartly distancing himself from Long Chen. He was immediately questioned by people about what was happening.

The waiter scoffed and pointed at Long Chen: "This little boy is a country bumpkin, that well-dressed Young Master clearly comes from a well-to-do family and wants to buy his Horse but he rejects him. The two pieces of Deity Jade, if it is some other fifth level Huang grade demonic beasts; they will be enough to buy a hundred of them! Tell me, is he not stupid?"

A few bystanders saw Long Chen's annoyed look, and instantly nodded their heads.

The innkeeper was a middle-aged man with a long beard, and he was stroking his beard at that moment. He looked at Long Chen and said: "It must be this young man's first time outside, and does not know his limits, let him suffer this time around so he can understand the ways of the world. However, if the other party were to punish him severely, he may be done for, for the rest of his life."

Other guest from the inn nodded. "From his dressing, he must be a child from a small town. He doesn't know how to restrain himself after coming to a big city. If he dies, it can only be blamed on his parents for not telling him how large the outside world is."

Long Chen looked very young and seemed to have some talents. The remorseful thing was that he was too ill tempered. The people looking at the situation anticipated what was going to happen as they shook their head.

However, Young Master Huang was a noble so they also didn't dare to stop the fight.

After hearing Long Chen's words, Housekeeper Liu was already in a towering rage.

When he wanted to make his move, Young Master Huang Xiang had already shifted his gaze from the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse to Long Chen. His originally elated face had instantly turned incomparably gloomy. He moved away from his guards and was soon standing in front of Long Chen.

Housekeeper Liu hastily said, "Young Master, you can just continue looking at the Horse. You will not need to deal with a small brat like him. This stupid donkey is a small matter, but to make your mood turn bad is a big matter....."

Huang Xiang stared at Long Chen for a while before he indifferently said, "All of you move out of my way. This small fellow should be a talent from some small town. For him to be arrogant, it is normal. Haven't I also walked on that path that year? However, he is indeed not your match or your subordinates. Since I am going to enter the Lingwu family, I can use him as a way to train my skills."

"But....Young Master, this small character needs you to deal with him personally. I...."

"It does not matter. Old Liu, you can just go to the side. I also won't blame you."

Seeing the master and subordinate chatting among themselves, completely

ignoring him, Long Chen was already in a rage.

This Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse was his after all. His opponent wanting to seize it was already pushing the limit and now they were also showing a condescending attitude.

Ever since Long Chen had his Dragon Jade, his power had gradually become stronger. He had never been angered to this state.

Thus, he coldly laughed.

After Huang Xiang heard his laughter, he turned to face him. At that moment, a strong power had already gradually surged out of his body!

Long Chen had originally thought that Huang Xiang was a spoilt brat. He never would have thought that he was pretending to be weak!

Currently, his power surged out; a pair of cold eyes like a leopard's was looking at Long Chen. Instantly, a strong pressure was on Long Chen's body.

"A plebeian at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm dares to spoil my mood. Your guts aren't small....."

Long Chen was not afraid at all even after he saw Huang Xiang's move. He even rebuked him, "My guts are indeed not small. It is at least ten fold of your oval eggs."

Long Chen's mocking meaning was understood by everyone at the scene.

Everyone chuckled at first but then again they were afraid of Huang Xiang's rage falling on them, so they did not dare to laugh.

After calming down and thinking back to Long Chen's guts, everyone shook their heads.

"That child, with such a personality, he won't be able to live long."

Huang Xiang originally wanted to kill Long Chen as Long Chen had excessively dampened his mood. However, Long Chen unexpectedly rebuked him and even dared to mock him indirectly. This made him extremely angry!

"Brat! You're seeking death!"

Initially, he didn't want to kill someone in broad daylight, but after Long Chen's statement, Huang Xiang's killing intent for Long Chen was extremely obvious. A power from the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm exploded out. This immediately made the crowd retreat!

"Young Master Huang's age shouldn't be over twenty and actually has such cultivation. He is really a genius!"

"With his family background, how can that brat compare to him?"

The waiter of the restaurant, who saw Long Chen swaying under Huang Xiang's power, revealed a knowing expression.

When he had received Long Chen, he had already looked down on him. He had been working at this restaurant for almost ten years. His ability to look at a person's ability had already been brought to the point of perfection and had never been wrong about it.

As he looked at Huang Xiang, Long Chen was inwardly astonished. He had already killed two experts of the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, Bai Sheng and Bai Li. He had also effortlessly defeated them. However, Huang Xiang, who was at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, was much stronger than them!

“This fellow's family background is better than yours. In comparison with the Bai and Yang families, they are like beggars to his. With such a family, he surely will have limitless skills in his family. He seems to have trained in an advanced Huang grade body reinforcement martial technique. His body is much stronger than your [Celestial Core Technique]. You must also be careful when fighting later. If Bai Sheng and Bai Li were in his hands, they won't be able to fight back at all!”

Hearing Lingxi's serious remarks, Long Chen become cautious.

When everyone moved out of the way and stared unblinkingly at the situation, housekeeper Liu and the other guards can also finally see the Young Master's moves and were extremely excited about that!

“How can you, a beggar that came from a small place, know the extent of a large family's powers?”

After he said that, Huang Xiang's figure flashed and was heading flying towards Long Chen.

Long Chen eyes squinted instantly as he felt that he had a little difficulty locking onto Huang Xiang's figure!

"This is a body martial technique! Your Poplar Town doesn't seem to have techniques like these. However, his motion fighting technique is not exceptional. It is only at the intermediate Huang grade!"

After hearing Lingxi's explanation, Long Chen got a little nervous.

He initially thought that Huang Xiang could be easily defeated like Bai Sheng and Bai Li. But when he thought about it now, he had really previously made an extremely wrong judgment!

"My [Dragon Soul Transformation] with a tenfold quality of Qi made me not place anybody in my eyes. Even if there are experts two levels above me, I thought that I will be able to defeat them. However, now when I think about it, I am really viewing the sky from the bottom of a well. There are numerous powers much stronger than the Bai Family's. The resources they hold are much more. If I can fight with experts above my grade, they can also do the same!"

Thinking of it now, Long Chen already understood that when he defeated Bai Li, who was at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and he was at the seventh level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, it was not due to him being extremely powerful but rather Bai Li's actual strength hadn't reached the real standard of an expert at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

As for Huang Xiang, he was considered to have reached the actual strength of a ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, which was higher by a grade than Long Chen!

As for Huang Xiang, not only did he know body martial technique, he also trained in advanced Huang grade body reinforcement martial technique. Long Chen stood before him without any advantages!

Thinking about that, Long Chen's heart sank to the bottom of the valley.

However, this didn't mean that he was scared of his opponent's strength. This only meant that his prey had risen up to a level that he could completely use his entire strength against.

As long as his opponent wasn't a person that was an overpowering existence, Long Chen should be able to deal with him!

Huang Xiang used movement to head towards him. His footsteps were unpredictable. This also made it hard for Long Chen to lock on his position. The only solution he could think of was to rapidly retreat. As he retreated, Long Chen had unexpectedly used his [Dragon Soul Transformation] that he initially didn't think of using.

When the blood red scales appeared and Long Chen's aura rose by several times, the crowd that was watching the fight, became a little dazed. The waiter of the restaurant looked left and right before awkwardly saying, "It is just a shape shifting ability. It isn't worthy to be astonished by that. Haha, it isn't something to be astonished by....."

Housekeeper Liu was shocked but quickly heaved a sigh of relief as he thought: 'Experts who were at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had always been defeated by the Young Master. Moreover, this is a person at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. It will be alright. It will definitely be alright.....'

Profound Grade Martial Technique

Looking at Long Chen's threatening aura rising, Huang Xiang's previous calm demeanour turned solemn.

He suddenly halted his footsteps and looked at Long Chen before he plainly said, "I initially thought that I can easily defeat you but now, you have the qualification for me to try out my newly acquired martial techniques on you."

After Huang Xiang said those words, the people in the restaurant didn't know what he was referring to but they knew that Young Master Huang Xiang had clearly grasped Long Chen's abilities. So by testing his newly acquired martial techniques, it indicated that defeating Long Chen could also be done easily.

When Housekeeper Liu and the few guards heard that, their mood momentarily lit up and said in amazement. "Young Master actually wants to use that skill? That's also right. That skill is incomparably powerful. After the Young Master had completely mastered that skill, it seems like he hasn't had a real combat. This brat came at the right time and it's also a good opportunity for the Young Master to practice his skills. This way it will be much easier for him to enter the Lingwu Family."

The other guards hurriedly nodded their heads.

Although Housekeeper Liu spoke softly, Long Chen still heard it.

Before this, he had already faintly heard that Huang Xiang was entering the Lingwu Family. However, this time, he had heard it clearly.

“You want to enter the Lingwu Family too? Who knows if we’ll be rivals next time, so I will take this opportunity to get rid of you!”

However, when he thought about what Huang Xiang just said, Long Chen felt uncertain.

“With the new martial techniques he learnt, if it was an advanced Huang grade’s martial technique, there was not much point in saying out, but.....”

This hostile situation could not be stopped at all.

Looking at Long Chen’s expression, Huang Xiang smiled sinisterly. “You have guessed it correctly. This is a Profound grade martial technique. You, who is a beggar from a small place, shouldn’t know what a Profound grade martial technique is, and have never even seen one before, right?”

His words were like a hammer that pounded heavily on Long Chen’s head. Long Chen suddenly realised that this was a very serious matter.

“The heirs from the big families will naturally have many secret scrolls and techniques. As for me, my strongest is only [Seal of the Dragons], how would I have a Profound grade martial technique?”

Long Chen knew his initial thought of advantage in using the [Dragon Soul Transformation] seemed to have no advantages against his opponent’s advanced Huang grade’s body refinement skills.

The amount of tenfold quality Qi was almost the same as his opponent’s. Furthermore from what he had said, Long Chen was also lacking a Profound

grade martial technique!

Thinking about this, Long Chen's brows deeply furrowed.

At this moment, he awakened from his thoughts. However, Huang Xiang didn't give him a chance to remedy the situation. After speaking, Long Chen felt a pressure on his body that made him feel suffocated!

Qi on Huang Xiang's body violently circulated. Very soon Long Chen saw that under Huang Xiang's sinister preparations, an illusionary light appeared in both of his hands and rapidly whirled, and a wave of light rays was sent towards Long Chen!

Long Chen could not regain his balance immediately!

However, he didn't show any sign of weakness. Although his opponent had an advantage over him, battles weren't just a simple comparison between numbers!

At this moment, facing the powerful threat of the disk of light, Long Chen didn't retreat but advanced instead. His body's power violently erupted. Long Chen momentarily turned into a blood light and shot towards Huang Xiang!

Long Chen's speed was almost the same as Huang Xiang's maximum speed, so when he saw Long Chen moving towards him, Huang Xiang was greatly alarmed.

"This brat can actually keep up a similar speed with me. It seems like in the Qi aspect, he is not far from me. A Beast Warrior indeed has some unusual abilities. If not for this Profound grade martial technique, most likely he will be able to

contend against me!”

His impressions of Long Chen greatly changed. Thinking of it now, although Long Chen’s appearance and disposition did not seem like much, but he had some abilities. After all, not just anyone can become a Beast Warrior.

“Even if you have some abilities, and you end up dying, it may stir some troubles. However you actually angered me, if I don’t teach you a little lesson, how can it match the style of me, Huang Xiang? With the next skill, you better pray for the best!”

Thinking which, Huang Xiang seemingly did not show mercy, and that radiant disk of light appeared in his hands once again. Momentarily, Huang Xiang also charged towards Long Chen, and the light in his hands emitted an immense aura, and the expressions of the crowd quickly changed!

That inn’s waiter was astonished by this scene. He became afraid as he said: “This Huang Xiang is so terrifying, if this skill was to hit the inn, the inn may very well collapse! This time, the brat will die for sure!”

He instantaneously looked at Long Chen, not expecting to see Long Chen’s body radiating a blood red light.

Long Chen hurriedly formed seals with his hands. Blood red Qi with the appearance of dragons formed and then suddenly turned into an image of a blood-red Dragon God. Suddenly, the nine Dragon Gods in the image intertwined and roared as they charged towards Huang Xiang!

Looking at Long Chen, Huang Xiang threw a strike with all his might!

“[Wheel Of Radiance]!”

The disk of light left his hands and headed towards Long Chen. At this moment, the image of the Dragon Gods let out a terrifying roar, and clashed with the disk of light!

“[Seal of the High Profound Dragon]!”

The super powerful energy from both sides dispersed in all directions. Moreover, the horses in the stable all whinnied from fear, and even the Housekeeper and the guards of the Huang Family had pale faces as they were rapidly pushed back!

For a few people on the other side, they were blown back and convulsed due to their proximity. As for the waiter, his robes were shredded into pieces and his hairy skin was revealed. However, he seemed not realise it and stared at the scene.

“What’s the matter? What happened earlier on? How did that kid manage to do such a powerful attack?”

Originally he thought that the brat would be finished this time. After all, an attack of that magnitude could almost destroy the inn. But he never thought that Long Chen’s move earlier could completely fend off Master Huang Xiang’s attack?

It seemed like the heavens were playing a prank on him.

“Even if he can withstand it, he will probably soon be on his deathbed. I just can’t believe that this bumpkin is able to make any accomplishment!”

He watched with a fixated stare at the fight. Long Chen and Huang Xiang had currently carried out a real confrontation. The two of them were forced backwards. There were a couple of footprints on the green stone floor.

Long Chen retreated ten metres. He managed to suppress his boiling blood with difficulty. However, his arm was still a little numb.

What made the crowd feel unbelievable was that Huang Xiang also retreated five meters. He also suppressed the boiling blood and looked in astonishment at Long Chen, who was not injured like he thought. He was speechless for a moment.

“I unexpectedly can’t get rid of him after using a Profound grade technique? How is this possible? Can it be that I still can’t fully use the power of the [Wheel Of Radiance]?”

Thinking about this, Huang Xiang was in a slight disbelief.

“Father told me that I have 80% mastery of this [Wheel Of Radiance]. As for the remaining 20%, it can be fully mastered after I enter the Deity Dan Realm. But why did this 80% [Wheel Of Radiance] did not finish off Long Chen. Can it be that his background does not differ much from mine?”

Watching Long Chen’s gradual recovery, Huang Xiang started to struggle with his thoughts.

“Father had instructed me not to create trouble. Moreover, this [Wheel Of Radiance] is unable to kill him. If I were to forcefully use that move, I’m afraid it might hinder my process into the Lingwu Family.....Oh well, forget it. I will spare him, and even if he got lucky today, he will definitely die if he sees me again in the future!”

“If it wasn’t for the fear of consuming a lot of Qi by doing that move, this kid’s blood would definitely be splashed on the spot!”

Originally, the waiter from the inn thought that even if Long Chen was not to die, he would at least be severely injured after that attack. However, he was looking at Long Chen who seemed unscathed and gaped widely, with a shocked expression. The gap was enough to fit a fist in.

At that point, his clothes were torn and tattered, which looked very awful, but he was the only one who was unaware of it.

“I can’t believe there is actually a day where I am this ignorant. This kid had actually come prepared?”

Not only the inn’s waiter but even for the crowd, when they saw Long Chen still standing looking fine after the Profound grade martial technique, they were all shocked silly.

It was especially the case for housekeeper Liu. At this moment, his jaw almost touched the ground. He rubbed his eyes multiple times to confirm that he hadn’t seen wrongly. He looked astonishingly at Long Chen with his face filled with disbelief.

“This is impossible! The Young Master is a ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm cultivator. Even the old master had said that he was unbeatable among the Dragon Pulse Realm. Why is it that he hasn’t been able to kill a person who is at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm?”

Long Chen’s performance had brought a big change to the audience’s perspective.

At this moment, Long Chen forcibly fended off the most powerful attack of Huang Xiang and remained unscathed, which made the people around him be in shock. They all placed Long Chen in a position not far away from Huang Xiang in their hearts, so they did not dare to speak any more.

As for Huang Xiang, he gave Long Chen a cold stare. His previous attack did not kill Long Chen, so he deemed it pointless to continue. He no longer had any interest towards the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse after Long Chen spoilt his mood.

This horse that he fancied was merely out of interest.

Once again giving Long Chen another look, Huang Xiang shrugged his shoulders, leaving the crowd as he headed back into the inn.

The Housekeeper’s guards naturally followed behind, however as they looked into the eyes of Long Chen, it was as though looking at a dead person.

“Young Master is not speaking and this means he is really furious. However why is Young Master not attacking?”

“I’m not sure either, but this kid is definitely not going to make it!”

Looking at Huang Xiang who just headed upstairs without any indication after his attack had been blocked; Long Chen was clueless to what he was thinking.

“I presume he was too embarrassed to stay here any longer after his strongest move was defeated by you.” Ling Xi said plainly.

However, Long Chen thought otherwise.

“He should be participating in the upcoming Lingwu Family’s outer family selection and was afraid of impairing his chances of entering. This fellow seems to be good at planning and is even able to swallow this down. However how can I, Long Chen, let him bully me like that?”

“You don’t have a choice. You’re not inferior to him in any way. The only difference that you lose out to him was the lack of an offensive martial technique. If you also have a Profound grade martial skill, he may possibly be not your match.”

“Profound grade martial technique huh.....”

Long Chen’s eyes narrowed.

DBWG Chapter 68 - [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist]

It was getting late and with Huang Xiang's sudden departure, the matter was left unsettled.

Within a room in the inn, Long Chen held up the metal slate as he carefully examined it.

That metal slate was the one he had obtained from the Burning Heaven Mountain Plains.

"I have had this thing for a few days, but still haven't had a chance to carefully analyse it. Xiao Xi, tell me, how do I make use of this thing?"

The fact that even with similar levels of strength, Long Chen still slightly lost to Huang Xiang and that made him feel extremely stifled.

In previous encounters, his martial techniques were always superior to others. He never thought that someone else would come out on top of him, especially when the other party was the one who initially provoked.

Even though he said nothing, Long Chen was in a foul mood.

Ling Xi had always been interested in the mysterious metal slate but never had the time to examine it. Now, she appeared from the Lingxi Sword, her tiny body circling the metal slate on the desk. Finally, she sat on the desk with her hands propping up her frowning face.

“What happened?”

“This is clearly the key to an inheritance, and you must wait until you find this legacy before you can use it. However, there is a trace of a barrier upon it, and it looks as if it hasn’t...”

Ling Xi clasped her delicate chin pondering while Long Chen left her to her thoughts. After a while, Ling Xi suddenly became excited as she exclaimed, “I got it, this is definitely a concealed barrier!”

“What is a concealed barrier?”

“It is a type of barrier that is difficult to detect because it requires concealment. When they laid the barrier only a minute amount of Qi was used. An average person would find it difficult to sense it in a barrier, but I, your Lady, is amazing!”

Ling Xi rolled her eyes at Long Chen.

Long Chen pretending to flatter her entreatingly, “Miss Xixi, you see.... ”

“Do you want me to help you undo it? It’s very simple. You just have to get me some spirit healing medicine. ”

Long Chen promptly agreed: “Alright, alright, after I go to Yuanling City, I will immediately go to the Daybreak Merchants Union to buy you some medicines!”

Having gotten Long Chen’s assurance, Ling Xi snorted and focused

wholeheartedly on breaking the barrier.

Originally, she liked to act wilfully and caused scenes. However, once she entered the work-mode, she immediately became incomparably serious. Long Chen too dared not disturb her and simply took advantage of this time to practice his cultivation.

After roughly a quarter of an hour, a tiny light formation appeared atop the metal slate.

Seeing the appearance of this light formation, Long Chen knew that the removal of the barrier was mostly done.

“Because it is a concealed barrier, only a small amount of Qi was used so it is relatively easy to remove it. Your lady, I, will be able to finish this in a bit!”

While in the process of carefully removing the barrier, Ling Xi’s lip curled as she smiled smugly at Long Chen, putting on a seemingly spiteful front.

During the Bai and Yang Family’s wedding reception, Long Chen had spoken to her harshly for the first time. Also in the battle over the Soul Diffusion Fruit, he had made her feel like a coward who was afraid of death. At this moment, she wanted to prove to Long Chen that she is still very useful!

“Next time, if you dare to say any more nonsense to me, then your lady, I, will not help you with anything!”

“Yes yes, Great Aunt, I am aware of my mistakes.....”

Ling Xi was very easy-going and her eyes lit up as she hurriedly returned into the Lingxi Sword.

Just like the time she broke the barrier on the [Seal of the Dragons], as soon as she was finished she quickly returned to the Lingxi Sword.

“After opening the barrier, I also don’t know what will happen when it opens. Something may burst out instantaneously at that moment, which could be harmful to my soul so I must return immediately. ”

As for Long Chen, he focused intently on the metal slate. Suddenly, the metal slate emitted flames and burnt a large hole through the sandalwood desk. Moreover, the flames continued spreading outwards.

Long Chen’s body tensed; if this metal slate spread its flames explosively, much like in the Burning Heavens Mountain Plains, Yuanyang city would likely be destroyed.

Fortunately, the flames only spread out half a metre before stopping. The metal slate was engulfed by the ball of flame half a meter in diameter, as it floated in midair.

Long Chen wanted to know what was going on when suddenly the ball of flame took the rough shape of a man’s face. An immense yet mysterious aura suddenly surrounded Long Chen’s body.

The man’s image within this flame simply looked at Long Chen and then promptly faded away. However, his voice remained continuously echoing in Long

Chen's ear.

“You could find the concealed barrier... I guess your luck isn't bad. I hope you will not waste my inheritance....”

This ancient voice gave Long Chen the shivers. Fortunately, it faded quickly, leaving Long Chen filled with doubts.

“Why would a man's face appear within the flame?”

“Maybe it's the residual consciousness of the man. He is most likely dead long ago. However, if he were capable of leaving behind a trace of himself on the metal slate, he must have been pretty good when he was alive...”

Ling Xi said solemnly.

Just as Ling Xi finished speaking, a change occurred in the flame. After the man's face had faded, the flame slowly receded along with the raging heat gradually becoming wisps of fire. To Long Chen's amazement, the fire transformed into small characters, etching themselves onto the metal slate.

The characters were like ants, densely etched on the metal slate. At the very least there were thousands of characters. Strangely, Long Chen could see each and every character clearly.

“This...is actually a cultivation technique! ”

Ling Xi's voice sounded pleasantly surprised. Long Chen had long since been

desperate for cultivation techniques and resources but he unexpectedly found something like this on the metal slate.

The characters flickered continuously on the metal slate, and Long Chen very quickly committed them to memory.

“It is an intermediate Xuan grade martial technique, [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist]”

Recalling the name of the skill from his head, Long Chen was shocked, before his face revealed a joyous expression.

At the moment, the flame on the metal slate had gradually diminished with the metal slate restoring back to its original appearance. Long Chen then placed it inside his cosmos pouch.

Long Chen slowly opened his eyes and laughed.

“[Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist], it came at the right time.... ”

“All creatures contain Yin and Yang. Yang as fire, Yin as water. The burning demonic sun and scarlet flames that burn the heavens, and the demon sun that pierces the earth....”

“[Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] is far more powerful than [Seal of the Dragons] and it is even better than the [Wheel Of Radiance] that Huang Xiang practices. If I were to guess, [Wheel Of Radiance] is only a low Profound grade martial technique. It cannot compare with the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] which is an intermediate Profound grade martial technique, which can be

regarded as a powerful existence..... ”

As Long Chen was carefully pondering the implications of [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist], he asked in a faint voice, “Xiao Xi, who is this man who left behind the inheritance? It seems that [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] is only the weakest of his martial techniques. However, it is already very extraordinary. ”

Ling Xi pursed her lips saying, “How would I know about this? [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] is indeed not bad. When you manage to find more traces of his remains, the things you can obtain will be much greater. ”

“Really?”

Long Chen recalled the martial technique that Huang Xiang relied on to surpass him, and a faint sneer appeared on his face.

“Wait till I have learnt the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist], we’ll see if you still dare covet my Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse!”

Right now, Long Chen clearly knew the state of his own strength. He was at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. However, he still had the Soul Diffusion Fruit. When he reaches the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, he could immediately breakthrough into the Deity Dan Realm. At that time, his strength would multiply by more than a hundred!

“Coupled with this intermediate Xuan grade [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist], my strength will then.... ”

Recalled the purpose for which he came to Yuanling City; the Yang family were now living under the shadow of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect had strong experts of the Earth Dan Realm. Once they found out, the Yang Family would probably be completely eradicated.

And as far as Long Chen was concerned, Yang Xueqing and Yang Lingqing were the most important to him and he would definitely give up his life to protect them.

“My current strength is still not sufficient! Starting from now is my only task! Those Crimson Blood Sacred Sect’s members are powerful and reputed to be vicious. They would likely not show any mercy to us Yang family....”

As he thought about the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, Long Chen felt as if a huge mountain was crushing on his heart and the pressure was suffocating.

Every part of his body began to feel restless. Like a malignant tumor, the desire to become powerful became deeply rooted in his heart.

“It is imperative that I participate in the Lingwu Family’s selection and succeed! I am at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and if I am able to display the strength of a person at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, I should be able to enter the Lingwu Family. This son of a bitch Huang Xiang who also wants to enter the Lingwu family, you just keep praying until the day you meet me, your father!”

Long Chen saw that there was still a lot of time till dawn. So, he closed his eyes and began to examine the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist].

At this moment, the Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant in his sea of consciousness radiated a misty light, where traces of dusky light roved all over it. Long Chen immediately felt that his comprehension became so powerful that he was unhindered even when looking at those cryptic words.

“With this Mysterious Dragon Jade Pendant, is there any martial technique under the sky that can baffle me?”

The night passed very quickly with Long Chen neglecting to eat and sleep. Very soon, the sky brightened with the sun at its zenith. Only then did Long Chen place the metal slate down.

“So the scarlet flames which burn the heavens appears like this....”

After cultivating, Long Chen was still reluctant to stop.

“We’re only two days away from Yuanling City, I think you’d better hurry. You haven’t acquired the spirit healing medicines that you promised me, your Great Aunt. Hmph!”

Seeing the adorable Lingxi pouting, Long Chen smiled wryly. “Alright, my Great Aunt, I will serve you right away!”

After walking down from the restaurant, Lingxi suddenly said, “Eh? Those people are looking at you with peculiar gazes. ”

Only after Ling Xi mentioned it, Long Chen began paying attention to the rest of the inn, where everyone present avoided his gaze, especially the waiter that was stark naked yesterday. After seeing Long Chen, he immediately ran away

crying for his mother and father.

Long Chen momentarily grabbed hold of his collar, and as he begun to question him. The waiter sniveled: “Ma...Master, it has nothing to do with me, your horse was killed by Young Master Huang, it has nothing to do with me!”

“What?!”

Long Chen’s expression turned steely!

Long Chen ran towards the stable to have a look. As expected, the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse was on the ground, collapsed. Blood flowed out from its mouth as it looked helplessly at Long Chen. With but a glance, it was obvious that it had sustained severe internal injuries. At this moment, it was struggling whilst at death's door.

Looking at his beloved horse in such pain, Long Chen eyes gradually reddened.

“Huang Xiang.....”

His fists were clenched so tightly that the veins on his arms were bulging. When the crowd that followed him out of the restaurant saw his current state, they instantly kept silent out of fear.

Seeing the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse's fatal internal injuries and was in its death throes, Long Chen thought back to when Lingqing had given this Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse to him.

That girl had risked her life to stay a night in the Big Barren Mountain in order to tame this horse. She was covered in dirt when she gave this Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse to him. Long Chen had been taking great care of it in the last couple of days, fearing that it might get hurt, but now.....

Thinking back to Huang Xiang's sneering face, Long Chen was already filled with a murderous intent towards him.

“This is the first gift that Lingqing has given me and possibly the most important gift of my life, excluding the Dragon Jade my father gave to me, but.....”

Thinking about Lingqing, that silly girl, Long Chen was filled with guilt.

“Lingqing, I didn’t protected your gift properly. I’ve let you down, but I’ll avenge it.....”

Raising his head and facing Yuanling City, Long Chen gaze gradually turned icy, an expression that was as cold as the blade of a sword.

“Huang Xiang, initially I didn’t plan on killing you, but you just sought out your death. Don’t blame me for it!”

Long Chen walked towards the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse, seeing its suffering, Long Chen was extremely reluctant but he gave it a fatal blow, ending its misery.

Looking at the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse who had accompanied him these past few days, Long Chen shook his head and sighed. He turned around seizing the waiter of the inn before he coldly said: “I’ll give you 300 pieces of spirit jades to bury my horse in the outskirts of the citadel. I’ll be coming back to Yuanyang Citadel and if at that time I find out that my horse didn’t have a good burial, I will end your pathetic dog like existence!”

Seeing Long Chen’s vicious gaze, the waiter was frightened to the point that his legs started to shake, before he managed to hastily agree. “I..I will definitely give it a grand burial!”

Those 300 pieces of spirit jades were enough to bury the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse a dozen times over.

After giving him that task, Long Chen didn't stay at Yuanyang Citadel and headed in the direction that Huang Xiang had left. The place they were heading to was Yuanling City!

“Hey, are you thinking of killing them along the way?”

Long Chen smiled coldly and replied: “Don't worry, I won't be reckless. I won't make a move when I don't have confidence in dealing with him. Right now, I don't know where the Lingwu Family is located, but with Huang Xiang leading the way, I can avoid travelling the wrong route!”

Long Chen didn't lose his rationality due to his hatred, so Lingxi heaved a sigh of relief before admonishing: “That fellow is such a bastard. If he can't get the thing he wants, he will destroy it? After my strength recovers, I'll chop him up into eight pieces to avenge Xiao Hei. From how I see it, he isn't worthy to be called Huang Xiang, his name should be Shit instead!”

[TL Note: Xiao Hei means Little Black: referring to the

Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse]

Lingxi had taken quite a liking to the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse during this short period of time. Seeing that the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse died in such a terrible manner, she was filled with fury to the point that she spoke profanity.

Long Chen knew that it was almost noon when he left, but he didn't know how much earlier Huang Xiang had left. However, Huang Xiang was travelling by horse while Long Chen was moving at his maximum speed, heading towards Yuanling City. In comparison with Huang Xiang's speed, he was a couple of times faster.

As time gradually passed, the journey that was supposed to take two days was completed in only one and a half days. Long Chen could see the figures of Huang Xiang and the rest from a distance.

Furthermore, the legendary Yuanling City entered his view, which was grand and imposing!

When he saw the city, Long Chen was utterly stupefied.

He raised his head and rubbed his eyes, checking to confirm that what he saw wasn't a mountain range but a city that was so vast that he couldn't see its edge.

Yuanling City was covered in clouds so he could just barely make out its edges, but even so, Long Chen was in complete shock over the sheer enormity of Yuanling City!

Long Chen had heard from Chen Xiongzhou that the distance between the east to the west of Yuanling City was a thousand miles. It could be understood how vast Yuanling City was from that!

"It is not a surprise that it can accommodate 100 million people. So this Yuanling City is actually this huge!"

Even if it was Yuanyang Citadel, in front of Yuanling City, it was as if a small

chicken met with oxen and horses, which was not worth mentioning.

At this moment, Huang Xiang's party had already left, heading towards the cloud and mist covered city. Long Chen didn't dare tarry, and hurriedly tried to catch up with them.

There were a great number of people entering and exiting the city. Long Chen looked from afar at the densely packed crowd. Amongst them, the majority of them were cultivators who were much more powerful than Long Chen. They were experts that made Long Chen felt suffocated, yet they could be seen everywhere!

Long Chen momentarily felt as though he was a sheep entering a den of tigers.

"Yuanling City is this horrifying? With my current abilities, I'm one of the top experts in Poplar Town but after coming to Yuanling City, my abilities are ranked at rock bottom!"

"It seems that when Mother told me to keep a low profile, it wasn't completely without reason!"

Long Chen didn't feel dejected due to the auras of those experts, as he knew that sooner or later he would also reach that level. Also for those experts, the stronger their ability, the older they were. When Long Chen saw an old man walk past him, he felt a terrifying sensation pass by. That feeling was even more horrifying than when he last met Mo Xiaolang.

"When comparing age to your ability, you can be counted as above average in Yuanling city while Mo Xiaolang's ability compared to his age should be counted

as peak talent. You're still a little far from reaching that level."

"Since you cultivated for such a short time and at a small place like Poplar Town, it's not bad to be able to reach an above average standard."

Long Chen also knew that haste would ruin everything, so he wasn't anxious.

"My main reason for coming to Yuanling City is to deal with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. If the Yang Family is safe in the future, I'll come here to temper myself. This, will probably become my world!"

While following Huang Xiang, his gaze took in the people and buildings around him. When Long Chen entered the Yuanling City, even though this was only the outer area of the city, the buildings here were grand and lofty. The scale completely exceeded that of the Yuanyang Citadel.

"Yuanling City is where most elites gather, so it isn't strange that the overall standard of strength is really high."

Around 100 million people lived in this city, yet it didn't feel crowded. It was easy to tell just how large Yuanling City was.

It was practically a small kingdom to Long Chen.

The Lingwu family governed such an enormous piece of land and there weren't any issues. This demonstrated the strength of the Lingwu's Family.

"For me, there are only benefits in entering the Lingwu family."

Long Chen followed Huang Xiang as he familiarized himself with Yuanling City.

At this moment, Huang Xiang was currently at a restaurant much larger than the one he visited in Yuanyang Citadel. Even though it was much larger than the restaurant in Yuanyang Citadel, it was of a low standard in Yuanling City.

“Old Liu, how do you think the brat will react now?”

Huang Xiang was currently enjoying the delicacies of Yuanling City before turning to talk with Housekeeper Liu, who was standing respectfully at his side.

Housekeeper Liu immediately replied: “What can he do? That brat shouldn’t have much money on him and also lost a horse. He must be crying now. Haha! Who asked him to be this tactless? Second Young Master was kind enough to give him two deity jades, but he was actually foolish enough to not appreciate your kindness. It was right for the Young Master to give him a lesson!”

When Huang Xiang listened, he felt really comfortable and kept on nodding his head in agreement before he said: “After I entered the Lingwu Family, you can head back to Huangyun Citadel. You had served me well this ten days. After you head back, my father will reward you handsomely.”

“Yes! Yes!” Thinking about being rewarded, Housekeeper Liu’s eyes gleamed. He excitedly said: “When Second Young Master goes to the Lingwu Family, First Young Master Feiyang is there so I’ll feel extremely at ease. That’s right, from what Master had said, the First Young Master had already achieved a high position in the Lingwu Family and had made a lot of progress in his cultivation. He should have already reached the Initial Mastery Human Dan Realm, right?”

Huang Xiang nodded and replied: “My brother’s talent is about the same as mine so when I reach his age, I should also reach the Initial Mastery Human Dan Realm and may even break through to reach the Human Dan’s Perfect Mastery Realm!”

“I can prostrate myself in admiration towards the Second Young Master’s talents!”

Looking at Huang Xiang leisurely hearing those flattering words, Long Chen smiled coldly. “You can smile all you want right now. Just wait until the Lingwu Family selection begins, I’ll make you suffer terribly!”

At this moment, Huang Xiang said: “My brother is an outer clan member of the Green Faction. Coincidentally, it is also the Green Faction’s Green Sun Branch that will be selecting their new members so my father sent me over. My elder brother is also in the Green Sun Branch. It will be guaranteed that I will be able to join the Lingwu Family!”

“Every time there is a selection of new disciples for the Green Sun Branch, the number of participants is around fifty. There is a one-tenth chance of person entering. Naturally, it should be easy for Second Young Master.”

“One in ten people?”

Long Chen frowned but very soon relaxed.

“Only a one in ten person chance? Huang Xiang didn’t worry about it. Moreover, it’s the current me! However, Huang Xiang’s brother, of the Initial

Mastery Human Dan Realm, is unexpectedly in the Green Faction's Green Sun Branch. It seems that if I haven't reached the Human Dan Realm, I can't thoughtlessly kill Huang Xiang to avenge my Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse!"

Revenge was never too late for a man, even if it took ten years. Long Chen understood that logic.

Very soon, Huang Xiang finished his meal and said: "In Yuanling City, there are two main inner sections, Lingwu City and Yuandi City. We'll head towards the Lingwu City as the time for the selection is near. We must also move quickly. If not, my brother will scold me. After so many years apart, I heard that my brother has become much more short-tempered!"

After he said that, they immediately headed towards the legendary Lingwu City.

Long Chen followed them quickly.

"The venue for the selection doesn't seem to be at the Lingwu City. Only if I pass the selection to formally become a Lingwu Family member, will I be able to live in the Lingwu City. How great an honor would that be? But I, Huang Xiang, finally have a chance. The Green Faction!"

"The Green Faction? I heard that the Lingwu Family has four main inner factions and nine main outer factions. The Green Faction should be one of the nine main outer factions!"

DBWG Chapter 70 - Daybreak Merchants Union

“Ahead of us is the base of the Lingwu Family’s Green Sun Branch, which is at the outskirts of the city. We have finally arrived!”

Seeing the imposing green coloured building in front of him, Huang Xiang adopted a relaxed smiling posture. Very soon, someone came to receive him before he entered the building.

As for his servants, they left excitedly after bidding farewell.

Long Chen looked at the lofty building but did not enter it straight away. Huang Xiang had just arrived so he didn’t want to run into him.

‘I’ll give you a surprise after the selection starts. You killed my horse so it’s impossible for me to just let it go!’

Long Chen stood outside the building for a while before seeing a couple more people enter. Those people were all at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm and were still young. The youngest of them was about the same age as Long Chen.

Seeing these people with a degree of talent that wasn’t far from his own and knowing that if they entered the Lingwu Family, they would only be ordinary outer disciples. This proved how powerful the Lingwu Family was.

Long Chen was currently looking at that building and saw the various figures, making him feel a little overwhelmed.

‘I actually feel as though I’m an ant like existence in front of the Lingwu Family.....’

However, Long Chen’s fighting spirit didn’t dampened, on the contrary in such a powerful environment, it roused his fighting spirit even more.

Long Chen initially thought that only those at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm could enter but at that moment, he saw a tall man, who was eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, enter simply by shapeshifting!

“It seems they just required Beast Warriors to be at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. The heavens are helping me indeed!”

After a while, Long Chen went in. The old man at the entrance saw Long Chen approach and narrowed his eyes when he could make out his age.

“Please report your basic information, according to this format.”

The white haired old man pointed at a wooden board that had some simple information written on it.

After Long Chen looked at it, he replied, “I’m Long Chen. I’m sixteen this year. I’m from Yuanling County, Poplar Town. My strength is currently at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm but I’m a Beast Warrior.”

Long Chen and Lingxi had already discussed him being a Beast Warrior. People here didn’t know what dragons were. Furthermore, Long Chen had been

mistaken to be a Beast Warrior repeatedly so he should just say that he was a Beast Warrior.

“Oh?”

After the white haired old man heard that Long Chen was a Beast Warrior, he thoroughly sized him up before asking, “What is your Beast Spirit in the Dragon Pulse Realm?”

“Underground Blood Lizard.”

The old man nodded. “It’s a level 5 Beast Spirit which isn’t bad. Please let me have a look at your shapeshifting form.”

Long Chen wordlessly circulated his divine ability, [Dragon Soul Transformation]. There were instantly densely packed scarlet scales and razor sharp spikes gradually emerged, radically changing his appearance!

Seeing such a fiendish transformation, the old man was a little startled. His features showing suspicion and said, “How can a lizard bloodline have such a dense aura? You must have gotten the blood of a Beast Spirit that was soon to become an Underground Blood Lizard King. Your luck is quite good!”

Long Chen could only nod before he inquired, “May I ask if I have passed or not?”

The old man smiled gently looking at Long Chen for a while before giving him a green wooden card and replied, “Take this green wooden card. If you pass the selection, you’ll become a member of our Green Faction. The Green Sun Branch

is only selecting five people. From how I see it, your chances aren't great.....”

After seeing that Long Chen was a little startled, the old man laughed loudly before saying, “So you must work extra hard.”

Long Chen nodded and under the guidance of a youth who was behind the old man, Long Chen toured the building a couple of times before picking one of the many rooms. The guide told Long Chen, “It's already late today so stay here for a night. Someone will come to escort you to the selection at dawn.”

Long Chen nodded and thanked the person before opening the door and walking into the room. He didn't expect to find someone already in it. Long Chen was initially startled before he understood.

“It seems that they require two people per room.”

When Long Chen just entered the room, his roommate immediately raised his head to look at Long Chen.

It was a young man who looked a little sloppy. He seemed to be about twenty years old. His body was extremely skinny. However, his grey eyes shifted as he broke into a radiant smile.

He looked at Long Chen before coming forward and saying enthusiastically, “Are you here to join the Lingwu Family's selection? Haha! I'm participating as well. I'm called Liu Fengfeng. What's your name?”

Even though Long Chen saw that he was passionate, judging from his eyes, he knew that he was a person that coveted little things. However, Long Chen was

not willing to get into a conflict with him so he replied smiling, “I’m called Long Chen.”

“Long Chen? Seeing that you’re still so young, have you reached the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm?”

“I’m a Beast Warrior, but I’m only at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.”

Comparatively, Liu Fengfeng knew that Long Chen wasn’t his opponent and was instantly happy. Long Chen saw that he was preoccupied, so he exchanged a few more words and stopped.

“Little Brother Long Chen, not that I want to disparage you, but if I were a Beast Warrior, I would have definitely waited until I was at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm before coming. You will have a greater advantage by then. At your current level, you’ll just go through the motions in this test. The Lingwu Family’s selection will be exceptionally dangerous this time. If you lose your life, it really isn’t worth it.”

Displaying an elder brother’s attitude, Liu Fengfeng began to righteously lecture Long Chen.

Long Chen didn’t want to reply so he smiled instead.

Seeing that Long Chen wasn’t listening to him, Liu Fengfeng momentarily became enraged. Attacking Long Chen wasn’t a good idea so his tone became cold when he said, “I’m afraid that you’re still unaware that during the Lingwu Family’s selection, your life or death will be of no consequence. Someone

investigated and discovered that there was a one in five chance of dying and two in of five chance of being seriously injured. In my opinion, most likely you will.....Sigh!”

Seeing that guy’s self-righteous attitude, even though Long Chen disagreed with his words, he was getting information out from him so he pretended to be terrified. In his heart, he was already berating him, ‘What the hell does it got to do with you whether I, your father, want to participate or not?’

Since he wasn’t in Poplar Town and was in Yuanling City that had as many experts as trees in a forest, Long Chen felt that even swearing wouldn’t make him feel any better. It also wasn’t his style and he didn’t’ want to live like this.....

“Big Brother Liu, since you’re so knowledgeable about this selection, are you from Yuanling City?”

Liu Fengfeng immediately replied complacently, “I grew up in Yuanling City. I have been here for twenty years so anything that happens here, I’ll know about it. From your attire, you should be from a small town. Those places are really poor. They are all frogs at the bottom of the well. I had once passed by a town where there was a person who thought that the strongest person in the world was at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. It was really hilarious.”

As Liu Fengfeng spoke excitedly, his spittle sprayed everywhere. When he saw that Long Chen was a little annoyed, he inwardly sniggered as he thought, “This brat is obviously a country bumpkin but his gaze is filled with arrogance. You will know what it is like to suffer tomorrow. There are mountains beyond mountains and a sky beyond a sky.....”

“Big brother, I came from afar, with you being a local, can you tell me about

the Lingwu City?”

Liu Fengfeng’s tone carried a trace of annoyance. He fixed his unkempt hair while taking out a green copper mirror to have a look. After making some postures and confirming that he was indeed handsome, he plainly replied, “About Yuanling City, it just what it is. There’s nothing much to talk about. Everyone thinks that it’s large, but I find it merely ordinary.”

“How is Yuanling City divided and what factions does it contain? Long Chen asked while suppressing his urge to vomit.

He really couldn’t take Liu Fengfeng’s personality. It was already too much to look down at him, but wasn’t he too pretentious?

“En... Yuanling City is currently split into four big domains, according to a compass, North, South, East and West. The Lingwu Family is located in the eastern domain of Yuanling City. We’re currently in the eastern domain. The other three are the western domain, southern domain and northern domain.”

“As for the powers in Yuanling City, everyone knows that the Lingwu Family has control over Yuanling City. However, the western domain is controlled by the Beast Spirit Palace. It’s powers are on par with the Lingwu Family. If I were a Beast Warrior like you, I would have headed to the Yuandi City. Why have you come to Lingwu City? Yuandi City is heaven for Beast Warriors!”

Long Chen was shocked as he knew that the top faction of Yuanling City was the Lingwu Family. However, unbeknownst to him there was another power that was comparable to it!

From what Liu Fengfeng had said, he indicated that the Yuandi faction was in opposition to the Lingwu faction in Yuanling City. The city's name was based on the names Lingwu and Yuandi forming Yuan-Ling. This was to say that the Beast Spirit Palace in the Yuandi City held extraordinary powers similar to that of the Lingwu City!

"I only knew about the Lingwu Family but not about the Beast Spirit Palace. Since I'm already here, I'm not going to withdraw."

Seeing that he was still unafraid of death, Liu Fengfeng said indifferently, "Forget it then. I won't talk any further with you. You must be careful during this selection so as to remain alive until you reach the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. I still recommend that you go to the Beast Spirit Palace since that is the place that Beast Warriors should go."

Long Chen wanted to give him some face so he nodded and said, "If I failed to enter the Lingwu Family, I'll go to the Beast Spirit Palace next."

Liu Fengfeng nodded and replied, "I can see that you're still young so I don't want you to walk astray. If you can understand my painstaking effort, it'll suffice!"

Long Chen didn't think he had made any painstaking efforts, but rather just boasting about his power and knowledge.

"That's right, Big Brother Liu, do you know anything about the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect?"

Long Chen initially thought of getting some information about the Crimson

Blood Sacred Sect, but that guy unexpectedly was baffled. “What sect is that? It should be some small faction. It’s only people from small places that will be frightened by such small powers. I’ll tell you that Yuanling City has three big powers. They are the Lingwu City, the Beast Spirit Palace and the Daybreak Merchants Union. The Daybreak Merchants Union has power over the northern and southern domains and there are even traces of them in the eastern domain. The Daybreak Merchants Union isn’t comparable in terms of military forces to the Lingwu City and Yuandi City but in regards to resources and assets, they are a force to be reckoned with!”

“Daybreak Merchants Union?”

Long Chen really wouldn’t have thought that the Daybreak Merchants Union had such a huge presence!

DBWG Chapter 71 - Steel Golems

Long Chen acquired some information regarding the Daybreak Merchants Union from Liu Fengfeng. Afterwards, Liu Fengfeng went away impatiently, to cultivate.

Even though Long Chen disliked Liu Fengfeng from the bottom of his heart, but reaching the ninth level of Dragon Pulse Realm at his age was something he was slightly impressed with.

While cultivating the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist], the night passed swiftly. The Lingwu Family's selection was soon to begin.

Early in the morning, all the powerful youths at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm were welcomed by experts. While they walked out of their rooms, they were sizing each other up.

These people were most likely all from small to average factions with some degree of power within Yuanling City. Every youth was used to being extremely arrogant, but after entering into Lingwu Family everyone exercised a large amount of restraint.

With a single glance, Long Chen was able to pinpoint Huang Xiang, who had a relaxed and self-assured expression, but Huang Xiang didn't see Long Chen. Instead, he excitedly searched among the faces of the examiners, after finding a face that resembled his own but with a more matured and cold expression. His face lit up as he headed towards that person.

"Big Brother..."

Closing in on that man, Huang Xiang called out to him softly.

The man only nodded slightly at him. Looking coldly at the 50 odd people he said: “When participating in the Lingwu Family member selection you are responsible for your own lives. If you have any regrets you can still leave. As for those who don’t want to, follow me to the practice fields.

After the speech he informed the other members of the Lingwu Family, and led the way. With delight, Huang Xiang followed immediately.

Long Chen and the others also followed behind. Everyone present was considered a competitor, therefore, only a few people got along. The atmosphere was tense and ready to explode at any moment.

At the pavilion, Long Chen went along silently with the rest of the people.

Liu Fengfeng clicked his tongue next to him and spoke while observing Huang Xiang at the front. “It would be tragic if I encountered this Huang Xiang, that examiner Huang Feiyang seems to be his older brother by birth. Within these 50 odd people, his strength is among the absolute top. Heaven certainly is unfair.”

“Really?”

Watching Huang Xiang walking proudly up front, Long Chen’s face revealed nothing. Remembering the Ebony Scaled Dragon Horse that Lingqing gave him, killing intent burst forth from his heart.

‘If I don’t teach you a serious lesson, your father, I, won’t be able to face Lingqing. Who cares about your brother, I don’t believe that he can do anything if I beat you fair and square.’

How could Liu Fengfeng know what’s on Long Chen’s mind? He only saw that after hearing Huang Xiang’s name Long Chen didn’t utter a single word. Thinking he was scared senseless, he said: “Don’t worry, you won’t even pass the first round so there is no chance for you to face him.”

Hearing him mention the first round, Long Chen raised his head and asked, “Do you know of the selection process?”

Liu Fengfeng immediately looked at Long Chen as if he was some kind of retard and said silently: “You really are... everyone in Yuanling City knows that the Lingwu Family’s selection of disciples consists of two major tests, yet you actually didn’t know?”

Long Chen shook his head.

Liu Fengfeng, with his face full of pity, shook his head. After a while, he sighed “So be it. Since you and I shared a room this could be considered fate. I will tell you of these two trials, first one is to fight steel golems!”

“What are the conditions?”

“In a while we’ll see a place where there are dozens of dark tunnels, each tunnel is only 3 meters tall and 2 meters wide, but all of them are more than 500 meters deep. They are filled with large numbers of steel golems and when you enter a tunnel, the steel golems will start to attack you. I bet you have no clue

what steel golems are, right?”

Long Chen replied: “I really don’t know, Brother Liu please educate me.”

Arriving at Yuanling City, Long Chen knew that his own strength was still at the lowest rung of the ladder, so the bold and audacious behavior he displayed back at Poplar Town had to be suppressed.

This was the way Yang Xueqing told him to behave. Right now he needed to endure, but once he was able to amaze the world with his feats, his true disposition would become clear.

Seeing that Long Chen’s ignorance, Liu Fengfeng said with an anticipatory expression: “You can simply treat these steel golems as creatures that can attack but without any intelligence. Little Brother Long Chen, I will give you a piece of advice. If you find that you can’t handle these steel golems, don’t go too far in. That way you can still escape to the entrance. If you enter a hundred meters in, even if you died inside, nobody would know.”

Long Chen smiled and continued to ask noncommittally: “Then tell me, Brother Liu, how can one be considered to have passed?”

Liu Fengfeng smiled smugly and said: “Although we have a total of more than 50 people, there will only be 10 people left after the first test. Do you know why? It’s because once we kill these steel golems we can take the steel hearts from inside their chests. Only those 10 people who have obtained the most steel hearts are allowed to take part in the second test. After years of research, I, your Big Brother Liu, will pass this test with flying colors... By the way, you don’t have a Cosmos Pouch, do you?”

He could easily discern that Long Chen wasn't from Yuanling City. People from a small town wouldn't know what a Cosmos Pouch was. Therefore, Liu Fengfeng feigned embarrassment as he said: "You can't carry many steel hearts without a Cosmos Pouch, but that is also for the best. When you return and break through into the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, go to Yuandi City. Only then will your chances of success be greater. "

Long Chen found out everything that he needed to know. While listening to this obnoxious fellow, Long Chen felt resentment welling up from the bottom of his heart. But he didn't bother to argue and walked on in silence.

Seeing Long Chen's behaviour, Liu Fengfeng assumed it was out of frustration. Shaking his head, Liu Fengfeng shifted his attention to others, sizing up his competition.

"Seems like the competitors, this time, are all of high quality, excluding you, there aren't any pushovers"

While Liu Fengfeng was babbling away, everyone had arrived swiftly at the place Liu Fengfeng had mentioned.

In front of Long Chen, there was a small hill. At its foot, there were several dozen openings. Currently, all the entrances were sealed by steel doors. When the group arrived, people began unsealing the tunnels.

By that time, there were several representatives of the Lingwu Family standing atop a giant boulder. Amongst them was the elder brother of Huang Xiang, Huang Feiyang.

Long Chen was finally able to study Huang Feiyang more closely. This man had a grave expression and looked unapproachable. A pair of frightening eyes gave off an impression that he was someone prone to cruelty, anyone, who offended him would have to watch their backs.

“However, I must exact revenge for Xiao Hei....”

At this point, the gaze of another powerful youth from the Lingwu Family swept across the crowd. Suddenly Long Chen felt a chill in his heart.

“Gentlemen, I believe everyone more or less knows about the Lingwu Family rules. Our testing for the Green Faction is also modelled on the Lingwu Family standards. There are steel golems within these tunnels. What you all have to do is to enter these tunnels. Whoever passes through these tunnels whilst obtaining the most steel hearts will have the privilege of entering the second round.”

“But I will remind you all once you’ve entered these tunnels it becomes a matter of life and death. Every single one of you must be prepared to die. I will cut to the chase since you have all come this far, forfeiting is no longer an option. Get inside everyone, and we will await you on the other side.”

Long Chen coldly observed these representatives and thought to himself: “These youngsters aren’t that old, but I’m afraid they are all existences at the Human Dan Realm. Huang Feiyang is in the Initial Mastery Stage of the Human Dan Realm. Most likely everyone else is also closer to that level... This is only a branch of the Green Faction within Lingwu Family. These kind of geniuses can actually be seen everywhere....”

“Long Chen, you have much more talent than them. As long as there is sufficient time, you will quickly surpass them. For example, you only need to

raise your level a tiny bit, and then you can use the Soul Diffusion Fruit to catch up to them.”

Lingxi’s words sounded in Long Chen’s ears.

Soon, Long Chen was led towards one of the tunnels and there were more than 50 people assigned to a tunnel. The nervous tension spread gradually. While standing in front of the tunnels and listening to the grinding of sharp steel, the majority of the participants felt their scalp tingling.

Currently, the talkative Liu Fengfeng was nowhere to be seen. Suddenly, feeling a heated gaze upon him, Long Chen looked up, only to find that Huang Xiang had already spotted him.

At that moment, Huang Xiang, who was about to display his skills, suddenly saw Long Chen, who was surprisingly within his proximity. He felt shocked and thought that he was hallucinating.

But when Long Chen turned around, he could confirm that it was indeed Long Chen. After the initial surprise, he felt his mood brighten, thinking: “It really is that kid. He made me lose face in Yuanyang Citadel. Originally, I was in a hurry due to the Lingwu Family selection and only killed his horse. I never thought that he would enter the selections. I’ll just have to kill him off too. If you want to blame anyone, blame your bad luck....”

Thinking about the second test, Huang Xiang was rather excited as he felt that he would be able to show Long Cheng who was more powerful between the two.

“It seems like the opponents for the second test are directly assigned by my

brother, and at that time we'll face each other again. Let's see how you die!"

Thinking about it made Huang Xiang feel better.

Previously, the Lingwu Family selection had forced him to let Long Chen off the hook which had made him feel ill at ease for the past few days.

If he didn't teach Long Chen a good lesson, he wouldn't be able to clear his troubled mind. This time, with Long Chen's appearance, he'd be able to resolve this issue and all would be well again.

"However I'm not sure if that kid will be able to pass the first test or not. If it comes to pass that he loses his life inside these tunnels, then I, Huang Xiang, won't hold a grudge against a dead man."

Seeing the complex expressions playing upon on Huang Xiang's face settle into a malicious smile, Long Chen felt alarmed.

"What is that guy plotting?"

Since he couldn't figure it out, Long Chen dropped the matter. The most important thing right now was to pass the first test. During the following stages of the selection, if he had to face off against Huang Xiang....

"I definitely will cripple that fellow."

At this moment, Huang Feiyang threw Huang Xiang a glance, smiling faintly as he said: "Open the steel doors! The first test has begun!"

DBWG Chapter 72 - Savage Massacre

Under the nervous gazes of the crowd, the large entrances to the tunnels, containing the steel golems, gradually opened.

A pitch-black opening filled with killing intent, appeared in front of everyone, making everyone inhale a mouthful of cold air.

Seeing the pale expressions on these newbies' faces, Huang Feiyang smirked and said in a clear voice, "Remember this well. You can only stay in there for half an hour. After that, if you haven't come out, no matter how many steel hearts you get, they won't be counted as you already won't be able to come out!"

"After half an hour, we will lock the steel doors. At that time, no matter if you're dead or alive, we'll consider you dead. If you want to leave, you just have to wait for the next Lingwu Family's selection!"

Huang Feiyang sneered coldly before indicating, "When the next selection comes around, you'll become a decomposed skeleton."

Long Chen was currently looking inside the tunnel. The interior, in fact, did not have any signs of life, but was filled with killing intent. There was also a barely audible clanging of metal. Just from the sound, Long Chen could hear how sturdy the steel golems were.

"Under normal circumstances, it is completely sufficient to cover the five hundred meters of the tunnel in half an hour's time. However, with the hindrance of the steel golems, if you want to kill the greatest amount of golems within the time limit and obtain more of the steel hearts, it seems that it won't

be easy.....”

While Long Chen was considering, Huang Feiyang had already announced the start of the selection.

All fifty people, including Long Chen, strived to be first and feared to be last to prevent wasting their precious time.

“Xiao Xi, do you know anything about these steel golems?”

“Those steel golems were made by using seal arrays, bestowing them life by special martial craftsman. It uses deity jades as an energy source for its combative features. You don’t have to worry, these steel golems are at the lowest level. Thus, you’re in an extremely advantageous situation for this round of selection.”

Long Chen gaze expressed doubt as he asked, “Why is that the case?”

“Although these simple steel golem’s bodies are tough, they don’t know any martial techniques. However, the most troublesome part is that there is a large number of them. If you use your martial techniques to deal with them, sooner or later, you will use up all of your Qi. However, if you use your body’s strength, you would be able to conserve a greater amount of energy. You have previously trained in the [Celestial Core Technique] and after the tempering of one-thousandth Inherited Blood Essence, the [Dragon Soul Transformation] should be at the level of an advanced Huang grade core technique or even stronger!”

Long Chen’s gaze momentarily expressed his surprise. “Xiao Xi, you mean that if I can gather more of the Inherited Blood Essence, my body can continuously

become stronger?”

“In theory, that should be that case. When you are able to utilize all of the Inherited Blood Essence according to your will, your physical abilities will increase. Of course, there are many other immeasurable benefits. They’ll be similar to [Blood Transmuted Qi] and the [Dragon Soul Transformation]!”

In Long Chen’s sea of consciousness, there was still 999/1000 of the Inherited Blood Essence, which was being suppressed by the Dragon Jade. Long Chen knew that in the process of getting stronger, he definitely would be able to uncover portions of the Inherited Blood Essence a step at a time.

“After obtaining the entire Inherited Blood Essence and training to the peak, I should be able to transform into an Immemorial Dragon God. Will I become one of the 10 Immemorial Ancestral Dragons, the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon?”

As his mind was contemplating the notion, Long Chen had already walked about thirty meters in.

At this point, his field of vision darkened. However, it improved as the tunnel’s diameter increased, making it suitable for battles.

Long Chen felt a faint killing intent that was approaching him.

“There are four steel golems about ten meters in front of you since you awakened them by nearing it. They are coming, now!”

With Lingxi’s warning, there were a few powerful movements in the dark tunnel that came rushing towards Long Chen.

Long Chen had already prepared for them. At this moment, he was in [Dragon Soul Transformation] state. The dense, yet precise crimson scales acted as protection while the spiked spikes protruded from his elbows, knees, shoulders, and back. Coupled with his razor sharp claws, they were used as his instruments of death

Right now, there were sharp claws ten centimeters in length on each of Long Chen's fingers. Each and every one of them was practically blood red daggers. If used on ordinary people, it can pierce through their chests and gouge their hearts out!

"I will be entering the second round of selections immediately after this. Many people will be fighting the steel golems. In order to obtain extra steel hearts, they will use a majority of their energy. This will result in them being disadvantaged during the second round! However I have Lingxi, I will try my utmost to use only the energy of my physical body. I refuse to believe that, after having my body tempered by the Inherited Blood Essence I won't be able to deal with a few lumps of steel!"

At that instant, Long Chen came into contact with one of the steel golems!

During the battle, Long Chen quickly understood the structure of the steel golem. It was a human shaped golem made from steel. Long Chen definitely didn't know what kind of steel was used but it was exceptionally tough.

The steel golem was two meters in height, its arms and legs were extremely thick and powerful, containing tremendous strength. On its body, there were a few black runes. Whenever the golems moved the runes would flicker. Long Chen had discovered that their heart was at the center of these runes!

Clang!

An ear piercing sound of colliding metal echoed loudly in the tunnel. At that moment, Long Chen had already thrown a punch towards the steel golem's fist, and was secretly astonished!

“The strength of this steel golem seems to be around the seventh or eighth level of Dragon Pulse Realm. Furthermore, in this tunnel, there are hundreds of these steel golems. No wonder they said that there would be casualties!”

Long Chen roared and then launched punches at the steel golem without restraint. After it was pushed back, he used his speed, which far exceeded the steel golem, to take advantage of the situation. He collided loudly with the golem, momentarily forcing it to topple over on the ground

“It is within my expectations. These steel golems have impeccable defenses and are powerful. However their speed and agility are still lacking!”

After training his body, his agility had greatly improved. When his shoulder hit the steel golem, Long Chen found out that the spikes on his shoulder had pierced his golem's body leaving many large holes. However, it didn't give the slightest pause to the steel golem's motion!

However, that wasn't Long Chen's goal. When the steel golem was knocked down by the collision, his claws pierced through the center of the runes. At this moment, he used all of his power to pierce deeply into the steel golem's heart!

“That's right! Grab the object that is radiating heat and pull it out!”

Following Xiao Xi's instructions, Long Chen pierced the heart of the steel golem with his claws. Very quickly, he felt a hot stone before he unhesitantly pulled it out!

During the extraction, the previously fiendish steel golem momentarily let out a human-like wail and pleaded.

Long Chen hit its weak spot, against something that originally didn't live, he was merciless. He directly extracted it and retreated. At this moment, the steel golem suddenly collapsed on the ground helplessly, without any further movements!

"I have gotten my first steel heart!"

Long Chen glanced at the steel heart in his hand and discovered that it was similar to a warm deity jade like of stone, containing nature's spiritual energy.

However, other than the natural spiritual energy of the steel heart, there were still other auras!

Long Chen immediately placed the steel of heart into his cosmos pouch. The three remaining steel golems already started clanging as they charged towards Long Chen!

"With such a formidable power, but terribly rigid movements, how will you be a match for your father, I?"

With the experience of killing one of the steel golems, Long Chen moved towards the others

“If it is three against one, it will indeed be a little troublesome. I won’t be able to use my full strength, but.....”

Long Chen had moved behind one of the steel golems in a flash. The golem suddenly turned around and threw a punch but Long Chen moved like a lizard that was stuck to its back. Long Chen used his claws to pierce the heart of the steel golem from behind. After he retrieved the steel heart, the other two steel golems had just started to turn around!

“What Xiaoxi said was right. I have overwhelming agility and sharp claws that have granted me an extremely great advantage in this round of selection. If it were others who haven’t trained their body, they wouldn’t dare to fight the steel golem head on and only use martial techniques to attack them. However, it would also be extremely difficult to hit the weak spot of the steel golems! Thus, their speed won’t be able to match mine!”

Thinking about Huang Xiang, Long Chen gaze turned icy.

“Huang Xiang trained in the Huang grade core technique. If he has a sharp knife, it will be extremely easy for him to kill the steel golems. No wonder he had spent time to train in core techniques. The reason being that he had associates in the Lingwu family, so he had some advantages!”

The other two steel golems followed the same pattern collapsing under Long Chen’s feet. At this moment, the battle had already alarmed the other steel golems.

“Be careful, the steel golems in the area are charging towards you!”

Long Chen nodded. “I need to run across to the other side of the tunnel in half an hour’s time. It seems that it will be suitable for me to slaughter them over there. By then, the time limit will be almost up and it’s also convenient for me to leave!”

Saying which, Long Chen rapidly moved towards the depths of the tunnel. After killing a couple of the steel golems, Long Chen had gradually found a method to deal with the steel golems quickly. First, he collided with the steel golem and clawed them and then, in his second move, he went behind the steel golem and clawed them. These were extremely successful moves to deal with the steel golems!

Under the continuous barrage of attacks from the ever increasing steel golems, Long Chen was able to deal with them at ease, just by using those two moves!

Walking into a vast hemispherical area, Long Chen already saw the same big iron door. However, it was densely packed with steel golems!

At a glance, Long Chen had discovered that there were, at least, hundred of them!

“The Lingwu Family has really spent a lot in this. They used this many steel golems to test only one person. There’s a total of 50 of us. I wonder just how large the total number of steel puppets are.”

“I have already gathered 28 steel hearts along the way. There are still three minutes before the thirty minutes time limit. There’s enough time, so I will destroy these steel golems and also practice my close combat skills!”

During the battle with the steel golems, Long Chen found out that his close combat skills were still somewhat lacking.

During the process of training, it could be said that he had switched to something he wasn’t used to. When he was young, he trained daily. However, he had put that aside for quite sometime, so he had forgotten some basic moves. There were currently many steel golems, so they could be used as perfect training targets!

Long Chen became like a wolf that entered a flock of sheep. He was like a red phantom who frantically killed the steel golems!

Long Chen was so engrossed in the killing that he didn’t pay attention to the time. It was only until Xiao Xi suddenly said, “Hey! There isn’t much time to the half an hour limit. Don’t you want to head out already?”

Only then, did Long Chen stop and check his cosmos pouch. He smiled bitterly and said, “With a total of 105 steel hearts, I wonder if it is possible to reach the top ten with that.”

In one of the nine outer clans of the Lingwu Family, at the Green Sun Branch of the Green Faction's gathering point outside the city, there was a Mountain of Trials. Both sides of the Mountain of Trials had dozens of steel doors, and outside of the obscured steel doors, there was a vast open field. At that moment, there were a number of people sitting in a row, coolly looking at the Mountain of Trials.

To begin with, there were no sounds of activity on this side of the Mountain of Trials, but half an hour later, the steel doors were gradually pushed open by people. Each and every one's clothing was disheveled, there were even people whose body had suffered serious injuries, all coming out from inside the tunnel. When they saw the sunshine outside, regardless of how severely injured they were, all of them appeared excited.

At this moment, Huang Feiyang saw that a dozen or more people had already come out. Suddenly, he raised his eyebrows toward a youth who was next to him — a man who was younger than him — and commanded, "You go and give the Canola Grass to those who are seriously hurt, and let them recover. "

At once, the youth agreed and left to do his bidding.

Only then did Huang Feiyang change his sights to the youth sitting on his other side, and laughed, saying, "Brother Wen, half of the time is already over, isn't it? This round's participants are not that bad huh, almost 20 people came out. There were more than 10 people who withdrew, that is to say, only a dozen or so died. "

Wen Ya glanced over all the people who had already come out and said, "There

is only a little time left. When the time is up, immediately lock those doors. At that time, those who did not die will certainly die. The Lingwu Family isn't to be entered that easily. ”

“Oh! By the way, Brother Huang, that younger brother of yours is pretty good. It looks like he is not at all injured and his achievements should be among the best. Others appear more or less injured. ”

Speaking of Huang Xiang, Huang Feiyang , who was rarely proud, said, “From our childhood, my younger brother's character has always resembled mine, he is tenacious and hard-working. It is likely that his future accomplishments would almost match mine. ”

Wen Ya nodded his head, muttering to himself for a time, then he said, “Time is almost up, can we lock the gates now and then count the steel hearts?”

Huang Feiyang looked at his younger brother. This time, Huang Xiang turned to face him and gave him a reassuring look so he nodded at him with a smile.

Huang Xiang looked at each and every one of the 20 people who had passed and when he did not find Long Chen's figure, he frowned and said, “In Yuanyang Citadel, I saw that his physical strength was pretty good, capable of resisting my [Wheel Of Radiance]. It makes no sense that he perished inside without passing the first trial....”

By this time, the Lingwu Family's men had already begun to seal the steel doors. Huang Xiang grudgingly smiled and said, “Huang Xiang, oh Huang Xiang, you have overestimated others! Your only opponents are the geniuses from the four Inner Factions. A small person from a small area is simply not worthy of you being bothered about him....”

Then Huang Xiang shifted his gaze and kept looking at the experts from Lingwu Family. He did not continue to think about Long Chen.

Apparently he considered Long Chen's death inside the mountain to be normal.

And at that moment Liu Fengfeng looked everywhere including behind him. When he saw that Long Chen still hadn't come out, he immediately laughed and mocked, "If you had sensibly withdrawn earlier, all would have been well. But if you died in that place, then you can only blame yourself for not listening to this older brother's advice. You also cannot blame others for this, I noticed your temper beforehand and knew that you would die inside!"

Thinking of the steel hearts that he had obtained, Liu Fengfeng was very satisfied.

"Altogether, I have 23 steel hearts; that should be sufficient for me to enter the top 10, right?"

Thinking of those terrifying steel golems within the passage, Liu Fengfeng took in an involuntary breath of cold air. If he hadn't sufficiently prepared in advance, he'd have been finished.

"More than half of my Qi has been used up. In the second trial, I may not have an easy time....."

Liu Fengfeng sized up the surrounding peoples, but he saw that each and everyone appeared as miserable as him. He immediately felt at ease and muttered, “These people and I are more or less in the same boat. I still have a chance!”

At this moment, seeing that each and every one of the steel doors has been locked, Huang Feiyang stood up, preparing to announce the end of the first trial, when all of a sudden, a door which was about to be sealed opened with a bang. The people who were about to seal the door were blown back several steps, and with frustrated expressions they looked inside. They hadn’t anticipated someone would come out at the very last moment.

Making such a forceful entrance suddenly drew everyone’s attention towards the door.

At this moment, a figure became more and more distinct from within the dark tunnel. When they saw that the figure emerging from the tunnel was an unexpected yet unfamiliar young face, they were all stupefied.

However, for Huang Xiang and Liu Fengfeng, they both suffered from a greater shock.

Liu Fengfeng was rather speechless. His head rolled back and forth for a while before he finally accepted the truth.

“He actually lucked out, and managed to escape at the last moment? However, with his abilities, I reckon he wouldn’t have many steel hearts, so there’s nothing great about it even if he came out. ”

He thought that way originally, but seeing that Long Chen was unscathed, he was unable to explain why. Therefore, his brows furrowed as he said, "Could it be that the tunnel he was in did not have as many steel golems?"

Seeing Long Chen come out, Huang Xiang coldly looked at him, but then he thought, "For a person that could withstand my move, he should have a certain level of talent. Since you did not die in there, that is great. After a while, you will know what death is. I hope the steel hearts in your hands can get you into the top 10!"

Just after he came out, looking at the many people gathered, Long Chen was in shock and promptly joined the group as he thought, "Truly frightening! Actually, I'd been so engrossed in fighting that if I were a little slower, it would have ended tragically!"

Long Chen smirked at Huang Xiang's gaze which was full of murderous intent.

Seeing that Long Chen still dared to face him, Huang Xiang scornfully thought "Is this because I killed your horse? Is that something worth being angry about? After I have killed you, then you will know that the matter previously was insignificant...."

As Long Chen merged into the crowd, people could clearly see his appearance. Still, they lost interest to observe him any further. At that moment, Liu Fengfeng ran over to pat Long Chen on his shoulder as he laughed and said, "Well done lad! Actually, you've exceeded my expectations. Coming out alive, is not bad at all. How many steel hearts did you gain?"

Looking at this person, Long Chen could only smile bitterly and shake his head.

Liu Fengfeng, who looked as if he had expected this reply, cheerfully said, “Never mind, even if you didn’t obtain any steel hearts, it is alright. At least, you sustained no injuries. You’ll still have an opportunity at the next Yuandi City’s selection!”

While Liu Fengfeng was harping on, Huang Xiang and Long Chen looked daggers at each other. However, it was seen by Huang Feiyang. Huang Feiyang frowned while staring at Long Chen and muttered, “Does Ah Xiang[1] and this kid have a conflict? Good brat, you’re clearly aware that I am here, yet you still dare to offend a person from my Huang Family. Your guts aren’t small.”

[TL Note[1]: An endearing term – Refers to Huang Xiang]

He’d originally thought to announce that, because of Long Chen’s slight delay, he would lose the qualification to enter the second trial. But before he could, Wen Ya who was beside him, announced, “Well done. Now, all of you please get in a row, and each and everyone shall hand over your steel hearts! ”

As Wen Ya spoke, Huang Feiyang didn’t want to contradict him. Instead, thought to himself, “Never mind, even if you can enter the top 10, I will make you suffer soon. ”

He sat down, and on his desk, he flipped through the registration book to read Long Chen’s profile.

“Long Chen, comes from..... Poplar Town’s Yang Family, a Beast Warrior, in the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. The Beast Spirit Origin is the Underground Blood Lizard of the Dragon Pulse Realm? It’s only at this level, yet Ah Xiang[1] hasn’t eliminated him. It seems like the cultivation Ah Xiang did for all these years is still lacking. ”

At this time, Wen Ya was already registering the number of steel hearts handed in by each warrior.

“Chen Wenlong, 18 pieces!”

“Qing Xu, 29 pieces!”

“Xiao Yan, 8 pieces!”

About 20 people, one by one, approached Wen Ya and took out the steel hearts within their cosmos pouches. After waiting anxiously for some time, Liu Fengfeng patted Long Chen’s shoulder and said, “You wait here, I will first go to hand over the steel hearts!”

Very quickly, his outcome was announced.

“Liu Fengfeng, 23 hearts!”

Liu Fengfeng proudly came before Long Chen and said excitedly, “So far, my quantity of steel hearts puts me in 9th place! I see that the rest of the people, except for Huang Xiang, were all severely injured. I guess, this time, my total of steel hearts has unexpectedly gotten me a position in the top 10, the heavens are indeed smiling upon me!”

While he spoke, Huang Xiang gave Long Chen a provoking stare, as he walked over to Wen Ya. Looking at the younger brother of his good friend, Wen Ya

smiled cheerfully and said, “Are you Huang Xiang? Come, take out your steel hearts, and let us see what you’ve got! ”

Huang Feiyang looked at his younger brother with an indulgent expression, and said, “During my selection, I got 58 steel hearts and our Elder Brother Wen Ya did better than me and retrieved 67 steel hearts. Currently, the highest number of steel hearts is 41. Ah Xiang, do you have any chance to get the first position?”

Huang Xiang confidently laughed and said, “You’ll just have to count them to find out. ”

While laughing, a huge amount of dazzling steel hearts poured out from his Cosmos Pouch. Seeing the rest of the participants gasp, even Wen Ya and Huang Feiyang displayed their approval of him!

Liu Fengfeng paled, and said, “I underestimated Huang Xiang’s ability. The number of steel hearts should be more than 60! This means, that Huang Xiang’s ranking would be 1st, and I will be ranked 10th. However, that is not bad, I can still enter the second trial.....”

While Wen Ya was precisely counting, he suddenly laughed and said, “Not bad kid, certainly not bad. 68 steel hearts. He got one more steel heart compared to what I got in the past.”

Huang Feiyang was gratified as he looked at his brother’s accomplishment.

He looked at Huang Xiang and nodded. Just then Huang Xiang opened his mouth to say something, Huang Feiyang looked and saw Long Chen standing not

too far behind Huang Xiang, and he immediately understood Huang Xiang's intention.

Therefore, he nodded.

Then only did Huang Xiang leave. During this time, those who were seriously injured and applied the healing medicines walked over one by one. Not exceeding Liu Fengfeng's expectations, their achievements seldom exceeded 10 hearts. Looking around, Liu Fengfeng drew back the corners of his mouth in a smile.

"Great, I'm barely in the tenth place, but it was really close....."

Looking at him rejoicing, Long Chen felt the irony as he was the only one left to hand over his steel hearts.

Seeing Long Chen approach Wen Ya, Liu Fengfeng was startled and muttered, "Could it be that this boy was able to obtain some steel hearts?"

074 - Fiery Battle!

“State your name.”

Glancing at Long Chen, Wen Ya looked down and fiddled with the pen in his hand.

“Long Chen.”

Wen Ya nodded his head. After finding Long Chen’s name on the list, he spoke plainly, “Show us the steel hearts that you have acquired!”

Long Chen gave a slight nod. He could feel Huang Feiyang’s cold gaze on him but he wasn’t bothered by it at all.

Currently, only Long Chen was left and unless there were some unexpected events, the top ten was already determined.

Liu Fengfeng managed to place within the top ten through luck. Right now, he was looking at Long Chen with a mix of excitement and anticipation written on his face, waiting to see if Long Chen could produce a single steel heart out.

As for Huang Xiang, he had a far more serious gaze as he really wanted Long Chen to enter top ten so he could vent his anger.

“I hope you have acquired at least 23 hearts!”

Even if it was only 23 pieces, Long Chen was younger than Liu Fengfeng. With that taken into account, Liu Fengfeng might be knocked out of the competition due to Long Chen.

After Wen Ya gave the instructions, he looked even more closely at Long Chen's cosmos pouch. At this moment, steel hearts after steel hearts began to appear in Long Chen's hands. Seeing the sheer number of steel hearts, Liu Fengfeng's jaw dropped.

"He was really able to acquire some steel hearts, and the number isn't less than ten. Uh..."

He was quite surprised initially but, after seeing the never ending stream of steel hearts appearing from Long Chen's cosmos pouch, his previously relaxed expression turned more serious with each passing second and soon his body began to tremble.

As the number of steel hearts on the table noticeably surpassed 23 pieces, Liu Fengfeng's complexion turned deathly pale as he glared at Long Chen's back. Before long, his eyes gradually turned bloodshot with rage!

"Long Chen... How? This can't be right! He's just a country bumpkin from some backwater town. How could he surpass me? I was born and raised in Yuanling City."

Liu Fengfeng's gaze was filled with disbelief. He even roughly rubbed his eyes but still he wasn't able to change the cold hard reality in front of him.

Seeing that Long Chen managed to bring out more than 23 steel hearts, both

Wen Ya and Huang Feiyang were surprised, and looked at Long Chen more seriously., Huang Xiang was finally able to heave a sigh of relief. He sniggered inwardly: “Surpassing 23 pieces will qualify you for the second round. You’re the person who is seeking death so don’t blame me for it.”

However, the amount of steel hearts Long Chen held kept rising. Everyone’s focus had already shifted over to him while their jaws momentarily dropped in surprise.

Everyone’s gazes became stunned, especially when the amount of steel hearts Long Chen produced was reaching into the fifties. Wen Ya’s and Huang Feiyang’s gazes towards Long Chen had also changed a lot.

In regards of Huang Xiang, his brows slowly frowned. He originally thought that reaching first place was an already done deal. But right now it seemed like he might be surpassed!

The thought that he might lose to Long Chen made his anger soar through the roof.

He had already let Long Chen off the hook once; if Long Chen still didn’t know better, his murderous intent would only increase further.

“Not bad kiddo!”

Seeing nearly 60 steel hearts, even Wen Ya was beaming at Long Chen.

Huang Feiyang seemed indifferent but the amount of steel hearts Long Chen produced kept rising. The others were already shocked numb by what they saw.

Especially Liu Fengfeng, who felt as if his head was spinning.

On the other hand, Huang Xiang was tightly clenching his fists, because the amount of steel hearts Long Chen had was about to go beyond his!

In fact, within an instant, the amount had already surpassed his. Huang Xiang's complexion turned scarlet immediately. He glared at Long Chen, who stole his first place away from him. Hatred slowly festered in his heart.

"This time, you must be eliminated! If I don't kill you, I will suffer discomfort for the entire year. Whoever offends me won't be able to escape the fate of death!"

Everyone looked at Long Chen with a shocked expression. Seeing Long Chen finally put away his cosmos sack, the resulting heap of steel hearts in front of him was larger than Huang Xiang's. By now, everyone's gazes towards him were completely different!

Wen Ya burst out laughing: "A total of 75 steel hearts, making your results the best this selection. But you are a beast warrior which gives you an advantage. These results aren't considered extraordinary. In the past, every time a beast warrior entered the competition, they would always produce great results!"

Long Chen had actually acquired 105 pieces of steel hearts. Since he had already gotten the top position, he held onto some of them.

As Wen Ya announced Long Chen's amount of steel hearts, Liu Fengfeng wasn't able to stand steadily and had already collapsed onto the ground.

Shortly, the top ten for this round of selection was already extremely clear. They all knew that Long Chen was the undisputed number one and Huang Xiang was second while Liu Fengfeng was forced out of the top ten positions.

Excluding the top ten people, everyone else lost their rights to further participate in the Lingwu Family selection.

Thus with a cold sweep of his gaze, Wen Ya said with a frosty tone: "Those who failed to make it into top ten shall leave this place immediately. You will have a chance during the next Lingwu family outer clans' selection!"

Liu Fengfeng, whose head was spinning, was carried out. Before he left, he was still staring intently at Long Chen, unable to figure out why and how such an event had occurred.

Among the crowd of martial artists that came to partake in the selections, exactly ten people remained.

"You should all take a rest, we will soon start the second round of the selections, which will be..."

Wen Ya looked around and spoke softly: "One versus one battle. Our rules are quite simple. When the time comes, we will separate you into five groups. In each group, two people will fight each other. Whoever wins will be a part of my Lingwu Family. Do you understand?"

Long Chen and the others nodded immediately.

At the moment, Huang Xiang's line of sight was solely directed on Long Chen.

Even Wen Ya could feel the baleful aura that was emitted from Huang Xiang's body.

He frowned before looking again at Huang Feiyang's indifferent look. He decided not to mention it before he said directly: "In fifteen minutes, your opponents will be announced. You should all make your preparations!"

Upon this field, there was a large fighting stage. It appeared to be an arena for battles.

At this moment, Huang Feiyang and the others were discussing among themselves, while Long Chen and the rest of the top ten people were hastily treating their wounds in preparation for the upcoming battle.

Long Chen didn't need to make any preparations. He glanced at Huang Xiang and saw him staring back. The murderous glint in his eyes was obvious.

"Obnoxious fly, today you will finally meet your end!" Huang Xiang said coldly.

"Wow, this little yellow dog unexpectedly speaks the human tongue. So scary."

[TL Note: Yellow (黄) refers to the Huang in Huang Xiang's name.]

Long Chen pretended to sound like a woman, making the surrounding people feel repulsed by him. But for Huang Xiang, it was an enormous slap in the face.

He instantly tightly balled up his fists. If the Lingwu Family people weren't present, he would've already charged up to Long Chen to claim his life.

“You will probably be unable to laugh after hearing who is your opponent is later. The Lingwu Family is my turf. There is no room for you here.”

While people were resting, fifteen minutes passed swiftly.

Right now, the pairing for the duels had already been set up by Wen Ya and his peers. Long Chen suddenly felt that both Huang Feiyang and Huang Xiang were giving him looks filled with malice.

Looking at Huang Feiyang, Long Chen could already guess the result.

Sure enough, as soon as it was announced. Long Chen found out that his opponent is Huang Xiang, plus it would also be the last battle.

“This must be Huang Xiang’s doing right? I robbed him of his first place finish so his current hatred towards me must be bone deep.”

Seeing Huang Xiang’s smug expression, Long Chen sniggered inwardly.

“When the time comes, I will show you who is more powerful!”

Presently, according to Wen Ya’s arrangement, two youths in the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm had entered the stage and started fighting. They were both in the same realm as Founder Yang, but in reality, they were much more powerful.

“People of Yuanling City are all impressive, even in this tiny part of town.”

From seeing the fight between these two people, Long Chen managed to gain some insight. As they were fighting, time passed gradually. Soon, the 5 spots for entering the Lingwu Family already had four names on it.

Regarding the qualification for the last spot. It would be decided between Long Chen and Huang Xiang.

Right now, everyone's gazes were upon Long Chen and Huang Xiang. Huang Xiang sneered towards Long Chen and headed into the arena first.

Outside the arena, Wen Ya looked at Huang Xiang and Long Chen glaring at each other. He then glanced at Huang Feiyang who had a frosty look next to him before he shook his head with self-pity, thinking to himself: 'This Long Chen really is a good seedling, but he should never have offended Huang Xiang. It is such a shame that another talent will be ruined. If the deacon finds out that I've cheated, I'll be in serious trouble!'

Generally speaking, there were rules to pairing these duels. It should be decided by placements during the first selection. It works as follows, first place against the last place. Second place against the ninth place and so on.

Normally, during the first selection. whoever acquired the most steel hearts would also have stronger powers so the top five in collecting the steel hearts would be able to enter the Lingwu family. However, due to Huang Feiyang, Long Chen and Huang Xiang would face off against each other instead.

Initially, both of them were qualified to enter Lingwu Family, but now only one of them could.

“Although this Long Chen was able to acquire more steel hearts, he still can’t measure up to the Huang Family’s skills. Even if it is just a Profound Grade martial technique, it will be enough to make Long Chen suffer.”

Wen Ya was harbouring these thoughts as he gave Long Chen a glance filled with pity before announcing the start of battle!

Huang Xiang laughed Immediately: “Kiddo, I bet you still remember the taste of my [Wheel Of Radiance] from last time. So be it, today I will let you experience it again. I don’t believe that, even if you managed to block it once, you can block it the second time!”

Long Chen’s current aura kept rising steadily. Soon enough, in front of the shocked expressions from everyone, he once again went through [Dragon Soul Transformation]. His body was soon covered in scales and spikes, making everyone lock their brows.

Long hen balled up his fist before he sneered: “Since I can block that level of attack once, I most certainly can block it twice!”

“Really?”

When Huang Xiang sneered, he had already launched [Wheel Of Radiance] again.

Just like last time, an incredibly powerful force flew from his body and pressed tyrannically against Long Chen.

“The same attack is meaningless against me!”

Just like last time, Long Chen rapidly dashed towards Huang Xiang. Rays after rays of images of Dragon Gods was released by Long Chen. The roaring attack suddenly charged towards Huang Xiang.

“[Wheel Of Radiance]!”

“[Seal of the High Profound Dragon]!”

The sudden collision had made the expressions of Wen Ya and Huang Feiyang’s face change a little.

Seeing that the advanced Huang grade [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] was actually able to contest against his Huang family Profound grade martial technique, Huang Feiyang’s face showed his disbelief.

Wen Ya also bitterly smiled and shook his head. “This Long Chen really gave me a surprise. But seeing this result, he still won’t be able to escape death today...”

075 - [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]!

The two figures collided with a large amount of momentum, and everyone was astonished that Long Chen had actually succeeded in withstanding a move from Huang Xiang's Profound grade martial technique with just his Huang grade martial technique!

The arena was immediately filled with loud clamours.

At that moment, both Long Chen and Huang Xiang had quickly retreated. Both of them were only able to steady their footsteps with great difficulty. Huang Xiang unexpectedly found that compared to the previous time, he had actually retreated almost the same distance that Long Chen had.

In other words, within the past few days Long Chen had made significant progress!

To Huang Xiang, when these kind of people became his enemies, he would be extremely unhappy. His expression immediately turned sinister. He yelled at Long Chen, "You have really pissed me off this time. I swear that you will definitely die this time!"

However, Long Chen did not respond. After Huang Xiang had killed his Ebony Scaled Horse, Long Chen had already handed him a death sentence in his heart.

Outside the arena, Wen Ya and Huang Feiyang looked at each other when they saw that Long Chen's unexpected use of the [Seal of the High Profound Dragon] had blocked Huang Xiang's [Wheel of Radiance], and they seemed to be matched evenly.

“Brother Huang, that youngster isn’t simple.”

Huang Feiyang coldly sneered and said, “So what if he isn’t simple? If he dares to offend my Huang family, he will still have to die. Ah Xiang told me earlier that he had already mastered that technique. Although he is still not very familiar with it, it is entirely sufficient to deal with this Long Chen!”

“That technique?”

Wen Ya thought for a while and finally recalled what Huang Feiyang had said. With a wry smile, he said, “Indeed, under the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death], this kid won’t be able to survive. You had to enter the initial phase of Human Dan Realm before you were able to use the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]. I did not expect Huang Xiang, who is at the 9th level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, would be capable of using it!”

Huang Feiyang nodded, and said, “In order to keep up with me, in these past few days, Ah Xiang has been secretly putting in great effort to achieve such results. I am really happy for him.”

In that arena, the [Wheel of Radiance] was once again ineffective against Long Chen. Huang Xiang initially fumed, but very quickly, he grimly smiled and stood up. While he was attacking Long Chen, he sneered and said, “You are able to deal with the [Wheel of Radiance]. But under this attack of mine, not even your corpse will be left. Boy, after you die, don’t ever blame it on me. If you have to blame someone, just blame it on your bad luck that you ran into me.”

Sensing that the aura on Huang Xiang’s body had changed, Long Chen’s heart was secretly in shock.

“Will it be a much stronger attack than the [Wheel of Radiance]? ”

After all, the [Wheel of Radiance] was very powerful, and Long Chen clearly knew that. Last time, when he battled with Huang Xiang, he had been defeated by this Profound grade martial technique. However, after he had gotten the Profound grade martial technique, [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist]

“You have a more powerful martial technique. However, I also have stronger moves. This time, let us finally see who is stronger. You, or I, Long Chen! ”

At that moment, outside the arena, Huang Feiyang’s gaze froze, and he smiled and said, “Ah Xiang is really going to use the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]!”

Just as Huang Feiyang’s voice sounded, Huang Xiang, who was within the arena, sneered. Suddenly, the Qi inside his body frantically surged outwards. It seemed to have formed a few of whirlwinds, which were rapidly revolving around him.

Within a split second, a vague, black and white colored tadpole-like rune formed a wheel of light on Huang Xiang’s body.

He charged towards Long Chen. It was an earth-shattering power that would make people feel suffocated. Although he sensed his opponent’s extremely powerful aura, Long Chen wasn’t discouraged!

“This move, when compared to the [Wheel of Radiance], should be at least 10

times stronger!”

Huang Xiang’s normally impassive face now transformed; his entire person seemed to have become like the overlord of heaven and earth, with both under his control. When the immensely profound attack gradually approached Long Chen, Long Chen momentarily found it difficult to move his body!

“That illusory wheel of rune and light is unexpectedly so strong.....but, if you have a Profound grade martial technique, why can’t I have one?!”

When Long Chen thought so, the blood-red colored Qi suddenly burst forth. It was as though he was burning up!

A formless Qi wave appeared on Long Chen’s body. It looked as though there was an invisible flame that was burning his body!

All the people present at the scene immediately felt the temperature of the whirlwind rising rapidly. Currently, it was already autumn, but due to Long Chen’s presence, the temperature of the surroundings had even become much hotter than summer.

“This is....” Wen Ya and the others were shocked.

At this moment, Long Chen’s eyes suddenly opened, and his blood-red pupils resembled a blazing fire. There was a tremendous aura that was emitted from his body, giving off a blazing aura.

In everyone's point of view, Long Chen had become a sturdy statue of Yang element with endless abilities.

[TL Note: Yin and Yang element. Yang often represents the masculine force; it is strong, warm, forceful, active, bright, and creative. To have a more comprehensive understanding, head to this superbly detailed post by Ren of WuxiaWorld:

<http://www.wuxiaworld.com/what-dao-heck-a-very-basic-primer-to-the-dao/>
]

A wave of heat rushed indiscriminately towards everyone. This time, everyone was astonished to see that a blood-red colored flame was rapidly forming on his right fist.

This blood-red colored flame was faintly quivering, fuelling Long Chen's body, and causing his body to slightly vibrate. From this, one could see that Long Chen's control over this attack was not very proficient. However, when compared to him, Huang Xiang was even worse. That black and white rune light wheel trembled so greatly that Huang Xiang was unable to even control it!

“Die! [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]!”

Being unable to completely control it, Huang Xiang could only barely form the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] before he charged towards Long Chen's attack. However, Long Chen's aura was not weaker than Huang Xiang's!

By that time, the blood-red colored flame had completely covered Long Chen's fist. Looking at Huang Xiang's rapidly rotating [Heavenly Wheel of Life and

Death], Long Chen's eyes flashed coldly as he immediately rushed forward, howling and throwing out his fist!

Boom!

Immediately, the blood-red flame exploded with a loud bang, exploding against the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] and engulfing it.

“[Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist]... [Scarlet Flames Burning Heavens]!”

At this moment, Long Chen's attack rapidly rose to its peak. Originally, it was still able to withstand [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]. However, when it actually exploded, the tremendous Qi instantly increased by several-fold.

Initially, the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] that was extremely dazzling had turned completely dull and lacked any brightness. Immediately after, Long Chen's strong, berserk punch thoroughly shattered the attack. With his crazed roar, it immediately stunned Huang Xiang!

The violent attack immediately sent Huang Xiang flying. The turbulent power was constantly damaging his body. Huang Xiang violently spurted out a mouthful of blood, miserably falling down onto the ground while his entire face was covered in black blood!

His clothes were also burnt clean due to Long Chen's attack. Now, Huang Xiang was burnt black all over his body, and the smell of cooked meat immediately wafted through the air. The source of this smell was naturally Huang Xiang, who was twitching.

Huang Xiang's body hunched over in pain. Currently, he was hazily looking at Long Chen. After seeing that Long Chen was not injured in the least and that he himself was in such a tattered state instead, he simply felt as if he was dreaming and was totally unable to believe what had just happened.

Moreover, due to the acute pain in his body, Huang Xiang's mouth started to foam before he fainted!

He simply couldn't believe that the attack he was most confident in had completely lost under Long Chen's hand. Additionally, it was a complete defeat!

He had always mocked Long Chen as a person from a small town who did not have any decent martial techniques. However, the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] that Long Chen used just now was like a fierce slap to him!

Seeing Huang Xiang's present condition, the remaining 8 participating competitors panted as if they lacked air, keeping quiet out of fear.

They all were rejoicing that they hadn't become Long Chen's opponent. Otherwise, they would have been the one that was collapsed on the ground, not knowing if they would be able to survive the attack.

Upon seeing this scene, Wen Ya's lips and teeth were both trembling. He was shocked, seeing that Long Chen was still standing in the arena. He shivered uncontrollably and unexpectedly wasn't able to say a single word.

"He.....defeated Huang Xiang's [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]? How is it possible? He is only at the 8th level of the Dragon Pulse Realm! Could it be that this Long Chen is unexpectedly that talented? "

At this time, after he had just used the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist], Long Chen currently felt that his body was void of strength. A weary feeling immediately spread all over his body.

[Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] was an intermediate Profound grade martial technique. He was still at the 8th level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, but had used martial techniques like those used by an expert of the Human Dan Realm, so it was only natural that it consumed very large amounts of his strength!

At this moment, Long Chen was completely spent.

After having just defeated Huang Xiang, if he didn't have any time to recover, Long Chen knew that he would be in deep trouble.

As expected, just when he had defeated Huang Xiang, an enormous aura suddenly appeared not far from him!

At this moment, Long Chen was simply unable to resist this aura. In a twinkle of an eye, it had approached beside Long Chen. Currently, Long Chen had only the tiniest amount of Qi left in his body, which was not at all sufficient to resist this attack!

Even if he was in peak condition, he still would not have been able to completely block the attacks of this person. Huang Feiyang!

After seeing that his brother was defeated to such a miserable state, his eyes immediately became red. He immediately sought revenge, and even Wen Ya

wasn't able to stop him!

Previously, Xue Yuanzi's attack had caused Ling Xi to consume 3 stalks of Dream Spirit Grass, so Long Chen's only reaction now was to use his hand to firmly grasp onto the Lingxi Sword!

Lingxi, who was within the Lingxi Sword, was already so anxious that her face paled, but Long Chen was covering his whole ear with his palm. If she were to be released from the Lingxi Sword, it would be at the cost of impaling Long Chen's palm!

It was not possible for Lingxi to hurt Long Chen, so with that moment of hesitation, she had already lost the opportunity to help Long Chen!

By that time, Huang Feiyang's attack had already arrived in front of Long Chen.

Within the Lingxi sword, Lingxi was so anxious that she started tearing up!

"Bastard, take your hands off! Take it off! "

Despite her heart-rending yells, Long Chen did not respond whatsoever.

She was aware that Long Chen knew that she could only live for a few months. If Lingxi were to help him again, she most likely wouldn't be able to live anymore. Long Chen would rather die than to see her sacrifice herself for him!

Ever since the battle for the Soul Diffusion Fruit where Lingxi had helped him once, Long Chen already calculated in his mind. He knew that in the future

without sufficient spirit healing medicines, he absolutely could not allow Lingxi to help him anymore. Thus, he thought of this strategy, to use his palm to cover his ears!

At this moment, Long Chen was only able to cover his ear before he was struck and sent flying by Huang Feiyang's attack.

This was when Long Chen was even in [Dragon Soul Transformation]. The first time he faced off against this attack squarely, he did not doubt that he would die from that attack. However, after forcibly taking Huang Feiyang's attack head on, he realised that although he was in severe excruciating pain and his body seemed to have fallen apart like a broken kite, he was still some distance away from death's door!

“The resistance of these dragon scales are actually so strong?”

This unexpected reward had left Long Chen in glee. However, the punch from Huang Feiyang still made him directly spurt out a mouthful of blood. He obviously had received severe internal injuries!

He crashed into the floor with a huge bang. Long Chen discovered that his hands and feet were already rigid. Although Huang Feiyang did not kill him with that strike, it had at least caused him to lose all of his fighting powers.

He would definitely die under another attack!

At this moment, Huang Feiyang had rapidly charged at him like a whirlwind!

076 - Lady Enforcer!

“Long Chen has violated the rules for this competition. I hereby declare that he has lost the right to enter the Lingwu Family.”

Huang Feiyang’s voice echoed faintly.

Even though he’d received one of Huang Feiyang’s powerful moves and survived, Long Chen couldn’t feel any satisfaction!

Currently, it was impossible for Huang Feiyang to let him off the hook. Long Chen’s hands had been blown away from his ears due to the impact of his attack, so Lingxi could come out at any moment now.

Suddenly Long Chen yelled with great force: “Lingxi, come back here! If not, I will hate you to my death!”

Currently, Lingxi was already in motion. Even though she heard Long Chen’s anxious words, she didn’t listen.

To her, Long Chen was on the verge of death; this was the only thing on her mind!

“Lingxi! I beg you. Please listen to me, okay?!”

Long Chen’s heart-rending voice wasn’t able to make Lingxi return!

At the moment, Huang Feiyang has already arrived in front of Long Chen. With rage filled eyes, he immediately attacked Long Chen a second time.

By now, Lingxi had already prepared to leave Long Chen's ear to shield him!

In just the nick of time, a cold female voice suddenly spoke out. Huang Feiyang, who was originally on top of Long Chen, was suddenly blown away. After he retreated a few steps, he looked up with an ashen face towards the new arrival.

Initially, his face was filled with fury, but after seeing who had come, he trembled with fear and hurriedly said: "Disciple Huang Feiyang, greets the Enforcer."

Wen Ya who was standing to the side, likewise bowed towards the newcomer.

Long Chen didn't know the identity of the new arrival. But, he had already recovered a little and was barely able to stand up. Lingxi, who was originally planning to intervene, saw that Long Chen had received assistance. She sighed in relief and didn't take any further actions.

"Just wait and see how I will deal with you when we return!"

After Long Chen gave Lingxi a serious fright, he endured the tremendous pain in his body as he gritted his teeth and tried to stand up.

Although his body was barely holding up, Long Chen still looked towards the newcomer.

Ahead, a group of people walked towards them.

Each person gave off an extraordinary aura. Their strength eclipsed Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya by a large margin, especially that woman amidst them. She even made Long Chen narrow his eyes.

The lone woman amongst the young men seemed to attract the most attention. She was wearing a crimson gown framing her delicate features. Her snow white skin, her enchanting smile, her stride accentuating the graceful yet well-developed curves of her lush figure, attracted the attention of every man.

When the 8 competitors were suddenly confronted with such a beauty, they immediately swallowed their saliva and stared at her with widened eyes.

Amongst the beauties Long Chen had seen, Lingxi and Yang Lingqing both seemed immature in comparison. This woman embodied a completely different charm; every motion and every quirk of the lips was filled with maturity, intellect, and elegance. It would be extremely difficult for an ordinary man to resist her.

The phrase 'peerless beauty' came unbidden to Long Chen.

However, right now, his body was hurting all over, so he was in no mood to flirt with the woman. Moreover, with her abnormal strength, she wasn't someone he could flirt with, even if he wanted to.

Therefore, Long Chen put up an innocent wounded teenager front, as he stared coldly at Huang Feiyang while biting his lower lip.

Long Chen was handsome, and coupled with his innocent yet wild and

untamed appearance; he had immediately attracted the attention of the beauty.

Long Chen was just 16 years old and still had the appearance of a youngster, with blood running from the corners of his mouth. When the woman saw him, it made her heart ache slightly.

She immediately swept his gaze towards Huang Feiyang. With an expression as if she was holding back a smile on her flawless face, she asked him: “Huang Feiyang, explain yourself.”

The woman’s voice was soft yet charming. Long Chen suddenly felt his heart stir. Remembering that Lingxi was still in his ear, he momentarily deflated like a balloon and stopped looking at her.

Her tone seemed to be one of total indifference, but Huang Feiyang knew that this was when the Enforcer was at her most terrifying state. He immediately replied sincerely: “Enforcer, it’s like this. Originally, these two were about to commence the last battle to decide who would enter our Lingwu family. That youth named Long Chen was being ruthless. Even though he was already victorious, but he still pursued and even wanted to kill his opponent. This is against the rules, and that’s why I think he should be disqualified!”

“Really?”

That woman looked at Long Chen with her beautiful eyes before smiling faintly and said with a nonchalant tone: “Huang Feiyang, you tell me this. Since when did our Lingwu family have a rule against killing their opponents? On the contrary, we encourage killing....”

Hearing her words, Huang Feiyang's complexion changed, and he was about to argue. The woman's gaze suddenly intensified, staring at him. Immediately he began to feel like he was being suffocated. His face paled and he couldn't utter a single word.

Long Chen was startled. This woman could at most be 27 or 28 years old, but her cultivation had already reached a state unattainable by Huang Feiyang. Long Chen was astonished by her charm and beauty, but now her cultivation level had made him even more impressed.

"That fellow is your younger brother right?"

Her voice was like a poisonous snake that was transmitted into Huang Feiyang's ears. Huang Feiyang's forehead immediately broke out in a cold sweat. He didn't dare breathe a single word. His complexion just turned even paler, and his body started to shake.

That woman's smile was inviting, with a charm that evoked an extraordinary desire, but to Huang Feiyang, it seemed like a nightmare.

"Under the jurisdiction of me, Liu Lan, you dare disregard the rules. Are you not afraid to be sent to Star Fiend Prison?"

The almost inaudible voice had frightened Huang Feiyang silly. Seeing Huang Feiyang quivering, Liu Lan straightened her waist and giggled with a charming grace. She waved her hands and said: 'I was just kidding. I just wanted to scare you. Don't do it again, ok? You can all scram now....'

Wen Ya was also angry, but was afraid to voice his opinion. After hearing Liu

Lan's words, he relaxed and immediately pulled the stunned Huang Feiyang with him, and said: "Thank you, Enforcer, for your leniency. We will leave immediately!"

Liu Lan didn't give them a second thought, she spoke to a youth beside her: "Huang Feiyang is useless. You're to take these five of the faction's newcomers, arrange everything, and also impart them some common knowledge. Most importantly, the Lingwu Family rules, understood?"

That man immediately nodded his head and said: "Yes, Enforcer Liu!"

Liu Lan nodded, then swept her enchanting gaze towards Long Chen. She smiled sweetly and said: "Take special care of that fellow for me. I will visit him alone later tonight."

After giving her orders, she left with her entourage.

Seeing her departing figure, Long Chen relaxed his tense heart, but he wasn't able to forget the hatred-filled look that Huang Feiyang had given him before he left.

"I have arrived in Yuanling City and have created such enmity already. I must have been really bored. In the future, when I'm in the Lingwu Family, I must be careful."

At this time, the man who had remained looked over at Long Chen and the four others. His gaze lingered slightly longer on Long Chen before he said: "My name is Gan Lin. The Lingwu Family is comparable to a large sect. We all operate under Enforcer Liu. In the future, you can call me Senior Brother Gan. Do you

understand?”

Long Chen and the others nodded.

As Gan Lin saw that they were obedient, he was extremely satisfied and said: “Why aren’t you all introducing yourselves?”

The five of them immediately reported their names and family background. Long Chen just repeated the information he gave during the enrollment for the Lingwu Family selection.

Hearing that Long Chen was from a small town in Yuanling County, Gan Lin’s eyes lit up with surprise and complimented: “I saw your previous battle from afar; being this young and coming from a small place, and to have achieved this much, I really admire you!”

The golden rule was to keep a low profile. Senior Brother Gan seemed quite approachable and he might need his help to settle a few problems in the future so Long Chen had decided to improve his relationship with him and hastily said: “I’ve had a bit of luck but mostly it’s because I’ve practiced diligently since my childhood.”

Long Chen’s answer was neither humble nor boastful and didn’t include the clichés like “You are too kind”. Gan Lin was very pleased with him. He patted Long Chen on the shoulders and said while smiling, “Since you’ve entered Lingwu Family, you should work hard. This is the real battlefield. People who have talent and a strong will are destined to shine, while those who are lazy and depend on their parents or family background will all die miserably, just like that kid you had defeated.”

After that, he looked at the others and said: “I will now take you all to Lingwu City, at which I will give you jade cards that serve as identity tokens, and also inform you all on many things. If you encounter anything you don’t understand, I will explain it all to you so as to avoid future mistakes that may cost you your lives.”

Long Chen, like the others, nodded his head. Under Gan Lin’s lead, they headed towards Lingwu City. That place was the true stronghold of the Lingwu Family.

Looking at Gan Lin’s powerful figure ahead, remembering Xiao Lang, and thinking back to his encounter with Xiao Lang, Long Chen found himself deeply in thought.

[TL NOTE: Xiao Lang (小狼) – Referring to (莫小狼) Mo Xiaolang/Lord Lang]

“This Lingwu Family is the place for me. One could surmise from what Liu Lan and Gan Lin said, how intense the internal competition is within Lingwu Family. The faction I joined is called the Green Sun Branch, and Enforcer Liu seems to be a big shot in the Green Sun Branch. Her strength is really terrifying. However, the Green Sun Branch is only a part of Green Faction. Aside from the Green Faction, there are also the other 8 great outer factions, the true Lingwu Family faction, and 4 great Inner factions....”

Long Chen was momentarily dumbfounded.

“Back at Yuanyang Citadel, I’d only heard the Lingwu Family name, but didn’t know how terrifying it was. The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is a nobody when compared to them. The matter regarding the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is related to the survival of Yang Family. If I don’t improve as soon as possible, the

Yang Family will be finished!”

Long Chen felt an immense pressure.

After following Gan Lin for about an hour, Gan Lin suddenly turned and said:
“We have arrived at Lingwu City!”

077 - Lingwu City

Long Chen raised his head and gazed at the vast city without borders before him.

This city was like white jade, with tall city walls. Within these city walls, there were buildings that seemed to pierce the clouds. The buildings were also flawlessly white like jade. Under the radiance of the sun, these buildings shone with a dazzling radiance.

Fortunately, he had already seen Yuanling City so Long Chen was not too surprised when he saw the enormity of Lingwu City.

However, this city before him was like a huge white cloud, so Long Chen was amazed by its sheer size and splendor.

The four others had already seen Lingwu City before. However, today, they could finally enter and live there, so they were filled with excitement.

Looking at the age of these 5 youngsters, Gan Lin smiled faintly, and said, "Well, now follow me inside. After settling down, I will introduce you to our Lingwu Family members."

Under Gan Lin's guidance, Long Chen and the others entered Lingwu City. In Long Chen's eyes, Yuanling City was already a synonym for wealth, while Lingwu City was its heart. It was no wonder that it was the embodiment of Yuanling City.

"Lingwu City is also subdivided into the city outskirts and the inner region. The

city outskirts are further divided into 9 large regions. These 9 regions are governed separately by the 9 outer factions. We, the Green Faction, are in the Green region. All of you will now be situated in the Green region. The city gate through which we now entered is the city gate used exclusively by our Green Faction.”

While he was walking down the road, Long Chen would, from time to time, see the warriors that walked past him. Some of them were also in the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm while most were usually at the Human Dan Realm, or an even higher level.

Seeing that the people in this place were much stronger than him, Long Chen completely threw away his previous disposition.

From his previous point of view, the Lingwu Family was not harmonious and tranquil as it seemed on the surface. Underneath this serenity, it was full of sinister secrets and killing intent, making Long Chen a little apprehensive.

“In this frightening place, it seems that I must just keep my tail between my legs and act like a grandson....”

[TL Note: (装孙子) To pretend to be a grandson who listens attentively and does things as a senior's wishes]

As he thought about that, Long Chen immediately became depressed and wanted to escape.

However, he had tried so hard to enter the Lingwu Family, and he could now fight to his heart's content. It would be a pity if he wanted to leave. Moreover,

Long Chen was not afraid of others challenging him, so he decided to stay on.

“Now, I too am considered to have become a member of the Lingwu Family. I am a person of the Lingwu Family. Later, I will ask about the matter regarding the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect to see if there’re any ways to deal with them.”

Along the road, people would frequently greet Gan Lin. After seeing Long Chen and the four others, they would click their tongue and say smiling, “Have the new rookies come again? Your Qinyang Branch will be busy for a long time. I hope that these new calves aren’t too much trouble.”

Long Chen secretly committed these words to memory.

Shortly, Gan Lin brought them into a courtyard. The courtyard was very spacious, and after counting the rooms, there appeared to be hundreds of them.

This time, Gan Lin turned back and said, “This area is our Green Sun Branch’s territory. This compound is under the jurisdiction of Enforcer Liu and is known as the Green Willow Residence. We are all Enforcer Liu’s disciples. Now, I will arrange residences for all of you, and then I will explain to you the matters concerning Lingwu City. ”

Currently, during the day, one could see that within the courtyard, there were very few signs of human habitation. Gan Lin was very familiar with this place. Very quickly, he moved over to a row of small rooms, and pointing at those small rooms, he said, “Here is the area for Fourth Grade Disciples to live in. From now on, you five will live here. Only after you get promoted and become Third Grade Disciples, can you leave from here. You all can select a room, and register it properly. I will be waiting for you at the Martial Techniques Training Hall.”

Listening to what Gan Lin said, the four others promptly went to pick out a room.

Long Chen thought that since all of those rooms were not bad, he could simply pick the number of a door plate at random and immediately follow Gan Lin to the Martial Techniques Training Hall for the Fourth Grade Disciples.

Gan Lin already knew that Long Chen had followed him. He walked to the chair at the very front and sat down on it. He sized Long Chen up before he said, "You can sit down first. After everyone else comes, I'll brief all of you on the matters of the Lingwu Family. If you have any questions, you can ask them."

Long Chen nodded as there was nothing for him to say. Soon, after he was seated, the other four arrived with excited looks on their faces.

Seeing that these people all had expressions of longing, Gan Lin shook his head. But looking at Long Chen's indifference made him feel very satisfied. Seeing that everyone was present, he simply nodded and said, "First, I'll tell you about the characteristics of the Lingwu Family's Outer Clans, and also about the daily needs. If you have any questions, you can ask me."

Everyone nodded their heads earnestly.

Even though it was not deliberate, the rich and powerful Lingwu Family had subconsciously put pressure on them.

"Lingwu Family is one among the two powers within Yuanling County. The reason for that was due to an advantage over Yuandi City's Beast Spirit Palace. As a result, Lingwu City became Yuanling City's Castle. It has already been a

hundred years since then.”

Gan Lin laughed and then continued, “To enter Beast Spirit Palace is to walk an elite route. Our Lingwu Family’s people are at least 10 times more than their numbers. I recall that we all together have more than 20 thousand. Among them, approximately 2000 people are the inner members of the Lingwu Family. We are members of the Outer Faction, a factional division that is split into as red, orange, yellow, green, azure, blue, purple, silver and gold. ”

“Every clan has approximately 2000 Outer Faction members. However, the first thing you all should know is that even though the number of people within the Green Faction and the Inner Factions is about the same, only the Inner Clans are truly the members of the Lingwu Family. You are Lingwu Family’s Outer Factions’ members. You must first understand that the most important thing is that we are just like the Lingwu Family’s hired thug, their subordinates. Therefore, we must not get into a conflict with them, or else, even if you die, no one will pity you!”

After saying this, Gan Lin’s gaze became gloomy and cold. Long Chen and the rest shuddered. Hearing the word “subordinate”, Long Chen’s brows furrowed. He then inquired, “In other words, whatever they say, we have to do that, even if they want us to directly court our death?”

Gan Lin indifferently said, “You must not be too pessimistic. The Lingwu Family’s Outer Faction is capable of growing to this extent while we haven’t rebelled. This can only explain that the Inner Factions treats the Outer Factions well. Of course, you’re still not allowed to get into conflict with the Inner Factions’ members. Think about this, even in an ordinary family, a subordinate would not dare to go against his master, would he?”

Long Chen came to understand that the Inner Factions are all masters and that

the Outer Factions, however, are just their subordinates. Originally, Long Chen was not very convinced in his heart. But, once he thought that the Lingwu family was the only platform for him to rapidly improve himself and that his current strength was the lowest...

“The Lingwu Family, having this kind of massive strength, makes me their subordinate. It still will give me some face. Besides, from what Gan Lin has said, so long as I am obedient and make many contributions, the benefits would not be lacking. I’m ready to give and take so why would I fear this Inner Faction?”

At this time, Gan Lin swept his eyes all over them; within his eyes was a look of veneration. He said, “What I said just now was not out of any desire to arouse any hostility between you and the Inner Faction. To tell you the truth, although the number of Inner Faction members and the Green Faction members are more or less equal, their total strength is much greater when compared with the overall strength of the 9 Outer Factions! ”

“In one way, the Inner Faction can be considered as the Outer Factions’ protector. We handle the Inner Factions’ work on their behalf and the Inner Faction gives us sufficient resources and a strong back-up. We are like the vines and they are like a tree trunk; vines without the support of a tree trunk can only collapse weakly onto the ground.”

“Of course, if someone displays extraordinary talent, perhaps you will have an opportunity to be directly recruited to the Inner Faction. It has happened in the past.”

When it came to the last point, Gan Lin’s focused on Long Chen.

In his view, Long Chen is the person with most promising talent among these 5

people. But, the thought of the extremely harsh requirements, Gan Lin could only smile helplessly.

Long Chen was still very interested in entering the Inner Faction. Promptly, he asked, “Senior Gan, I wonder, what kind of talent can then be considered as an overpowering one?”

With a wry smile, Gan Lin said, “I too, am unclear about this, but...there are countless youngsters within the Outer Faction. Every year the number of people who undertake the tests to enter the Inner Faction can be counted on your fingers. Can you imagine, at your age, being on the border of the Earth Dan realm?”

Long Chen was momentarily speechless after hearing it.

“At my age, Earth Dan Realm....Within the Lingwu Family, how many such monsters exist? Within the Poplar Town, I was known as an exceptional talent, however, over here, I’m worse than a fart!”

With this immense pressure, he did not feel disheartened by it but rather, it became his motivation and passion. Thinking about himself, being within the Lingwu Family and skyrocketing through the levels, Long Chen was filled with fighting spirit.

Seeing a slight burning expression on Long Chen, Gan Lin was just about to pour cold water on his dreams, but then he thought, “Let it be, I will not strike him down at this time. In the future, after he has been with the Lingwu Family for a long time, automatically he will come to know that some things simply cannot be accomplished only with willpower...”

He remembered that, in those days in the past, he too was the same; he did not know how high the heavens were and how deep the earth was. He thought that he could enter the Inner Faction, in the end he repeatedly encountered with setbacks unceasingly. After getting seriously injured, he gathered his focus and concentrated on cultivation.

“Ah, it really is wonderful being a youth...”

Gan Lin’s expression turned rueful. It was not that Long Chen didn’t understand what he meant, but he was not underestimated, people come knock him down quickly.

Gan Lin continued, “For the time being, I will not tell you about the Inner Factions’ power. Among the 9 Great Outer Factions, each faction has a leader, and we address them as Grand Elder. Below the Green Faction’s Grand Elder are the 8 Great Elders, they respectively administer the Green Faction’s 8 branches. Our Green Sun Branch is administered by one such Great Elder and his name is Liu Yuan. Under Great Elder Liu, we have 5 enforcers in our Green Sun Branch. These 5 Enforcers are responsible for approximately 50 people each. We are under the jurisdiction of Enforcer Liu. Do you understand the system I just told you?”

Gan Lin spoke very systematically. How could Long Chen and the rest not understand?

With such a regimented hierarchy, it made Long Chen’s scalp feel numb. In this intricate system, he had the constant feeling that there were countless people who could oppress him!

This kind of feeling put him in a bad mood. But, the fact of the matter was that

he simply did not have the strength to rebel.

Before Long Chen and the rest could digest the information completely, Gan Lin continued. “Our current identity is known as disciple grades. The warriors in the Dragon Pulse Realm are known as Fourth Grade Disciples. When you enter the Human Dan Realm, you become a Third Grade Disciple. If you achieve the Human Dan Realm’s Initial Mastery Stage, then you will become a Second Grade Disciple. And finally, when you reach the Human Dan Realm Perfect Mastery Stage, you will become a First Grade Disciple, which is my current rank. Once you enter the Earth Dan Realm you are considered to be a formal supervisor with a profound cultivation within the Lingwu Family, which will give you the qualifications to become an Enforcer within the Outer Faction! ”

“Our Green Sun Branch’s strength is much weaker compared to other branches in the Outer Faction. Among Enforcer Liu’s people, there are less than 10 First-Grade Disciples and experts at the Earth Dan Realm. Including Enforcer Liu, there are only four.”

Long Chen asked, “Senior Gan, I would like to know, why is there a differentiation among ranks for disciples?”

Gan Lin sent Long Chen an approving look, and said, “What I am about to tell you is related to that and is what you are ultimately going to do in the Lingwu Family!”

078 - Little Cosmos Dimension

Regarding this matter, Long Chen was rather confused. He only knew that the Lingwu Family was the supreme power in Yuanling City. Hence, he went straight to Yuanling City and directly joined it.

In reality, even within Yuanling City, people were only vaguely aware of this fact. That was why when Gan Lin brought it up; Long Chen's mind drew blank.

Gan Lin knew that Long Chen wasn't from Yuanling City, so he explained everything in greater detail.

"Everyone knows that our Lingwu Family is the governor of the Yuanling County. We have established town halls and village halls around the Yuanling County's towns and villages. These are all forces belonging to the subordinates of the Lingwu Family. It's just like the Yang Family, where you came from. I believe they just established themselves as Poplar Town's town hall masters right?"

Long Chen nodded his head: "It is indeed as you said."

Gan Lin continued: "Yuanling Country is massive, many things happen every single day. Robbers commit murders, horse thieves pillage and so on. When the local county governor can't deal with it, they will need the strength of our Lingwu Family's outer faction"

When Lin Gan explained it, Long Chen finally understood.

The Lingwu Family is like a government body while its outer faction is like its henchmen. Helping it maintain their stable ruling through force.

Gan Lin looked out through the door, narrowed his eyes and said: “Our Green Faction is responsible for the peace and wellbeing of Yuanling City area. Within the green district of Lingwu city, there is a huge building. It’s called the Hall of Achievements. Our Lingwu Family has a powerful intelligence network, meaning that we have numerous assignments posted in the Hall of Achievements every day. As long as you are a member of the Lingwu Family outer faction, you will be able to receive assignments from our Hall of Achievements, complete assignments and you can exchange for rewards. Naturally, the family might also issue assignments for you and order the completion of them. You Fourth-Grade Disciples, in order to not get expelled from the Lingwu Family, must, at least, complete a fourth-grade assignment every month! In similar fashion, a Third-Grade Disciple must complete a third-grade assignment every month!”

“Some tasks will be mandatory and are unavoidable. However, you shouldn’t hold any resentment. One must know that in Lingwu Family, you will be rewarded for your services and contributions. Our Lingwu Family has innumerable resources, cultivation techniques, divine weapons, and elixirs. But only people who have done great services for the Lingwu Family can acquire these. For people belonging to the Lingwu Family, the values of these goods aren’t measured in deity jades, like outsiders do. One cannot acquire Lingwu Family goods with deity jades. If you want anything, you will have to exchange them with your contributions. Every time you complete an assignment, there will be a specialist who will conduct evaluations and assess your contributions. The most important currency inside Lingwu Family are the resulting contribution points.”

“Every item can be exchanged for contribution points, the more contribution points you have, the more resources you can exchange for. Our Lingwu Family is rich in resources and comparable to even the Daybreak Merchants Union.

However, the resources you can exchange inside Lingwu Family are much easier to access and cheaper than what you can get by using deity jades as an outsider.”

Hearing this, Long Chen’s eyes shone. While Long Chen was deeply moved by the vast amount of resources and might of the Lingwu Family, he also thought of medicines with spirit healing properties. An enormous faction like this will definitely own some of it.

“Is it true that as long as I contribute to the family, I can get these medicines? There won’t be a need to risk my life to earn money?”

This system of contribution points made Long Chen feel pleasantly surprised.

In reality, even in the Yang Family, if you have contributed to the clan you would also receive rewards. But there was no system to it. It was all based on the whims of the ancestor. No one else had the power to intervene. But this was different inside the Lingwu Family. Such a large organization made each and every one work for what they desired the most!

Long Chen secretly praised: “This Lingwu Family really is extraordinary. Originally, people who just joined the outer faction wouldn’t be loyal enough and wouldn’t work their hardest. But by applying this method, won’t every one of us put our lives on the line to accomplish missions?”

After saying this, Gan Lin asked: “The five of you, did you understand the things I’ve said?”

Long Chen and the rest all nodded. Then one amongst them asked: “Senior

Brother Gan, in what form, do we receive our contribution points?”

Gan Lin was startled, then laughed shortly thereafter: “Oh, I actually forgot to tell you.”

He took out a badge made of white jade from his cosmos pouch. Suddenly, a surge of Qi radiated. This badge was actually made from deity jade!

“This is the identity badge that every member of our Lingwu Family must have. Do you see the marks on its back? These record your personal identity, strength, origin and other information. But of course, the most important information it records is your contribution points. That’s why when you receive assignments or want to exchange for resources, you will have to produce your own identity badge. Usually, as long as you calm yourselves, place the identity badge on your palm and infuse it with some Qi, then the information will be retrieved from within the identity badge.”

Something this amazing forced Long Chen into admitting that Lingxi was right about him being a frog at the bottom of a well.

TL Note: (井底之蛙) Frog at the bottom of a well means a frog observing the world through the opening of a well, not knowing what was going outside.

He was very interested in this identity badge, so he asked: “When will we receive this identity badge?”

Gan Lin smiled and said: “There are already people at work making them. They will arrive shortly and as soon as you receive that identity badge you will officially be a member of the Lingwu Family. Normal factions within Poplar Town will not

dare to challenge you openly.”

The Lingwu Family has a robust background, which is comparable to a kingdom!

Long Chen and the others four felt waves of emotions surging through their hearts.

Seeing these five people trying to suppress their urges Gan Lin shook his head and didn't say anymore. After waiting a while, he said: “You should remember a couple of important places. Firstly, there is the Hall of Achievements; this is where you accept and hand in assignments. Secondly, there is the Treasure Exchange Pavilion; where you exchange for resources. You can all go and get acquainted with these two places. But the third place is the training grounds. You must be in Deity Dan Realm before you may enter.”

“Training ground?”

This aroused Long Chen's curiosity as he quickly asked: “Senior Brother Gan, can you tell me more about this training ground?”

Long Chen strong interest in this matter was a proof of his strong ambitions.

Seeing the burning gaze of this youth, Gan Lin thought secretly in his heart: “He is just at the 8th level of Dragon Pulse Realm yet he could already use intermediate Xuan grade techniques. Basically, no one within the Green Faction could have pulled off something like that. The Lady Enforcer has also shown personal interest in him, while he is also greatly motivated. Let's hope that he can maintain this motivation after this first year....”

Because of these factors, Gan Lin smiled slightly and said: “Alright, I will tell you a bit about it. Our Lingwu Family has always had its own little cosmos dimension. All the entrances are within Lingwu City. Our nine big outer factions each has it’s own entrance. The name of this dimension is called the Sky Martial Plane!”

Seeing their vacant stares, Gan Lan smiled apologetically: “It seems like you don’t know what a small cosmos dimension is right? Well, it’s similar to the Cosmos pouch you’re holding. Space within them doesn’t belong to our world, so this small cosmos dimension could be imagined as a gigantic Cosmos pouch. It doesn’t belong to our world either but it is simply attached to a small space on our continent. The area of Sky Martial Realm is about the same as Yuanling City. Within it lives all kinds of demon beasts and their reproductive abilities are terrifyingly fast. I guess you can get the general picture right? We of the Lingwu Family, apart from taking assignments, spend all our time cultivating. But simply cultivating doesn’t raise one’s prowess. That’s why one must also train by fighting with demon beasts. The Sky Martial Realm is a piece of training paradise, which belongs exclusively to the Lingwu Family. Alright, there is one thing that I must tell you all...”

Seeing their eagerness, Gan Lin finally said: “The reproductive abilities of the demons beasts and their numbers within Sky Martial Realm are all really numerous. There are even 9th ranked demon beasts, therefore with your current prowess; you must strive to kill as many demon beasts within the Sky Martial Realm as you can. After obtaining the demonic beasts energy cores, beast souls and beast corpses, you can go to Treasure Exchange Pavilion and exchange for contribution points. From there, you may then exchange the points for other resources. For example, a couple of days ago I killed a demon beast in the 3rd level of Profound grade. Using its demonic beast’s energy core and beast souls, I exchanged it for contribution points. I then traded it for a Basic Xuan grade elixir!”

“Isn’t that the Poplar Town’s Big Barren Mountain?” Long Chen said to himself.

Long Chen has never heard about little cosmos dimension before, but after Gan Lin’s explanation, Long Chen understood a little bit of it.

“Lingxi said, this Long Ji Continent is extremely large, even if it grew a couple of bumps and gave birth to some little cosmos dimension, nothing will be out of the ordinary.”

At this time, Lingxi’s voice transmitted: “Oh? Even this small place has a cosmos dimension? It’s rather strange. Long Chen, if you have the opportunity, shall we enter and go for a stroll in it?”

The might of a woman’s curiosity isn’t something a man can understand, therefore, Long Chen could only hurriedly agree.

“Xiao Xi, have you encountered a lot of these little cosmos dimensions?”

Lingxi blinked and said: “At my place, these things could be seen everywhere.”

Long Chen felt that his confidence took a hit and didn’t dare ask further.

Right now, even Lingwu City was a like a gigantic heavenly existence in Long Chen’s eyes. The forces within it are complicated beyond recognition. But Lingxi, where in the world did she come from?

While Long Chen was contemplating the origin of Lingxi, Gan Lin mistook his silence as him being scared witless by the Sky Martial Realm. So he patted Long Chen on the shoulder and smiled: “Don’t worry, once you enter the Human Dan Realm, you will be able to acquire a new Beast Spirit Origin from the Sky Martial Realm. When that time comes, we, as the subordinates of Enforcer Liu, will be willing to help you.”

Every time a beast warrior enters a new realm, he can refine a new beast spirit. And it will become his Beast Spirit Origin. Long Chen knew about this but Long Chen isn’t really a beast warrior and Long Chen has never refined any beast spirit. Therefore he wouldn’t know how to explain it once he enters the Human Dan Realm. But right now there is no hurry.

“I thank Senior Brother Gan in advance; I will do my best to reach the Deity Dan Realm as soon as possible”

With a treasure like the Soul Diffusion Fruit, he only needed to reach the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm before he could enter the Deity Dan Realm.

Right now, Long Chen felt pressure from two sides, one from Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and one from the Lingwu Family. They both required him to have sufficient strength to persevere.

“If the Sky Martial Realm is really how Gan Lin described and the number of demon beasts are unlimited, my powers will soar if I enter by myself and use the [Blood Transmuted Qi]! Furthermore, I can exchange the demonic beast energy cores and beast spirits for contribution points. This Lingwu Family really is the place most suitable for me!”

At this time, a male figure appeared outside the gate.

Seeing this person, Gan Lin's pupils constricted, and he said indifferently: "Feng Wutian, have the jade identity cards arrived?"

Long Chen also looked at the suddenly arriving male. This man seemed to be in his twenties. He seemed a lot younger than Gan Lin, but in comparison, his prowess seemed more profound.

In front of Long Chen and the others, this handsome male named Feng Wutian entered the Martial Techniques Training Hall. Without speaking, he produced 5 identity badges, then turned to leave. As he was leaving he stared coldly at Long Chen. Long Chen felt a cold shiver in his heart.

This made him inhale sharply.

After Feng Wutian's departure, Gan Lin asked concernedly, "Long Chen, are you ok?"

Long Chen nodded his head and asked: "Senior Brother Gan, I've never met Feng Wutian before, but why does it seem like he has such animosity towards me?"

Gan Lin laughed bitterly and shook his head: "Feng Wutian is the most talented disciple under Enforcer Liu. He's currently 19 and is already at the peak of the Human Dan Realm. He will most probably break through into Earth Dan Realm soon. You shouldn't become enemies with people like that. However, I should inform you that Huang Feiyang used to tag along with Feng Wutian, and could be considered his follower. Enforcer Liu punished Huang Feiyang on your

behalf today. Towards you, he...”

Immediately, Long Chen was at a loss for words.

Because of Lingqing’s horse, there was enmity between him and Huang Xiang. For injuring Huang Xiang, Huang Feiyang had tried to kill him. For getting Huang Feiyang punished, he had provoked this genius Feng Wutian...

Long Chen really felt at a loss over this matter.

“I can’t even handle Huang Feiyang, and now this Feng Wutian has popped up...”

That cool gaze Feng Wutian gave before he left put Long Chen in a bad mood, but he also knew that his current strength wouldn’t stack up against him. His life was no more important than a weed. The only thing Long Chen could do for now was to endure!

“Just wait until I become truly formidable. Whoever offended this daddy, this daddy will surely make them pay....”

Thinking this far, an ominous light appeared from within Long Chen’s eyes. Seeing Long Chen’s appearance Gan Lin shook his head and said, “Don’t be this rash. You can’t even match up again Huang Feiyang, much less Feng Wutian. They are all subjects under Enforcer Liu so you better not clash with them. Feng Wutian’s potential is greater than yours, and Enforcer Liu is very fond of him. When the moment comes, Enforcer Liu might even cripple you with her own hands. So I advise you to behave and apologize. It’s still doable. A real man knows and when to stand tall, and when to give in.”

Gan Lin's words felt like a hammer pounding on his head. Biting his lips, he knew that for his Yang Family's sake, he had to endure.

Seeing that Long Chen appeared to be alright, Gan Ling didn't dwell on it. One by one, he gave everyone their identity badges and said, everyone should try their identity badge using the method that I told you about."

Long Chen received the palm-sized jade badge. There were strange runes on the front of the jade badge. On the backside, the two signs for Long Chen were carved into it. It looked exquisite. Long Chen grasped the jade badge and probed it with his Qi. As expected pieces of information surged into his head.

"Name: Long Chen. Affiliation: Outer Faction, Green Faction, Green Sun Branch. Strength: 9th level of the Dragon Vein Realm. Category: Beast Warrior. Dragon Vein Realm Beast Spirit Origin: Huang grade fifth level demon beast, Underground Blood Lizard. Origin: Yuanling County, Poplar Town, Yang Family Prefecture. Contribution points: 0"

"This data will change according to your own body's improvements." Gan Lin explained from the side.

Long Chen stashed away his identity badge into his cosmos pouch.

With this badge, he officially belonged to the Ling Wu Family's outer faction.

Up till now, Gan Lin had told them everything they needed. He smiled faintly, looked over these people, and said, "In five days you will receive your first assignments. This assignment is of uttermost importance to all of you. When

that time comes, you must give it everything you have!”

“There is such hurry?”

Long Chen thought they would get some time to recuperate. After all, they had just finished the selections and everyone had some degree of injuries. Taking Long Chen as an example, that punch that he had received from Huang Feiyang had made him lose all of his fighting strength. Even standing up required all of his willpower.

Gan Lin nodded his head and said, “This is your first assignment, and also the time where you will express your devotion to the Lingwu Family. I know you’ve all had a rough time, but I came prepared...”

Gan Lin extracted a couple stalks of herbs from his cosmos pouch and said, “This here is a Huang grade high-class elixir. It has the ability to treat both internal and external injuries. It should be more than enough to make you all return to your highest battle prowess within five days. This should be regarded as your first reward after joining the faction.”

With this Canola Grass, Long Chen no longer felt worried. He received the stalk of Canola Grass just like everyone else, and put it into his Cosmos pouch. At the same time, Gan Lin reached into his cosmos pouch, produced a piece of sheepskin parchment, and said while smiling, “Every new faction member will receive a gift. Each one gets a basic Profound grade martial technique and ten pieces of deity jade. I will give you the deity jades in a minute, but first look through this list and choose a martial technique. You can ask me about the specifics of each technique”

Gan Lin gave the sheepskin parchment to one of them, then reached into his

Cosmos pouch and produced 50 deity jades, sharing it amongst the five people.

Long Chen's total wealth finally reached 11 deity jades.

Normal initial Human Dan Realm cultivators wouldn't have more than a hundred deity jades.

"The Lingwu Family sure is generous. Advanced Profound grade Canola Grass, ten pieces of deity jade, and most importantly, a basic Profound grade martial technique!"

Long Chen was shocked to his core.

Very quickly, with Gan Lin's explanations, the four other people each picked out a martial technique. Finally, it was Long Chen's turn to pick. Long Chen swept his gaze over the parchment and found out that the names of every martial technique on the list were awe inspiring. Fist Techniques, Finger Techniques, Seal Techniques, Claw Techniques, Kick Techniques, everything was included. They even had Sword Techniques.

"For offensive techniques, I already have the middle Profound grade [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist]. Even if I receive another Profound grade offensive technique, it won't do me any good...."

As he thought about that, Long Chen browsed through the titles. It was until he had almost looked through all of them that he found a body martial technique known as [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step]

Long Chen asked: "I wonder how good this [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step]

is?”

Long Chen already had a Profound grade martial technique, so when he chose a body martial technique, Gan Lin wasn't shocked. He showed an expression that felt like he knew that Long Chen would pick such a martial technique as he explained, “The [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] is the most popular one among the Profound grade body martial techniques. When using the [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] in battle, your body will be like a water serpent in water. Your speed and unpredictable moves will make it hard for your opponent to lock on your position. If another strong offensive battle technique was coupled with it, it'll definitely bring out great effects. The toughness of your body after your bestial transformation will be extremely suited to use the [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] skill!”

Since Gan Lin gave [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] such high praise, Long Chen decided on the spot and said, “Then I'll pick this one”

Since Long Chen was able to select something that suited himself, Gan Lin also felt happy for him. Every piece of information was relayed and every item was delivered. Therefore, Gan Lin stood up and smoothed out his girdle and said: “I've taken enough of your time. Hurry back to your residents and recuperate. While at it, familiarize yourselves with your new martial skills. I live the area designated for the Green Faction's first rank disciples. If you have any questions, you can come find me!”

Upon saying that, Gan Lu just walked off.

The remaining people were anxious to head back so they merely get acquainted with each other before heading back to their rooms.

“No one is able to enter the Lingwu Family’s disciples’ rooms, as the door can only be opened using the jade card with the owner’s identity.”

After opening the door, when Long Chen looked at the delicate decorations, it was an eye-opener for him. Just as expected, the Lingwu City really had good resources. The living places for the Fourth Grade Disciples were unexpectedly this luxurious.

After closing the door, Lingxi immediately flew out from the Lingxi Sword. Seeing this jade white living place, she was beaming with pleasure. She moved all around the room before she comfortably laid on the bed. She shouted, “Finally, there’s a place that I’m a little satisfied with. This’ll be my territory from now on.”

Long Chen teased: “Xiao Xi, you mean my place right? A single guy and a single girl alone on a one bed doesn’t seem proper right?”

Lingxi leaped up immediately, stared angrily at Long Chen and cursed:” You wish, you shameful lecher! I won’t sleep in the same place as you. From now on, the bed is mine and the floor is yours!”

Long Chen laughed for a while before ignoring her. After walking for a few steps, he realized that there was a basement in this room. The arrangement of the basement was actually in the form of a training room. Long Chen sat on a praying mat after entering the room. He yelled to the lively Lingxi, who was still upstairs, “Hey! You can just play up there. I’ll be treating my wounds.”

Frankly speaking, the punch from Huang Feiyang earlier today had shifted his inner organs. If not for his extraordinary will, Long Chen shouldn’t have been able to endure until now. It was also because of his extraordinary willpower that

Gan Lin put him in such high regard.

After taking out the Canola Grass, Long Chen closely examined it and found that the medical smell of the Canola Grass was more pungent than that of the Enchanted Hill Ginseng.

“No wonder it’s ranked as a high Huang grade elixir!”

After crushing the Canola Grass, Long Chen felt a cool energy flowing in his body, nurturing his body.

In less than fifteen minutes, Long Chen found that his current recovery rate really was astounding. Normal people would usually need five days to recover this kind of injuries. He would only need one day.

Opening his eyes, Long Chen’s eyes radiated a golden light”

“Huang Feiyang, this punch from today. I will return it to you!”

Even though there were still disparities between them, that distance in power wasn’t impossible to catch up to.

“When I enter Human Dan Realm and combine it with the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] and [Dragon Soul Transformation]...”

Long Chen knew that Huang Feiyang hated him to his bones. While they lived in this Green Willow Residence, if Long Chen didn’t kill him, there would be a day that Huang Feiyang would kill him.

Night time arrived quickly. Suddenly there was a sound of someone knocking on the door. Lingxi's eyes were full with loathing as she said, "That stinky woman is looking for you!"

"Which one?" Long Chen didn't know why Lingxi's face looked so sour.

"That Liu thing during the day. She came here so late in the night. She really is shameless!"

Only after hearing what Lingxi said, did Long Chen recall the person who had arrived.

Once Lingxi had shrunk and sealed herself within the Lingxi sword, Long Chen obediently opened the door, to reveal a stunning face on the other side.

Beneath the moonlight, Liu Lan was wearing a robe made of black muslin, which faintly revealed her slim and graceful curves. A pair of vivid eyes watched Long Chen attentively. Her enticing eyes were filled with flirting expression; seeing this, Long Chen's nose and throat became parched.

He had planned to go and face his opponent posing as a pure and innocent youngster, so, dressed casually and sluggishly, he asked in a dazed manner, "En... Enforcer"

Seeing Long Chen in this silly manner, Liu Lan giggled. She said very seductively, "Long Chen, am I not welcomed here?"

"It is not very convenient." Although Long Chen's lips said so, he did not actually mean it.

Liu Lan did not give her answer; rather, she extended her bright and clean arms, and pushed open the door, immediately pushing Long Chen inside the door as well. Then, the sound of the door being closed was heard. With her beautiful eyes, she looked sweetly at Long Chen.

Seeing Long Chen's blank look, Liu Lan was finally amused by him. She sat down on the couch, smiling up at Long Chen. Her revealed curves made Long Chen goggle-eyed.

"Okay, I won't tease you. Today, the main reason I came over was to let you be familiar with me. Don't let your imagination run wild. I have already visited the other 4 guys in their rooms; therefore, at this time, it is your turn."

On one hand, Long Chen was dressed to look fresh and pure. On the other hand, he was inwardly sizing up this well-rounded beautiful woman.

"As an Enforcer, this person's strength is certainly in the Earth Dan Realm – a top-notch existence. For Huang Feiyang to be so scared of her, it is definitely because her methods are very difficult to deal with. I cannot be confused by her appearance now...."

Long Chen's mind inwardly turned in the direction of these thoughts, but what came out of his mouth was, "I wonder, what is the reason that Enforcer is looking for me?"

"Only to get to know you. By the way, do you have any enemies that need to be dealt with?"

Long Chen's gaze trembled.

This was the purpose of him coming to the Lingwu Family. During the day, Long Chen noticed that Gan Lin did not mention it, so he did not rush to ask him as well. It seemed that Chen Xiongzhou and Feng Mingyang did not lie, the Lingwu Family really had a lot of influence. They could even get rid of the

enemies of the members of the Outer Faction.

After hesitating for a while, under the charming, foxy eyes of Liu Lan, Long Chen spoke out, “Yes, I do – the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.”

Upon hearing the name ‘Crimson Blood Sacred Sect,’ Liu Lan frowned, and shaking her head, asked, “How did you and the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect become enemies?”

Upon hearing that Liu Lan knew of the existence of the Crimson Blood Sacred sect, Long Chen secretly exulted, but with great caution, he said, “One of the proctors of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect went to Poplar Town and allied with the Bai Family to exterminate my Yang Family, so I killed that proctor. Therefore, if the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect learns that I killed him, my Yang Family will be completely finished.”

“Thus, you came to the Lingwu Family?” At once, Liu Lan saw through to his purpose.

Long Chen nodded.

“I wonder, could the Lingwu Family help me regarding this matter?”

Long Chen expectantly looked at Liu Lan. Suddenly, she chuckled, and shook her head, saying, “Currently, you are a Fourth Grade Disciple and getting rid of your enemies requires the help of experts of the Earth Dan Realm, this is beyond the privileges entitled to you. Moreover, your contribution points and the value of potential that I had determined is insufficient to make the Lingwu Family help you to dispose of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. Therefore...”

Lon Chen's complexion suddenly darkened. Looking at the seductive attitude of this curvy woman, Long Chen wasn't happy with what she said.

"Beyond the privileges entitled to me? There is even such a thing like potential value in the Lingwu Family? I have used a middle Profound grade martial technique in front of them, and my potential value is not enough for them to deal with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect?"

The Yang Family's life or death was the matter that was the most important to Long Chen. At the present time, he was unable to handle the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect by himself and could only request help from the Lingwu Family. However, it was clear that the current he did not have the capabilities to request anything from the Lingwu Family.

Liu Lan got up from the couch, and slowly approached Long Chen. Suddenly, an enticing body fragrance wafted directly at him. When he lifted his head, he and Liu Lan were only a few metres apart. The snow-white curves of her chest were directly in front of Long Chen. It completely seemed to be something that any gentlemen could reach out and touch.

There was a fire burning in Long Chen's eyes, but then a pain in his ear made his body turn cold. Long Chen knew that this great aunt was angry and that the consequences of it would be grave. Promptly, he turned his gaze towards another direction, not daring to aim a glance at Liu Lan.

Seeing Long Chen's behavior, Liu Lan giggled.

"So, this small rookie is still a man of honor. Heh, this is truly interesting. However, such an impassive and cold Lingwu Family is not a place where silly kids

can enter. Now, let me teach you what cruelty is...”

Thinking such thoughts, she said in an indifferent manner, “Long Chen, you want the Lingwu Family to assist you. Let me give you a word of advice. Disciple Grade, Contribution Points and Potential Value – these three are very important. For the current you, I can’t see where your potential lies, so I will remind you that if you want to be outstanding, you need to constantly put in a lot of effort. In the Lingwu Family, there is no need for trash..... ”

Although Liu Lan’s tone was very indifferent, from what he heard, Long Chen knew that the Lingwu Family was unquestionably decisive; they were even cold-blooded when being decisive. Everything here was a transaction; if you want the Lingwu Family to handle things for you, it’s simple-take out your contribution points or show your potential value.

“You think my potential is not sufficient? I, your daddy, will let you all take a clear look at me, and find out what my potential is!”

All along Long Chen knew that there wouldn’t be such a wonderful thing in this world, and also that this matter was not easy to settle. As of now, he couldn’t request the Lingwu Family to help him with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, but since his rate of progression was very great, he did not believe that he couldn’t succeed!

Patting Long Chen’s shoulder, Liu Lan gazed directly into Long Chen’s eyes, and her voice was like the sound of an ant crawling into his ear.

“Long Chen, as a part of the Lingwu Family, you need to remember these words – core talent. If you are the embodiment of core talent, then wealth, cultivation techniques, spirit medicine, divine weapons and even women will all

be yours! ”

When speaking about women, Liu Lan exhaled a gust of sweet fragrance onto Long Chen’s face. This immediately made little Long Chen stir, but right away, the pain in his ear made Long Chen regain his senses.

Only Long Chen knew how hard things had been for Lingxi until now.

However, Long Chen took note of these words about ‘innate talent’.

“Please be at ease.”

Seeing that this rookie didn’t have the guts, Lie Lan found it pointless to entice him further, and stepped back. Fixing her hair, she said, “The Lingwu Family has a powerful information network. I will pay a little more attention to Crimson Blood Sacred Sect’s movements on your behalf. If there is any new information, I will notify you.”

Even though he couldn’t get her to exterminate the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, things still turned out pretty well. Long Chen felt a hint of gratitude and said, “This junior thanks the Lady Enforcer.”

Liu Lan nodded her head before she headed to walk out of the room. Before she stepped out of the room, she turned around and giggled sweetly. “Little Long Chen, you’ll have your first task in five days’ time. You must do your best. The family will give you their judgment according to your performance!”

Right after Liu Lan left, Lingxi charged out of the Lingxi Sword. She glared at Long Chen and curled her lips in anger. She looked as though she wanted to eat

Long Chen.

Long Chen smiled embarrassingly and said, “I wanna go and practice the [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step]....”

Lingxi just glared at him angrily but didn’t say anything.

Long Chen rushed into the cellar, patted himself on the chest and said inwardly: “I just glanced at her for a couple of times, and this little girl really became angry, so scary....”

As Lingxi saw Long Chen quickly slip away, she snorted as she laid on the bed that was hers. She lowered her head. Her initial anger filled eyes suddenly became incomparably vacant. When she stretched out her hand to touch the blanket, she didn’t have the other feelings that she had felt previously.

The sense of physical touch with one’s spirit was really different compared to the real deal.

Her heart suddenly filled with a grievance that threatened to burst forth. Lingxi really felt the impulse to cry. She glanced at Long Chen’s direction and mumbled, “Just as I thought, he prefers women with real bodies.. but it’s ok. With me being like this, I can’t even be considered a real person. I have nothing to offer him...”

Grinding her teeth, Lingxi was frustrated for a long time.

She sighed after a long period of time. She thought back in details about what she had experienced.

“I’m already like this. No matter if it is life or death; there won’t be any outcome with him. I should stop indulging myself in my fantasy. He has his own life. The feeling of being able to stay by his side to protect him a couple more times is actually not bad.....”

Lingxi raised her head to look at the snow-white ceiling. “Father, Mother, you must bless and protect me. I really hope to meet with you all again.....”

While she thought about her parents, if she could cry, she would definitely be tearing up at this moment.

“Xiao Xi, you look just like a silly spinster. Do you have something on your mind? Can you tell it to your daddy?”

Long Chen suddenly appeared beside the bed and sniggered as he leaned against the wall.

Seeing his mocking looks, no matter how dejectedly Lingxi felt, her feelings had all disappeared. She felt that she just did something very shameful, and hastily changed her expression. She viciously looked at Long Chen like a fiend in a flurry. “Get out of here! You’re a bad guy! Your missy, I, do not wish to talk to you!”

Long Chen sat on the bed. At this moment, he seemed to have suddenly matured. With a serious face filled with feelings, he extended his finger, as he gently placed his palm in front of Lingxi. He said seriously, “Use your finger to touch my finger.”

“What for?”

Lingxi didn't know what he was up to and looked at him with doubt.

"Touch it."

Seeing Long Chen being so serious, Lingxi snorted, before stretching out her small, but sparkling and translucent finger to lightly touch Long Chen's index finger. Immediately, she withdrew her finger and looked at Long Chen cautiously with widened eyes.

Seeing her adorable looks, Long Chen didn't laugh. He immediately asked, "Do you feel the warmth of my body?"

As Long Chen suddenly asked this question, Lingxi was startled, before she blankly nodded her head.

Long Chen chuckled and withdrew his finger before he said, "I have a wish, and that is to recover your body. Can you tell me how to do that? I also hope that you have this warmth."

Long Chen current serious expression and words had been engraved into Lingxi's mind. This made her suddenly felt a sense of loss. She knew that her dejected expression had definitely been seen by him. If not, he wouldn't have suddenly said those words.

Lingxi was moved to tears.

"Quickly tell me! Stop wasting time!"

Seeing Long Chen's fierce looks, Lingxi hastily replied, "If I have the Ninth Heaven Fairy Spirit Fruit, I'll be able to recover."

Hearing that it was really possible, Long Chen felt extremely elated. He hurriedly asked, "Where can I find this Ninth Heaven Fairy Spirit Fruit?"

Lingxi shook her head agonizingly before replying, "Don't even think about that. Even if you become the Yuanling city's top expert, you won't even be able to touch it....."

With Lingxi's mysterious identity, Long Chen had long expected that the items that Lingxi needed for recovery would be top grade. He remained silent for a while, before he indifferently said, "Lingxi, I'll go to the Daybreak Merchants Union tomorrow to help you find some spirit nurturing medicine!"

081 - Spirit Recovery Fruit

On the second day, Long Chen asked Gan Lin for the location of Daybreak Merchants Union and then left Lingwu City through the Green Faction gate.

Long Chen's arrival and sudden departure from the Lingwu Family puzzled Gan Lin but Long Chen was firm in his decisions so he couldn't do otherwise.

"In four days you will receive your first mission, so you'd best leave now and return as soon as possible."

Long Chen nodded saying: "I'm just going to buy some things, it won't take long. I will return in half a day."

The Daybreak Merchants Union was Yuanling City's largest trading centre. Long Chen didn't have any contribution points within the Lingwu Family so he couldn't acquire any items from them. In any case, normal warriors would go to the Daybreak Merchants Union so it didn't bother Gan Lin. He only felt that since Long Chen was about to receive an important mission, that he should treat it with more seriousness.

"I had no idea that the Daybreak Merchants Union would be this big and that within Yuanling city they would have over a hundred branches. About one and a half kilometers outside Lingwu City's Green Faction there was a small branch. But even this small branch was as large as the Green Willow Residence."

After Long Chen's arrival in Yuanling City, every opponent he faced was a whole level higher than what he was used to. The remaining Dream Spirit Grass

wasn't enough for Lingxi to materialize on Long Chen's behalf and because of this, on the second day upon entering the Lingwu Family, Long Chen went out looking for spirit recovery medicines.

“This girl always wants to help me out when I'm in danger and won't listen to my advice. I'd better get some more spirit medicine to prevent her from losing her life!”

Long Chen possessed a very high level of comprehension and with Gan Lin's instructions, he managed to find his way to Daybreak Merchants Union's trading post even though he still was a stranger in Yuanling City.

On the busy street market, a cluster of navy buildings appeared to be the Daybreak Merchants Union.

This was the first time Long Chen has seen such a large place for trading. Compared to the cultivator's market in Poplar Town it was several times better. There were a lot of people arriving and departing the Daybreak Merchants Union and thus Long Chen did not stick out like a sore thumb. He quickly entered the Daybreak Merchants Union.

“Wow! There are many useful things here...”

Within the Lingxi Sword, Ling Xi made some sounds of admiration. Long Chen also looked closely at the vast number of eye-catching items displayed in different cupboards. Although he couldn't distinguish what ranks these products belonged to, but based on the quality and the pricing, Long Chen knew that these items must all be great.

“Twisted Earth Roots, 3 deity jades.”

“Canola Grass, 2 deity jades.”

“Blizzard Mushroom, 35 deity jades....”

Long Chen’s gaze followed the names of each and every medicine. The name in sight that he halted at was a spirit medicine. Apparently, from here onwards were mentioned all the spirit medicines.

“That Blizzard Lingzhi is barely a basic Profound grade spirit medicine, yet it actually costs 35 deity jades! This is really expensive! But I only have 11 pieces of deity jade with me.”

Because he was poor, Long Chen could only laugh disappointedly.

“Can you sense the existence of any spirit healing medicine?”

“Don’t worry!” Ling Xi interrupted him and said with a trace of anger, “There are so many spirit medicines here, their scents are all mixed up. So, let me have a good look. ”

Long Chen shrugged, and seeing the other people coming and going, he thought, “Here, there are many that are not weak, just as I expected when I came to Yuanling City. My* strength is entirely at the bottom; this can’t go on. If I die unexpectedly, then I would go to hell and would sire no descendants to carry on my name....”

[TL Note: * → He refers to himself in a proud arrogant manner.]

There were many customers inside the Daybreak Merchants Union, but within the union, there were also numerous people who were in charge of policing and many service personnel. At that moment, a young woman, her outstanding beauty accompanied with a sense of arrogance, saw Long Chen looking around and said: “Customer, can I be of any assistance?”

She was merely an attendant but her cultivation was unexpectedly at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm; a level above Long Chen’s. He felt admiration, but seeing the contempt in her eyes, the admiration disappeared without a trace.

“I am indeed looking for something, but am not sure if you have it in your store.”

Long Chen was merely at the eighth level of Dragon Pulse Realm but spoke with the air of a young noble. These made the young woman feel disdainful, increasing her expression of intolerance. She looked at Long Chen provocatively and said: “What are you looking for? The items within the Daybreak Merchants Union are all of the highest quality but the price is not something ordinary people can afford!”

Long Chen was not inclined to argue with her for the sake of Ling Xi.

“I require spirit recovery medicines.”

The woman stared for a while, then laughed and said, “Those items are not cheap. Are you certain about wanting to buy them?”

She sized Long Chen up; no matter how she looked, Long Chen didn't seem like a person with a lot of wealth. One must know that deity jades were a currency commonly used among warriors in Deity Dan Realm. From the way he looked, Long Chen seemed more like someone who should be spending spirit jades.

"I must warn you, all our goods are listed for deity jades and not spirit jades!"

This woman was overbearing and was going too far. Long Chen cursed her a couple of times in his mind. This put him in a foul mood and he said: "I know, just show the way."

"This bitch, if it wasn't for my precious Ling Xi, I, your father would already be dragging you out to strip you bare in public."

Long Chen cursed in his heart but outwardly, he maintained a calm expression and appeared indifferent.

That woman looked over Long Chen for a moment. Her duty was to lead the way for Long Chen but in her heart, she thought "I don't know underneath which rock this country bumpkin crawled out from. Let us see, when you can't produce any money, how great a fool you'll make out of yourself."

Her mood was already rather foul, and with the addition of this country bumpkin noble, she was filled with even more anger.

While she was leading the way, Ling Xi became excited and transmitted: "Long Chen I've already detected a basic Profound grade spirit recovery fruit!"

Hearing this piece of information Long Chen also felt excited. He was originally worried about Ling Xi's life and death but finally, he could feel at ease.

Swiftly, that woman brought him to the area where the spirit recovery fruit was and looked at Long Chen with ridicule. Long Chen looked closer and was instantly stunned. The spirit recovery fruit's price tag listed: 100 deity jades!

Just a basic Profound grade spirit medicine was already worth a hundred deity jades. This price was indeed high. Long Chen only had ten pieces of deity jade. He couldn't afford it.

Long Chen experienced for the first time, the feeling of being unable to pay in front of a woman.

"When your father, I, was being extravagant at Emerald Jade House and wasting silver notes, I never imagined that I would be this poor!"

When Ling Xi saw the price her heart felt heavy. One could see how much she had looked forward to this spirit recovery fruit. But it's regrettable that Long Chen didn't have that much money....

Long Chen initially thought that the price of a basic Profound grade spirit medicine would be roughly the same as that of the Canola Grass.

"Forget it, Long Chen, we can come back once you have the money. It's of no rush...."

Unable to get what she wanted Ling Xi began to sulk; then peering at the Spirit Fruit with a pair of tear-filled eyes and spoke a sentence untrue to her heart.

Seeing Long Chen's conflicted expression, the woman already knew it would end like this. She immediately expressed her disdain and said faintly: "I've already told you, a bumpkin like you could never afford Spiritual Medicines. Do you still remember the way out? Pardon me for not seeing you off."

After these words, she didn't bother to look at Long Chen, instead, she turned her head meaning to leave. Right at this moment Long Chen called out.

"Wait!"

That woman turned around and looked at Long Chen in disgust. Long Chen blurted out: "These goods, does the Daybreak Merchants Union allow one to exchange with other items?"

Long Chen had always been one who insisted on getting what he wants. Especially when it came to things that Ling Xi wanted. There was no way he would leave without trying ways to obtain what he wanted.

Even if it's because he didn't want to lose face in front of Ling Xi, he would never be anyone's grandson...

[TL Note: (做孙子) be anyone's grandson: Lower one's head.]

Hearing Long Chen speak of an exchange, the woman said impatiently: "What could you possibly have that could be exchanged for a spirit recovery fruit? If you have something then take it out and stop wasting my time, I've got other customers to see to!"

Long Chen narrowed his eyes; frankly this woman's attitude and her tone made Long Chen want to commit murder. But being in Yuanling City he had to always remind himself to endure. A real man knows when to bow his head. So, for Ling Xi's sake, he endured.

Ling Xi thought that he would trade the Soul Diffusion Fruit and became worried. Only after seeing those steel hearts, did she relax. She pursed her lips as she was incessantly moved upon seeing Long Chen from outside the Lingxi sword.

She knew that Long Chen was a proud man and that he was now being humble just for her to be alive.

"This rascal, why is he so good to me?"

Ling Xi tried hard to understand.

The woman swept a glance over the steel hearts and sneered, saying, "You want to exchange these lousy rocks for spirit recovery fruits? Kid, are you trying to kill me with laughter? A country bumpkin will remain a country bumpkin; you really have not seen the world!"

"Ao Xue! How could you say such a thing?"

At this moment, a low, gruff voice sounded. Long Chen and Ao Xue both turned to the side and saw an old man with white hair yet possessing a youthful complexion. He walked over to them as if he was flying and his robustness surpassed that of many youths'.

Seeing him, Ao Xue's expression changed; she immediately said in a humble manner, "I am pleased to see the manager."

She greeted the elderly manager who had reproached her and then she turned to look at Long Chen, examining the steel hearts in his hand. After watching him for a while, she quickly asked excitedly, "Old sir Zhao Tianfang, if I may ask— are these steel hearts that came from the steel puppets belonging to the Lingwu Family?"

He did not expect that this old man would know of these things. Regardless of his cultivation or his status, he was more important than Ao Xue. Moreover, he was very easy-going and seeing that he spoke pleasurably, Long Chen nodded and said, "Indeed. "

After saying that, Zhao Tianfang asked in a low voice, "Do you still have many of these steel hearts?"

Long Chen did not understand why the other person attached so much importance to these steel hearts, but it was something he could not do much about. As he was in need of money, he simply said, "I still have many of these."

Hearing this, Zhao Tianfang laughed and patted his shoulder, saying, "Young man, could we speak in private?"

Speaking in private — this meant that there was a chance.

Long Chen was naturally willing to do so; he gave Ao Xue a provocative stare before leaving with Long Tianfang.

When Ao Xue saw the manager treating Long Chen with such importance, coupled with that smug appearance of Long Chen, it made her whole face turn scarlet with rage. Her originally fair face now looked as if a blood vessel had burst, and she felt as if she had been slapped.

“This kid is truly looking to be thrashed! Don’t you dare show your face in front of me again!”

082 - Appraiser

“Who is this old man, and why is he so interested in these steel hearts?”

While following Zhao Tianfang, Long Chen was continuously mulling over this question.

“These steel hearts belong to the Lingwu Family. Since he knows this, he must also know that I am a member of the Lingwu Family. However, with the strength of the Daybreak Merchants Union, it isn’t necessary for him to be so cordial towards me.”

As if sensing Long Chen’s misgivings, Zhao Tianfang felt that he had been too forward this time. Becoming all smiles, he said, “Child, I really want to buy these steel hearts of yours, but you need not worry. I really would not tell anyone of our current transaction. Moreover, these steel hearts are of no use to you.”

The steel golems’ strength was not very high and if anyone had a surplus of steel hearts they could easily bring it to the outside. Therefore Long Chen wasn’t afraid that he would leak out some Lingwu Family secrets. Even though this old man regarded these steel hearts with importance, Long Chen could tell that this old man’s focus was on him.

They quickly arrived at a private room.

“This is our VIP room, please be seated!”

This area was pretty close to the outside so Long Chen wasn’t afraid that this

old man would be up to some funny business. Going straight to the point, he asked, “Old Zhao, why did you bring this junior to this place?”

Zhao Tianfang laughed: “There is no reason behind that. All of the steel hearts that you have, give them to me. I will give you a satisfactory price. Even though steel hearts contain the spiritual qi found between heaven and earth, warriors cannot absorb it. So it’s of no use to you!”

Ling Xi had already told him this, but Long Chen only mentioned these in order to try his luck. He never imagined he would meet Zhao Tianfang. He was in no hurry to take out his steel hearts and asked: “How much are you paying for each steel heart?”

“I will immediately tell you my highest offer— 3 deity jades!”

Zhao Tianfang boiled a pot of tea, and poured a cup for Long Chen, while having a drink for himself too. He then said, “To be honest, these steel hearts that I’m purchasing have nothing to do with the Daybreak Merchants Union, so I cannot offer you a higher price than this.”

The total number of steel hearts that Long Chen had originally begotten was 105, and he had handed over 75, leaving him with the remaining 30. According to Zhao Tianfang’s price for each, it would fetch him a total of 90 deity jades.

That means, after buying a single spirit recovery fruit, he’d be penniless yet again.

Long Chen wanted to haggle but the other party was very resolute. Plus this was already beyond his expectations so he said: “Deal.”

“How many more steel hearts do you have left?”

Apparently this matter was of uttermost importance to Zhao Tianfang.

Long Chen had some misgivings but he said: “A total of 30 pieces.”

Zhao Tianfang’s expression tensed; after watching Long Chen closely, he said, “75 plus 30 equals 105. A person at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm being able to get 105 steel hearts is considered as a top-rate talent even among the Lingwu Family’s Outer Faction members. The one originally at that position also had 102 steel hearts, but he was only 10 years old at that time.”

Hearing the number 75, Long Chen knew that this Zhao Tianfang knew everything about him just like Long Chen knew the lines on his palm.

“This old fellow asked about my steel hearts because he had an ulterior motive for doing that. He is simply not concerned about the steel hearts but instead about me...”

Seeing the expression on Long Chen’s face, Zhao Tianfang knew that Long Chen was aware of his true purpose. He also did not pretend to be coy but, with straightforward appreciation, he said, “Let us be honest with each other. Regarding Lingwu Family’s affairs, I had my own spy network gather information. We also know about your promotion to be a new member of the Outer Faction and we also know which Faction. However, I am shocked that you were able to get 105 steel hearts.”

“Old Zhao means to poach people?”

Long Chen looked at him with an expression that was like a smile and yet not a smile.

Zhao Tianfang, with a honest smile, said, "It seems you are really a sharp fellow. Let me tell you clearly, if you become a member of the Daybreak Merchants Union, I can guarantee that you will more attention and more training than what you get in Lingwu Family. After all, in Lingwu Family, there are too many talented people, and thus you will only disappear among them."

Zhao Tianfang's words, spoken in his capacity as an expert, were meant to intimidate Long Chen, but it had no effect.

"This Daybreak Merchants Union is certainly not bad. Maybe they could also help me in getting rid of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. However, if I leave Lingwu Family like this...."

Thinking up to this point, Long Chen said, with an indifferent smile, "Old Zhao, what kind of a joke is this? I have just recently become a member of the Lingwu Family. Now if I change to your Daybreak Merchants Union, would you want a man who isn't firm in his decisions? Are you not worried that someday I will switch to being a member of yet another influence?"

Zhao Tianfang was shocked upon hearing Long Chen's speech, but later he said confidently, "I believe no one will give you conditions more favorable than what my Daybreak Merchants Union gives."

Long Chen waved his hand, and determinedly said, "Old Zhao, for your appreciation of me today, I cannot thank you enough. But I would not want to be like the grass on a wall, growing towards where there is sunlight. Therefore,

for now, how about you let me return and think over this for a while? If the Daybreak Merchants Union and I really are bound by fate, then I will myself come here to meet Old Zhao.”

Long Chen spoke firmly and Zhao Tianfang knew about the saying hasty men don't get to eat hot tofu. Hence, he could only force a smile as he said, “Since you said so, Long Chen, you can always come to me here, and we will cross that bridge when the time comes. If you feel that the Lingwu Family does not suit you, come here — the Daybreak Merchants Union's gates will forever be open to you.”

[TL Note: hasty men don't get to eat hot tofu – Haste will ruin everything]

Seeing that Zhao Tianfang's eyes expressed only sincerity, Long Chen inwardly struggled for a while but he could not renounce his decision, thus, he could only decline the offer.

“Then this Long Chen will thank Old Zhao!”

Zhao Tianfang nodded his head, saying, “No harm done. Oh by the way, what for did you come to Daybreak Merchants Union and try to exchange your steel hearts?”

“I want a Spirit Recovery Fruit.”

Zhao Tian openly smiled and said, “I asked Ao Xue to get it for you”

Long Chen shook his head, saying, “Old Zhao, currently I am not a member of the Daybreak Merchants Union and because of the so-called don't be rewarded

if you do not deserve it, I would like to buy this Spirit Recovery Fruit myself. I will pay you 30 steel hearts and 10 pieces of deity jade for this.”

With a serious look in his eyes, Zhao Tianfang said, “I am giving it to you because of our friendship and it has nothing to do with Daybreak Merchants Union. Is this also not agreeable with you?”

Long Chen wasn’t swayed by what Zhao Tianfang, and he said in an indifferent manner, “Old Zhao, frankly, I am really grateful that you want to gift this to me. However, the fact is that you are a representative of Daybreak Merchants Union. If you present me with items, can you please wait for my decision to join Daybreak Merchants Union?”

Zhao Tianfang looked at Long Chen for a while, then muttered, “This kid’s innate talent is not bad and he also has many secrets in his body. Moreover, he is level-headed and daring and has a heart of perseverance. He is a rare talent and with such a person, if I am eager and impatient, it would only lead to him disliking me.”

Therefore, he simply took what Long Chen offered him, and with a nod, he said, “Since you insist, I will do as you said.”

“I wonder, does Old Zhao have any other spirit healing medicines?”

“Medicines of this type are ineffective if they are of a low level. And high level medicines can enhance the intelligence and perception of a human, but it would vary from person to person, and in short, it is very rare. I have here only one Spirit recovery Fruit, which is all. But if it’s a requirement of yours, I have some new goods and I will send it to you via someone.”

Long Chen nodded his head, saying, “Thank you for all your trouble, Old Zhao! This junior still has other matters to attend to, so I will be taking my leave first.”

“Hmm. . .I will get Ao Xue to give you that Spirit Recovery Fruit.”

The two men went outside. The female, known as Ao Xue, was waiting for them on the outside. She gave a look filled with loathing towards Long Chen.

Although she was unwilling to do so, under Zhao Tianfang’s command, she handed over the Spirit Recovery Fruit to Long Chen and under further instructions; she was to lead Long Chen out of Daybreak Merchants Union.

“Is our Daybreak Merchants Union’s profit slipping away from our hands?”

Ao Xue was talking to herself, but her words had been heard by Long Chen.

“Who said I slapped your butt? You really have no shame, I would dislike my hands getting dirty by touching you.”

Long Chen left without another word. Then, under Ao Xue’s furious glare, he quickly fled the Daybreak Merchants Union.

“Xiao Xi, you saw that stinky woman’s angry expression. Her face looks like as if it is caked with cow dung.”

Ling Xi snorted, and then scolded him with a smile, “You are really bad. She just said a few words to you but you still made her so angry.”

“Of course. She deserves that!”

Having got the Spirit Recovery Fruit, both of them were pretty excited. Long Chen had experienced a lot of stuff, but his age wasn't much and he had a youngster's temperament. Since he had got this Spirit Recovery Fruit, his face was beaming with joy.

The two of them quickly returned to the Lingwu City. Around noon time, they had come to the Green Willow Residence in the Green region of Lingwu City.

He had just returned when he found that Gan Lin was waiting for him in the Martial Techniques Training Hall.

“Did you or did you not get 105 steel hearts?”

During their meeting, Gan Lin asked eagerly.

Long Chen immediately calmed down.

Gan Lin, upon seeing Long Chen looking like this, immediately said “You youngsters really know how to avoid losing face. I would not have known anything if we hadn't found those 30 steel puppets — during the final inspection — missing their steel hearts, in the tunnel you passed through. But those are the achievements of the past, I'm here to tell you about another matter.”

Gan Lin quickly skipped over the matter regarding the steel hearts; he did not care about them. Long Chen only then let loose the breath he had been holding.

“Fortunately, he did not ask me about anything, otherwise I would have been finished. It seems these steel hearts are not worth any money. Zhao Tianfang paid 3 pieces of deity jade for them and this is because he completely wants to rope me in.”

Then Long Chen set aside the matter of the steel hearts and asked, “I wonder, what is it that Senior Gan wants to tell me?”

Gan Lin grabbed a chair, sat down and said, “Enforcer Liu told me to tell you that the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect has not made any movements towards Poplar Town. This is to make you feel relieved and go and complete your first mission. However, Long Chen....”

Hearing this, Long Chen felt as if a load had been removed from his shoulders. But the three-syllabled word ‘However’ uttered by Gan Lin, and made his heart race.

“There are still 4 more days for your first mission to be allotted to you. Although your mission has not yet been finalised, it seems Enforcer Liu intentionally allowed Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya to take you along with them for your first mission, as your examiners. At that time....”

083 - Wind Rendering Spirit Roc

Hearing Huang Feiyang's name, Long Chen could not help but feel a cold shiver go down his spine.

"Huang Feiyang hates me to the core. Why has Enforcer Liu put us together? Does she want me to die?"

Long Chen could not understand why that woman, whom he recalled as being enchanting, would treat him in such a manner, and so he frowned.

"But Long Chen, you need not be so anxious. Examiners do not have the authority to take action against you. Our Lingwu Family's spy network is very powerful and incomparable to any other. As long as you are extremely careful, they would not dare to act against you in public."

However, Long Chen was not scared of Huang Feiyang. He just was unable to understand. Enforcer Liu's actions seemed a bit vicious.

"Senior Gan, if there is nothing else of importance, I'll go back to make some preparations."

Gan Lin nodded his head and said with a regrettable expression, "It's what Enforcer Liu has decided upon, even if I begged it wouldn't change the matter. Go back and prepare well, and see if you can escape this calamity!"

Long Chen left. As he was observing Long Chen from behind, Gan Lin shook his head and sighed "105 steel hearts, this number even surpassed that of the outer

faction's original number one genius Mo Xiaolang. What was Enforcer Liu thinking? It's such a pity!"

Even though Long Chen had left, he wasn't too far away yet, and could hear Gan Lin's mumbles.

Earlier, he already heard the figure 102 from Zhao Tianfang. Now, he could hear himself being compared to someone. Was that person Mo Xiaolang??

The reason that Long Chen hadn't come to the Lingwu Family was partly because of Mo Xiaolang. At that time, Mo Xiaolang had actually told him to come to Lingwu Family only when he had reached the Human Dan Realm. However, due to familial troubles, Long Chen had come along at an earlier date. Over the past two days, he had just become familiar with the Lingwu Family but had not been able to seek out Mo Xiaolang. However, after listening to what Gan Lin said, Long Chen thought that Gan Lin ought to know the whereabouts of Mo Xiaolang.

Remembering that youth, Long Chen smiled wickedly. He suddenly turned and walked back to the Martial Techniques Training Hall. Gan Lin looked at him suspiciously.

"Why are you back?"

"Senior brother Gan, I want to inquire about someone. Do you know the whereabouts of that Mo Xiaolang you mentioned previously?"

Long Chen went straight to the point, but as he mentioned the name Mo Xiaolang. Gan Lin's complexion changed, and he said: "Shut it!"

Long Chen was startled, and his gaze gradually turned colder as he asked, “Why?”

Seeing his reaction, Gan Lin said in a cold voice, “Long Chen, I don’t care about the relationship between you two, but inside the Lingwu Family, you should not ask about him. This person doesn’t exist within our Lingwu Family anymore!”

Hearing this from Gan Lin, Long Chen became even more puzzled. However, seeing Gan Lin’s solemn expression, he understood the seriousness of this matter and nodded. “Alright, I got it!”

Afterwards, he left the Martial Techniques Training Hall and returned to his own residence.

“Xiao Xi, what do you think of this current situation?”

Ling Xi was also confused and said, “I also do not know. At that time, didn’t that fellow say that he was a member of the Lingwu Family and that he was doing great in here? But why does it feel like he is considered as a lowly person now? We are not even allowed to mention his name!”

Long Chen frowned and said, “At that time, he told me that he had to complete an important matter and would return to Yuanling City. Could it be that something went wrong?”

“Oh, that is right. . .”, Said Ling Xi, who suddenly realised something as she continued, “I am getting the feeling that he has been spurned by everyone. Since he is recognized as the Outer Faction’s number one talent, could it be that he

has betrayed the Lingwu Family?”

Long Chen pondered, then decided that it could be a possibility.

“With his character, he wouldn’t do such a thing, but if someone was pressuring him, then it might be possible.”

“Right, it sounds just like that stinky woman!” Recalling Liu Lan, Ling Xi’s face at once turned a fiery red. “Initially, she pretends to be a good person. Then she makes you and that Huang-what-is-his-stinky-name go on a mission together. It’s clearly a plan to have you killed! Long Chen, it would be better for us to go to the Daybreak Merchants Union; perhaps we may be able to meet that Xiaolang chap. ”

Long Chen shook his head and said, “Don’t be hasty, we are only guessing. Xiaolang is stronger than me by far. The present me couldn’t help him, even if I wanted to. I think I should cultivate seriously for now. Regarding the first mission...”

A cold light flashed within Long Chen’s eyes as he said, “They can’t even imagine how patient I can be. I don’t believe I won’t be able to kill him! That Huang Feiyang!”

Seeing Long Chen in this state of such ferocity, Lingxi was startled. At the same time, Long Chen brought out the Spirit Recovery Fruit from his cosmos pouch.

“You go and refine this. I will take a look at the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] and the [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step]. I must make the most of the few days I have left before the mission!”

.....

Early in the morning of the fourth day, Gan Lin knocked open Long Chen's door and said, "The mission has been decided. It is a Grade 3 Mission. Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya are to be the main forces in this mission. Just follow them and learn, and try to perform well. They will be your examiners. Your rank and the number of resources you will receive here at the Lingwu Family will be based on their evaluation of your performance."

Long Chen secretly uttered the words – bullshit.

Even if that fellow Huang Feiyang couldn't kill him during this assignment, he would most likely give the worst kind of evaluation.

"I don't know what that little lady is scheming, but these two punks won't evaluate a shit! There is an 80% chance that they will try to kill me during the evaluation!"

While thinking thusly, Long Chen followed behind Gan Lin.

"The location for this assignment is Yanluo Town. The Town Master of Yanluo Town sent information yesterday stating that Yanluo Town has had a lot of young women missing within a couple of days, including the daughter of the Town Master. The culprit didn't leave any traces, so he should be someone who has reached the Human Dan Realm. The governing body of Yanluo Town couldn't handle it, so it's up to you three."

Just as Long Chen noted down Gan Lin's words, they arrived at the backyard of

the Green Willow Residence, where he heard that many demonic beasts were reared. Just as he arrived, he saw a Roc with an excessive wingspan of 15m that was coolly looking at everyone.

[TL Note: Roc – Mythical Bird]

“This is the Huang grade level 7 demonic beast, Wind Rendering Spirit Roc! It’s extremely stealthy. Both its speed and endurance are extraordinary. It is the most common mount in our Lingwu Family.”

Upon seeing Long Chen, the Wind Rendering Spirit Roc suddenly shrank back. It had a doubtful expression when looking at Long Chen, but mixed in with the doubt was also some reverence!

“Did it feel the trace of dragon Qi from my body?”

Long Chen’s heart stirred, then he noticed the two people beside the Wind Rendering Spirit Roc. It was that Huang Feiyang, who was beaming at Long Chen, and the stoic-faced Wen Ya.

Even though Huang Feiyang was smiling, the killing intent within his smile was unmistakable.

On the contrary, Liu Lan didn’t show up.

“Finally here?”

Huang Feiyang stepped forward. As if he was a senior of the older generation,

he sized up Long Chen then clicked his tongue saying, “Not bad kid. This time I and Senior Wen Ya will take charge of you as your examiners. If you perform well and do not make any mistakes, then I will award you with high marks! Isn’t that right, Wen Ya?”

Wen Ya forced a smile.

Huang Feiyang looked at Gan Lin and said, “Senior brother Gan, please return. We will take good care of this youngster, and I guarantee that by the time we return, he will be healthy and well.”

“You disgusting fellow, if this ladyship ever gets my hands on you, I’ll beat you until your buttocks face the sky!”

(TL Note: 屁股朝天 – buttocks face the sky, means that she will beat him until he’s crawling)

Ling Xi had been following Long Chen for a while. Even if she hadn’t learned a lot, she had learnt much about vulgar language.

However, Huang Feiyang’s current appearance made Long Chen feel out of sorts with him. Seeing this situation, Gan Lin warned Long Chen repeatedly, then looked at Huang Feiyang and said coldly, “Junior Disciple Huang, in Yanluo Town our Lingwu Family has eyes and ears everywhere. If this matter is not easily handled, notify the family immediately.”

As Gan Lin mentioned the eyes and ears, it implied that he was clearly warning Huang Feiyang.

If Huang Feiyang openly bullied Long Chen, the news would surely pass on to the Lingwu Family. At that time, it wouldn't matter how capable Huang Feiyang was. He would be done for.

Huang Feiyang understood Gan Lin's words, but he put on appearance of not having heard him. He laughed and said in a bright voice, "This is only natural. I will promise not to let junior disciple Long Chen get hurt."

Gan Lin already knew that this was the most he could do to help Long Chen. He once again looked at Long Chen and said, "It is now time for you to set off."

Huang Feiyang called out to Wen Ya, and Long Chen and went to the Wind Rendering Spirit Roc. Wen Ya took out a dark-green whistle and blew a very strange tune. Immediately that Wind Rendering Spirit Roc became docile and stooped down on its legs and allowed Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya to climb aboard it. Long Chen had a lot of courage. Although he had never ridden on a huge bird before, he still climbed on top without hesitation.

Under Wen Ya's control, the Wind Rendering Spirit Roc gave a cry and suddenly flapped its wings. With a loud rumble, it rose into the skies with Long Chen tightly clutching onto its plumage. It was only after sinking his Qi downwards to attach himself firmly onto the Wind Rendering Spirit Roc that he had managed to stabilize himself. It was a thrilling moment, but it made his whole body break out in a cold sweat.

[TL Note Devil82: (真气下沉) or sinking Qi downwards, is a commonly used technique in wuxia in order to make one heavier]

In the intense wind, Huang Feiyang turned his head to look at Long Chen and laughed.

.....

Gazing after their departure, Gan Lin bit his lips and sighed in dismay, "Another nice youngster. Why is it necessary to end his life in such a manner?"

"Gan Lin, are you dissatisfied with me?"

An indifferent voice was heard from behind him, and Gan Lin turned his head around. Seeing the person who was coming up to him, he bowed his head and said, "Lady Enforcer..."

Liu Lan swayed her hips as she walked to his side. Originally her mouth, which looked grave and stern, now gradually rose up. Her cheeks were like peach blossoms as she smiled.

"Whatever concerns you have, you can share it with me."

Gan Lin thought a while and then drummed up his courage and said, "Enforcer, I think that to use such an extreme method to bring forth their potential is incorrect. Including Long Chen we've already lost 6 people. Is this still not sufficient?"

Liu Lan was still smiling as she lifted her head and looked towards the horizon where Long Chen had disappeared to and said: "Real geniuses only emerge from endless tempering and confronting life-threatening crises. What I will let him experience is infinite killing intent, failures, deaths, and successes. Only then will he be a dragon amongst men."

She turned her head, looked at Gan Lin and asked curiously: “Gan Lin, which do you think is more powerful: 6 bugs or one dragon?”

Gan Lin’s body shook. He had eventually understood Liu Lan’s thoughts, but when he recalled those young faces, he still felt uneasy and said, “I don’t know when you will be able to nurture a dragon. . .”

“I don’t know either.”

“What do you think about Long Chen’s chances?”

Recalling Long Chen. Liu Lan smiled indifferently, shook her said and said, “He was born poor, his background is too weak, and has no innate talent. It won’t matter how much he struggles. As of now, only Feng Wutian’s talent can barely meet my expectations. However, Feng Wutian is a blood-relative of the Inner Faction’s Vermillion Bird Clan. . .”

084 - *Wait A Moment*

The speed of the Wind Rendering Spirit Roc was very fast. The distance between Yanluo Town and Yuanling City was much greater than the distance between Poplar Town and Yuanling City. At the time, Long Chen had put in 10 days' effort to travel to Yuanling City. If he had this Wind Rendering Spirit Roc, he needed to travel for only a small part of the day, and would have reached Yuanling City in the evening.

The killing intent between Long Chen and Huang Feiyang became more intense during the entire journey.

"This Huang Feiyang hasn't done anything to me aboard this Wind Rendering Spirit Roc. It seems he wants to wait and hinder me while I carry out my mission."

Before reaching Yanluo Town, Huang Feiyang stopped the Wind Rendering Spirit Roc outside of a small village in the countryside. There were already some people waiting to greet them. While they were holding onto the Roc, Huang Feiyang was facing the direction of Yanluo Town as if he was waiting for someone from there.

Only then did Long Chen realize the reason that Huang Feiyang did not attack him on the Roc. He had agreed to have the Roc received here. This was all because the huge body of the bird would have alerted an ordinary person, and thus was not suitable to fly on to Yanluo Town.

Upon leaving the village, Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya walked ahead.

“I wonder what these bastards are up to.”

Long Chen followed closely at their heels in a composed manner.

Although this time’s mission was beyond his expectations, since he had prepared a Spirit Recovery Fruit for Ling Xi, Long Chen felt much more at ease.

If he really couldn’t handle them, then he would let Ling Xi give him a helping hand. Long Chen had already discussed with Ling Xi — She would only be allowed to do something if it really was a life-threatening crisis. She would, however, not be allowed to put her life at risk.

Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya were presently walking in front of him.

Seeing his companion this calm, Wen Ya gave in to his urge and asked, “When do you plan to strike?”

Huang Feiyang smiled grimly and said, “Now is not the time. If that Yan Beitian only saw us two, he would know that I got rid of Long Chen on the way. Although he would not dare to go public with the news, the Family would certainly have their own ways of obtaining the information.”

“Then what do you intend to do?”

Huang Feiyang said in a laid-back manner, “Didn’t we come here for an investigation and if necessary, to kill people? I have heard that the other side has Human Dan Realm experts. We will hand Long Chen over to them, and that

should take care of the matter.”

Wen Ya nodded in agreement, “Even though you are feeling hatred, you haven’t lost your ability to think clearly. Not bad.”

Huang Feiyang gave off such a huge amount pressure, it made Long Chen tightly clench his fist.

“I am not far away from the 9th level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. As long as I can reach the 9th level, I should be able to enter the Human Dan Realm. At that time, I will still have the strength to handle them without having Ling Xi risk her life for me. This tiny step is crucial for my survival!”

They would soon arrive at Yanluo village. Long Chen had no idea what was about to happen, but he did know that he still had many heavy responsibilities. He could not lose. If he lost, Ling Xi and everyone in his Yang family would surely all be finished!

Going into the center of the village was like the time when Mo Xiaolang entered Poplar Town; only a couple of people noticed.

Returning to a place comparable to Poplar Town, Long Chen felt a lot more relaxed. Very soon, he arrived at the main mansion. This clan was quite similar to the Yang family. The head of the family was called Yan Beitian, and he had a cultivation of the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

Knowing that the Lingwu Family would come today, Yan Beitian had waited in front of the main door since early in the morning. When he saw 3 youngsters with profound cultivations heading this way, he felt immense joy, and greeted

them immediately. He knelt on the ground and said excitedly, "Humble Yan Beitian welcomes the lords of the Lingwu Family!"

Long Chen look over at Yan Beitian carefully. Even though he was middle-aged or more, he still had a robust body. His skin was black, like that of a black bear.

However, this black bear's eyes had a tinge of red. It must have been from losing his daughter.

As Long Chen studied him, he peered back at them. Seeing how Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya, with their tender age, had already exceeded his ability, he was extremely impressed. However when he noticed how young Long Chen was, and that his cultivation was lower than his, he simply ignored him, treating him as a common follower to these two.

"My lords, please enter, please enter. You grace my humble abode with your presence."

Under Yan Beitian's excited request, Long Chen and the rest entered the main hall. Yan Beitian immediately ordered people to steep some tea, then presented some famous fruits and pastries from Yanluo Town as he entertained the three cordially, but his expectant gaze never left Huang Feiyang or Wen Ya.

"My two lords, have a taste of our Yanluo Town's White Jade Cake. This White Jade Cake is beautiful like real white jade, sweet but not greasy, and melts in your mouth. It's the Yanluo Town's famous delicacy. Hurry up and have a taste!"

Huang Feiyang was all smiles and went for a taste. Indeed, he was filled with praise. Afterwards he said, "Yan Town Master, we did not come here to eat, but

since we've already eaten, let's get down to business!"

"Yes, yes!"

Finally being able to get down to business, Yan Beitian became extremely excited. As he clenched his fist and started thinking about those bastards, the veins on his neck started pulsating!

"It had only started during these recent days. Once it's night, those bastards will appear within the town and abduct young women from the streets. They always operate with secrecy, but the number of missing women keeps increasing. I started organizing people to deal with it, but that's when I found out what was really happening!"

Huang Feiyang scowled and stated, "The information you provided stated that they have powerful practitioners of the Human Dan Realm."

Yan Beitian nodded and said furiously, "That son of a bitch is stronger than both myself and the head of Luo clan combined. He must be within the Human Dan Realm! Even my daughter was taken by them!"

"Do they have any distinguishable features?" Wen Ya asked.

Yan Beitian recalled carefully, and then answered doubtfully, "There were no significant characteristics, but I do remember that they had a red dot right between their eyebrows!"

This sentence only puzzled Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya a bit, but it made Long Chen's body tremble.

“Are they people from the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect?” Ling Xi asked softly.

“It should be. Liu Lan knows that the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and I are at odds, so she let me be in charge of this mission. If it is possible, I think that we can get more information on Crimson Blood Sacred Sect! However, with Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya here, things will be more complicated...”

“I thought that maidens disappearing sounded familiar! It seems as though you’ve also told me something similar occurring at the Emerald Jade House. It must be those bastards again! What are you going to do about them, Long Chen?”

Long Chen laughed indifferently, and said, “That is Huang Feiyang’s problem. I might just as well let them fight until both sides are injured.”

At this time, Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya were already discussing with Yan Beitian about how to capture the people from Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

“They have caught enough people these days. I think that they are about to leave. They must have been hiding within the East Yan Mountain outside the village, but I don’t know exactly where!”

Thinking about his daughter suffering god knows what, Yan Beitian’s whole face turned purple.

“Long Chen, poor him! You must help him!”

“I know, I want to quickly dispose of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, but I want to let Huang Feiyang and the others fight them! Since Huang Feiyang wants to kill me, I want to see what tricks he uses!”

Secretly gazing at Huang Feiyang, Long Chen’s gaze turned cold.

Yan Beitian was completely absorbed in talking to Huang Feiyang, and had forgotten all about Long Chen.

“East Yan Mountain?”

“Even though the East Yan Mountain are not big, it will still be very hard to find a group of people within them!”

Huang Feiyang scowled and said, “Even if we cannot find them, we still have to climb the mountain and look for them. We cannot find any other solutions if we just stay here!”

Yan Beitian showed signs gratitude and said, “Then there is no time to lose. Shall we climb the mountains now?”

“There is no hurry.” Huang Feiyang laughed “Yan Beitian, I heard that you obtained a Profound grade beast’s corpse— am I correct?”

This is a crucial moment, yet Huang Feiyang inquired about the corpse of some Profound grade beast. Those words made Long Chen instantly excited.

“If the Profound grade beast’s corpse is fresh, then the blood essence of that

demonic beast is very useful to me. It would certainly make me break through into the ninth level of Dragon Pulse Realm. That, in combination with the Soul Diffusion Fruit...”

Thinking this far, Long Chen became extremely excited and contemplated in secret about how to get his hands on that Profound grade demonic beast’s corpse.

At this moment, Yan Beitian hurriedly said, “Is a Profound grade demonic beast’s corpse sufficient to exchange for my daughter life?”

There was a custom. After asking for the help of Lingwu Family, the regional powers would offer gifts after the task was done. Yan Beitian was concerned for his daughter’s life. He had stated in the letter delivered to Yuanling City that he would provide them with the corpse of a Profound grade demonic beast — Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya knew this much.

Also, this was the first time that these two would receive an extra reward.

It was because of the corpse of the Profound grade demonic beast that they had both put all their effort into helping Yan Beitian. However, compared to Huang Feiyang, the matter of killing Long Chen was even more important.

Yan Beitian had clearly indicated that this Profound grade demonic beast had just recently died; its Beast Spirit and demonic core were still intact. Although it was just a Profound grade demonic beast, it was still very precious.

Seeing the anxious look on Yan Beitian’s face, Huang Feiyang said with a smile, “It is certainly sufficient. Now give us the corpse of the Demonic Beast.

Afterwards, we will go straight into the mountains, and if we can't settle this matter, we will simply return it to you."

Yan Beitian felt that handing over the corpse of the Profound grade demonic beast was already a bit unreasonable. However, seeing that the life of his daughter was in Huang Feiyang's hands, he reluctantly nodded his head, saying, "Okay."

Just as he was about to take out the corpse of the Profound grade demonic beast.

"Wait a moment," Long Chen interjected.

“What do you want?” Being interrupted by Long Chen, Huang Feiyang, who had almost had the corpse in his hands, felt rather unhappy.

“This task is being carried out by all three of us, so I should also have the right to a part of this profound grade demonic beast’s corpse right?” Long Chen raised his head and stated with a neither servile nor overbearing expression.

“You must be kidding!” Huang Feiyang’s expression darkened and he laughed coldly, “This mission is solely to test you. You want to receive a reward for it? Long Chen, you are not qualified. Besides, it’s the core of a profound grade demonic beast. Can a brat like you have this kind of fortune?”

“You won’t let me have it? Haha, Huang Feiyang, you two should depart for the mountain by yourselves. Without any benefits, I, your father, won’t enter the East Yan Mountain.”

This speech from Long Chen left Yan Beitian dumbfounded. In his eyes, Long Chen had been just an attendant standing beside these two, and that was all. However, this attendant had unexpectedly contradicted Huang Feiyang and had also spoken out in such a manner.

“This. . . .”

Yan Beitian looked at Huang Feiyang. This time, Huang Feiyang got up from the chair, and faced Long Chen with his strong aura engulfing him, and his eyes appearing cold and grim. He was about to attack Long Chen but was held back by Wen Ya.

Wen Ya glanced meaningfully at Huang Feiyang, then, looking coldly at Long Chen, he said, “Long Chen, this time, we have come here as your examiners. You must heed our words. If you don’t go to the East Yan Mountain, we will give you low marks, and when Enforcer Liu asks for an explanation, you cannot complain then.”

If Long Chen wasn’t going to go to the mountaintop, how would Huang Feiyang kill him? Therefore, he had to agree, even if Long Chen had no right to

the gift of the corpse of a profound grade demonic beast. Even if Long Chen was making a scene here, he couldn't attack him here. Thinking so, Huang Feiyang frowned.

"You still think to scare me?" Long Chen, with a detached attitude that was neither servile nor overbearing, looked calmly at them both and said resolutely, "If you don't agree, I won't carry out this mission!"

Seeing Long Chen being so stubborn, even Wen Ya became angry, not to mention Huang Feiyang, whose eyes turned crimson with rage.

Seeing Long Chen acting in such a proud manner, he recalled memories of his younger brother, who had been crippled by Long Chen, and had yet to recover. Huang Feiyang's hidden killing intent leaked out a little.

"I must restrain myself. I must not kill him under the numerous eyes of the public! I must wait until we go to the Eastern Yan Mountains, and then, I can finally kill him at an isolated place such that even his corpse will not be left behind. Ah! Long Chen, I will make you die a horrible death!"

With that thought, Huang Feiyang brought his emotions under control with great difficulty.

In a daze, Yan Beitian looked upon this farce, and after seeing that Huang Feiyang had not immediately killed this Long Chen, his opinion of Long Chen immediately rose. He thought to himself, "This young fellow is very resourceful — he has made Sir Huang very angry, and yet he doesn't dare to kill him. It seems that he is somewhat capable. If I want to save my daughter, I had better intervene between these two. . . ."

Thinking such, Yan Beitian quickly said, "Young lord, the many lives of the Yanluo town are in your hands. You must have mercy, you can have anything except for the profound grade demonic beast corpse!"

"I only need the profound grade demonic beast's corpse."

Long Chen appeared amused. He was looking fearlessly at the ashen-faced Huang Feiyang.

"In your dreams!"

Huang Feiyang laughed coldly, then looked at Yan Beitian and said, "Town Master Yan, don't say any more. That fellow just got into the Lingwu Family. I'll give him a hard time so that he knows his place. Hopefully, Town Master Yan will put in a few good words for me when the family starts to pry. "

Yan Beitian looked unnerved by all this and "Lords, this won't do. You are both lords within the Lingwu family. Please don't cause any internal strife.."

At this time Long Chen said, "Huang Feiyang, I won't beat around the bush, and go straight to the point. What I need is the Profound grade demonic beast's corpse and not the core. Give me the corpse, and I promise to solve this issue flawlessly. What say you?"

The most valuable part of the profound grade demonic beast corpse were the demonic core and Beast Spirit, and the rest were just waste products. Huang Feiyang didn't imagine that Long Chen had actually wanted this. He furrowed his brows, and doubtfully said, "What does he want with the corpse? What secret does it have?"

Likewise, Wen Ya was clueless about this whole thing. Yan Beitian knew that the corpse itself didn't have any value, so he had no clue either.

"Don't tell me you are afraid that once I get the demonic beast's corpse, my cultivation will soar and thereby completely surpass yours?"

Seeing the other party hesitate, Long Chen made this statement as he burst out into laughter.

Huang Feiyang was really incited by this. He glanced at Long Chen for a while, and said coldly, "With your insignificant 8th level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, if you are able to advance to Human Dan Realm just by relying on the corpse of the demonic beast, then this Huang has deserved what you have done to me. However, is this even possible?"

Wen Ya and Huang Feiyang started to laugh too, because this was impossible.

"Yan town master, give that Profound grade demonic beast's corpse to me and I'll extract the demonic core and beast spirit. If we cannot complete the mission, then I'll just return the Beast Spirit and demonic core."

Yan Beitian wavered a moment and then agreed. The Lingwu family's

reputation was still trustworthy.

Next, while Huang Feiyang waited for the people to do the extraction, Long Chen waited a short while in the main hall. He heard them coming.

“They are so easy to fool; provoke them a little, and they just give you a Profound grade demonic beast corpse. Really stupid, hehe...” — this was, of course, said by Ling Xi.

“That is not the reason for my wisdom. Now that I am at the peak of the 8th level of Dragon Pulse Realm, if I can get that demonic beast’s essence blood, then I can break through!”

Thinking thus far, Huang Feiyang and his people reemerged. Under Huang Feiyang’s cold scrutiny, Long Chen collected the Profound grade demonic beast’s corpse into his Cosmos Pouch.

“A first-rate Profound grade demonic beast, the Blue-eyed Snow Lion. Seeing the gash on its body, it should have been bitten by another demonic beast. . .”

After receiving the profound grade demonic beast’s corpse, Long Chen said to Yan Beitian, “Give me half an hour’s time, there is something I need to organize.”

The current time was already sparse, but Long Chen was still stalling for more time. Yan Beitian was agitated, he was like a man stepping on hot coals, and thus could only look at Huang Feiyang with pleading eyes.

The murderous intent Huang Feiyang extruded towards Long Chen had already reached its peak, but considering that he would be able to take Long Chen’s life once they reached Yan Dong mountain, he once again restrained himself.

For him, killing Long Chen was the number one priority.

“You can be content now. Even though I cannot kill you during the day, you definitely won’t live through tonight!”

Huang Feiyang waved his hand with an impatient look on his face.

Getting his permission, Long Chen smiled slightly and asked Yan Beitian — whose face had turned pale from the stress — for a private place.

Long Chen knew that time was of the utmost importance, and asked promptly, “Xiaoxi, are you sure that the soul diffusion fruit is easily digested, and that it will

help me achieve the deity dan realm.

“Of course, I have seen many people of the Deity Dan Realm, which is not something a yokel like you could understand!”

Long Chen stopped spouting nonsense, and immediately pulled out the Blue-Eyed Snow Lion’s corpse from his cosmos pouch. Then, looking at the snow-white, supple fur, he silently used [Dragon Soul Transformation]!

Using his remarkable ability, rows of red scales started to slowly appear on his skin. Scarlet bones that looked like knife blades slowly protruded from his joints.

In merely a moment, Long Chen appearance had undergone a major transformation. Although his scarlet exterior appeared sinister, it had a noble presence as well, which gave one an extremely complex feeling.

“Next, it’s time for the [Blood Transmuted Qi]...”

Long Chen hadn’t used [Blood Transmuted Qi] since he had killed Xue Yuanzi.

Its might could simply oppose the heavens. Long Chen’s current accomplishments were simply because of this [Blood Transmuted Qi]. This was the testament to what a remarkable ability the [Blood Transmuted Qi] was.

At least within Poplar Town, Long Chen had never before heard of anything like this kind of remarkable ability.

[Blood Transmuted Qi] and [Dragon Soul Transformation] were two powerful and remarkable abilities that Long Chen had. They both came from that Inherited Blood Essence, and Long Chen had only absorbed one thousandth of that Inherited Blood Essence.

“It might be that the Inherited Blood Essence really was from an Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon, but Ling Xi is not confiding in me whatever she knows about this topic”

In this secluded corner where no one could see him, drops of blood which were seemingly full of high spirits, seeped from the surface of the body of the Blue-Eyed Snow Lion.

They fluttered about in a lively fashion, and entered Long Chen’s body, thus being absorbed by him and turned into Qi.

Although the amount of Profound grade demonic beast's essence blood was not more than the Underground Blood Lizard King, its quality was much better. The power in its blood vessels surpassed that of the Underground Blood Lizard King by several fold.

At that time , when Long Chen had swallowed the Blood Qi, he had not felt any feeling that attributed to an increase of a huge amount of Qi .

The blood red Qi within his body seemed to explode as it bubbled furiously, gathering more Qi constantly. They crashed against the 8th vein of the Dragon Pulse Realm which was already broken. However, the 9th Heaven Dragon Vein seemed to be standing as stiff and steady as a mountain.

Long Chen knew that this Heaven Dragon Vein was hard to breakthrough. This was the reason why Yang Qingxuan and the others had remained in the 8th level of Dragon Pulse Realm...

The Qi skyrocketed, and the insides of Long Chen's body surged up a massive, bloody wave. He waited until the sea of blood had reached its climax, and at that point, Long Chen knew that the time was almost ripe for his breakthrough to the ninth layer of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

86 - The Deity Dan Realm!

Long Chen broke through to the Heaven Dragon Vein and entered the ninth level of Dragon Pulse Realm-the summit of the Dragon Pulse Realm.

After reaching the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, all of Long Chen's Dragon Veins were completely opened. The Qi inside his body could now move entirely unobstructed!

After entirely absorbing and refining the Blood Essence of the Blue-Eyed Snow Lion, the amount of Qi inside Long Chen's body increased exponentially. His current amount of qi almost made his body explode. He already possessed the strength needed to break through to the 9th level of Dragon Pulse Realm.

"Heaven Dragon Vein!"

He was sitting cross-legged on the ground, and with Ling Xi keeping watch, he was not worried about what might happen. He suddenly roared lightly and circulated his Qi, directing it towards his ninth Dragon Vein, which was also the longest Dragon Vein, the Heaven Dragon Vein.

The vast amount of Qi suddenly transformed into a Crimson Dragon God, and after letting forth wave after wave of deep bellowing, the Heaven Dragon Vein shattered open with the sound of a crashing meteorite. Then, endless waves of Qi began to pour into the Heaven Dragon Vein.

The Heaven Dragon Vein was the longest Dragon Vein, its length being almost equal to that of all the other Dragon Veins combined. Similarly, the difficulty to

open it was like that of all the previous Dragon Veins combined. However, since Long Chen had already absorbed the blood essence of a powerful Demonic Beast that was in the Human Dan Realm, his Qi experienced a qualitative and quantitative change, reaching its peak. The Heaven Dragon Vein simply could not resist advancing!

Rich and vigorous Qi kept increasing inside the Heaven Dragon Vein!

“Come on!”

Inside the Lingxi Sword, Ling Xi was watching Long Chen nervously, her tiny eyes constantly darting around, and her miniature fist was clenched.

Time was passing slowly. Even though the Heaven Dragon Vein was long, Long Chen’s circulation speed was now several times faster. He was entirely able to break through to the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. As a result, a quarter of an hour later, he had completely broken through to the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm!

The muffled roar of a dragon exploded forth from Long Chen’s body as he broke through the Heaven Dragon Vein. He could feel the tempestuous dance of countless crimson dragons within his body as if they were celebrating his elevation!

Even with numerous bloody manifestations of the Dragon Gods appearing inside his blood vessels, internal organs, and skeleton, Long Chen wasn’t the least bit afraid.

“The Ancient Dragon Gods sure are unfathomable beings. Do they have

anything in common with demon beasts?”

As Long Chen was pondering this over, his bones and viscera were emitting a series of popping sounds. A powerful current of pure Qi exploded forth into his surroundings. He suddenly stood up and opened his eyes. Two mysterious beams of light shot out from his eyes!

Feeling his whole body surging with power, Long Chen said, “Little Xi, I’m already at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, and my Qi has increased greatly. It should be approaching the Deity Dan Realm!”

Seeing Long Chen’s excited expression Ling Xi’s heart stirred and, she hurriedly said, “Then quickly use the Soul Diffusion Fruit. It’s already been a quarter of an hour. If we delay any longer those two might come and look for trouble!”

Long Chen sneered and said, “Seeing that I’m cultivating, will they dare to act? The Lingwu Family views individual strength with the highest regard. Advancement of rank is the most important moment in raising one’s strength. If they were to disturb me at this moment and information of that reached back, they would be in a lot of trouble!”

That being said, Long Chen still didn’t tarry.

He acquired the corpse of a Blue-Eyed Snow Lion from the hands of Yan Beitan. Furthermore, he was cultivating while powerful enemies loomed nearby. It should have been considered as taking a huge risk!

Long Chen knew he didn’t have any choice but to take this risk. The appearance of a profound rank beast’s corpse was an opportunity. If he didn’t

seize this opportunity, then he wouldn't have a chance against Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya, who were at the Human Dan Realm's Initial Mastery Stage!

"Once I reach the Human Dan Realm, will I, a Dragon Warrior, be afraid of the likes of you?"

Long Chen sneered. The Soul Diffusion Fruit that was inside the jade box was already in his hands. Long Chen devoured the fruit without any hesitation, as the aroma from the Soul Diffusion Fruit if leaked out, might attract serious trouble!

Even though it was only an initial profound grade spirit medicine, the Soul Diffusion Fruit was indeed the best Spirit Medicine Long Chen had ever encountered, but according to Ling Xi, the value of the Soul Diffusion Fruit was about the same as that of a middle Profound Grade Spirit Medicine. Without a thousand pieces of Deity Jade, it would be impossible to get your hands on a Soul Diffusion Fruit.

It was because the effect of the Soul Diffusion Fruit was too incredible. Simply put it was a Spirit Medicine that could raise a master from the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm straight into the Deity Dan Realm!

As the Soul Diffusion Fruit entered his stomach, Long Chen felt a cool breeze pervade every pore of his body. It was as if he jumped into a cool and refreshing pond during the warmest day of summer!

However, as the coolness passed and gave rise to a slight feeling of warmth, Long Chen felt like he was soaking in a hot spring instead, an extremely pleasurable feeling.

“Idiot, quickly refine this medicine, and with its help, gather your Qi into your dantian and condense your Deity Dan!”

Ling Xi woke Long Chen from his pleasurable state. He followed Ling Xi’s commands, and immediately used his Qi to refine the medicinal effect that permeated through his whole body!

“This medicinal effect of the Soul Diffusion Fruit unexpectedly is vast like an ocean!”

The originally peaceful medicinal energy quickly expanded, and like a huge ocean, it sifted through Long Chen’s body!

Long Chen circulated his Qi through his entire body, gathering up and assimilating all traces of the medicine.

The medicine was solidifying his Qi, but during this process, as the Qi became more and more solid, the effect of the medicine lessened. As the Qi reentered the nine Dragon Veins, it converged into his Dantian. The amount of Qi remained the same, but it was now more than ten times denser!

“The medicinal effect of this Soul Diffusion Fruit apparently has a Qi condensing property. No wonder Ling Xi said that this would help me break through into Deity Dan Realm. If I were to solidify my Qi on my own, it would take ages!”

Presently, inside his Dragon Veins, all of the Qi had transformed into nine divine dragons, which simultaneously rushed towards his Dantian!

Long Chen's whole body was shaking, and a strong current of Qi engulfed his body. This caused his whole body to swell up, but luckily he was currently within his [Dragon Soul Transformation]. With his normal body, he might not have been able to handle this degree of Qi collisions!

"The step in which all of my Qi was rushing into my Dantian is also called the Rushing Dantian. If it succeeds, all of my Qi should solidify up to ten times more, forming a Human Dan!"

At this stage, Long Chen didn't care anymore. He mustered up his courage, and willed all of his Qi to rush into his Dantian!

The Dantian was connected to the nine Dragon Veins. At this time, inside every Dragon Vein, there was a total of nine crimson Qi dragons rushing through the nine different Dragon Veins. Very quickly they all collided inside the Dantian.

At this moment, Long Chen, who had never experienced anything like this before, was scared beyond belief. According to his predictions, with this amount of Qi colliding, the obvious result would be an explosion!

Unexpectedly, this crimson Qi suddenly melted into a sphere of mist. Each crimson dragon first had its head, its body and then its tail dissolved. As all nine dragons were merged into that Qi mist, Long Chen's dantian was completely filled with that crimson mist!

"This ball of mist, it is unexpectedly shrinking!"

Inside this crimson ball of mist, there seemed to be millions upon millions of blood dragons. Long Chen could almost hear the innumerable dragons roaring in

his ear. This sound was inaudible to other people, but to Long Chen, it made his blood boil. It was as if he had returned to the chaotic era when dragons dominated the world!

An innumerable amount of dragons rummaged within the crimson mist. Even though they were illusionary dragon shadows, they still left Long Chen with a sense of wonder!

As the blood red mist slowly shrank, the illusory dragon shadows also slowly shrank. A quarter of an hour slowly passed. At this moment, Huang Feiyang and the others were already walking towards Long Chen. A light sound was emitted from his Dantian, and the mist was slowly consolidating. In the end, it unexpectedly condensed into a crimson dan ball that was no larger than an egg!

This was a Deity Dan Realm cultivator's Human Dan. Long Chen had previously read up upon the Human Dan, and he immediately discovered that his Human Dan was unlike others. Most evidently, his Human Dan was crimson in color!

[Devil82 TLN: Dan in this case is a core/sphere]

Most importantly, he discovered that there was a mark shaped like a dragon upon his Human Dan. This dragon shaped mark radiated a soft red glow. Even though it wasn't that distinguishable within the crimson mist, the feeling that it gave off could shake one to their core!

Unexpectedly, upon his Human Realm Dan, there was a mark of a crimson dragon!

Upon becoming a Dragon Warrior, Long Chen no longer thought that this was

peculiar. Reaching this state, he clearly knew that he had completely entered the Human Dan Realm.

Reaching the Human Dan Realm, his Qi was condensed into a crimson colored Human Dan. His body no longer felt inflated but gave off a rather reserved feeling. Long Chen even looked much more calm, like a supercilious pretty sunshine boy.

[Devil82 TLN: (阳光) meaning sunshine is what people refer to someone outspoken and social]

However, when exercising his strength, he would still turn back into a king of slaughter!

“Even though I no longer give off a feeling of viciousness, my current strength has risen by more than 100 times compared to the eighth level of Dragon Pulse Realm!”

Only drafting a tiny bit of Qi from his Human Dan, Long Chen could feel a tremendous force. He had more or less gauged his own strength.

“With my current power combined with my [Dragon Soul Transformation]. Huang Feiyang...”

Thinking about this person, who previously could kill him at any time. Long Chen’s eyes flashed with a cold light.

“You are most likely waiting to take action against me at the East Yan Mountain, but when that time comes, I will give you a pleasant surprise. For

right now, let's play..."

Upon seeing Long Chen successfully entering the Human Dan Realm, Ling Xi let out a sigh of relief. She looked with trepidation at the youth in front of her and said, "Luckily, you were smart enough to get your hands on this Profound Grade Demonic Beast corpse, or else, this time, you would have been in serious trouble. This guy, even though he's character is of poor quality, he sure is lucky all the time. The heavens must be god damn blind."

Ling Xi had been following Long Chen for a while now, and she no longer held back when speaking to him. Long Chen was speechless. Just as he was about to tease her, his expression suddenly changed. His mouth perked up in a smile and looked out through the door.

With a dark face, Huang Feiyang gradually entered, with Wen Ya and his men trailing behind!

87 - A Bait

Long Chen had reached the Human Dan Realm, but unlike Huang Feiyang, who was putting his strength on full display, he withdrew his own Qi. Since he was more confident in his strength now, Long Chen visibly relaxed, and looked at Gan Lin's party of three with a smile upon his face.

"Long Chen, are you done preparing?"

Seeing Long Chen without a trace of fear in his bearing, Huang Feiyang secretly jeered.

However, Long Chen paid no attention to him, and instead turned to Yan Beitian and said, "Town Master Yan, due to some important matters of mine, I have tarried. I'm extremely sorry."

Being ignored by Long Chen like this made Huang Feiyang feel extremely unhappy. However, he was long past his impetuous days. His eyes narrowed into slits and emitted traces of golden light.

"This brat, he seems different, but I can't put my fingers on what the difference is..."

Watching Long Chen gloomily, Huang Feiyang's heart was filled with killing intent.

"This brat! Before, he was filled with unwillingness but now he is all smiles. It must be fake. Having been compelled by me, he must be hating me from the

bottom of his heart, and wants to cut me to pieces. However, little one, the real torment will soon befall you...”

Long Chen could easily guess what Huang Feiyang was thinking about.

Hearing Long Chen addressing him first, the Yan Town Master felt a bit gloomy.

He was a wily old fox and knew that Long Chen did it to antagonize Huang Feiyang. Seeing how young Long Chen was, Yan Beitian felt a tinge of regret.

However, the life of his daughter was hanging by a thread, so he immediately said, “Since all three of you are prepared, let’s hurry towards the East Yan Mountain!”

“Agreed,” Long Chen nodded.

“Pretending to be calm and collected in front of me, just see how I will finish you off!”

With that thought, combined with seeing the anxious face of Yan Beitian, Huang Feiyang waved his hand impatiently and said, “Then let’s head out to East Yan Mountain. Long Chen, this time, had you better perform well!”

Long Chen couldn’t be bothered to answer.

Even though he presented a calm exterior, his killing intent towards Huang Feiyang wasn’t any less than Huang Feiyang’s was towards him. He simply hid it better.

Under Huang Feiyang's command, Yan Beitian stayed at Yan Luo Town, while Long Chen and the others followed Yan Beitian's directions and headed towards East Yan Mountain.

The East Yan Mountain wasn't far off. Long Chen and the others quickly arrived at this seemingly untouched mountain and its forest.

"We three should split up and head off in three different directions. Make as much noise as possible, and if someone powerful arrives, one only needs to call out, and the rest will arrive in an instant!"

Huang Feiyang put on the act of a senior brother.

Long Chen looked back, sneered, and went ahead without a word.

As Long Chen distanced himself, Wen Ya said with a furrowed brow, "I can't shake off this weird feeling about this kid. If we don't kill him now, I fear that we will have a lot of sleepless nights ahead of us!"

"That clown is just pretending to be calm in front of us. In this desolate East Yan Mountain, in front of us two masters of the Human Dan Initial Mastery Stage, I bet he is already scared senseless. That little shit, how much will he be able to struggle?"

Huang Feiyang revealed a smile that was full of confidence.

"What I need to do is let our opponents kill him. Wen Ya, when the time

comes, let a couple of them run away to spread the word. This will make the Lady Enforcer believe that it wasn't us who killed him!"

Wen Yan could only nod and agree. "Ok, but the Lady Enforcer puts him in high regard. Wouldn't we be putting ourselves at risk if we do this?"

"In high regards?"

Huang Feiyang sneered, "Would she put him in higher regards than our boss Feng Wutian? We have our boss Feng Wutian backing us. The lady Enforcer will give him face, and not blame us two just because of a dead man!"

Seeing that Long Chen had already put quite a distance between them, Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya hurriedly stalked after him.

Whatever scheme Huang Feiyang was hatching, Long Chen had already seen through it all.

"It seems like they want to use the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect to get rid of me, and make it untraceable. However, having set up a situation like this, aren't they afraid that I would use it against them?"

First of all, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect had to be lured out into the open, but that wouldn't be a simple task. However, Long Chen was a cunning man. Within the East Yan Mountain, there lived plenty of Huang grade demonic beasts of the first and second rank. When Long Chen found the den of some Huang grade second rank demonic beasts that belonged to the canine family, he drove out about a dozen of them into the open.

These low-level demonic beasts were in a frenzy and caused quite the commotion within the East Yan Mountain. As Long Chen kept provoking other demonic beasts, the East Yan Mountain quickly entered a state of complete chaos.

Seeing Long Chen running about on the side, Huang Feiyang smiled and said, "If someone powerful appears, let's not be hasty to act. Let them lead us to their hideout. This will make things easier for us, and this way, we can kill two birds with one stone!"

Wen Ya patted Huang Feiyang's shoulders in response.

This East Yan Mountain wasn't as large as the Big Barren Mountain, but the amount of demonic beasts was plentiful. Long Chen quickly whipped a large number of lower grade demonic beasts into a frenzy. It wasn't long before Long Chen noticed that beside Wen Yan and Huang Feiyang, others were observing him.

"These grandsons from the Crimson Blood Sect are indeed still here!"

Although he couldn't tell their exact location, Long Chen's perception was still extremely strong.

At that moment, a sloppy looking middle-aged man wearing a crimson Chinese-style gown and having a cultivation roughly around the 8th level of the Dragon Pulse Realm was watching Long Chen from afar. His eyes lit up as he praised, "What a beautiful young man. He is just my type. Am I really this lucky? The heavens really treat me kindly!"

“Why is that guy’s expression so disgusting?”

Long Chen was already in a bad mood because he couldn’t take care of Huang Feiyang at the moment. Seeing this vulgar, middle-aged man with eyes filled with lust and a mouthful of drool, he had already transformed into a tornado and charged forth without the opponent even trying to approach!

Between this middle-aged man’s eyebrows, there was a single red dot.

”Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, we meet again...”

88 - Conflict!

The vulgar middle-aged man chuckled. He thought he was lucky, finally being able to let off some steam upon seeing a handsome youngster coming towards him,

[Devil82 TL Note::Chinese translation is not letting off steam but it's as close I can get without involving traditional Chinese medicine.]

Long Chen could never imagine that this middle-aged man would have such a weird and disgusting preference. He didn't fancy young women, but young men like Long Chen himself.

The look he revealed made Long Chen want to hurl.

"What the hell? What does this person want?" Long Chen still didn't really understand.

At this time, the wretched middle-aged man chuckled and said, "Good little boy, come! Let this uncle take care of your needs!"

Long Chen almost retched when he heard this. He recalled that there were queer men who weren't interested in women, but in men. The middle-aged man in front of him was obviously that kind of man.

Just as his voice trailed off, the weird middle-aged man was going to make his move. However, Long Chen's body became an afterimage right before his eyes.

This fleeting afterimage instantly made the man from the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect squint.

“So young, but already knows martial arts. It must be a member of a local clan. It’s going to be fun playing with this one!”

He barely registered the thought before the speed of Long Chen’s shadow, increased a hundredfold. The middle-aged man only managed to blink before Long Chen disappeared.

In the next moment, a blow large enough to make him throw up his last meal struck him squarely in his stomach. The vulgar middle-aged man cried out and dropped down, curling up like a boiled shrimp.

“What is going on? How could that youth’s speed be so fast? Is that a movement related martial technique? Does this boy have a great background?”

Being a veteran of countless bloody fights, although the man felt great pain in his abdomen but he did not lose consciousness.

Thinking that Long Chen might be the pampered offspring of some powerful faction, he endured the pain and twirled his eyes. He immediately kneeled and begged for his life, with tears and snot running down his face, “Distinguished young master, this one named Li Yan has never done anything wrong in his life nor offended this young master. I hope this young master has mercy and spares this one’s life!”

[TL Devil’s Note: (眼神急转) twirling one’s eyes indicates that someone is

hatching an idea]

“Really? Just now, weren’t you speaking about taking care of me, your father?”

Long Chen’s voice, dripping with anger, was transmitted into Li Yan’s ear.

“How could I dare to say that? Young master’s talent is outstanding and is not something a cretin such as I would ever dare to insult,” Li Yan said pitifully.

“This guy is acting pitiful now, but am I, Long Chen, such a gullible guy? He carries with him a scent of blood, and must have hurt countless people in his lifetime! The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is such a secretive faction. It’s not a place for benevolent people.”

Long Chen originally wanted to take his life but thought that he could be of some use in the future. Without waiting, he kicked Li Yan squarely in the face. With a loud bang, Li Yan’s head smashed into the ground, as Long Chen viciously stepped on it.

This additional collision caused Li Yan even more pain. He would never imagine that this harmless looking Long Chen would lash out in such a vicious way!

The scorching pain on his forehead made Li Yan see stars, but he didn’t have time to pass out. The foot that was pressing on the back of his head was akin to a blade resting against the back of his head.

Li Yan had no clue over why he was beaten, but he had no option other than to beg for mercy. His fate was solely in the hands of Long Chen.

“Your father, I, won’t waste time on you, I’ll give you two choices. Choice one is death. Choice two, also death.”

Li Yan was scared senseless, his complexion became pale. Thinking that he might die here in this place, his face, which was pushed down into the mud, showed signs of utter despair!

Seeing this fellow wailing away endlessly, one could tell that this wasn’t a person with a strong will. Long Chen secretly felt satisfaction.

“Stop bawling; I, your father, was just kidding. I’m giving you two choices. The first choice is still death, but the second one is to take me to the thief lair of your Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

Li Yan was originally in a state of despair, but after hearing that last sentence he first felt relief, then alarm. Hearing Long Chen saying those words, even if Li Yan was an idiot, he would still know that this time, Long Chen’s objective was the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect!

In a brief moment, many thoughts raced through his head.

“This kid was causing a commotion to lure me out, then inquiring about the others’ whereabouts. Seeing his actions, he must be trying to rescue those girls we captured from Yan Luo Town!

“This little guy sure is bold to the extreme, barging up the mountain alone at such a tender age. So be it, I will take you there. Let’s see how you will suffer in front of those two protectors! You’ve hit me twice. I Lin Yan will remember this!

Seeing this guy's shifty eyes, Long Chen already knew what he was planning.

He's the main objective right now was to locate the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect's base of operations. As for what would happen afterwards, he would let Huang Feiyang deal with it. He couldn't care less about Li Yan's schemes.

"Well, taking this long, have you decided yet? You must be choosing death, right?"

Li Yan was scared senseless and immediately said, "Lord, this humble one chooses the second, this humble one chooses the second! I'll take you there at once!"

"Oh?"

Long Chen looked him over quizzically, "You are not planning anything, are you?"

"This humble one wouldn't dare!"

Long Chen smiled indifferently and said, "As long as you are in my hands, even a tiny hint of disobedience from your side, and I'll have you regret being born to this world. Anyway, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect doesn't have a deficit of people like you. I'll just capture another one, and I will still be able to locate the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect's den"

"Indeed, indeed! My lord speaks truthfully!"

Only after Li Yan nodded his head hurriedly did Long Chen release him. Seeing this middle-aged man with a face full of obedience climb up to his feet, Long Chen stared hard. Immediately, Li Yan hurried along to show the way.

Long Chen threw a provocative gaze towards Huang Feiyang, then followed behind Li Yan.

In a thicket from afar, Huang Feiyang's eyes turned ice cold as he caught the mocking gaze Long Chen threw him.

“What is there to be proud of? In the end, it's still time for you to die.”

“Brother Huang, isn't Long Chen a Beast Warrior? He is at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, but without even transforming, how could he beat an opponent at the same level that easily?”

Thinking about it, Wen Ya felt that something was amiss.

Huang Feiyang also scowled and said, “This guy seems to have become a bit stronger compared to when he was at the clan selection. He must have broken through again. He's probably at the ninth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, but it's still nothing to fuss over!”

“This Long Chen is indeed somewhat gifted. Even though we've only seen the tip of the iceberg, that movement technique from earlier was still pretty impressive. However, why does that martial technique seem so familiar?”

“That is the Lingwu Family’s [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step].” Even though he could hardly believe it. Huang Feiyang still said with exasperation, “He acquired the [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] only five days ago, even though he was barely able to use it. Within our Green Sun Branch, I guess only boss Feng Wutian could match this kind of talent, but Wen Ya...”

Huang Feiyang said with a gloomy face, “This kind of person, we’d better nip it in the bud!”

“Otherwise, give him some time to grow, and he will cause us endless troubles”

Even though he didn’t want to become enemies with Long Chen, but as he was good friends with Huang Feiyang, Wen Ya didn’t have a choice.

“Let’s go, let’s end this troublesome fellow’s life.”

Crossing a couple of peaks on the East Yan Mountain, they arrived at a forest with withering trees. This place was filled with craggy and misshapen boulders and was an extremely remote place.

The Demonic Beasts within this area had already been cleared out by the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. The dens of these Demon Beasts served well as residences, and as prisons for the captured girls.

“Lo... Lord, just ahead, the captured women are in the depths of the cave where my brothers and I were eating. I promise you, they are unharmed...”

Upon arrival, Long Chen could feel the faint trace of people. He could also

smell the aroma of liquor and meat. In a thicket afar, a faint trace of smoke could be seen from a bonfire.

Li Yan was no longer needed here.

Li Yan nervously looked at Long Chen. This was the moment that would determine his life. He was fully prepared, waiting for the perfect moment to attack Long Chen and then run away.

He didn't have to defeat Long Chen, just escape. Afterwards, he could just let the people from the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect protect him.

Seeing the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect being so close, Li Yan thought that Long Chen would charge over, but Long Chen stopped and looking at Li Yan, smiling.

"Lord, our men are just ahead...Lord, you promised to let me go. Are you going back on your word?"

"Nothing of that sort, I'm simply waiting for someone." Long Chen said unhurriedly.

"Waiting for someone?"

Li Yan was totally clueless, but not for long. Two powerful masters appeared from behind and emerged from the foliage. These two had fierce eyes and bodies filled with explosive energy. This kind of power was much fiercer than Long Chen's!

Li Yan was scared to death, and he finally realized that he had underestimated Long Chen. He originally thought that Long Chen was a hothead, charging up the mountain alone to rescue some women and fight a large number of people on his side. He wouldn't have ever guessed that there were two more people behind Long Chen!

A total of 3 people had appeared, and they were all youthful experts. A fearful thought appeared in his head!

“You are...from the Lingwu Family?!”

“You guessed right!”

Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya suddenly appeared in front of Li Yan. Huang Feiyang laughed coldly and threw a punch towards Li Yan's chest. Even though it was a simple punch, it was a Human Dan Realm Initial stage expert— if Li Yan got hit, he would die on the spot!

Huang Feiyang's expression looked much more sinister than Long Chen's. When Huang Feiyang appeared, Li Yan knew that he was as good as dead!

On this border between life and death, he exploded forth with every ounce of energy at his disposal, wanting to escape!

“You think you can escape from my hand?”

Huang Feiyang has withheld his anger for a long time, but he couldn't attack Long Chen just yet. Thus, he could only vent his anger on Li Yan, and give Long Chen a good demonstration of the things to come!

Li Yan and Huang Feiyang's powers were realms apart. They were within feet of each other, and he certainly didn't stand a chance of escaping. From the day he chose this life of strife, Li Yan was prepared for death.

However, he was still opposed to dying at the hands of Huang Feiyang!

As Li Yan had lost all hope, suddenly, a silhouette was in front of him, and a fist technique that was as bright as a star forced Huang Feiyang back!

When Li Yan looked, he realized that it was Long Chen!

89 - [Gigantic Meteor Fist]!

From Li Yan's point of view, this was extremely unexpected!

Just as Huang Feiyang was about to kill him, Long Chen who was originally his captor suddenly appeared in front of him and blocked Huang Feiyang. It gave Li Yan a chance to escape. As he ran he struggled to understand the situation.

Long Chen blocked Huang Feiyang and let Li Yan escape. This caused Huang Feiyang to yell, "Long Chen, what kind of foolishness is this. Is there something wrong with your head?!"

"I've already said that we won't kill him. I'm just fulfilling my promise, that's all!"

Seeing that Long Chen wasn't showing any sign of backing down, Huang Feiyang couldn't endure it anymore and was about to act when he was suddenly stopped by Wen Ya!

Huang Feiyang recalled that he had endured this long and was just about to successfully eliminate Long Chen. At this crucial moment, even if he was consumed by rage, he had to endure!

Starring at Long Chen coldly, Huang Feiyang said, "Since you let him go, you better capture him!"

If Li Yan arrived ahead of them and warned the people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, they might disappear without a trace. If they escaped, this mission

would be considered a failure. If Huang Feiyang wanted to kill Long Chen, he must find another way. That's why he could only order Long Chen to follow as they chased after.

[Devil82 TN: (树倒猢猻散) Original idiom was tree has fallen and the monkeys scattered, I used, disappeared without a trace.]

Long Chen sneered. The trio chased after Li Yan, who wasn't fast and Huang Feiyang's party knew the direction. They quickly closed on the gathering point of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect!

Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya were at the head of the pursuing group. As they chased Li Yan they kept looking back to see if Long Chen was following them.

"The boy's speed isn't bad!"

In the blink of an eye, Li Yan's figure could be seen ahead. In the face of death, one can bring out unlimited potential. Li Yan cried for help as he ran for his life. Suddenly there was a commotion. In a flash group of people with red dots between their brows charged into the dried up forest!

These people numbered about a dozen, each one a blood-soaked fiend. These were indeed the people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

Presently they had a scarlet complexion and smelled of liquor. They were obviously celebrating. Li Yan was just an errand boy. That's why he was wandering outside.

As these people appeared, Li Yan howled miserably and rushed to meet them.

The group of people noticed Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya running in the front.

“Lord Proctor, they are people from the Lingwu Family!”

Hearing Lingwu Family being mentioned, the ten odd people’s expression changed!

Amongst these people, two men seemed to be in charge. One was skinny, both his eyebrows and hair carried a crimson tint, and his gaze was like a piercing set of crimson arrows.

The other one was tall and sturdy with a shiny bald head. From afar it looked just like a round metal ball.

They must be two of the eight Great Proctors of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. The leader amongst these two seems to be the skinny one!

Long Chen felt that he was the most powerful one. As the Proctor heard the name Lingwu Family, he’s complexion changed and snapped, “Kill every one of them, and let none escape!”

To the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, the Lingwu Family was too great of an existence. So the only thing they could do was to exterminate and remove all traces of them!

“Affirmative, Proctor Qin!”

On the other side, Huang Feiyang noticed that the opponents had two leaders

and was secretly delighted, “Amongst these two, the bald sturdy man is in the Human Dan Realm and that skinny Proctor Qin is at the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm and close to my own cultivation. The might of these two people is enough to exterminate Long Chen!”

“Crimson Blood Sacred Sect? You are bold enough that you would even dare to act against us, the people of the Lingwu Family! You dare to perform such heinous acts within the territory governed by us. Today on behalf of the Lingwu Family, I’ll exterminate you all!”

Huang Feiyang was formulating plans in his head while still speaking, afterwards, he conveyed them covertly to Wen Ya, “In a moment I’ll engage that Proctor Qin, you will circle around to free the captured women. That bald headed Proctor wouldn’t dare to clash against you so he will go and trouble Long Chen instead!”

Wen Yan understood his meaning completely. Presently under Proctor Qin’s orders, a large number of Crimson Blood Sacred Sect members charged forward. They were all masters of the Dragon Pulse Realm! Even though these masters haven’t reached the Human Dan Realm but with their numbers they were still a force to be reckoned with!

From the three people of the Lingwu Family, a single person suddenly circled around them and headed towards the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect’s rear. At that speed, apart from Proctor Qin, no one was able to block him!

Proctor Qin and the other Proctor named Shi glanced at each other and both knew the opponent’s intentions. Seeing that the Lingwu Family actually brought two people at the Initial Mastery of the Human Dan Realm, they were initially a bit fearful but after seeing that they were youngsters, their battle experience, and their killing intent wasn’t sufficient, so they decided to engage them!

“These three fledglings can’t compare to us in terms of battle experience. They only have a profound cultivation. Originally I was a bit fearful but these retards actually split up to save those women. They are indeed stupid to the extreme!”

Proctor Qin laughed coldly when he thought of this and bellowed: “All apprentices that haven’t reached the Human Dan Realm hunt them and pin them down. When I’m finished with those two I will immediately come and relieve you!”

Even though there was a total of ten experts in the Dragon Pulse Realm, they still couldn’t handle their counterparts, but they could pin them down for a little while!

In the meantime, Proctor Qin and Proctor Shi could use this opportunity to kill Huang Feiyang and Long Chen!

“This slightly older youth, his cultivation is quite frightening. I must pay 100% attention to deal with him. But after old Shi kills off that other youngster we can combine forces to kill this youth!”

“This bout will decide the victor, old Shi let’s go all out!”

Under Proctor Qin’s order, all the others disciples raced out, leaving only Li Yan behind. Since he was previously beaten and then ran for his life, he lost a part of his ability to fight. After only a few steps, his complexion paled as he sat down on the ground to play possum.

[Devil82 TLN: (play possum) Raw said “play grandson”, but the meaning should

be similar. Not that he plays dead but trying to shift focus.]

Proctor Qin and Proctor Shi didn't bother with Li Yan.

It wouldn't affect their effectiveness either with or without him. Right after the order was given out, Proctor Qin lunged at Huang Feiyang, and the tall Proctor Shi advanced towards Long Chen with a bleak expression!

Everything went according to plan, Huang Feiyang let out a sigh as he looked over at Long Chen who was being locked down by Proctor Shi and sneered.

"This baldy probably won't hold back. Long Chen, now you are really in for it...."

Regarding Proctor Qin, Huang Feiyang gave him his full attention. He was, after all, an expert of the same calibre.

"Between you and Proctor Qin, it's enough if one of you dies. I'll let the other on be the witness, proving that Long Chen died by your hands!"

As for Li Yan who was not far away, he was completely overlooked.

Currently, Li Yan was observing the battle with bewilderment. If Proctor Qin couldn't get there in time, the people facing Wen Ya would be done for. That's why Li Yan was in no hurry to join the fray.

But this move by the Lingwu Family certainly made Li Yan puzzled.

“Just now that youth saved me, he is clearly at strife with the other two. Now these two are tricking Proctor Shi into battling him. They are clearly using our hands to get rid of that youth!”

After he realized what was going on, Li Yan was a bit regretful.

“I didn’t think these sons of bitches would be this vicious. It seems like the internal strife within the Lingwu Family is really fierce. Those two are clearly jealous of that youngster’s talent and want to have him killed!”

Long Chen was faithful to his word and he even personally blocked Huang Feiyang’s attack. Li Yan felt moved by this.

He was staring intently at Long Chen as he sighed, “One doesn’t come across many righteous youths like this anymore. Him being killed by Proctor Shi, it’s such a shame....”

Proctor Shi was also clicking his tongue in amazement, he looked over Long Chen and smiled coldly, “An intelligent and charming youngster like you, if you were unaffiliated, I would naturally try to convince you to join me. But since you are a member of the Lingwu Family, there is only death!”

Long Chen naturally paid him no heed.

Wen Ya had already left. Huang Feiyang thought it was the opportune time to kill Long Chen. But wasn’t this also an excellent opportunity for Long Chen?

Long Chen roared and exploded forth with all his Qi as he used [Dragon Soul Transformation]. Proctor Shi, Proctor Qin, and Li Yan showed shocked

expressions as exquisite and orderly crimson scales surfaced upon Long Chen's skin and sharp bony spikes instantly formed on his body!

"This youngster is unexpectedly a Beast Warrior?"

Proctor Shi was stunned and then burst out laughing, "This appearance... is not bad, nice appeal, good ferocity!"

After that sentence, he didn't care how powerful Long Chen became and pounced on him. On the other side of the battlefield, Huang Feiyang and Proctor Qin were already clashing!

"In front of a Human Dan Realm practitioner, no matter how powerful you are. As long as you are within the Dragon Pulse Realm, you are nothing but a clown."

Thinking this Huang Feiyang felt at ease as he tangled with Proctor Qin. From time to time, he would watch Long Chen with the corner of his eyes. Since the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect was in a hurry and Proctor Shi was the key element to winning this battle; as soon as Huang Feiyang was engaged in combat, Proctor Shi immediately pounced on Long Chen!

"Indeed as a practitioner of the Human Dan Realm, his skills are exceptional!"

In the blink of an eye, Proctor Shi appeared before Long Chen. Qi belonging to the Human Dan Realm exploded forth in an instant, a huge stature like a mountain pressed forth towards Long Chen!

"Within Proctors Shi's Qi, there is a trace of blood. Compared to mine it's a bit lacking but still makes one wonder how they accomplished this!"

Presently, Proctor Shi's eyes radiated coldness. His whole body exploded with Qi as his aura swept away everything in the surrounding area. As his pupils contracted, his fist seemed to turn into a small boulder and smashed into the ground with a loud bang!

“[Gigantic Meteor Fist]!”

Being targeted by the [Gigantic Meteor Fist], Long Chen didn't have the slightest inclination to move. Li Yan's complexion changed and said with a dejected voice. “This youngster, his experience is indeed too shallow....”

90 - Killing Proctor Shi!

“A basic Profound grade Martial Technique right off the bat, this guy seems to be in a hurry to finish me off. But how can I, Long Chen, let you have your way?”

Sneering inwardly as the [Gigantic Meteor Fist] was howling towards him. Long Chen was calm as his movement skills flowed like a graceful yet quick dance. Proctor Shi's first art had a huge area of effect and the power behind it was also top tier. But its weak point was speed!

Long Chen used to practice [Falling Star Fist]. The concept behind [Falling Star Fist] was almost the same as the [Gigantic Meteor Fist], but a falling star reaches an incredible speed before impact. When comparing speed, it far surpasses the [Gigantic Meteor Fist]!

Long Chen used [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] and immediately it was as if he had become a shadow. Initially, Proctor Shi thought he would be able to instantly kill Long Chen. Just before it was about to hit Long Chen, who he thought was paralyzed due to fear, he suddenly turned into an after image. Like dragon moves in water with its sinuous body, Long Chen evaded this move!

[Devil82 TLN: Remember that Chinese dragons are strongly associated with bodies of water.]

Long Chen dodged at the last moment which alarmed Proctor Shi greatly. Li Yan was even more shocked as his jaw dropped and thought, “This youngster is indeed talented. Using his movement skills to evade at the last moment, but...”

Li Yan shook his head and thought, “Simply knowing some movement skills, is not enough to put up a fight against Proctor Shi who is proficient in attack...”

Just as Li Yan reached this conclusion, Long Chen circled behind Proctor Shi. As his eyes radiated coldness, his body exploded into action!

“I originally thought that only Martial techniques were useful, but now I see that only by using Core Techniques in conjunction with Movement Techniques can one display true power in combat!”

With the [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step], Long Chen was already able to tire out his enemy to death. Even though he was currently in the Human Dan Realm, the quality of his Qi was better than Proctor Shi by a tenfold!

Only people with a larger amount of Qi than Long Chen could be considered his match. This Proctor Shi was far from being his match!

To this side, while Huang Feiyang was battling Proctor Qin, he was also observing Long Chen’s battle. When he saw that Long Chen dodged Proctor Shi’s attack with [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step], he was greatly alarmed!

Long Chen had never argued with Huang Feiyang in front of Proctor Qin. That’s why when Proctor Qin saw that Huang Feiyang was observing Long Chen, he thought that it was out of concern!

This feeling of being disregarded and viewed as unimportant made Proctor Qin — who was already resolved to kill Huang Feiyang — enraged.

“Kiddo, your opponent is me! Regarding your little brother, he won’t live for long!”

Proctor Qin thought Long Chen was Huang Feiyang’s little brother.

Due to Huang Feiyang’s neglect, Proctor Qin suddenly launched a barrage of attacks, which was like a raging hailstorm. Originally they were experts within the same realm but due to Huang Feiyang’s distraction, he was instantly forced into a disadvantage situation!

Long Chen hadn’t gotten killed yet if he died by another’s hands he would lose a lot of face.

Therefore, Huang Feiyang could only muster up all his strength to engage Proctor Qin in mortal combat!

“Going against our Lingwu Family? You are destined to die a most horrible death!”

“What? That was in the past, now just die, you inexperienced kid! That kiddo must be your little brother, right? Haha, after you’ve been killed we will thoroughly violate him!”

Huang Feiyang was currently fighting with Proctor Qin while Long Chen managed to dodge Proctor Shi’s repeated assault. Seeing Proctor Shi’s now rage-filled complexion, his own heart also brimming with fury. A wave of powerful Qi instantly exploded from him!.

Long Chen being able to dodge once could be considered pure luck but Proctor

Shi wasn't able to hit him at all, which left Li Yan stunned.

He no longer felt that Long Chen was simply lucky!

Presently Long Chen felt his anger stir. The next moment, his body appeared behind Proctor Shi and then a Qi belonging to the Human Dan Realm erupted from him. At this moment, everyone was shocked!

Just when they realized that Long Chen was also a cultivator in the Human Dan Realm, he'd already struck out!

As he was using [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] to dodge his opponent he was also quickly forming seals. As he managed to dodge his opponent's last attack, Long Chen roared explosively. Nine images of the Dragon Gods appeared within his hands and as he roared it struck with devastating force towards Proctor Shi who was in very close proximity!

“[Seal of the High Profound Dragon]!”

Long Chen was now completely taken with the idea of using movement techniques in conjunction with martial techniques. After using [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step], he could truly display his offensive martial techniques freely!

As Proctor Shi missed his attack, he was immediately overwhelmed by Long Chen's Human Dan Realm pressure. And facing such a fast, tyrannical and unexpected martial technique, Proctor Shi felt greatly alarmed, and his face showed a frenzied expression!

But within this frenzy was also a hint of panic and fear!

This dragon seal hit Proctor Shi squarely on his body, when he had just turned around and he was unable to defend properly!

Even though it was only an advanced Huang grade martial technique, but with such tyrannical force behind, it still caused Proctor Shi to spit out a mouthful of blood. His large frame crashed through a couple of dried up trees, landing heavily onto the ground as he drew his last breath!

The time between Long Chen revealing his Human Dan Realm cultivation and Proctor Shi's death was merely two breaths of time!

Li Yan's face grew slack. His eyes stared blankly at the youth as his teeth start to chatter.

It had taken some time before he recovered as he drew a fresh breath and praised, "This youth certainly is an abnormal existence. His previous act, I couldn't see through it at all..."

Proctor Shi's death was naturally seen by Huang Feiyang and Proctor Qin, who were still battling each other.

Long Chen's fight would basically determine the result of their fight as well. These two had been evenly matched until now. They were just waiting for the conclusion of Long Chen's fight.

But the strange thing was that both Huang Feiyang and Proctor Qin had hoped that the one to perish would be Long Chen.

To Proctor Qin, Long Chen's death meant that Proctor Shi could rush over and help to kill Huang Feiyang.

To Huang Feiyang, the death of Long Chen was his main objective. Regarding the issue of Proctor Qin and Proctor Shi's combined assault, Huang Feiyang had ways to deal with it. In the worst case, he would be able to last until Wen Ya returned!

But no one could imagine that Long Chen would turn the tables on them, using a sudden burst of power to eliminate Proctor Shi in under two breaths time!

This sudden turn of events caused Huang Feiyang's face to twitch. His careful plan, to borrow a knife to get rid of Long Chen, turned out like this instead. It made him want to vomit blood.

Currently, Long Chen had disposed of his opponent and glanced at him with a smile on his face. Seeing Long Chen's smiling face, Huang Feiyang was so angry he could explode.

"I originally intended to use others to dispose of you, but you kept provoking me time and time again! Long Chen, don't blame me for being ruthless, blame yourself for courting death!"

"If the Lady Enforcer wants to conduct an investigation I'll simply deny everything. I don't believe that my years of service won't be equal to the worth of a fledgling like you!"

Blood vessels laced Huang Feiyang's eyes!

Upon seeing Long Chen eliminating Proctor Shi, Proctor Qin's face was filled with shock. Proctor Shi was an important part of the original plan. He would never have guessed that Proctor Shi, with whom he had roamed the world with for half his life, would fall before a fledgling!

“Old Shi!”

Looking at Long Chen, Proctor Qin's eyes also turned red!

He didn't know of the previous conflict between Long Chen and Huang Feiyang. If he wanted to take revenge, he must first flee. The most important thing right now was to defeat Huang Feiyang!

Once Proctor Shi died, Proctor Qin roared fiercely and assaulted Huang Feiyang wildly. He fought without regard for his life!

From the beginning Huang Feiyang hadn't fought seriously and now his plan of using Crimson Blood Sacred Sect to get rid of Long Chen was ruined. Adding his rage, he planned to dispose of this annoying Proctor Qin as soon as possible!

“Old fool, you're courting death!”

Huang Feiyang's voice contained a trace of chill.

Proctor Qin was like a madman and pressed towards Huang Feiyang with a barrage of attacks!

“The one courting death is you!”

Everything was on course until the Lingwu family butted in, and the bottom line was that Proctor Qin was pissed off by this!

Huang Feiyang was even more pissed because he had seen Long Chen killing Proctor Shi. His eyes turned serious and said, “What a troublesome fellow, I’ll let you taste our Huang Family strongest secret art, [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]!”

[Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] was originally displayed by Huang Xiang against Long Chen, but that [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] was completely defeated by Long Chen’s [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist]!

Huang Feiyang was at the Initial Stage of Human Dan Realm, the power of his [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] compared to Huang Xiang’s was ten times more powerful!

Suddenly a force exploded outwards like a grenade. An ethereal wheel of black and white covered in runes began to rotate around Huang Feiyang with great speed as it vibrated.

Immediately the entire forest started to shake!

Seeing a technique this powerful, Proctor Qin’s complexion changed. In Long Chen’s eyes the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect might be a big player, but compared to Huang Feiyang’s family, it paled in comparison!

Being targeted by such a majestic and violent [Heavenly Wheel of Life and

Death], Proctor Qin realized that he had no way to defend against it!

“Young talents from the Lingwu Family are indeed nothing the likes of us could hold a candle to.”

Facing this situation where fleeing meant death but fighting might give one a chance, a veteran like Proctor Qin, naturally knew what to do.

Crimson Blood Sacred Sect was originally a place filled with bloodshed. Within the sect, everyone was fierce and cruel. Proctor Qin being able to reach this position meant that he wasn't a pushover!

“You want me dead? I won't let you off that easily either! [Hurricane Soaring Eagle Strike]!”

The two tremendous forces collided, but Proctor Qin was still the weaker of them as he was smashed into the ground by Huang Feiyang!

Huang Feiyang with his face locked in a cold expression and his eyes filled with pride as he charged over and ended Proctor Qin's life. Then he turned his expression on Long Chen.

“Did you get impatient from waiting? It's your turn now!”

91 - Battling against Huang Feiyang!

The fight didn't go on for very long, as Long Chen unexpectedly defeated Proctor Shi. This was way beyond Li Yan's expectations!

Following that, Huang Feiyang had displayed an unbelievable strength to dispose of Proctor Qin. Li Yan was shocked into a daze!

Their side's two most powerful leaders were disposed of in an instant by the Lingwu Family. Li Yan knew immediately that they were done for.

Adding Wen Ya, who was at the initial mastery stage of Human Dan Realm, those Dragon Pulse Realm practitioners could do nothing more than stall for time. Once that time was up, they would all be finished.

Hence, this time, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect would be destroyed to the last man!

Li Yan was startled out of his fear-induced stupor, as he remembered that this might be a good time to run away.

However, it was like Long Chen could guess his train of thought. Under Huang Feiyang's immense pressure, he turned his head towards Li Yan and said with a sneer, "If you deviate by even half a step, I can promise you won't live past today. Stay put, and I promise that nothing will happen to you."

Even though Long Chen's tone was pleasant, it contained a strength within that couldn't be resisted. Li Yan wanted to leave but thinking about what Long

Chen said, his feet felt like they were nailed to the ground and unable to budge.

“From their conversation, I can guess that these two will fight to the death. If I were to attempt to leave now, one of them might step out to kill me. I’ll stay right here, and when they have both sustained injuries, there might still be a chance for me!”

However, seeing how strong Huang Feiyang was, Li Yan felt unsure.

“Even though this youngster’s talent isn’t bad, he’s too young and a lot inferior to that other youth. Doesn’t staking my life on him seem a bit stupid?”

These two were just about to engage in combat. Even though Li Yan felt conflicted in his heart, he still decided to stay and observe.

At this instance, Huang Feiyang, who just killed Proctor Qin, carried a scent of blood as he charged towards Long Chen.

“Oh? Your true intent is revealed in the end. You want to personally deal with this matter?”

Long Chen carried an expression of nonchalance, as he seemed to smile but yet was not. He wasn’t afraid in the slightest.

“Just because you managed to defeat a Human Dan Realm practitioner by a stroke of luck, you want to act arrogant in front of me?”

Huang Feiyang’s cold gaze didn’t change at all. In his mind, Li Yan was just a

nobody, and since there wasn't anyone around, he smiled coldly and said, "Long Chen, during this assignment you were killed by the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect's Proctor Shi, and I avenged you by killing both Proctor Qin and Proctor Shi. What do you think of this explanation?"

"It's quite bad. If a retard was to have come up with an explanation, it would have been something like that."

"What?"

Gnashing his teeth in anger, Huang Feiyang's aura kept increasing. His anger and aura reached their maximum at about eighteen meters from Long Chen.

"I must confess that in recent years, you have been the only one to be able to anger me to such a degree. Long Chen, dying by my hands should be considered an honor!"

Huang Feiyang would let other people know that he had eliminated Long Chen. That was why he needed to kill Long Chen as soon as possible!

Previously, it had only taken these two a small amount of time to kill the Protectors of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. Without much time having passed, Huang Feiyang was not advancing towards Long Chen!

"Profound grade Martial Technique, [Wheel Of Radiance]!"

Compare to Huang Xiang, even if it was only a [Wheel Of Radiance] Huang Feiyang's version would have been more proficient and stronger!

Suddenly, the whole forest was filled with flying debris. Sand and leaves whistled in the air as they sped towards Long Chen. The giant flashing wheel under Huang Feiyang's control was hurled towards Long Chen. The trees in the way were all ground into sawdust!

"Still this kind of attack, how boring..."

Long Chen sneered. Even though Huang Feiyang was a couple of times faster than Proctor Shi, compared to Long Chen, he was still far too slow.

He used [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step], and suddenly, a crimson silhouette that looked like a real dragon appeared. Moving in an erratic pattern, it instantly appeared under the [Wheel Of Radiance] and brushed past Huang Feiyang!

When Long Chen dodged Proctor Shi, Huang Feiyang was originally really surprised. Unexpectedly, he had even dodged his attack. This literally meant that Long Chen's mastery of the Profound grade [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] was infinitely nearing perfection!

"How could this be? He received this Technique no more than five days ago!"

Huang Feiyang was starting to display a shocked expression; the haughty youth in front of him was causing him to feel fear.

The fact that Long Chen had only dodged put him more at ease, but he still couldn't find peace in his heart.

“He can only dodge! It seems like he doesn’t have a way to deal with the move that killed Proctor Qin! He won’t be able to dodge that technique, so maybe it’s time for me to escape!”

Li Yan was extremely anxious, like a cat on a hot tin roof.

“If I escape now, will they take their time to kill me? That youth probably won’t let me leave in one piece, but that other kid probably would!”

As Li Yan was pondering this over, Long Chen was calculating the time. According to his calculations, Wen Ya should have been returning by now. While he was thinking, Huang Feiyang turned around with charged over with a malicious smile!

“Windy Cloud Skill, [Battle Sprite Finger Technique]!”

“[Seal of the High Profound Dragon]!”

This attack from Long Chen forced Huang Feiyang into a draw. Originally, Huang Feiyang thought Long Chen had only possessed the ability to dodge, but this move earned Long Chen some respect!

“He used to be at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, so why is he now a Human Dan Realm practitioner? Only depending on a corpse from a Profound Grade Demon Beast wouldn’t be enough! Could it be that he hid his true abilities during the Lingwu Family’s member selection?!”

“It doesn’t matter, you’ll still have to die today!”

As he stared at Long Chen with an unwavering gaze, Huang Feiyang knew that time was running short. As he was controlling the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death], he thought to himself, “Even though he is in the Human Dan Realm, since he hasn’t captured the soul of that Profound Grade Demonic Beast, he won’t be a threat to me!”

Both of them wanted to finish off their opponent as fast as possible, so the result was clear. As Huang Feiyang used his [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death], Long Chen revolved his [Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step] to circle around Huang Feiyang, while preparing an even more powerful attack!

Seeing Long Chen’s body emitting an illusionary flame while his two eyes turned into two balls of flame. Huang Feiyang’s current [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] no longer held the previous imposing aura.

“Thinking of using the attack that defeated Little Xiang on me? Hmph! I was just about to settle this score on his behalf. Let’s see if your attack is stronger, or if my Huang Family’s [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] is more tyrannical!

[Devil82 TLN: 阿翔 (Ah Xiang) in raw is a title of endearment, ergo I choose “little” instead]

This scene was almost identical to the one between Long Chen and Huang Xiang, but the opponent, this time, was simply much more powerful.

The cause of this commotion was likewise of a bigger scale than the previous one.

As Li Yan stupidly watched from the sidelines, he got the feeling that Long Chen wasn't a bit inferior to Huang Feiyang. This made his mouth dry and unable to speak!

He could already guess the relationship between these two to a certain degree. It seemed that Huang Feiyang had planned to murder this genius, but Huang Feiyang had never expected that in this instant, Long Chen had already grown to such a degree that he was his equal!

As he used the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] for the second time, Long Chen felt like this time, his Qi was combusting his Human Dan, and the inside of his Dantian was likewise burning with a crimson blaze. The Qi that exploded forth carried a scorching heat as it roared from within his body!

“This is a martial technique that was left behind by that mysterious man in the fire; even though it's only an intermediate profound grade technique, it must be special!

Currently, Long Chen looked like an entity made of fire, and the temperature in the surroundings kept rising. On the other side, Huang Feiyang's [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death] was filled with runes, as it was used once again!

Huang Feiyang was filled with killing intent, the corners of his mouth hinting a cold sneer. Suddenly, his silhouette shot towards Long Chen like an arrow!

“Long Chen, die! [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]!”

“Really?”

Long Chen laughed indifferently. All the Qi in his body rises up to an extreme point. He squinted his eyes as all his power converged into a single point. He punched out with an yell!

“[Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist], [Scarlet Flame Burns the Sky]!”

A fist and wheel collided. The amount of Qi Long Chen currently had at his disposal was about 100 times more than compared to the last time. Originally, the amount of Qi Long Chen had was his weak point, but now, it was considered his strong point!

Ten times the amount of his past Qi was already on par with Huang Feiyang!

Long Chen's strong point was his [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist], an intermediate level Profound grade martial technique. As it was being used right now, the amount of power exploding forth was more powerful than before by a factor of 100!

Inside the image of that scarlet red fist, a faintly discernible face suddenly appeared. In that instant, the face swallowed the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death]. A tyrannical force audibly slammed into Huang Feiyang!

Seeing the [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death], which he believed to be an unmatched technique, disabled just like that, Huang Feiyang's eyes bulged out from shock, threatening to fall out at any moment!

[Devil82 TLN:Chinese lit one's eyes bulge from chock. In western lit, one's jaw

hits the floor]

“Impossible, how could his attack be this powerful! Even if it was an intermediate level Profound grade martial technique, he wouldn’t be able to defeat me!”

Huang Feiyang couldn’t believe his own eyes. In this critical moment, he wanted to dodge, but it was a shame that the [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] was simply too terrifying. In that instant in which Huang Feiyang was stunned from shock, he had already been swallowed by the attack, and burned to crisp!

Huang Feiyang let out an earthshaking and blood curling scream and died. Even in death his eyes was wide open, with an expression like he couldn’t believe it!

“Impossible...”

This was his only thought, just before he died.

When both of them faced off, Long Chen was uninjured, yet Huang Feiyang lost his life.

Li Yan look upon this whole thing with a stupid expression. He thought that he was dreaming, and only after pinching himself did he realize that everything was indeed real.

“Dear heavens, this kid is really heaven-defying...”

Li Yan immediately shut his mouth and didn't dare to say anything else.

As Long Chen turned his head around, Li Yan felt his scalp go numb. However, Long Chen only stated simply, "It looks like you are quite tactful..."

Afterwards, he didn't bother with Li Yan, and in an extremely short time span, put Huang Feiyang, Proctor Qin, and Proctor Shi's bodies into his Cosmos Pouch. As he stashed away Huang Feiyang's corpse, he took the time to spit on it.

"Want to kill me? You deserved how you ended up!"

At this moment, a sound broke the silence, and Long Chen knew that the ruckus earlier had alerted Wen Ya!

Chapter 92 – The Crimson Blood Revelation

Just as Long Chen collected Huang Feiyang's and the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect's two Great Proctors corpses and did a simple cleanup of the site, Wen Ya arrived with a bleak expression.

Seeing the place was a mess and only Long Chen was present, Wen Ya immediately felt that something was amiss. He locked gazes with Long Chen, and asked in a cold voice, "Where is Huang Feiyang?"

Long Chen put on an act of pure innocence and said, "Those two old farts couldn't defeat Huang Feiyang so they left in a hurry. Huang Feiyang just left chasing after them, you seem to be a bit late."

Wen Ya creased his eyebrows and remained gloomy as he looked at Long Chen.

"Wasn't he planning to use others to kill Long Chen? Did it fail? Based on Huang Feiyang's temperament, since his target is Long Chen, he wouldn't simply chase after them unless something unexpected happened?"

Wen Ya looked around suspiciously and said in a cold voice, "Why is there such a mess here? There is even the smell of flame. I just heard a huge commotion over here but only you are left. What really happened?"

Even if Wen Ya spent the whole day guessing, he would have never thought that Long Chen had killed them all and even stored them inside his Cosmos Pouch.

At this moment, Wen Ya noticed Li Yan. His gaze turned icy cold as he advanced upon him one step at a time and said in a frigid tone, "Tell me, what really happened here? If you value your life, you better tell the truth!"

Long Chen also looked at Li Yan, with a faint smile. Even though his eyes didn't carry a hint of a threat, Li Yan knew that if he was angered he will become a true god of massacre.

Looking at Wen Ya's icy expression and then over to the nonchalant Long Chen. Li Yan already decided what to do. He immediately put on the appearance of being extremely frightened and said, "Re... Reporting to this Lord. Previously that other Lord was too powerful and our two Proctors couldn't handle him so they could only run away. That's when the other Lord pursued them!"

What Li Yan said was the same as Long Chen, this made Wen Ya's furrow his brows even deeper.

In the end, he believed their stories but the result made him a bit suspicious.

"I don't know what that Huang Feiyang is up to, the plan was to kill Long Chen but then he chased after them alone. I really can't figure it out..."

"Senior Brother Wen, shouldn't we chase after them?"

Long Chen suddenly asked.

Wen Ya looked over Long Chen closely, but no matter how he looked, he couldn't see a hint of deceit.

“Huang Feiyang’s goal was Long Chen, I’ll just have to guard him for now. Since he has that powerful martial technique [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death], he should be fine.”

With that in mind, Wen Ya shook his head and said, “No need to give chase. You can help me rescue those women, regarding the other people, just kill them...”

When Li Yan heard that they were to kill him, he immediately looked over to Long Chen who was the one who saved him from Huang Feiyang. Indeed, Long Chen said fearlessly, “Senior Brother Wen, they are members of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. I have an enmity with them. If we leave one alive we could interrogate him about information regarding the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. I hope Senior Brother Wen will give me this chance!”

“Crimson Blood Sacred Sect?”

Wen Ya never heard of it before, but since Long Chen put it like that, he wouldn’t bother to make things difficult just because of an insignificant small fry.

The principal aggressor against Long Chen was Huang Feiyang, and since Huang Feiyang wasn’t present, Wen Ya couldn’t act on Feiyang’s behalf. He could only guard Long Chen and do nothing more.

“Keep up.”

Speaking tonelessly, Wen Ya headed back towards the inside of the cave. He only had time to take care of those subordinates and didn’t rescue those

women. Since Huang Feiyang hasn't returned he will have to rescue those women and complete the assignment.

Seeing that Long Chen was following Wen Ya, Li Yan hurried to stand up, looked at Long Chen with dismay and followed obediently behind Long Chen.

"I'll ask you some questions and you must answer honestly."

Li Yan answered immediately, "Yes, understood!"

With his obedience Long Chen felt a relief. Originally Liu Lan had already given him some information on the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, but after this assignment, Long Chen no longer trusted Liu Lan.

One could immediately tell that this Li Yan was a pushover, so Long Chen probed him with a question, "I want to locate a Proctor of your Crimson Blood Sacred Sect named Xue Yuanzi. Do you know his whereabouts?"

This question of Long Chen was extremely cleverly formulated. Even if the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect knew that Xue Yuanzi was killed by the Yang Family of the Poplar Town they still couldn't link it to Long Chen. If they didn't know, nothing would be revealed either.

Indeed, Li Yan answered quickly, "Proctor Xue Yuanzi has been missing for over a month, we have no idea where he is now, and may I know why the Lord asks?"

Long Chen sneered and said, "Of course, it is to kill him"

He followed up with, “I’ll ask you another question, why did the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect catch this many young women, what’s the motive?”

He felt that since this operation was of such a large scale, something must be up.

Since he could sense traces of blood inside their Qi, Long Chen felt that something weird was going on.

Being asked this question, Li Yan furrowed his brows. He looked at Long Chen with an awkward expression and stalled without answering the question.

“You keen on dying?”

Long Chen’s voice was like magic as it entered Li Yan’s ears. Li Yan started to quiver and answered immediately, “I’ll tell, I’ll tell, but you must promise to forgive me!”

Long Chen nodded and said, “Relax, I won’t break my promise to rubbish like you.”

With Long Chen’s promise at hand, Li Yan proceeded and said, “Our Sect Master has an unusual method of cultivation. He likes to use numerous women’s Primordial Yin blood to form a blood basin...”

“Our disciples of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect will cultivate inside this basin and would gain blood essence Qi. The nature of this blood essence Qi is twice as good as ordinary Qi. This is a very strong method! Since our last blood basin was used up, Sect Master decided to hold a blood offering ceremony to refill the

blood basin. That's why we are capturing these women..."

After hearing this Long Chen was silent for a long time.

.....

Primordial Yin Blood is simply the blood of virgin women. If one want to construct a blood basin large enough for the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect to cultivate within, the number of women they need to kill must exceed a thousand...

Long Chen pursed his lips as he thought of those poor people from the Emerald Jade House.

Before, he used to have some friends there. They were people forced there due to poverty. They learned some literature and art and barely managed to get by. He didn't think that they would die so miserably.

Besides it wasn't just them who experienced this wretched death.

After listening to this Long Chen's breathing became ragged.

Seeing Long Chen's condition Li Yan was scared out of his mind and asked, "Lord, have you finished your interrogations? May I leave now?"

Long Chen finally responded, as he lifted his head Li Yan found to his dismay that Long Chen's eyes were now laced with crimson blood vessels.

“You’ve also taken a bath in the blood basin right?”

Long Chen’s cold gaze made Li Yan’s complexion turn pale. As he was about to declare his innocence Long Chen has already struck with a fist him upon his forehead. That hit burst his head open and sent him face-up through the air. After he struck the ground, he no longer moved!

“He deserved death! Long Chen, good job killing him. These kind of evildoers are simply heartless and deranged. The heavens will smite them! They will receive punishment by both heaven and earth. They will never enter into the cycle of rebirth again!”

Hearing about the blood offering ceremony, Ling Xi, being a young woman, was even more enraged than Long Chen!

Long Chen had never seen the kind hearted and cute Ling Xi being this ruthless before!

“I never imagined that in this world there existed a place so dark that you sacrificed other people just to gain strength. This so-called Sect Leader of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and all his followers, must die!”

By the end, Ling Xi started to sob uncontrollably. For someone like her who grew up in bliss and happiness, she could never imagine that there would be such evil people, doing these kinds of heartless things!

Even though he broke his promised and killed Li Yan, he didn’t feel even an ounce of regret. Seeing Ling Xi this upset also made him feel quite sad.

“I know. As long as I gain power, I would never allow people and factions like these to exist...”

With Long Chen’s guarantee, Ling Xi felt better as she said encouragingly, “I’ll be rooting for you, it’s better to stop them before that blood offering ceremony. If you let that many young women die, I’ll never forgive you!”

“I, this father, knows what to do, and besides if they realise that I’ve killed two of their Proctors, even if I don’t find them, they will come looking for me! Little Xi, the enmity that exists between the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and me is irreconcilable!”

“That’s good.”

Before, when Long Chen asked Li Yan some questions, Wen Ya walked out and only faintly heard Long Chen asking questions, afterwards, he stopped paying attention. He never imagined that within a couple of breaths time Li Yan would be beaten into a pulp and sent flying upside down!

Turning around to see the miserable state of Li Yan, Wen Ya’s forehead formed a deep crease.

“As soon as he finished his interrogation and the man lost his value, this Long Chen decided to kill him off? This kind of cruelty, if Huang Feiyang doesn’t kill him, with Long Chen’s talent Huang Feiyang will be in deep trouble. But at this crucial moment, where did he go?”

Inside the deep cavern, Wen Ya rescued a dozen pale and crying maidens. Since the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect only needed their Primordial Yin Blood,

they didn't suffer any indignities.

The urgent look Li Yan originally gave Long Chen must stem from these girls, which Li Yan could see but not touch which made his desires uncontrollable.

Rescuing these many women, the mission for Yan Luo Town could be considered completed. The strange thing was that Huang Feiyang still hasn't returned. Wen Ya waited until the sky turned dark. They couldn't stay in this East Yan Mountains any longer. That's when Wen Ya decided to head down the mountains.

"When he returns he probably will head directly towards Yan Luo Town, I really can't figure out what happened that was that unexpected..."

Chapter 93 - Wan'er

Huang Feiyang, the two Great Proctors of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sects, Li Yan, and the rest had already died. The only people left were Long Chen, Wen Ya and the girls from Yan Luo Town.

Presently, all the women had already started to recover. Every single one of them look upon Wen Ya with reverence and even adoration in their eyes, as it had been Wen Ya who had rescued them from the claws of those devils.

[Devil82 TLN: Devils is referring to the people of Crimson Blood Sacred Sect]

As for Long Chen, he had not attacked in front of these young girls, so they naturally did not notice him.

“We don’t know when Huang Feiyang will be back and it’s getting late, so let’s return to Yan Luo Town first.”

Presently, Wen Ya’s brows were deeply furrowed. It had been such a long time since Huang Feiyang had gone. Could something have happened to him? However, he could not leave yet, and on top of that, in this boundless mountains, how was he to search for him?

A large crowd of people spilled down the mountains.

Wen Ya walked ahead by himself. The women saw that Long Chen seemed a lot more approachable so they hurried forth and asked, “Lord, are you from the Ling Wu Family?”

Long Chen had disposed of Huang Feiyang and managed to fool Wen Ya, which put him in a very good mood. At the sight of so many beautiful ladies surrounding him, he said in a complacent manner, “Of course, only us from the Ling Wu Family would be able to rescue you with such ease!”

“Wow...”

Long Chen was young and Wen Ya wasn’t that old either and were exactly what these young maidens fantasized heroes to be like. While there was still fear lingering in their minds after the ordeal, they were able to recover very quickly.

“That man in front must be your Senior Brother right? Did he rescue us?”

“Your Senior Brother must be a super expert from the Ling Wu Family, right?”

Facing these questions, Long Chen answered with pride, “Of course, Senior Brother Wen Ya is famous amongst the Ling Wu Family. Countless young maidens have a crush on him, so if you’re interested, you’d better make your move now!”

Long Chen made these young women bashful as they blushed and cursed at him jokingly.

Not even halfway to their destination, Yan Beitian had already brought some experts from Yan Luo Town and were searching anxiously within the Easter Yan Mountain. At the sight of Wen Ya and a bunch of young women, everyone’s faces were filled with joy as they began to cheer.

Yan Beitian could immediately spot that his daughter was safe and sound. He rushed forward and knelt in front of Wen Ya, shedding tears of gratitude as he spoke, “Today, the Ling Wu Family helped Yan Luo Town settle this huge catastrophe. Whether as a Town Master or as a father, I am eternally grateful to you three-two Lords!”

“Yes! Yes! If you have any requests, whether big or small, we will do our utmost to accomplish it!”

Yan Beitian didn’t see Huang Feiyang but he saw Long Chen, who was surrounded by a circle of women. He frowned inwardly as Wen Ya coldly signaled him to stand.

“Lord, we’ve prepared a feast and hope that you will humble us with your presence...”

Huang Feiyang was nowhere to be seen and Wen Ya was in no mood to join any feasts. He waved his hand impatiently and replied, “All of you should return first. I still have some matters to deal with, so just cancel this feast.”

Wen Ya’s tone was resolute. This puzzled the experts of Yan Luo Town as they glanced amongst themselves. They could not understand Wen Ya’s bad mood. Was this mission not a success?

Wen Yan had not realized the seriousness of this matter previously. He only assumed that with Huang Feiyang’s [Heavenly Wheel of Life and Death], it was

obvious that he would be able to return safely.

However, a long time has passed, indicating that Huang Feiyang might actually be in trouble. He couldn't be bothered with guarding Long Chen now since Huang Feiyang's life was much more important than killing Long Chen.

Turning around, Wen Ya said coldly, "Long Chen, wait here at Yan Luo Town. Once Huang Feiyang and I return, we shall return to Yuan Ling City together!"

Long Chen nodded promptly.

Wen Ya observed this youth for a while, noticing his indifference towards the situation as if Huang Feiyang's life and death didn't matter to him. However, that was to be expected, so he could not find fault with him.

Without further ado, Wen Ya left the crowd behind and ventured deeper into Easter Yan Mountain!

Meanwhile, everyone including Yan Beitian was looking at Long Chen. Seeing that Long Chen had a relaxed and gentle expression, Yan Beitian asked cautiously as they were returning to Yan Luo Town, "My Lord, may I know what's going on with those other two Lords?"

Long Chen continued with his previous lie and answered, "Senior Brother Wen Ya rescued the women, while Senior Brother Huang and I battled the two Human Dan Realm Proctors. They realised they were not a match for us and fled. Senior Brother Huang chased after them and still has yet to return. Seeing that waiting here is not going to help, Senior Brother Wen Ya must have returned to look for him!"

Yan Beitian and the rest finally understood why they had not seen Huang Feiyang.

The entire group headed down the mountains. The young women found their families and didn't linger around Long Chen. Long Chen walked alone in front, relieved that he had gotten rid of Huang Feiyang.

"Next, I can focus my attention on dealing with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. I'm just unsure if my lie will hold when I get back to the Ling Wu Family."

Thinking about Liu Lan, the beautiful but crazy woman, Long Chen did not have

the confidence that he could fool her.

Amongst the crowd of people, Yan Beitian was quietly observing this youth. Within his eyes contained a trace of amazement and seriousness.

Before, at the Town Master's residence, Yang Beitian had been able to sense Huang Feiyang killing intent towards Long Chen. He had surmised that after arriving at the East Yan Mountains, Huang Feiyang would try to kill Long Chen.

But the situation right now was that Long Chen had returned without a scratch, while Huang Feiyang was missing.

Thinking back to what Long Chen had said, Wen Ya was completely oblivious to what had transpired between Long Chen and Huang Feiyang. That meant that Long Chen was able to fabricate the truth as he liked.

Even though Yan Beitian looked simple and honest, but he had lived for a long time and had much of experience. He could be said to be a crafty, wily old fox. Wen Ya might not be able to see through lies, but that didn't mean he was unable to.

"This youth is indeed beyond my expectations. I'm afraid that Huang Feiyang might already be dead."

While he had these thoughts, Yan Beitian wasn't stupid enough to voice it. He clearly knew who he should be wary of, which was why had not done anything to Long Chen.

"Daddy, why do you keep staring at that guy?"

Beside Yan Beitian, a beautiful girl around 14 years age, asked curiously.

Yan Beitian looked over at his daughter, who he had recently been reunited with, with a sorrowful look on his face. Suddenly inspired, he exclaimed, "Wan'er, that guy is an unrivaled genius. Do you believe Dad?"

[TL note: "er" is a term of endearment added to a person's name to express fondness or adoration.]

This young girl called Wan'er looked at Long Chen with doubt and said, "I think that the other Senior should be stronger. He's the one who rescued us! Look, he's so handsome, while this one is just so-so. Seeing him being so agreeable

with his Senior Brother, I don't believe he could be that strong..."

Yan Beitian burst out laughing.

"This little guy is extremely talented. His personality is ruthless and knows when to conceal his strength. His future could only be described as unmeasurable..."

Of course, Yan Beitian could only utter these words in his heart. Originally, he too had been fooled by Long Chen's act, but after figuring out the real Long Chen, he started to feel a slight fear in his heart.

They soon arrived back at the Town Master Residence. Since Wen Ya hadn't returned, Yan Beitian had no reason to proceed with the feast. After receiving Long Chen with a grand ceremony, Long Chen found some excuse to return.

Huang Feiyang and the others' bodies were still inside his Cosmos Pouch. If he did not take care of this immediately, it would forever be a weight bearing upon his mind.

Long Chen swiftly exited Yan Luo Town and he found a desolate place to burn Huang Feiyang and the others bodies to ashes. He got rid of all evidence.

"Huang Feiyang's Cosmos Pouch was destroyed by my [Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist] but the items belonging to the two Great Proctors were left intact. How convenient for me."

After Long Chen bought the Spirit Recovery Fruit, he was left with only one piece of Deity Jade. What he needed the most right now was Deity Jades.

Rummaging through the two Great Proctors' Cosmos Pouches, Long Chen acquired 135 pieces of Deity Jade. This was the largest sum he had ever been in possession of.

As for the items inside the Cosmos Pouch, such as Huang Grade medicine, skills, and some other junk, Long Chen had no use for them and emptied the pouches.

They weren't worth a lot of money to a Deity Dan Realm cultivator, but Long Chen had other uses for them.

"I think that little lass, Ling Qing, will like this. Girls always carry a lot of things

around and it would be simply too inconvenient to be without this.”

After returning to Town Master Residence, Long Chen began started to cultivate, and only until it was deep into the night that Wen Ya appeared before Long Chen, his expression filled with anxiety and confusion. He looked coldly at Long Chen and asked, “Long Chen, can you guarantee that what you said before was true?”

Long Chen’s gaze turn cold as he answered, “What do you mean by this? Are you suspecting that I lied to you? How funny. Do you think I have the ability to kill Huang Feiyang and the two Great Proctors? You seem to think a little too highly of me.”

Wen Ya knew that this was impossible, but Huang Feiyang had vanished without a trace. He had combed through the Eastern Yan mountains thoroughly but there were no traces of them. How was that possible?

“Could it be that he was killed by the Crimson Blood Sacred sect and they burnt the bodies to cover their tracks?”

Wen Ya was on the right tracks about how the bodies had been burnt, but he had not pinpointed the right culprit.

He was clear about Long Chen’s strength. He was merely at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. It was impossible for him to be able to kill 3 people of the Human Dan Realm.

“It doesn’t matter if you speak the truth. Once we return to the Ling Wu Family everything will be clear. There isn’t anyone who could pull a fast one in front of Enforcer Liu. If you tricked me, you’d better prepare for punishments! If Huang Feiyang does not return in three days, we shall leave for the Ling Wu Family!”

After saying these, Wen Ya left.

The words he spoke had spooked Long Chen. Long Chen knew he was no match for Liu Lan and didn’t know how to deal with her.

“What’s so scary about that stupid woman? Just give me two more Spirit Recovery Fruits and I’ll be able to unleash all my powers and finish her off. Hmph!!”

Liu Lan had flirted with Long Chen in the past, which had resulted in Ling Xi detesting her.

“The Deity Jades we have right now is only enough to buy a single Spirit Recovery Fruit...”

Three days passed quickly. On this day, Long Chen and Wen Ya were seen off by the people of Yan Luo Town. They left Yan Luo County and headed back for the Ling Wu Family.

Long Chen still had no idea of the dangers lying in wait for him.

Sky Martial Realm Competition!

While riding on top of the Wind Rendering Spirit Roc, his mood was similar to when he had first arrived.

Before, he was much too weak and had no idea how to deal with Huang Feiyang's thirst for his blood. Now, he still had insufficient strength and had no idea how to deal with Liu Lan.

Their assignment this time had resulted in an unfortunate accident, causing Wen Ya to feel uneasy. There was little he could do other than let the Lady Enforcer handle everything.

The Wind Rendering Spirit Roc arrived swiftly at Yuanling City. It hovered over Ling Wu City before descending into the backyard of the Green Willow Residence, which belonged to the Green Sun Branch. Gan Lin was already waiting there.

News of the incident at Yan Luo Town had already spread back to the Green Willow Residence. That was how Gan Lin knew that amongst the people who returned, there was Long Chen but no Huang Feiyang.

Seeing this relaxed youth, Gan Lin sighted inwardly in admiration but also with concern. He told Long Chen, "This kind of travel must be taxing on you. I'm sure you're tired, so you'd better return to your residence. If there are any events you are required to attend, I will contact you."

Long Chen nodded as he thanked Gan Lin, and then turned to leave. He knew that Wen Ya would be brought in front of Enforcer Liu for questioning.

No matter what, they were still Long Chen's examiners.

"That bastard will probably give me the lowest evaluation."

But this didn't matter to Long Chen. If he really was talented and proved his worth in future battles, there was no need to worry too much about the evaluation.

Returning to his residence, Long Chen sorted out his gear and travel goods. He suddenly noticed his identity badge and scanned it, noting with surprise that his contribution points had increased to 30.

“I simply completed one assignment and received 30 contribution points. I wonder how the Ling Wu Family price their items with these contribution points! I hope they’re easier to use than Deity Jades...”

Time passed swiftly as he bantered with Ling Xi. As night descended, Long Chen prepared to cultivate and Ling Xi began to pout, putting on a face of disapproval as she said, “That stinking woman is looking for you again!”

“Is it Liu Lan?”

Long Chen stood up, ready to face that woman. To him, this was the same as a battle.

If he was only a tiny bit careless, he might die at this woman’s hands.

Absorbing Ling Xi back into Lingxi Sword, Long Chen went to open the door. Unexpectedly, just as he opened the door, he felt a threatening aura that headed straight for his throat!

Long Chen was convinced that if he didn’t use all his might, he would surely die on the spot!

“This woman is clearly measuring my martial prowess, but I didn’t imagine she would be so ruthless. I’m afraid that if I were still stuck at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm, death by her hands is certain!”

At that instance, Long Chen’s complexion changed as he exuded the qi of a Human Dan Realm cultivator. Only then did he barely manage to fend off Liu Lan’s sudden attack, and even then, this had shaken him to the core and cause his blood to boil, forcing him several steps backwards!

As he was forced to retreat, Liu Lan walked in as if nothing had happened. She fixed her eyes on Long Chen as she smiled flirtatiously and closed the door softly.

“So you managed to enter the Human Dan Realm...”

She stepped forth with rosy cheeks and an alluring body. As she approached Long Chen, a waft of alluring body fragrance assailed his nostrils.

As she licked her red lips provocatively, she glanced at Long Chen in a way that screamed ‘come here and do me!’

But Long Chen wasn’t enticed since he knew of the ways of this woman. If one

fell for her tricks, one might die without even knowing how it had happened.

Long Chen's hairs stood at its ends as he backpedaled and looked over Liu Lan indifferently.

"Is there a reason to why Lady Enforcer is looking for me?"

Seeing Long Chen's expression, Liu Yan laughed faintly in her heart and said in a flirtatious manner, "What do you think? A man and a woman, alone in the middle of the night with passion in the air. What else could happen..."

[TLN: in the raw (干柴烈火) literally mean an encounter between dry firewood and a flame and comes from 《红楼梦》- Dream of the Red Chamber created by Cao Xueqin in the Qing Dynasty. I used passion in the air instead.]

Her erotic ways stirred a fire within Long Chen, but he knew that this powerful Enforcer Liu was that kind of woman that one could see but never touch.

"Lady Enforcer, please conduct yourself with dignity."

Long Chen spoke like a gentleman.

Seeing Long Chen's awkward expression as he tried to uphold his own righteousness, Liu Lan burst out a giggle. Her smile was like the wild swaying of flower branches, a pair of jade white figures constantly jiggling in front of Long Chen's eyes, thus dazzling him. All of a sudden, Liu Lan had on a half-smile that made it difficult for one to discern whether she was actually smiling or not. She looked at Long Chen and said, "You actually managed to get rid of Huang Feiyang. Not bad."

Suddenly hearing this statement from Liu Lan, Long Chen was scared into silence. However, seeing that this woman didn't seem to be angry, he calmed down.

"You don't need to deny it, I already know that Huang Feiyang died by your hands. Don't be afraid, I won't punish you. It's the exact opposite-I want to encourage you."

One indeed could not judge this woman by conventional standards. Since he wasn't clear on what kind of situation this was, Long Chen chose to remain silent.

“Alright, I won’t tease you anymore.”

Liu Lan rearranged the crape she was wearing and continued, “In a couple of days, the younger generation of the Green Faction is going to have a collective competition inside the Sky Martial Realm. The participants are all three star rated cultivators of the Human Dan Realm. You just stepped into the Human Dan Realm and just happen to be rated at three stars, so you can’t escape this competition...”

“Three stars?”

Long Chen was a bit unclear about this ranking. He already knew that the potential of members of outer factions were divided into 5 ranks. Being able to reach 3 stars meant that he was superior to those in Green Willow Residence.

.....

When Long Chen had just entered the Ling Wu Family, Gan Lin had described this Sky Martial Realm to him. This was a tiny Cosmos Dimension where there were a lot of Demonic Beasts, and was a place where members of the Ling Wu Family went to train. He had no idea that right after he returned from an assignment, he would be forced to participate in this competition.

Luckily for him, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect didn’t know the existence of the Yang Family. Killing Proctor Qin and Proctor Shi had also diverted their attention elsewhere, or else Long Chen would truly be out of ideas of what to do.

“My current strength is still not enough for me to contend with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. Since the Sky Martial Realm has a huge amount of Profound Grade Demonic Beasts within, it’s an excellent place for me to temper myself and raise my strength!”

With this thought in mind, Long Chen had acquired a purpose. His gaze was much more resolute now.

Seeing that Long Chen didn’t show any traces of fear, Liu Lan sneered secretly but still spoke sweetly, “This competition inside the Sky Martial Realm isn’t a big deal. Gan Lin will tell you about the rules and prizes, but...”

Barely saying two sentences, Liu Lan put on a face of indifference.

“... When Feng Wutian asked me about Huang Feiyang just now, I accidentally blurted out the matter about you killing Huang Feiyang. Feng Wutian just happens to be our Green Sun Branch’s number one seed in this Sky Martial Realm competition...”

After saying this, she started to laugh, while Long Chen narrowed his eyes and stared coldly at this woman.

“What’s the deal with this woman? Earlier, she paired me up with Huang Feiyang and now she’s instigating conflicts between me and Feng Wutian. Feng Wutian is at the apex of the Human Dan Realm, so how could I be his match? Why does it feel like she is trying to force out my hidden potential?”

Seeing Long Chen’s cold gaze, Liu Lan stopped laughing and said flatly, “Feng Wutian is a young expert I’ve single handedly cultivated for the past few years. Though he’s merely three years older than you, he’s already ready to enter the Earth Dan Realm and has another status. He possesses the bloodline of the Vermilion Bird Clan, one of our four Great Inner Clans. Whether in terms of potential or strength, he is far beyond you. That’s why I think there is a 90% chance that you will die within the Sky Martial Realm. Kid, know your place. Defeating that trash Huang Feiyang, doesn’t count for much...”

Before, Liu Lan had been speaking in a teasing manner. However, the tone she carried now that she was speaking seriously showed indifference, her eyes carrying a trace of disdain. Long Chen could clearly sense this.

“She had been praising me all this while, but I’m afraid her current attitude reflects how she truly views me-with contempt.”

After throwing Long Chen a gaze filled with contempt, Liu Lan turned and left.

“Along the road of cultivation, a person’s effort is important but bloodline is even more important. Long Chen, you are just a common Beast Warrior and haven’t even refined a Profound Grade Beast Spirit. How can you even contend against the Vermilion Bird bloodline?”

“... I imagine you might be unaware of this, but one’s background is the most important factor that determines whether one will become a strong cultivator. You, Long Chen, lack this major factor, which is why you will never be a powerful cultivator!”

Closing the door, Long Chen was still reflecting on the last words of Liu Lan.

Soon after, the corners of his mouth turned into a sneer.

“My background? My old man was an existence that all of you can only look up to with no hopes of getting to his level. How can my background be poor? Besides I’m a Dragon Warrior, so how could I lose to anyone in the talent department? Liu Lan, just you wait...”

“Sky Martial realm, huh? In this contest, I’ll let you see who’s got the most potential in the Green Sun Faction!”

Recalling Feng Wutian, who was at the Human Dan apex, Long Chen still felt unsure.

Liu Lan was really pushing him beyond his limits. If Long Chen wasn’t careful, he would fall into a depthless abyss.

“I think this woman intends to have you killed. She had found Huang Feiyang, and if it weren’t for your good luck, the one returning wouldn’t have been you. She’s putting out another Feng Wutian. Hmph!! Long Chen, go and buy me a Spirit Recovery Fruit. I’ll kill this stinking woman for you!”

Just thinking about Liu Lan made Ling Xi gnash her teeth in anger. This was partly because this woman had an enticing body that she clearly lacked, often trying to seduce Long Chen. The other part was her repeated actions that forced Long Chen into peril!

“I haven’t done anything to her at all. Why does she keep treating me like this?”

Long Chen couldn’t figure it out. Liu Lan told Feng Wutian about Huang Feiyang, and it was obvious that she wanted Feng Wutian to kill Long Chen!

“Little Xi, calm yourself. Let’s deal with it once we get into the Sky Martial Realm. I’ve planned on visiting this little Cosmos Dimension anyway. Before we do that, I still need to visit Treasure Exchange Pavilion. It would be a shame not to use the 30 contribution points I just acquired.”

“Okay then! Heehee, let’s see if there’s any good stuff you can buy for me!”

Treasure Exchange Pavilion

Within the nine Treasure Exchange Pavilions in Lingwu City, each was located in one of the nine Great Outer Factions. As for the Green faction's Treasure Exchange Pavilion, it wasn't located that far from the Green Sun Hall.

Even though there were quite a few members of the Ling Wu Family, since it was early in the morning, Long Chen didn't encounter many people.

Experts were everywhere in the Ling Wu Family, and just inside the Green Willow Residence, Long Chen had already encountered such fierce rivalry, not to mention outside.

Presently, Long Chen kept a low profile so that he fit in with Dragon Pulse Realm cultivators as he headed towards the Treasure Exchange Pavilion.

The closer he got to the Treasure Exchange Pavilion, the more people he met. There were no lack of young experts amongst them.

Within the Green Faction, Human Dan Realm practitioners were numerous, Earth Dan Realm practitioners were rarely seen. As for Heaven Dan Realm practitioners, Long Chen hadn't seen a single one, which implied that the strongest person he had seen so far was Liu Lan from the Green Faction.

The Green Faction's Treasure Exchange Pavilion was much bigger than the branch auction house of the Daybreak Merchants Union at Eastern Ling Region. It was three levels high and immensely vast.

Long Chen knew that the two topmost levels, weren't places someone like him could enter with his current status, or strength.

But even if it was only the first floor, Long Chen would most likely find everything that he needed at the moment.

In this place of grand splendor where everything was inlaid with precious pearls, Long Chen finally found the area for spirit medicine.

Even though the spirit medicines were categorised, there wasn't a designated spot for godly-level spirit medicine. Long Chen could only look around the 'Other' section and, after asking someone, he managed to buy a single Spirit Recovery Fruit.

Looking over the price tag, Long Chen let out a sigh. The price for Spirit Recovery Fruit was 9 contribution points.

After the exchange, he put away the Spirit Recovery Fruit into his Cosmos Pouch and asked the clerk, “May I ask if there are other Spirit medicines, like the Spirit Recovery Fruit?”

“Treasure Exchange Pavilion only prepared one of this sort of medicine. You’ve bought this fruit today and must wait two to three days before new Spirit Recovery Fruits will arrive.”

Long Chen nodded. There was nothing he could do except wait for two to three days before coming back and exchange his points for it.

“Outside, each Spirit Recovery Fruit costs 100 Deity Jades while here, it only costs 9 contribution points. This one assignment earned me over 300 Deity Jades. But I’m merely a newbie and only completed a third rate assignment. I shouldn’t be able to make this much. It must be Liu Lan who gave me a little extra...”

As Long Chen was pondering over this issue, Ling Xi was immersed in the joy of acquiring another Spirit Recovery Fruit. As she heard Long Chen’s question, she knew that Long Chen would most likely trade all his 30 contribution points for Spirit Recovery Fruits. She was moved but still felt bad as she yelled. “Hey, one is enough for me. Save some points to exchange something for yourself. I’ll help you look, let’s see if there’s anything good around here!”

“It’s alright, I don’t need anything else. This kind of Spirit Medicine can save your life, so I need stock up...”

Ling Xi protested, “No! Even if you give it to me, I won’t accept it. I’ll start looking for something nice for you. This Lady’s eyesight is extraordinary!”

Long Chen couldn’t do anything about it so he simply roamed about aimlessly inside the Treasure Exchange Pavilion. The one who was really looking for things was Ling Xi.

“Release the bloodhound, hahaha...”

“Bastard! Ungrateful fool, this Lady is doing this for you...”

At this moment, Ling Xi startled, then got excited as she whispered, “Hey, you see that Initial Returning Fruit over there?”

“This little lass really seems to have found something good.”

Long Chen didn’t expect this and quickly looked in the direction Ling Xi indicated. There was indeed a piece of starch black fruit, about the size of a fist. It was packaged securely and didn’t reveal anything extraordinary.

“Initial Returning Fruit, Profound middle grade spirit medicine, has healing properties. For experts below the Earth Dan Realm, it can be used to cure wounds. Pricing: 20 contribution points...”

Seeing the explanation next to the Initial Returning Fruit, Long Chen scanned through and read out the important parts. He then asked with some doubt, “Little Xi, these kinds of middle Profound middle grade Spirit Medicines with healing qualities can be seen everywhere within the Treasure Exchange Pavilion. And it’s also clear that its healing effects aren’t that good. Other middle Profound Grade Spirit Medicines are priced over 50 contribution points...”

“That’s because you are all inexperienced and don’t know wonderful this Initial Returning Fruit is! Listen to me, hurry up and buy it, else you will miss this opportunity!”

“But I only have 21 contribution points left...”

“So annoying, if you don’t buy it, I will ignore you!”

Long Chen was helpless. He could only spend 20 contribution points to receive this beyond ordinary looking Initial Returning Fruit.

Seeing a person that clearly wasn’t a Earth Dan Practitioner buy something like the Initial Returning Fruit. The staff member said puzzledly, “If it’s for private use, I can recommend you some Initial Profound Grade Spirit Medicines, like the Canola Grass. For a single Contribution point you can purchase a couple of them.”

Long Chen immediately refused politely.

The clerk immediately looked upon him as he was looking at a retard, then proceeded to ignore him.

Long Chen was also inwardly depressed.

“Little Xi, if you made me waste these contribution points for nothing, just see if I don’t thrash you once we get back!”

“Whatever! You useless fool, without me you would never figure out the miraculous use of this Initial Returning Fruit. This Initial Returning Fruit isn’t a healing medicine to begin with, and is actually being used as a healing medicine. How amusing!”

Ling Xi expressed indignation, seemingly in a hurry to show off her knowledge as she told Long Chen to leave immediately.

“This little lass is so secretive, but she seems to be able to give me benefits every time. If I believe her, I can’t go wrong!”

Though Long Chen’s words were harsh, he actually put a lot of trust in Ling Xi. Now that he had used up his contribution points, there was no point in lingering. On top of that, he was anxious to know the uses of the Initial Returning Fruit, Long Chen prepared to leave.

Dawn had passed and more and more people gathered at the Treasure Exchange Pavilion. Long Chen was but another person in the sea of people.

“The Lingwu Family is very strict on status, and even within the Treasure Exchange Pavilion, there are different rankings for each floor. As I am only of the lowest status, I can only gain access to the first level of the Treasure Exchange Pavilion. There are only initial Profound Grade and some middle-grade items. I’m guessing that I can only get better items at the second and third level, but when will I be strong enough to go up there...”

Just as Long Chen was about to leave the Treasure Exchange Pavilion, he suddenly sensed a heated glare at him. He looked up quickly, and who else could it be but Feng Wutian, who had given him his identity badge?

Seeing the grave young man, Long Chen thought back to all that Liu Lan had told him the night before. Just as expected, after seeing Long Chen, ice-cold bloodlust radiated from Feng Wutian.

Feng Wutian was in robes that were a light orange. He looked poised and elegant, a faint orange glinting in his eyes. Besides Long Chen delicate,

handsome looks, there were no areas in which he could compare with Feng Wutian.

“Brother Wutian, Feng Lingye is right over there. I’ll bring you...”

Beside Feng Wutian, there was a young girl in a dull red skirt. She had a dainty appearance with her cherry-red lips, thin willowy waist, and tall stature which brought about lustful gazes from countless men. Even her sweet voice was difficult to resist.

If she grew up a little more, Long Chen estimated she would turn out to be an exceptional jewel in the world just like Liu Lan. The more Long Chen looked at this girl, the more similar she seemed to be to Liu Lan.

“Brother Wutian?”

Seeing Feng Wutian stop in her tracks, she was startled and looked in Long Chen’s direction. Seeing he was just an ordinary outer faction member, she looked at Feng Wutian in confusion.

“Brother Wutian, what are you looking at him for?”

Feng Wutian ignored him and coldly shared a gaze with Long Chen.

Seeing Long Chen stealing Feng Wutian’s attention, she immediately got angry and glanced at Long Chen, expression icy.

At this point, Feng Wutian had walked to two metres before Long Chen, and stopped. Bystanders were surprised, and discovering there seemed to be some enmity between the two, they immediately crowded around and gesticulating at them.

“Isn’t that Green Sun Hall’s Feng Wutian? Why is he bothering with that nameless fellow?”

“How would we know?”

Seeing this fellow who was neither servile nor overbearing, Feng Wutian had an apathetic look on his face.

Long Chen could sense that ice cold bloodthirstiness from him. The strength of a peak Human Dan Realm Practitioner was not simple, as was expected, and even though Long Chen had been able to kill Huang Feiyang who had that level of

strength, there seemed to be no way to win against Feng Wutian.

“Is this Long Chen?”

Indifferent words travelled from Feng Wutian’s mouth.

The young lady beside him, however, had never heard the name “Long Chen” before. However, seeing Feng Wutian so hostile towards Long Chen, she got in a bad mood and spoke, “Young man, Brother Wutian’s talking to you. Answer him quickly or I’ll make your life difficult!”

Having said this, she gazed at Feng Wutian trying to win favour from him, but seeing Feng Wutian as cold as ever, she seemed to have hit a wall. All she could do was vent her anger on Long Chen, glaring wide-eyed at him with eyes flickering with killing intent!

After hearing Long Chen’s name, a Green Sun Hall cultivator suddenly remembered something and whispered to his friend, “That Long Chen has the most potential out of the newest batch of Green Sun Hall recruits. A few days, he left with Huang Feiyang and Wen Ya to complete a mission. It’s said that Huang Feiyang disappeared, and seeing that Feng Wutian is looking for Long Chen, could it be that the disappearance of Huang Feiyang has something to do with Long Chen?”

“That’s possible! I heard that from the selection to enter the family, Long Chen seems to have injured Huang Feiyang’s little brother!”

Yet another cultivator from Green Sun Hall spoke. Word quickly spread, and soon enough, everyone present knew about the existence of their newest member, Long Chen!

“When he entered the family, he was merely at the eighth level of the Dragon Pulse Realm. How can he actually compare with someone who’s already at the Human Dan Realm? That’s just an unfounded rumour.”

“How else can you explain why Feng Wutian is looking for trouble with Long Chen?”

“Just watch and we’ll find out.”

Origin Reverting Fruit[1]

“I really have the worst luck. It’s my first time to the Treasure Exchange Pavilion and the first thing I see is an intolerably smelly face...”

Under the dazed expressions of bystanders, Long Chen pinched his nose as he turned his back on Feng Wutian and bypassed him, heading straight for the entrance.

“Stop in your tracks, you little thief!”

Before Feng Wutian made any move, the girl behind him was already fuming mad and obstructed Long Chen’s way. She glared at Long Chen fiercely, expression icy as she spoke, “What did you just say?”

Upon seeing this girl, the two Green Sun Hall disciples couldn’t help but shrink back.

“This Long Chen won’t be able to live peacefully having provoked Liu Ling. The elder of our Green Sun Hall is Lord Liu Yuan, who is Liu Ling’s father. She also has a sister who’s an enforcer!”

Long Chen, however knew nothing of this girl’s identity. From his perspective, she was just another adoring fan of Feng Wutian, and even though was rather pretty, she could not hold a candle to Lingxi.

Long Chen held no interest for her and said sarcastically, “I’m saying both of you are smelly. So? Are you going to bite me?”

“You!”

Liu Ling was seething with rage. It was the first time that someone with such a lowly status had spoken to her in such a manner. She was so frustrated that she was on the verge of crying as she prepared to launch an attack at Long Chen!

However, Feng Wutian made his move and held onto her arm and stood between her and Long Chen.

Though he had been humiliated by Long Chen, Feng Wutian’s face remained unchanged and he glanced at Long Chen indifferently as he shook his head, “I originally had some respect for you, but upon meeting you, it’s a surprise that you’re just a vile person who’s all talk.”

Long Chen chuckled, “Right, I’m a person that’s all talk. So what? Are you going to make a move against me right here in the Treasure Exchange Pavilion?”

Seeing him act in such an uncivilised manner, the desire to murder him sizzled in Liu Ling’s heart. If not for her status as a disciple of the Lingwu Family and not being able to have private fights in public areas, she would have long since attacked!

Long Chen was well aware of this fact, which was why he was acting so brazenly. However, this was his style and perhaps also a show meant for Liu Lan.

Just thinking of Liu Lan caused Long Chen to feel suffocated in his annoyance. He could feel she was treating him like a pet, confining and raising him.

“What?”

Feng Wutian was not so easily bullied and watched Long Chen. “Since you’re silver tongued, how about I pull out that tongue of yours and we’ll go to the Platform of Life and Death. Do you have the guts for that?”

Upon hearing the words “Platform of Life and Death”, the bystanders immediately burst out in conversation.

Though people of the Lingwu Family were not allowed to settle private disputes in public, if there really was some grievances and both parties agreed, they could go to the Platform of Life and Death. There would be no need to argue further.

“Seems like this Feng Wutian is preparing to eliminate Long Chen. Will he agree?”

“Of course not, unless he’s an impulsive blockhead. Battling against Feng Wutian on the Platform of Life and Death is just looking for death!”

Long Chen had heard of this “Platform of Life and Death” before. Feng Wutian’s current gaze was like a sharp blade piercing towards Long Chen!

Long Chen sneered and went round Feng Wutian as if trying to provoke him, and then pulled a face at Liu Ling before leaving elegantly.

“Does his silence mean consent then?”

That was the consensus amongst the public now.

Long Chen's words were a little too much, and he had even insulted Liu Ling's knight in shining armour. For her, this was an unforgivable sin. While Long Chen was leaving, she exclaimed coldly, "Remember. At dawn tomorrow, come to the Platform of Life and Death. If you don't dare to come, then you, Long Chen, are the most cowardly person to ever exist! You're not a man!"

At her last words, Long Chen turned back and snickered, "If I'm not a man, are you thinking of personally experiencing what I am for yourself? I wonder if that person beside you is willing to let you do so."

At Long Chen's words, Liu Ling's face immediately flushed a deep red, but in the blink of an eye, Long Chen was gone and she had nowhere to vent her anger.

"Ling'er, having a grudge against this type of person is just a waste of your strength. You don't have to get angry over a small character like him! I'll speak to Feng Lingye on your behalf."

In response to Long Chen's humiliating words, Liu Ling was thoroughly red and gritted her teeth, itching to murder Long Chen. Feng Wutian, however, had no reaction and looked as if the person Long Chen was aiming at was not him.

"Fine. Brother Wutian, do you think that scoundrel will come tomorrow?"

Feng Wutian pondered over it for a moment and replied, "With his arrogance and pride, it's likely that he'll come. When that happens, I'll pull his tongue out in front of you."

"Ugh, no, I don't want to see that. It's too disgusting! Let's just find Feng Lingye instead."

Though she was spewing fire inside, Liu Ling eventually returned to her coquettish ways with her crush pacifying her. She held onto Feng Wutian's arm as they entered the Treasure Exchange Pavilion, acting as if nothing had happened. Seeing that the show was over, the crowd dispersed while still whispering amongst themselves.

"Tomorrow at dawn? Seems like there'll be a show tomorrow."

"Do you think Long Chen will really go there? How's that possible? Is he an idiot? He doesn't seem to be a very courageous person. I'm pretty sure it'll just be a waste of time if you go tomorrow."

“I think so too. Besides, with his current power, he doesn’t even possess a tenth of Feng Wutian’s strength. It would be better to endure and be ridiculed than to lose his own life right?”

Feng Wutian’s matter was just an interlude for Long Chen, but he still took it to heart.

“That Feng Wutian was humiliated so badly by me and did not even blink. He’s a rather difficult character who he surpasses me in multiple areas. The Sky Martial Realm competition is going to be difficult...”

The trial for the Sky Martial Realm competition was right around the corner and Long Chen was well aware he lacked power. Hence, he quietened his mind and began to cultivate, not bothering to deal with his bet with Feng Wutian.

Though Long Chen was impulsive at times, he wasn’t brainless. It was his principle to pretend to be weak and then devour the strong.

“Hey, you’re not actually thinking of going, are you?”

“Only stubborn idiots would go.”

“But...”

Lingxi hovered before Long Chen, furrowing her brows as she gazed at Long Chen, “Aren’t you afraid that you’ll be looked down upon and viewed to be lesser than a man?”

“What do you know? You’ll know whether I’m a man once we get going in bed.”

Long Chen’s words were so direct that even Lingxi found it a little intolerable. She glared at Long Chen and then spoke, “Quick, quick, you idiot! Give me that Spirit Recovery Fruit. I’m hungry!”

Long Chen produced the Spirit Recovery Fruit, as well as the Origin Reverting Fruit that was worth about 200 Spirit Jades. Just seeing this Origin Reverting Fruit made his balls hurt.

He had spent much effort to kill Proctor Shi and Huang Feiyang and obtained a total of over a hundred Spirit Jades. This stupid fruit alone cost 200 Spirit Jades.

He waited until Lingxi got all excited and completely refined the Spirit Recovery

Fruit, before pushing the Origin Reverting Fruit to Lingxi. Impatiently, he asked, “Tell me now. What’s the use of this stupid fruit?”

“You’re the stupid one here!”

Lingxi rolled her eyes at him and her little body landed on the fruit, pretending to be a stern little master as she explained, “The Origin Reverting Fruit is no healing fruit, but a rare item that grew from the heavens and earth. Basically, it cannot be priced.”

“It’s that amazing?”

Looking at this jet-black fruit, it was a huge disparity from what Long Chen had expected.

“What is it actually? Spill everything, don’t keep me waiting.”

“What are you so impatient for? Hasty people don’t get to eat hot tofu.” [2]

Now that Long Chen needed something from her, Lingxi was complacent and deliberately slowed the speed at which she spoke.

Long Chen was dazed for a moment as he looked at this little girl, and then clicked his tongue as he laughed, “If you’re not going to let me eat hot tofu, then I’m going to eat your soft tofu...” [3]

His words resulted in a healthy blush on Lingxi’s face as she scolded him amidst smiles. She then shook the Origin Reverting Fruit, “The flesh of this fruit is indeed useful in healing wounds, but the most important thing is its core. The Origin Reverting Fruit is a rare item, and since it’s rare, it must have something special about it. Within the core of this fruit, there is a battle technique hidden inside!”

“A battle technique? A hidden battle technique in the core? Goodness, Xiao Xi, how is your imagination so wild?”

Long Chen was tongue-tied and could do little but widen his eyes in shock.

Seeing that Long Chen didn’t believe her at all, Lingxi inwardly cursed at him, “Just you wait, and you’ll know how amazing I am!”

At this thought, she spoke with a professional tone, “Whether you believe it or not, I believe it. Remove the flesh of the Origin Reverting Fruit first.”

“Remove it?”

Long Chen’s heart twitched at that. The flesh was worth 20 contribution points, and if Lingxi was wrong and there was nothing inside there...

“Quick!”

“Understood, your humble servant will do so now...”

Splitting open the Origin Reverting Fruit, a surprisingly soft and white flesh was revealed as a sweet smell wafted through the area. Just as Lingxi instructed, Long Chen removed the flesh and left behind a black core.

This core was only the size of a thumb and looked to be nothing special. Long Chen was right about to ask how it was used, and Lingxi was already answering, “Swallow the core and use your real qi to refine it as best as you can. After refining for a day and a night, you’ll probably be able to refine it into powder form. Once that happens, all information about that battle technique will naturally appear in your body.”

“Oh?”

Long Chen attempted to pinch at the core in his hands, only to find it was as hard as steel. Only fools would bother trying to refine this piece of metal.

“Xiao Xi, are you sure?”

Lingxi’s brows furrowed as she gathered that Long Chen still did not believe her and said indifferently, “Swallow it if you want to. It doesn’t matter to me. After all, your 20 contribution points are now wasted!”

Long Chen had no choice but to swallow that piece of metal into his stomach. It was extremely hard and made it quite uncomfortable on his stomach. Long Chen immediately circulated real Qi and worked at wearing down this core!

“Then again, if it’s too simple, everyone would know that the Origin Reverting Fruit is a great item and I wouldn’t even have the chance to obtain it.”

Making his decision, Long Chen then submerged his mind into his dantian and began to refine the steel-like core in his stomach.

This core was abnormally hard and with Long Chen’s current real Qi, at least a full day was required to fully refine it.

With his great efforts, an entire day passed and on the second morning, the core had been refined and whittled down to the size of a pinky, using his real Qi. There were even cracks on the surface.

At that moment, the cracks split with a loud bang!

[1] The Initial Returning Fruit from the previous chapter has been changed to the “Origin Reverting Fruit”, and will be referred as such in the following chapters.

[2] One should be more patient.

[3] Reference to previous note. “Eating tofu” here means to take advantage of someone.

Chapter 97 – Constitution Battle Technique

After a full day and night, he finally succeeded at refining the steel-like core.

As the fruit core lay within light red real Qi, the cracks slowly increased until it split open. Just like medicine, a dense force followed a specific track and began to travel through Long Chen's veins.

“Remember the pathways through which that force travels!”

Lingxi's reminder made Long Chen recall that he had learned two skills, Blood Transmuted Qi and Dragon Soul Transformation, by remembering the pathway real Qi had passed through. Now, following what he had done in the past, he memorised the course of this new force that passed through his body.

This force completely disappeared not long after, and Long Chen could feel that his body became extremely relaxed. This probably had to do with the medicinal effects that the Origin Reverting Fruit also possessed.

However, that new battle technique...

Lingxi looked please as she sized up Long Chen, and spoke with pride, “How are you going to thank me? This battle technique is otherwise known as the Constitution battle technique. It's extremely rare and I highly doubt you don't even have it in this place!”

“Constitution battle technique?”

Long Chen had not heard this name before.

Seeing Long Chen in a daze, Lingxi started giggling.

“The Constitution battle technique, otherwise known as the healing technique, is extremely rare out of all the battle techniques available. Out of a thousand battle techniques, there might be only one healing technique. Do you see how valuable it is?”

Upon hearing this, Long Chen became excited, “Xiao Xi, is it possible for this healing technique to replace spirit medicines such that I can heal myself? Even in battle?”

“That's not quite true. When you use this type of battle technique, it's best for

you not to move your body. It's a very effective treatment that's free of charge, and you can use it anywhere and at any time. Even if it's not a Constitution battle technique that's of a high grade, it's still something that people would fight each other for!"

"I see..."

After obtaining this Constitution battle technique, his own life would pretty much be guaranteed. From the depths of his heart, Long Chen thanked Lingxi.

"Xiao Xi, you're very capable! Haha, quick, tell this old man here the name of this battle technique and what grade it is!"

"The battle technique hidden within the Origin Reverting core is naturally called "Origin Reversion". It's probably a Profound middle-grade technique. In other words, even when you're in the Deity Dan Realm, you're still able to use this Constitution battle technique to heal yourself." Lingxi rolled her eyes and answered grudgingly.

"I exchanged 20 contribution points for this Profound middle-grade technique. This is totally worth it. Xiao Xi, you really are my darling..."

"Cut your bullshit and get stronger soon. You'd better give me the spirit healing medicine you promised me as soon as possible!"

Lingxi cared little for his attempts at bootlicking, though she was quite happy within that she was of help to Long Chen.

"Try out this battle technique then. You've acquired quite a few injuries in the past, and it's better to heal all of those in case there's some unknown sickness lying dormant in your body."

"Understood!"

In the room above his dwellings, Long Chen sat cross-legged with his eyes tightly shut, activating his Constitution battle technique-Origin Reversion.

Faint white rays of light spread throughout his body, ripples circulating throughout his body. Again and again, the force scanned through Long Chen's body and restored his injuries...

"This Origin Reversion technique is actually quite effective!"

Long Chen was filled with excitement. While he hadn't known it before, testing it out now caused the force in Long Chen's body to appear once again, following a specific path and circulating within his body. Under the nourishment given by the force, a few small wounds were quickly healed.

"With Origin Reversion, as long as I'm not beaten to death, I still have a chance at turning the tables on my opponent!"

At this thought and then recalling the upcoming Sky Martial Realm Competition, Long Chen was filled with confidence!

"Do you think I'm so stupid that I'd go to the Platform of Life and Death with you at this time? The real contest has to be inside the mountains. Only that will be exciting enough!"

While refining his usage of Origin Reversion, time passed slowly and Long Chen gradually became increasingly familiar with this technique. After half a day went by, the sounds of somebody knocking the door was heard, and Long Chen opened it to the sight of Gan Lin.

While following Gan Lin to the Martial Arts Hall, Gan Lin stared at him with a strange look in his eyes, eventually breaking out into a sigh, "Have you really reached the Deity Dan Realm? In such a short period of time, you continuously broke through two realms. I don't understand how you were able to do that."

Long Chen could only shake his head helplessly and smile, "It's pure luck. If this happens again, I might not be coming back here."

Gan Lin could tell Long Chen was hinting at something. He naturally knew about Liu Lan wanting Long Chen to enter the Sky Martial Realm, and also how she had informed Feng Wutian about him killing Huang Feiyang.

"By the way, Long Chen, I heard you'd made a promise with Feng Wutian to fight to the death on the Platform of Life and Death, but you left him hanging?"

"What are you talking about? I didn't agree to anything."

Long Chen was startled.

Gan Lin could only smile wryly, "All the rumours out there are saying that you'd agreed, but didn't have the guts to keep to your promise. Your reputation

right now in the Green faction really isn't all that good... Especially that Enforcer's sister! She's going around broadcasting that you're a cowardly man."

A deep crease appeared on Long Chen's forehead, but he stayed silent.

"Aren't you going to go out there and refute those rumours?"

"Refute them? What's the point? I know my own strength the best, so why should I prove it to people who don't matter?"

Long Chen was indifferent.

A glint of admiration appeared in Gan Lin's gaze. He nodded, and then spoke, "My purpose for coming here today is to tell you about the Sky Martial Realm competition between the outstanding young talents at the Human Dan Realm, within the Green faction."

"Is it seven days later? And the people participating are just the young talents at the Human Dan Realm in the Green faction?"

Gan Lin nodded, giving a wry grin, "This involves the cultivators who have potentials that are rated to be at least three stars. As for me, though I am at the Perfect Mastery Stage of the Human Dan Realm, I'm much too old and do not have much potential. Hence, I don't have a chance to participate..."

At this point, Gan Lin seemed a little bitter. After all, his fate was fixed at this point. Even if he wanted to go further, it was not possible.

"Within the Green faction, there are eight branches, or in this case, a competition between the eight branches. All of the disciples from the Green Sun Branch will be a team and be led by Feng Wutian. Under the five enforcers, there will be a total of ten people, with three people from the Green Willow Residence. One is you, the other being Feng Wutian and then Liu Ling."

"He's the leader? Doesn't that mean I have to listen to his orders?"

At the very thought of Feng Wutian, Long Chen began to feel uncomfortable. After all, his opponent was very strong and they considered each other enemies. On top of that, if he had to listen to his orders, it would be simply terrible.

Seeing Long Chen's ice-cold glare, Gan Lin gave a wry smile, "For the others, I'd say they definitely have to listen to Feng Wutian. For you, however... Actually,

the reason for my visit today is to give you a suggestion. When the time comes, don't mind the orders. After you enter the Sky Martial Realm, find a way to leave and hide. Feng Wutian would be too busy trying to contest over the Zenith Crystal Sword and won't have the time to cause you trouble."

What Long Chen wanted to know was whether he could work solo. Based on what Gan Lin had said, it was possible.

Since it was possible to work alone, everything worked more smoothly. However, the real question was, would Feng Wutian allow him to do that?

Gan Lin's suggestion wasn't entirely unreasonable. Long Chen was definitely no match for Feng Wutian, and it was not worthwhile to clash with him in the Sky Martial Realm. If there actually was a possibility of them fighting, it would have to wait until he caught up to Feng Wutian and then settle this matter, once and for all.

"Senior Brother Gan, is the Zenith Crystal Sword the reward for the competition?"

Gan Lin nodded, eyes revealing a heated look, "This Zenith Crystal Sword is a Profound middle-grade spirit sword. Within the Zenith Crystal Sword, there is also a sword battle technique, known as the "Way of the Zenith Crystal". Even amongst Profound middle-grade treasures, the Zenith Crystal Sword and the "Way of the Zenith Crystal" are exceptional and quite valuable. Even I want it too."

Long Chen silently sighed in admiration at the generosity of the Lingwu Family. Not only did they give out a spirit sword, they even gave out one that contained a battle technique.

"How do I obtain this Zenith Crystal Sword?"

Gan Lin answered weakly, "Before the competition, the grand elders from the Green faction will keep the Zenith Crystal Sword in a cosmos pouch, and then hide it within the Sky Martial Realm. It will be in the stomach of a heart corroding demonic beast in the Human Dan Realm, of the fourth level of the Profound grade. Your task is to find the Scarlet Flaming Suan Ni, kill it, and then steal the Zenith Crystal Sword from its stomach. The person who obtains it first will be the victor of this competition."

So that was how it went. Long Chen nodded.

A demonic beast of the fourth level of the Profound grade was almost as strong as a cultivator who had just stepped into the Earth Dan Realm. However, with outstanding Human Dan disciples from eight branches surrounding and attacking it, this did not seem to be too impossible.

Long Chen counted in his head. He had skipped a grade and killed off Huang Feiyang, and the evaluation of his potential had been rated to be just three stars. In other words, just within the Green faction, there were about a hundred people who had the same level of talent as him?

The stress was immense...

“Long Chen, you’d better not go out these few days. Stay in your residence and cultivate well. When the time comes for the Sky Martial Competition, try to minimise contact with others. After blowing off that battle to the death, you would be ridiculed by anyone who sees you. With your personality, just an impulsive move from you would not mean well for you. If you trust your Senior Brother Gan, listen to me, alright?”

Long Chen actually quite liked this Gan Lin. He was easy-going, not too arrogant, and able to answer clearly whenever Long Chen had any queries. Even now, he was still very worried for Long Chen.

Long Chen was much too lazy to leave his residence anyway, and nodded. “Alright then, I won’t go out.”

However, at the mention of the battle to the death, Long Chen felt a little wronged. He hadn’t even bothered to answer that day, and yet, he was now said to be too cowardly to take up the challenge.

“It’s definitely the work of that crafty brat. Though she’s young, she has quite a few tricks up her sleeves. For the Sky Martial Realm Competition, I’ll have to be especially careful of her, especially since she has powerful people backing her!”

Liu Lan and that expert from the Green Sun Branch, Elder Liu Yuan, were much too strong for Long Chen to handle.

After giving more instructions, Gan Lin left. Not long after Long Chen returned, Gan Lin brought another person over, and after a look, Long Chen realised it was

Ao Xue from the Daybreak Merchants Union.

“If the Daybreak Merchants Union is looking for me, could it have to be news about a Spirit Recovery Fruit?”

For Long Chen, it was better to obtain more of these fruits.

DBWG Chapter 98 – Thunder Flame Crystal

Only after sending Ao Xue here did Gan Lin leave. Daybreak Merchants Union's wish to meet with Long Chen was something that he had the freedom to deal with himself, and it was not Gan Lin's place to interfere.

It was evident that Ao Xue was annoyed at being sent here. The more she looked at Long Chen's smiley face, the fury in her heart burnt stronger.

"Manager Zhao said that our Daybreak Merchants Union has acquired a new Spirit Recovery Fruit, and asks if you need it."

She gazed at Long Chen indifferently, speaking in a low voice.

She had been working well in Daybreak Merchant Unions, but for some reason had been ordered to come all the way here just to tell Long Chen this information. This was a little difficult for her to stomach.

She could not understand why Manager Zhao would go so far just for Long Chen.

"I need it, of course I need it!"

Long Chen had always been a spoilt child, and he had no second thoughts about saving up the hundred or so Spirit Jades he had in his possession for future use.

"When I get stronger, obtaining these things isn't going to be a problem. It's better to buy more items while I can and get spirit medicines for my darling so that she can live longer."

While thinking all this, Long Chen noticed that Ao Xue was glaring at him with all the hatred she could muster. He was a fearless person and paid no mind to her, arrogantly ordering her, "Miss Ao Xue, show me the way."

Before coming here, Manager Zhao had repeatedly reminded her not to be rude to Long Chen. Ao Xue was in no position to disregard the order, and no matter how difficult Long Chen got, she could only grit her teeth and endure it.

"Youngster, the moment I get an opportunity, I'll definitely skin you! You only obtained a few more Metal Hearts, and for some reason, Manager Zhao thinks you're a treasure! I'll definitely find a chance to prove that this Long Chen or

whatever can't even be compared to me!"

Heart full of hatred, Ao Xue was silent as she walked ahead, expression dark.

"This doll doesn't look half bad, though she's horribly gloomy. I guess my Lingxi is the prettiest after all..."

Behind Ao Xue, Long Chen made gestures at her while speaking in a low voice. This was all to Lingxi's pleasure, and she giggled and could not stop laughing.

If Ao Xue heard Long Chen's words, she would definitely have tried to kill Long Chen right there and then.

However, that gloomy look on Ao Xue really had Long Chen on his guard.

"I don't know what Manager Zhao is trying to do. If it's just a Spirit Recovery Fruit, he could have just gotten Ao Xue to bring it to me rather than go to the trouble of bringing me here. Could he still be trying to rope me in?"

Right behind Ao Xue, Long Chen admired her slim and delicate body and lilting steps as he pondered inwardly about how he should handle Manager Zhao later.

It was now noon, and there were fewer customers at Daybreak Merchants Union than usual. When Long Chen arrived, Manager Zhao was already there to give him a warm welcome, hugging Long Chen and then patting his back, "Long Chen, my boy, you're finally here!"

"To be so eager for no reason, he must have some evil intentions."

Within the Lingxi Sword, Lingxi's curled her lips, annoyed at Manager Zhao's behaviour.

Long Chen enthusiastically answered Manager Zhao, who then brought him into the VIP room. He gestured to Long Chen to have a seat, and let Ao Xue, whose expression was dark, to pour them some tea. He was all smiles while he gazed at Long Chen.

"I heard that you managed to kill an expert of the Human Dan Realm at the Initial Mastery Stage. Have you already reached the Human Dan Realm?"

The moment she heard Manager Zhao get straight to the point and spout such earth-shattering words, Ao Xue poured the tea outside the cup in her surprise.

“I’m sorry, Manager, I was much too careless...”

Manager Zhao wasn’t in a good position to get angry in front of Long Chen and was about to send her outside, but Long Chen waved his hand and arrogantly glanced at Ao Xue, “Don’t go yet. You dirtied this place, so isn’t it your duty to clean it up?”

“You-!”

Ao Xue was right about to storm away, but Manager Zhao quickly spoke up, “Ao Xue, clean it up.”

Upon hearing Manager Zhao’s calm voice, Ao Xue did not dare disobey and could only glare at Long Chen, gritting her teeth and doing as asked.

Seeing her trying to suppress how wronged she was feeling, Long Chen felt exceptionally smug.

The previous time he had come to Daybreak Merchants Union, this person had had her nose in the air, which had made him quite annoyed. Now, he was finally able to make her feel the same way.

After all this, Long Chen began to speak with Manager Zhao.

“Manager Zhao, it’s true that I’ve already reached the Deity Dan Realm. However, whatever you’ve heard about me killing Huang Feiyang are just lies that someone spread to slander me. If I really did kill Senior Brother Huang, I wouldn’t be free of injuries and be able to speak with you like this.”

Manager Zhao himself was disbelieving of the news of Long Chen killing Huang Feiyang. After all, Long Chen had only just entered the Human Dan Realm.

However, even if he had not killed Huang Feiyang, this did not affect how highly he regarded Long Chen. He took out a large wooden box with red silk fabric inside, within which were actually two Spirit Recovery Fruits.

Seeing these two Spirit Recovery Fruits, Lingxi’s eyes glistened, but Long Chen looked unhappy.

“Long Chen, my boy, here are the Spirit Recovery Fruits you wanted.”

The Spirit Jades in Long Chen’s cosmos pouch were hardly enough to pay for two Spirit Recovery Fruits, and he could only sigh in regret, “Manager Zhao, with

my finances right now, I can only buy a single Soul Diffusion Fruit, and definitely not two Spirit Recovery Fruits.”

Seeing Long Chen so pitifully poor, Ao Xue at the side peeked at him in contempt. She had originally been a little afraid of him after hearing that he had killed an expert who was at the Initial Mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm, only to find out it was just an unfounded rumour.

“This stinking little kid only entered the Human Dan Realm. What’s there to be proud of? In just a few days, I’ll be able to enter the Human Dan Realm too. When that happens, let’s see whether you or I will be stronger!”

Manager Zhao’s high regard of Long Chen made Ao Xue feel quite jealous.

Upon seeing the suffering look on Long Chen’s face, Manager Zhao burst out in laughter, “Didn’t I say this before? We’ve met twice already, so we can be considered friends. How about this, you can buy one from me, and I’ll give you the other one for free?”

Manager Zhao only admired Long Chen talents, and he was giving Long Chen way too many benefits.

Long Chen was well aware that it was impossible for him to leave the Lingwu Family as of yet, so he contemplated rejecting Manager Zhao’s offer.

Seeing Long Chen still hesitating, Manager Zhao’s eyes twinkled and he stared straight at Long Chen, “Let’s do this instead. If you do something for me, I’ll gift you these Spirit Recovery Fruits, and this won’t be counted as a favour from me to you. How about it?”

“What can I do for you, Manager Zhao?”

While saying this, Zhao Tianfang’s expression was serious. Long Chen guessed that this was his real intentions for inviting him here. If not, he wouldn’t go to the trouble of getting Ao Xue to guide him here.

Zhao Tianfang gave a slight smile and instructed Ao Xue, who was at the side, to leave the room. After which, he took out a cosmos pouch and retrieved a crystal that was about the size of an infant’s fist.

Long Chen stared and found that this crystal was completely blue. It was a

rhombus with two sides that were impossibly sharp, and on the surface of this blue crystal, there were even traces of lightning flickering. Blue flames were also emitted from this crystal.

“Thunder Flame Crystal?”

Within the Lingxi Sword, Lingxi’s excited voice could be heard.

Long Chen was now physically very close to Manager Zhao, and after hearing Lingxi shout ‘Thunder Flame Crystal’, he did not dare say much. However, he could tell that this crystal was definitely something good.

“Do you know what this?” Manager Zhao questioned.

Long Chen shook his head, “No.”

“This item is called... the Thunder Flame Crystal.”

He spun the Thunder Flame Crystal in his palm, eyes fixed on it. His next words were full of emotion as he spoke, “This Thunder Flame Crystal is a precious treasure of the heavens and the earth. It has no grade, and as long as one merges one’s body with it, our body will then have the power to control thunder and fire. This power is used to temper the body and is considerably effective. Once you fuse with over ten Thunder Flame Crystals, you will then possess the Thunder Flame Physique!”

Long Chen looked at the Thunder Flame Crystal in shock, “I just have to fuse with it? Don’t I need to cultivate at all?”

Didn’t this mean this item was even more convenient than Origin Reversion, which he had recently obtained?

The Constitution battle technique, Origin Reversion, had been refined only after a whole day and night.

“Of course not,” Manager Zhao shook his head. “The number of Thunder Flame Crystals you can fuse with depends on your talent and body. As long as you can fuse with over ten crystals, you will obtain the Thunder Flame Physique. Those who have the added bonus of power using thunder and flames are then called Thunder Flame Cultivators!”

Thunder Flame Cultivator?

That didn't sound half bad.

Only now did Long Chen come to the realisation that the world he knew was much too small. He had just obtained the Origin Reverting Fruit, and now there was this Thunder Flame Crystal, which were all incredible items.

Zhao Tianfang had mentioned that he needed Long Chen to do something, and yet had taken out this Thunder Flame Crystal. What was it for?

Long Chen suspiciously asked, "Manager Zhao, what does this Thunder Flame Crystal have to do with me?"

Now that they were back to the main question, Manager Zhao laughed and looked closely at Long Chen. "To be honest, I really think highly of you. I would like to test your talent and have you try and see how many Thunder Flame Crystals you can fuse into your body!"

Long Chen suddenly felt like he had struck gold, disbelief apparent on his face.

This Manager Zhao had first said that he wanted Long Chen to do something for him. Long Chen had wondered how difficult it could be, but it turned out to be a huge opportunity for him.

Manager Zhao merely wanted to rope Long Chen into Daybreak Merchants Union, and yet had repeatedly given Long Chen immense benefits. Long Chen hesitated and wondered if he should accept it, taking into account the restraints that would be put on him if he agreed. Upon seeing him hesitating, Manager Zhao explained seriously, "Long Chen, don't think it'll be an easy task to fuse with the Thunder Flame Crystal. It has a violent force that will cause one's body to explode if one cannot take it. If your body can't withstand even one Thunder Flame Crystal, there is a high possibility of you dying. This is why it won't be an easy task for you to obtain these two Spirit Recovery Fruits. Think this through carefully."

While Long Chen was still pondering, Lingxi suddenly exclaimed, "Quick, say yes."

Lingxi was experienced and was extremely clear about Long Chen's condition. Hence, upon hearing her say this, Long Chen hesitated no longer and nodded resolutely, "One can only find treasures in dangerous places. Since Manager

Zhao thinks so highly of me, I definitely have to try this Thunder Flame Crystal no matter what!”

Chapter 99 – Fusing!

After receiving Long Chen's approval, Manager Zhao laughed heartily.

"Fusing with the Thunder Flame Crystal here is a little inconvenient. Long Chen, I'll bring you to a quiet place!"

Long Chen nodded, and then left through the backdoor of the Daybreak Merchants Union and came to a courtyard. Manager Zhao found an unbelievably large and quiet room for him.

There wasn't anyone here, yet Long Chen wasn't worried that Manager Zhao would attempt to harm him in any way. On one hand, he was dirt poor and nobody would bother with him. Secondly, Lingxi had refined two Spirit Recovery Fruits, and had two more on the way. Lingxi would be able to exhibit her power, and there was little chance of him encountering any life-threatening danger.

"I'm going to put five Thunder Flame Crystals here. I hope you can tell for yourself how many you can fuse with, and if you know you can't take on another, do not force yourself, understand?"

Manager Zhao spoke and produced five Thunder Flame Crystals from his cosmos pouch and placed it on the floor of the room.

Seeing these five beautiful crystals that were emitting traces of lightning and flames, Long Chen nodded. "Don't worry, Old Zhao. I'm not an idiot and have no reason to be so greedy that I would compromise my own life."

Manager Zhao gazed at Long Chen in admiration, “Then I won’t bother you in fusing with the crystals. I’ll wait for you in the courtyard outside, so if anything happens, just shout for me!”

After Manager Zhao had left, Long Chen couldn’t hold it in anymore and asked Lingxi, “Xiao Xi, since you wanted me to fuse with this Thunder Flame Crystal, does it mean it’s something amazing?”

Ling Xi had had to stay quiet for a long time, and now that she could speak, she was very emotional, “Of course it’s amazing! It’s better than amazing! Long Chen, you’re a dragon cultivator and your body is a lot sturdier than the usual human. I estimate you should be stronger than a regular human, and after you fuse with a Thunder Flame Crystal, you’ll probably know what your limits are.”

Long Chen did not immediately try to fuse with the crystal, but picked it up and held it in his hand. The tiny streaks of lightning and flames gave off a numbing feeling when it swept by his skin.

“The good thing about the Thunder Flame Crystal is that the more powerful you are and the stronger your body is, the more crystals you can fuse with. There isn’t a limit to the number of crystals you can fuse with either, and it’s a lot stronger than the regular technique meant to refine the body!”

Everything that Lingxi said definitely got Long Chen interested, but he was not impulsive by nature. He thought through it carefully, and asked, “Xiao Xi, I’m unrelated to Manager Zhao, and yet he’s getting me to try this Thunder Flame Crystal. Do you think he’s trying to test my talent? If I fuse with a lot of crystals, he’ll try his utmost to rope me into Daybreak Merchants Union, and perhaps even use the backing behind the organisation to convince me. If I reject, they might kill me...”

“Is that so?”

Lingxi was startled and became a little frightened, before quickly tapping her little chest and sticking out her tongue, “You’re a dragon cultivator. The brand in your body naturally has the power to subdue the Thunder Flame Crystal. The number of crystals you can fuse with safely will be a lot more than a regular person, so what you said might actually happen.”

There was all this good stuff in front of his eyes, but Long Chen did not dare fuse with all of them. Such tempting yet terrifying thoughts made Long Chen want to vomit blood.

“By the way!” Lingxi suddenly became excited, “Hey, did you see that? He took out the five Thunder Flame Crystals from his cosmos pouch without batting an eyelid and actually gave it to you to test you. That implies that there’s a lot of this stuff at the Daybreak Merchants Union, and they might even have a mining site for this crystal! You can just fuse with one or two, and after you leave, I can turn back and steal his cosmos pouch!”

Long Chen was flabbergasted by Lingxi’s brazen thoughts, and quickly answered, “Don’t do this. I finally managed to get four Spirit Recovery Fruits and have been serving you well. If you come back to me half-dead, how am I supposed to continue living?”

Lingxi pouted, “You idiot, am I so useless in your heart? I have the strength from four Spirit Recovery Fruits. Stealing the cosmos pouch of someone at the initial mastery stage of the Earth Dan Realm is just child’s play to me.”

Lingxi, who was usually cowardly, was now brimming with confidence. At the

thought that the Thunder Flame Crystal could make him much stronger, Long Chen's resolve began to waver and he suspiciously asked, "Xiao Xi, are you sure you're able to steal that cosmos pouch without anyone noticing?"

Lingxi glared at him angrily, "Of course! Though I've never cultivated that seriously before, I'm number one when it comes to this kind of thing! Even my father couldn't stop praising me. How dare an idiot like you belittle me!"

With Lingxi's words, Long Chen felt a lot more relieved. Without further ado, he looked at the five Thunder Flame Crystals on the ground and spoke, "There's not much time left. I'll try this Thunder Flame Crystal and see what's so special about it!"

The five crystals on the ground spread out, and Long Chen picked up one of them, placed it in his palm, and then sat cross-legged. He sucked in a deep breath, and glanced at the crystal.

"Manager Zhao said that as long as I manipulate real Qi and guide the Thunder Flame Crystal into my body, I can fuse with it!"

At this thought, light red real Qi spilled over from Long Chen's palm and twisted around, eventually surrounding the Thunder Flame Crystal. The crystal, which had been lying dormant all this while, suddenly seemed to awaken, and ferociously turned into blue flaming electric currents, and from Long Chen's palm, entered Long Chen's body!

"This Thunder Flame Crystal is not simple at all!"

This flaming electric current entered Long Chen's body and rapidly extended to

every corner. Long Chen's body was bathed in the liquid-form of the electric current that was still flaming. Streams of blue light overflowed from his body, and Long Chen could gradually feel the numbing pain beginning to appear at every part of his body.

It was first a numbing feeling that attacked Long Chen in waves. Next was the pain, pulsing and even more intense than before, and it turned into acute pain at every part of his body. Whether it was his blood, internal organs, muscles, bones or flesh, he could feel himself burning and being ripped apart from the inside by the electric currents and flames.

How could this feeling not cause one to fall apart?

It could be seen that blue streaks of lightning and flames had surfaced on Long Chen's body, flowing all over his body rapidly. In his dull red eyeballs, one could even see flames and electric currents contained within, and electricity suddenly surged up and shot out!

"Under the tempering of the lightning and the burning of flames, my body is gradually becoming stronger despite the unbearable pain I'm feeling. This is even more terrifying than when I had been trying to cultivate in the Celestial Core Technique!"

"No wonder Xiao Xi made me fuse with it. So this Thunder Flame Crystal is actually something so great!"

The effects from a Thunder Flame Crystal finally passed in about an hour. Long Chen heaved a sigh and exercised his limbs, and discovered that his body's sturdiness had increased. Within his real Qi, there was a blue force hidden within. With the help from the lightning and flames, this blue force had become

extremely powerful!

“Manager Zhao said that after fusing with the Thunder Flame Crystal, the power of fire and lightning in my real Qi will vary in its nature. He wasn’t lying!”

However, compared to the light red real Qi, this blue force was just too meagre. This thread of blue had not even entered the Human Dan Realm, and could only exist within the blood-red mist at the Human Dan Realm.

“Like she said, one Thunder Flame Crystal is not my limit!”

Though that feeling just now had been terrifying, he would need to experience a lot of pain and suffering if he wanted to become stronger. Long Chen had long since come to terms with this fact.

“How do you feel?”

After Long Chen had fused with the first Thunder Flame Crystal, Lingxi enquired nervously.

Long Chen grinned, “Good, very good! Xiao Xi, when I get back, I’ll reward you handsomely. You’re just too amazing!”

He turned his gaze to the other crystals and laughed, “I’ll leave the four crystals here. Xiao Xi, I’ll leave the rest to you. Just remember, the crystals are not as important as your safety. Don’t strain yourself too much!”

Hearing Long Chen caring for her so much, Ling Xi felt warmth in her heart, but

his next words caused her expression to darken.

“If you don’t succeed, I’ll have to do a lot to deal with it and become exhausted. You definitely can’t let that happen.”

“You scoundrel, you huge scoundrel!”

Thinking of Long Chen’s repulsive face, Ling Xi grinded her teeth. At this pointed, Long Chen had already decided to leave the room to find Manager Zhao.

Upon opening the door, he could see Manager Zhao in a pavilion far away. Long Chen quickly walked over, during which Manager Zhao saw him as well. Seeing that he had come out in less than an hour, Manager Zhao had a bad feeling about this.

“How did it go, Long Chen? How many did you fuse with?”

With a helpless look in his eyes, he answered, “I’m sorry for being so useless. I only managed to fuse with one.”

“One?”

Manager Zhao couldn’t quite believe it. He knew that Long Chen’s physical body was very sturdy, and based on his estimations, it was entirely possible for him to fuse with two or even three, but Long Chen had only fused with one. Manager Zhao couldn’t help but feel disappointed.

He had originally thought that Long Chen was a rare talent, and if he managed to steal him away from the Lingwu Family and Long Chen managed to prove himself in the future, he would also reap benefits. It looked like he had gone through all this trouble for nothing, and Manager Zhao was a little discouraged as he waved at Long Chen impatiently, “In that case, you should leave.”

From the enthusiasm at the beginning till the cold indifference after finding out he had not met his expectations, Long Chen truly admired Manager Zhao’s abilities in changing his facial expressions so quickly.

This was not a bad reaction. He had initially felt guilty about stealing Thunder Flame Crystals from Manager Zhao, as he had treated him well and viewed him highly. Now, however, there was nothing holding him back.

“In that case, I shall take my leave!”

Long Chen gave a sarcastic smile and calmly left.

“There’s probably a lot of Thunder Flame Crystals in the Daybreak Merchants Union. It wouldn’t be too mean of me if I let Lingxi steal a few...”

Chapter 100 – Thunder Flame Physique

After sending Long Chen to the Daybreak Merchants Union, Zhao Tianfang got busy with his own work. Upon seeing the cold look in his eyes, Ao Xue laughed, expecting this result.

“Please leave!”

He looked ready to chase Long Chen out.

Reading Zhao Tianfang’s face, she knew that Long Chen had, at most, fused with one Thunder Flame Crystal. She herself could also fuse with one, and if she tried a little harder, she might even be able to do two!

This meant that the enthusiasm he had towards Long Chen was all for nothing.

“Isn’t he just trash disguising himself to be a talent? How laughable!” Behind Long Chen, Ao Xue giggled to herself.

“If she knew that the number you can fuse with is far more than this, I wonder what kind of expression she’ll have.”

“Little Xi, let’s take a stroll outside. It’s already dusk, so you should wait till night falls before you act. Otherwise, it’ll be much too suspicious if he loses something the moment we leave.”

As for Ao Xue, Long Chen merely laughed.

He didn't have the energy to be petty with people like this. Under Ao Xue's watchful gaze, Long Chen walked out of Daybreak Merchants Union and strolled through a few streets. He found a quiet tea house and sampled some tea, taking the time to try out his body.

"Fusing with just ten Thunder Flame Crystals can model my body into the Thunder Flame Physique, and turn me into a Thunder Flame cultivator?"

Long Chen could feel a numbing force flowing through his body.

Thunder, lightning and flames were some of the most violent powers in the heavens and earth.

"Exactly. Also, there are different grades in the Thunder Flame Physique as well. If you manage to fuse with ten Thunder Flame Crystals, you'll have a rank 1 Thunder Flame Physique. Next up is rank 2, and lastly, rank 3! I'm not exactly sure how many Thunder Flame Crystals you'll need, but it's definitely not less than ten!"

"What should I do to fuse with even more crystals?" Long Chen asked, excited.

"Firstly, the fusing with Thunder Flame Crystals is related to your body. Fundamentally, you are a dragon cultivator, and most of the power in your real Qi is that of the dragon. Your body is almost equal to the fledgling stage of a dragon, and in terms of your physique, you are definitely capable of overwhelming the Thunder Flame Crystals."

“The other thing has to do with your real Qi. The more real Qi you have, the dragon aura in the real Qi in your body-let’s call it Dragon Soul Qi-will become even more powerful. The number of crystals, thunder, as well as flames in the crystal will be able to be controlled by you. As long as you ensure that the Dragon Soul Qi in your body is stronger than the power of thunder and flames, all will be fine.”

“After saying all these, we still don’t know if we’re able to obtain those Thunder Flame Crystals.” At this thought, Long Chen couldn’t help but laugh.

Not only could these crystals refine the body, they could also increase the power of thunder and flames in one’s real Qi. This was extremely tempting for Long Chen.

In the beginning when he had used Dragon Soul Transformation, the sturdiness of his body had rapidly increased, to the point that it could be said to be a high-grade Huang ranking physique, a level that he had yet to reach.

This was just the effects from activating a thousandth of the essence that he had inherited. Seeing his opponents becoming increasingly stronger as they got ahold of powerful battle techniques, such as those that could refine the body, Long Chen was made aware of how much he was lacking.

It would take an extended period of time to be able to make use of that inherited essence. Hence, Long Chen set himself a goal, focusing his attention on these Thunder Flame Crystals.

“You bastard, you still don’t believe in me, do you? Just stay here later. I’ll do it myself, and I guarantee I’ll do it perfectly.”

Within the Lingxi Sword, Lingxi was even more annoyed that Long Chen did not believe her words.

If not for the fact that it was not yet time, she would have rushed to the Daybreak Merchants Union right away.

“You won’t be able to believe what I’m capable of. No matter what you say, I’ll definitely obtain those Thunder Flame Crystals for you!”

Lingxi was suddenly extremely resolute, completely unlike herself. However, Long Chen knew what this little girl was thinking.

For this period of time, Long Chen had treated her extremely well. The moment he had a little wealth, he would exchange it for spirit medicine. Even when his family was facing a huge crisis, Long Chen had even entered the Desolate Beast Domain, risking his life to find Dream Spirit Grass for her. This made Lingxi extremely touched.

Hence, she wanted to do something for him.

“With this girl, I don’t think I’ll even need to fool around anymore...”

Long Chen began to think wickedly, and immediately shook his head. On one hand, his relationship with Lingxi had not reached that stage, and Lingxi’s background was still extremely mysterious. Long Chen sometimes felt like he and Lingxi were from two different worlds, and on the other hand...

“A Dragon young master like me has always flitted across the flowers, with no leaves sticking to my body. How could I die by hanging on a tree, and what’s more, it’s a tree that still hasn’t fully grown...”

Some things in the world were just that mysterious. They would be unexpected, but yet somehow entirely logical.

“However, Lingxi is just too beautiful. In just a few years, her feminine flavour will come out, and I can only do little but fall before her knees in awe of her beauty. If a goddess like her were to fall to any beast, it would simply be a tragedy!”

At the thought that Lingxi would get together with other men in the future, Long Chen had the urge to die.

“Could this be... the legendary thing called ‘love’?” Long Chen could not help but laugh.

In this period of time, Lingxi and he had experienced a lot. It felt like they had gone through thick and thin amidst laughter and anger. Every time Long Chen recalled this, his lips would curve up in a grin.

“Sister Yu from the Emerald Jade Chambers once said that love at first sight is just bullshit. True love is when two people have a journey together, cry together, laugh together, and thus develop feelings. At this rate, might we be in this situation soon?”

Long Chen was exceptionally confused by this. From young, he had had fantasies of taking multiple wives and concubines, and this situation was nothing

like what he had wanted.

“Hey, stupid! You’re grinning so disgustingly. What in the world are you thinking about?”

Seeing Long Chen so deep in thought all of a sudden with his expression showing such ecstasy, Lingxi knitted her brows and questioned.

Long Chen simply laughed in embarrassment. It had already gotten dark, and Long Chen glanced in the direction of the Daybreak Merchants Union, suddenly beaming, “Little Xi, did you notice that the name ‘Daybreak Merchants Union’...”

“Is there anything strange about it?”

Long Chen lightly smiled, “Daybreak (Chen Xi), is made up of my ‘Chen’ and your ‘Xi’. Together, won’t we be Chen Xi?”

Feeling Long Chen’s passionate gaze on her, Lingxi turned bright red, flustered, and made threatening gestures as she scolded, “If you dare take advantage of me, just see if I smack your bottom!”

Though this was admonishment, there was still sweetness and gentleness in her tone.

Suddenly realising what she was doing, Lingxi was stunned for a moment and then changed the topic, “It’s about time, isn’t it? I want to leave now.”

Long Chen had no desire to stop her. If she did not display her usefulness, she

might cause some trouble for him in the future.

The danger of this mission was relatively low, so Long Chen agreed to it.

“Remember, your safety is more important than anything else.”

“Yeah.”

The little Lingxi Sword slid out from the side of Long Chen’s ear, and then disappeared into the night.

Without the Lingxi Sword by his ear, Long Chen felt a little empty and unsettled.

When Lingxi was not by his side, he suddenly felt extremely lonely.

“Am I actually afraid of loneliness?”

It was difficult to imagine how he would have survived this journey, and how he would fare in the future if Lingxi was not around.

“‘Chen Xi’ talks about the beginning of a day. We’re always going to be like the crisp morning, signifying a new life that will eternally exist!”

At this point, Long Chen closed his eyes, placed his hands on the armrest of the chair he was sitting on and leant back, feeling his own heartbeat.

Long Chen listened closely, finding that it was very loud.

This sound was extremely loud in his ears. There was a vague sense of the omnipresence of a crimson, godlike dragon in his heart, roaring and snarling.

“The Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon... Is my fate only blood and slaughter?”

Time slowly passed, and in a little more than a quarter of an hour, Long Chen’s eyes opened. At this moment, a cosmos pouch fell into his palm, and a satisfying feeling reappeared by his ear.

“You idiot, get back to Lingwu City as soon as you can!”

Without a word, Long Chen strode forward and headed for Lingwu City.

Noticing that there was no sign of weariness in Lingxi’s voice, Long Chen heaved a sigh of relief. While rushing back, Long Chen asked worriedly, “How was it? Did you get hurt?”

“How’s that possible?” Lingxi was rather proud of herself, “That stinking guy got his cosmos pouch stolen even before he noticed me. I even helped you teach that Ao Xue a lesson! Who told her to be so hateful!”

Upon hearing that Lingxi had done something mischievous, Long Chen was rather interested, “What did you do to her?”

Being asked this, Lingxi turned red and became a little embarrassed. The feeling of being a bad child was amazing, though it did not fit with her style.

“I... I cut her hair...”

“Pu!”

Long Chen was rather unsure about this, but he couldn't help but feel that this little girl was simply too adorable.

“Oh right, there's something else. While stealing this cosmos pouch, I exchanged some moves with Manager Zhao. I also used a secret method to conceal myself, which consumed quite a bit of energy. Out of the medicinal power from the four Spirit Recovery Fruits, I've used up about two...”

Long Chen was quite speechless at this spoilt child, but he waved his arms and spoke grandly, “Don't worry and consume as much as you like. Once it's not enough, I can go steal more!”

“Yay!”

“Let's go. Once we're back, let's see how many Thunder Flame Crystals you obtained!”

Chapter 101 – Large Harvest!

After entering the Human Dan Realm, Long Chen was promoted from being a fourth grade disciple to a third grade disciple. From his previous residence in the area where the fourth grade disciples lived, he had now moved to where the third grade disciples were.

The whole time he was in the Lingwu Family, he had spent most of his time cultivating or going on excursions, rarely socializing with others. Hence, he did not recognise most of the third grade disciples.

His new residence was bigger than the previous one, and there was even an independent courtyard. With birdsong and fragrant flowers, how could it not be beautiful?

After returning, Long Chen quickly entered the basement and sat in a lotus position, tightly holding the cosmos pouch that Lingxi had stolen.

“Quick, look at what’s inside! I remember this is the pouch from which he took out the Thunder Flame Crystals! That fellow also has another cosmos pouch that I wasn’t able to obtain. I imagine it’s where all his other valuables are!”

The moment Long Chen opened the cosmos pouch, a very concentrated sense of the power of lightning and flames attacked him. Though all this power was contained within the Thunder Flame Crystals, it was already quite formidable.

He spread out the Thunder Flame Crystals, and excitement appeared in Long Chen and Lingxi’s eyes.

“There are 47 of them here!”

After counting them, Lingxi was extremely excited.

Long Chen knew that with 10 Thunder Flame Crystals, he would be able to attain the Thunder Flame Physique and become a Thunder Flame cultivator! These 47 crystals were definitely enough for his use.

“I think the headquarters of the Daybreak Merchants Union gave him 50 crystals. He gave me one to fuse with, and two to other people, leaving him with 47.”

After leaving the quiet room in the Daybreak Merchants Union, Long Chen had returned the remaining four crystals to Zhao Tianfang.

However, it was now back in his possession.

If Zhao Tianfang knew the truth of what had happened, he would definitely be coughing blood.

“Through the steel hearts, he found out how durable my body is and that my potential was out of the ordinary. He wanted to use the Thunder Flame Crystals to test me and so, treated me very well. If the results showed that I was suited to the Thunder Flame Crystals, he would probably make use of the crystals and get me to join the Daybreak Merchants Union...”

Long Chen had seen through Zhao Tianfang’s intentions, and no longer had any inhibitions towards him.

“Long Chen, there are only a few days left to the Sky Martial Realm Competition. You’d better fuse with the crystals and see what your limit is!”

Long Chen nodded. In the individual rooms of the Lingwu Family, doors could only be opened with jade identity cards, so there was a certain level of privacy. In the basement where he could cultivate, Long Chen kept the Thunder Flame Crystals and left one in his hands.

“When I fused with one crystal, I could endure it despite it being very uncomfortable. It shouldn’t be a problem for me to fuse with another one.”

With a deep breath, Long Chen immediately fused with the crystal. At that moment, the pain similar to what he had experienced the previous time rushed into his body. During this entire process, Long Chen was in pain, yet still happy.

The attack of the second Thunder Flame Crystal was even more powerful than before. It was basically twice the power of the first crystal, and with the destructive force of lightning and fire, Long Chen could do little but grit his teeth in pain.

Lingxi had initially been a little worried, but upon seeing that Long Chen could handle it, she joyfully danced in circles and giggled at the suffering look on his face.

At this point, the power of lightning and fire was circulating throughout and destroying his body. At the same time, it was also reconstructing his body, and with every step, his body became even more solid and durable.

Long Chen had spent less than an hour fusing with the first Thunder Flame Crystal. The second crystal was essentially the same as the first, but the Thunder Flame Crystal was a strange thing where the difficulty in fusing with the second was more than two times more challenging than the first.

If he fused with three crystals, it might even be twice as difficult as the second crystal.

The difficulty multiplied every time he fused with another crystal. One could imagine the difficulty that came with fusing with numerous Thunder Flame Crystals.

The second crystal took Long Chen a total of around two hours. By then, it was already deep into the night.

Long Chen stood up and happily stretched his body.

“Compared to before, the strength of my body has increased a lot, as expected. Of course, the power of lightning and flames in the real Qi in my dantian has also increased.”

“How is it? Want to try another one?” Lingxi waited by Long Chen’s side and asked in anticipation.

She could sense that this was not Long Chen’s limit.

“Sure.”

All the pain from fusing with the Thunder Flame Crystal vanished after the process was successful. All that was left was a numb feeling in his muscles.

Though this feeling made Long Chen a little worried, this was not enough to scare him.

The third Thunder Flame Crystal was absorbed into his body. As expected, the difficulty in fusing had increased by a lot.

This time, Long Chen took about four hours to finish fusing with the third crystal.

Whether it was his physical body or real Qi, both had increased in power by a certain amount. However, the pain this time was much more terrifying than before. Long Chen had gritted his teeth and, after much difficulty, pulled through and endured the process of fusing with this crystal. This experience was rather scary.

“You’ve managed to fuse with three, which is already past what Manager Zhao expected you to be able to do. Long Chen, let’s leave it at this. It looks like you can’t endure for much longer.”

Seeing Long Chen catching his breath, Lingxi was rather worried.

“That was just three Thunder Flame Crystals! It’s not my limit yet. There are still about four hours till daybreak. I want to try again!”

Long Chen was stubborn and his gaze showed his resolution. Lingxi could not persuade him against this and could only let him be. In addition, though the

fusion with the third crystal was quite terrifying, Long Chen evidently still had the strength to challenge another one.

He began the fusion with the fourth Thunder Flame Crystal immediately. Unsurprisingly, this was even more terrifying than the third crystal. Long Chen felt as if there were swords hidden in his body, constantly being swung around and slashing his body to pieces.

The pain this time made Long Chen turn green. Lingxi noted the electricity and flames emitted out of his body, his pained expression and tightly clenched fists, and gazed at Long Chen nervously.

Time flew by. Long Chen endured the intense pain and, as expected, it was difficult to make the power of the crystal submit to him. The force from the crystal entered Long Chen's body, and it was as if the force was combining with the power from the previous three crystals and fighting against Long Chen's Dragon Soul Qi.

"Struggle! Persevere! Only then will I have a chance at succeeding!"

Within Long Chen, his conviction was as solid as ever.

The Yang family needed him to save them, and Lingxi, too, needed him to save her. He knew he needed to become stronger for them.

"Does this tiny Thunder Flame Crystal think it can stump me, Long Chen?"

To make himself stronger, Long Chen was going to throw caution to the wind. For a regular person, this pain could tear his heart and wreck his lungs, but Long

Chen gritted his teeth, steeled his expression and pressed on!

“At this rate, I can only fuse with a maximum of four Thunder Flame Crystals. This seems to be quite a distance from the Thunder Flame Physique, and becoming a Thunder Flame cultivator...”

Long Chen was dissatisfied, but what he did not know was that in the Daybreak Merchants Union, the number of young cultivators who had just entered the Human Dan Realm and were able to fuse with four Thunder Flame Crystals, was few and far between.

Those were all the top geniuses of the Yuan Ling City!

“By the way, Long Chen, how did we forget about Dragon Soul Transformation? You’re a true dragon cultivator only when you’re in that form.” Lingxi’s voice sounded.

Only after Lingxi brought up this, did Long Chen remember this. There were many brands related to dragons on his body while he was in his Dragon Soul Transformation form. The real Qi in his body increased by 4 to 10 times the usual! This meant that he could take advantage of this fact and fuse with the Thunder Flame Crystals in that form!

At this thought, Long Chen brightened up and in an instant, completed the transformation. Perfect, orderly red scales and sharp bony spikes surfaced upon his skin.

In a moment, Long Chen had transformed into a very flashy appearance.

After transforming, Long Chen could feel as if multiple dragon auras were surrounding himself.

The suffering that the fourth Thunder Flame Crystal was giving him actually vanished after his transformation!

Long Chen realised that whether it was his Dragon Soul Qi or current dragon body, they completely overpowered the crystal!

The power of the fourth Thunder Flame Crystal was nothing at all, and Long Chen easily absorbed it into his body, causing an enormous change in his body.

“The rate of fusion seems to be a lot faster than when I fused with the first crystal?”

Long Chen was stunned at this Dragon Soul Transformation.

After turning into this form, even the number of Thunder Flame Crystals he could fuse with had multiplied. This could be said to be opposing the heavens!

“It’s effective!”

Seeing that Long Chen had taken just a bit of time to fuse with the crystal that he had already spent four hours trying to absorb, Lingxi was astonished by the mysteriousness and strength of dragon cultivators.

“Hey, how many Thunder Flame Crystals do you think you can fuse with in this form?”

“We’ll know if I continue trying!”

Long Chen laughed brightly. He had first thought he would not be able to fuse with the fifth crystal, but the fact was that he had already done it. From the looks of it, it had been effortless.

“This freak...”

Seeing Long Chen enjoying himself, Lingxi was a little speechless. Her beautiful eyes were fixed on Long Chen, pride obvious in her expression.

After all, without Lingxi, Long Chen would have never been able to obtain so many Thunder Flame Crystals.

In less than an hour, he fused with the fifth crystal. Long Chen opened his eyes, looking satisfied.

“The fifth Thunder Flame Crystal seemed to be even easier than fusing with the first. Girl, just see how I’ll do tonight. I promise I’ll be so cool and charming that you wouldn’t know what to do with yourself!”

“Tsk, by the time you get to the seventh or eighth, the difficulty will become a hundred times that of the first. How do you think you’re going to deal with that? Can you stay so arrogant?”

Chapter 102 – Liu Yuan

It was now dawn. There were six more days till the Sky Martial Realm Competition.

During this time, most people would be cultivating intensely in their rooms, so nobody would bother with disturbing Long Chen.

“Though the sixth Thunder Flame Crystal did not really cause me much pain, it actually took four hours to completely fuse into my body!”

Long Chen thought to himself as he tested out his body, feeling the tyrannical strength within.

“One can imagine that if I did not have my Dragon Soul Transformation, I would’ve long been dead when I tried to fuse with the sixth crystal. The more crystals I fuse with, the higher the difficulty in fusion. I wonder what is the limit for my dragon body?”

In the last few days, Long Chen tried his hand at these crystals.

The Sky Martial Realm Competition was imminent, and it was no use for him to cultivate. It was much better to use these Thunder Flame Crystals and increase the sturdiness of his body and strength of his real Qi.

“With my current strength, it’s alright for me to deal with opponents who are at the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm. If it’s someone at the perfect mastery stage, then there’s definitely no chance for me. It’s even more

impossible for me to deal with Feng Wutian, who has all sorts of amazing battle techniques and a great bloodline.”

The peak of the Human Dan realm, which was the perfect mastery stage, was a small distance away from the Earth Dan Realm. If he had many resources, it was not a problem for him to have a battle power comparable to someone at the perfect mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm.

“With your current strength, you’ll be killed in one strike if he really attacks you.” Lingxi furrowed her brows and exclaimed.

At the thought of Feng Wutian, Long Chen wrinkled his brows. He knew that the key to succeeding at the Sky Martial Realm Competition lay with the seventh Thunder Flame Crystal he now held in his hands.

“I don’t care anymore! Whatever Tian his name is, when the time comes, I’m going to bash him up with one strike!”

Seeing Long Chen so agitated, Lingxi shook her head inside. The difference between him and Feng Wutian wasn’t something that could be compensated with a little emotional outburst from Long Chen.

However, she couldn’t bear to emphasise this gap to him.

The fusion with the seventh Thunder Flame Crystal had caused Long Chen, who had undergone the Dragon Soul Transformation, to feel some stress. However, this was not as bad as when he had fused with the fourth crystal. In terms of the amount of time spent, however, it took much longer for this process to complete.

By the time Long Chen was done, half the day was already gone, and only then was the seventh crystal finally absorbed into his body!

“Next is the eighth crystal!”

The day of the Sky Martial Realm competition was approaching. Long Chen did not dare neglect his training. When it came to fusing with the eighth Thunder Flame Crystal, the suffering he had to go through was already comparable to when he had fused with the fourth crystal.

However, at the thought of the pressure that Feng Wutian placed on him, Long Chen knew he definitely could not back down at this point!

“Only people who can endure will be able to succeed. If I can’t even get through this, then I am nothing!”

He gritted his teeth, and Long Chen put in so much effort that Lingxi’s voice was beginning to get hoarse in her worry.

Seeing this diligent and intelligent young man, Lingxi did not know what to say.

This time, it took an unexpectedly long time for the fusion to complete. Long Chen spent a total of two days fusing with the eighth Thunder Flame Crystal!

At the beginning, it was indeed unbearably painful. However, nearing the end, he was pretty much numb to the feeling. His resolution had spurred him on to endure up till this point.

“Long Chen, let’s not fuse with the ninth crystal, alright?” Lingxi asked worriedly.

Long Chen’s stubbornness and toughness had reached a level where she now held admiration for him.

“What are you talking about? This bit of pain is nowhere near my limit!”

Long Chen chuckled, and then retrieved the ninth Thunder Flame Crystal from the cosmos pouch.

Now, he had already fused with eight Thunder Flame Crystals. Under the tempering from the crystals, his body was now several times stronger than before.

Within his dantian, the power of lightning and flames had already begun to seep into his dantian. This power twined along the surface of the Human Dan, and they soon began to merge!

“As long as they merge completely, I can become a Thunder Flame cultivator!”

Long Chen was very clear about this fact. Without further ado, he quickly began to fuse with the ninth Thunder Flame Crystal. This time, the difficulty was several times higher than fusing with the eighth, and was that much more painful. In general, Long Chen had already turned green.

Long Chen was now bathed in blue flames and electricity, looking extremely

sinister.

A powerful aura gradually exploded forth from his body. Flames covered his entire body, and within the flames was lightning that rapidly traversed!

Luckily, after so many days of this torture, Long Chen had somewhat adapted to the pain from the Thunder Flame Crystals. Though it was challenging, he gritted his teeth and endured till the end.

“I actually took almost three days to fuse with the ninth crystal. Seems like it’s impossible for me to attempt fusing with the tenth, since the Sky Martial Realm Competition is tomorrow.”

At this thought, Long Chen was a little disappointed. He was on the verge of becoming a Thunder Flame cultivator, but there was not enough time left.

“Though I don’t know if I’ll be able to fuse with the tenth crystal, the chances of me surviving the Sky Martial Realm Competition will be largely increased if I manage to do so.”

However, Long Chen was not discouraged.

“I now have Profound, middle-grade techniques-Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, and the constitution battle technique-Origin Reversion. I also have the Profound, low-grade technique-Nine Heavens Dragon Roving Step. With the Thunder Flame Crystals, whether in terms of my body or the nature of my real Qi, both have been strengthened by large amounts. With my Dragon Soul Transformation and my Blood Transmuted Qi, I would even be able to contend with someone at the perfect mastery level at the Human Dan Realm.”

Long Chen was confident.

After fusing with so many Thunder Flame Crystals, he spent another day trying to get used to his body. The second day arrived quickly, and when dawn came, Gan Lin brought him to the the Green Willow Residence.

“The enforcer has already brought Liu Ling and Feng Wutian in. Within the Green Sun Hall, we have our elites as well as Lord Liu Yuan, an expert at the Heaven Dan Realm. You must remember to be respectful towards Lord Liu Yuan, the chief elder of our Green Sun Hall.”

Long Chen silently took these words to heart.

There were countless experts in the Lingwu family. Long Chen was now but a tiny ant in their midst who had yet to catch the eye of anyone. Now that he was going to meet yet another powerful person, he could not help but feel excited.

Come to think of it, Mo Xiaolang and this Liu Yuan were the strongest people Long Chen had ever met.

Liu Lan had already brought Feng Wutian and Liu Ling over, causing Long Chen to feel a little gloomy.

“Is she looking down on me?”

That seemed to be the only explanation.

This Sky Martial Realm competition, as well as the conflict between Long Chen and Feng Wutian had been stirred up by this beautiful Liu Lan. Long Chen had no idea what she was trying to achieve, but it was definitely not because she had nothing better to do.

In the Green Sun Hall, there were a total of five enforcers who were in charge of five residences each, amongst which included the Green Willow Residence. As one of the eight halls in the Green faction, the Green Sun Hall was obviously even more developed and luxurious compared to the Green Willow Residence.

If one wanted to talk about the Green Willow Residence which was taken care of by young disciples, the Green Sun Hall was home to experts. The moment Long Chen entered, he could see a few middle-aged or elderly people who were obviously past the Human Dan Realm.

Within the hall of the Green Sun Hall, there were only people with huge potential.

In each hall, the chief elder was the strongest. Next was the enforcers who took care of disciples at the Human Dan Realm. Besides the enforcers, if one was at a specific age and had a huge potential, they could gain the name of an elder. Besides the five enforcers in the Green Sun Hall, there were four other elders.

At this moment, a middle-aged, sage-like scholar was seated in a chair at the centre of the room. On his left were four old men who had suppressed their spirit, while on the right were five males and females who were a little younger. The exquisite and charming Liu Lan was one of them.

In front of them were the outstanding disciples at the Human Dan Realm, who would represent Green Sun Hall in the Sky Martial Realm Competition by the

Green Faction.

When they first arrived at this hall, Gan Lin had greeted the people within and then sent Long Chen in, before respectfully leaving and returning to the Green Willow Residence.

As Long Chen had arrived a little later and there were also rumours regarding him and Feng Wutian, he now had a poor reputation. From the moment he entered, everyone was staring right at him.

“What the hell are you looking at? I’m not some beautiful maiden. Do you have to stare so hard at the area below my garments?”

He scolded inwardly, but did not actually dare to be so rude. Long Chen quickly raised his head and bowed towards the people sitting in front, “Disciple Long Chen greets Chief Elder, the four elders and the five enforcers!”

The four elders were probably so old that they could not move their facial muscles, staring at Long Chen indifferently. The four enforcers smiled at Long Chen, and Liu Lan’s behaviour was the same as the others, as if she had just met him for the first time.

“I wonder what this stupid woman is thinking...”

Only now did Long Chen pay attention to Liu Yuan.

Liu Yuan sized Long Chen up for a while, and then remembered what his little daughter had spoken to him about. He glanced at his older daughter, Liu Lan.

That gaze evidently spoke volumes. Liu Lan had determined Long Chen to be three stars, despite his unremarkable condition, which was not really acceptable.

“He’s only just entered the Lingwu Family, doesn’t have any bloodlines, and did not turn up after agreeing to a duel. This young man called Long Chen only has the power of someone who just entered the Human Dan Realm. Why did Little Lan rate him as three stars?”

Though he was not very pleased with Long Chen, the name list had already been sent forth, and Liu Yuan could not be bothered to change it. He simply spoke, “You’re Long Chen, yes? Though you only just entered the family, you’ve already received the great opportunity of entering the Sky Martial Realm Competition. I hope you can grasp this chance and not humiliate the Green Sun Hall.”

“This is a battle amongst the various halls in the Green Faction. It has to do with the pride of every single person here, so the ten of you here must do your best. Is that understood?”

Chapter 103 – Sky Martial Hall

Eyes staying on Long Chen for a brief moment, Liu Yuan scanned the young faces of the ten other powerful cultivators.

Long Chen made sure he looked well behaved on the surface. From the depths of his heart, however, he really did not like this sort of environment. Under Liu Yuan's stern words, the ten youngsters did not dare make a sound.

Long Chen, however, was not in the mood to listen. He had originally been looking forward to meeting this powerful man, but Liu Yuan had considered him someone invited to join in just to make up numbers. Long Chen, too, did not have a good impression of him.

"Looks like not participating in the match with Feng Wutian at the Platform of Life and Death earned me quite a reputation in the Green Sun Hall."

Taking in the gazes of the elders and enforcers that hinted at contempt, Long Chen could guess that it had to do with that matter.

"Feng Wutian, Liu Ling...Your actions caused me to be looked down upon..."

While Liu Yuan continued to speak, Long Chen secretly turned and discovered that little beauty, Liu Ling, speaking with her father.

As if noticing someone was looking at her, Liu Ling turned and sneered at Long Chen.

“If I ever get a chance, just see if I punish you!”

While Long Chen was still thinking about ways to deal with them, Liu Yuan had already nodded towards his audience, “There’s not much time left. You are to proceed to the Sky Martial Hall at the Green Faction. In this competition, Feng Wutian will be the leader. All of you are to listen and execute tasks based on his commands. Always prioritise the reputation of the Green Sun Hall.”

He turned to look at Liu Lan, “Lan’er, bring them to the Sky Martial Hall now.”

Liu Lan nodded and got up, showing off her slim and graceful body. She nodded towards Liu Yuan and then brought the eleven of them out of the Green Sun Hall, and proceeded towards the Sky Martial Hall.

Liu Yuan watched them leave and then turned to the four elders, “What do you think of our chances this time?”

One of the elders quickly spoke up, “The contest over the Zenith Crystal Sword is a fight between the best of the best. The others are just there to make up the numbers. In general, even though our Green Sun Hall isn’t very strong, we have an absolute talent like Feng Wutian who has both a bloodline and talent at the Human Dan Realm. In my opinion, this should not be a problem!”

Another elder, shook his head, “If we talk about the best of the best, those from other halls are not half bad either, especially the Green Emperor Hall. The leader they’re sending out this time should be elder Chu Fengqing’s sixteen year old daughter by the name of Chu Yunyao. Wutian might be under some pressure when dealing with this little genius.”

Liu Yuan furrowed his brows and nodded, “Chu Yunyao’s might will surely give Feng Wutian some pressure. However, she’s still young and is at a disadvantage in terms of her sex. Our chances of winning are not that meagre!”

“If the Green Sun Hall is able to clinch the champion this time, we will definitely gain a better reputation. When that happens, the Head Elder will surely take care of us. It’s a chance for us to rise to power...”

At this thought, everyone present was stirred up and chatted for a while longer before dispersing.

“By the way, Chief Elder, there seems to be some conflict between Long Chen and Liu Ling. Do you think he’ll cause trouble for Ling’er during the Sky Martial Realm competition?”

Liu Ling was the princess of the Green Sun Hall, and everyone loved her dearly.

Liu Yuan laughed coldly, “It’s just an outsider who recently entered the family. If he really has some strange intentions, Wutian will definitely dispose of him on my behalf. Besides, Ling’er herself is at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, and can hold her own against that fellow!”

.....

After leaving the Green Sun Hall, Long Chen could sense that out of the ten of them, nine were pressed close to Feng Wutian, who was in front. There were even three young cultivators at the perfect mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm.

Liu Lan did not speak a word and merely guided them. The other nine cast their glances at Long Chen and smiled slightly. They seemed to be teasing him, contempt and despise apparent in their eyes.

“He promised to the battle but didn’t even have the guts to keep to his promise. This Long Chen really sucks.”

One of them shook his head and then whispered to the person beside him.

Cowardliness is a trait built into the very being of those that come from small areas. We might even be burdened by him since he’s competing with us in the Sky Martial Realm Competition.”

“I think it’s better if he dies as soon as possible. What if he flees just before a battle? Our Green Sun Hall will definitely be humiliated and Chief Elder will probably punish all of us. If that happens, we’re done for.”

“Don’t even talk about it. I’m sure Feng Wutian wouldn’t let him leave this place alive. I heard rumours that Huang Feiyang, who used to follow Feng Wutian, was killed by Long Chen using dirty tricks.”

“He’s not a man since he has no power and only knows to attack from the shadows.”

The group of them walked and whispered amongst themselves.

Listening to their conversation, Liu Ling was secretly delighted. At the thought of Long Chen’s repulsive face, she was even more pleased.

Their discussion not too far away from Long Chen, and Liu Ling knew he could definitely hear all of this. She turned, wanting to see him stewing in rage, but unexpectedly, he was strolling along with his head down, looking indifferent.

“Is he trying to pretend that he’s unperturbed, or does he not have the guts to fight back?”

Liu Ling wondered, and then turned her attention to Feng Wutian who was walking beside her and looking into the distance. That high nose bridge and determined expression charmed her further.

“Brother Feng Wutian really is the most perfect man of all time. Even if there were ten thousand Long Chens, none of them could compare to one Brother Wutian...”

Imagining that she would get married to such a man, Liu Ling was full of joy.

At this moment, Feng Wutian looked at her with gentle eyes, and her heart palpitated like a baby deer ramming into its surroundings.

“Ling’er, were you the one that leaked the news that Long Chen had agreed to the battle but did not have the guts to appear?”

Feng Wutian’s voice showed a trace of displeasure, and Liu Ling panicked, “Whose fault is it that he’s so annoying? He even dared to humiliate you like that! Just that wretched appearance of his makes me angry!”

Feng Wutian shook his head and patted her head, “Be good. Don’t do this in the future. The weak will always pay for their actions, so don’t waste your energy

dealing with him. He's courting death anyway. Why bother with this kind of person?"

"Oh..." Liu Ling obediently nodded and then happily said, "Thank you Brother Wutian, I'll keep that in mind."

Liu Lan had also heard Feng Wutian's words. She turned and smiled at him, and then hastened her footsteps.

"Feng Wutian has matured quite a bit in these two years. Ling'er won't suffer when she follows him in the future. What about me? Father actually made me marry him. What should I do?"

Flustered, Liu Lan looked back and found Long Chen who was walking alone. The eleven of them were extremely close to each other, and in other words, Long Chen would have been able to hear everything Feng Wutian had said.

However, from the looks of it, his expression was calm despite being alone.

"He has a very strong spirit, but he loses out in terms of his background."

Liu Lan evaluated and then focused on the journey.

Outside the Green Sun Hall, there were quite a number of people. After about half an hour, they finally arrived at the entrance to the Sky Martial Realm-the Sky Martial Hall.

In the Green Faction, besides the Treasure Exchange Pavilions and Hall of

Achievements, this was the most lively place.

The members of the Lingwu family's daily life consisted of cultivation, tests, and completing missions. One of the tests was to enter the Sky Martial Realm and battle with beasts to hone their battle techniques. At the same time, they could also obtain items from these beasts and then exchange them for contribution points.

Long Chen knew that in the Sky Martial Realm, there were three large regions, namely the Human Dan Region, Earth Dan Region and the Heaven Dan Region.

In the Human Dan Region, the most powerful beast was merely a Profound level beast at the fourth grade. In the Earth Region, the most powerful beast was at around the sixth or seventh grade, and those that were even more powerful were in the Heaven Dan Region.

The place where disciples of the Green Faction at the Human Dan Realm trained was in the Human Dan Region. Usually, it was the most crowded place in the entire Sky Martial Realm.

However, this was the day when a competition between people of the Green Faction at the Human Dan Realm took place. The other eight large factions knew this and withdrew their disciples from the Sky Martial Realm, leaving a space for them to compete.

“The timespan of this competition is eight days. Within eight days, you have to find the Heart Corroding demonic beast and then steal the Zenith Crystal Sword in its stomach. If nobody is able to obtain the Zenith Crystal Sword, the competition will end. After all, those from other factions still need to enter the Sky Martial Realm!”

After entering the Sky Martial Hall, Liu Lan repeated this point once more.

“Eight days?”

Long Chen calculated, “I would need seven to eight days to fuse with the tenth Thunder Flame Crystal. Anyway, the Zenith Crystal Sword doesn’t really suit me. I should just find a place somewhere and fuse with the tenth, and after that happens...”

Long Chen murmured to himself in a low voice. Within the sword, Lingxi heard his words and spoke up worriedly, “Long Chen, don’t be too optimistic. Let’s not talk about that tenth crystal. Whether you’ll be able to leave on your own after entering the Sky Martial Realm is still a question. I’ve seen the look in their eyes, and they don’t seem to have good intentions...”

Lingxi’s observations were even more meticulous than his.

Long Chen lifted his head and looked at the other nine, realising there seemed to be bloodlust in their expressions.

The person who looked the most indifferent was Feng Wutian.

Out of all of them, he had the biggest issue with Long Chen. However, he did not appear to even be bothered by Long Chen.

With Lingxi’s reminder, Long Chen knew he had to be careful with his actions.

At this moment, everyone had followed Liu Lan into the Sky Martial Hall. In the vast Sky Martial Hall, it was empty save for a few groups of people. There were around ten people in each group.

“These must be the outstanding disciples at the Human Dan Realm of the other halls in the Green Faction. Altogether, there should be about a hundred people...”

◦

All of these people had an intimidating aura, and were evident not easily dealt with. There were quite a number of people who were around Long Chen’s age and already experts at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm.

The Sky Martial Realm Competition officially began!

Chapter 104 – Chu Yunyao

The teams from the other halls arrived one after another. Soon, eight teams assembled in the Sky Martial Hall.

From the corner where Long Chen's team from the Green Sun Hall was, he began to size up the people from the other groups.

Long Chen knew that in the various large halls of the Green Faction, the combined power of Green Sun Hall was in the last place. However, with Feng Wutian, they had a hint of a chance at winning.

Unfortunately, it wasn't as if there were no experts at the peak of the Human Dan Realm in the other halls. The young girl from the Green Emperor Hall attracted the attention of everyone present just by her entrance.

The Green Emperor Hall was the most powerful branch of the Green Faction. Whether in terms of its strength or potential, it was an absolute power ranked number 1.

"Is that girl Chu Yunyao of the Green Emperor Hall?"

Liu Ling wondered while gritting her teeth. The girl was in a long yellow skirt, face exquisite despite the cold expression on her face, and there was an indescribable elegance to this young lady.

Jealousy was evident in her tone.

Despite being the daughter of a Chief Elder as well, the difference between the two of them was huge.

Liu Ling was at the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm, but Chu Yunyao was already on the verge of breaking through to the Earth Dan Realm.

In addition, all eyes were on Chu Yunyao, while Liu Ling merely hung around Feng Wutian's side and occasionally received some compliments.

Even Feng Wutian was now sizing up Chu Yunyao. Liu Ling gritted her teeth while she fumed, wishing she could forcefully turn her Brother Wutian's head back in her direction.

Long Chen also curiously glanced at the girl. Her strength was at the same level as Feng Wutian, despite being younger than him.

Most importantly, her looks were out of the ordinary. Though she did not have the mature charm that Liu Lan possessed, she was on a whole other level compared to Liu Ling.

At this point, Liu Lan and the leaders of the other seven halls had come together.

Though the Green Sun Hall was just average, Liu Lan's beauty was known throughout the Green Faction.

As the leaders spoke, their eyes occasionally rested on her sexy, delicate frame.

“Since everyone’s here, shall we commence the Sky Martial Realm Competition?”

“Let us not waste time. Guide them into the pathway to the Sky Martial Realm. Before coming here, all of you have already spoken to your juniors about things to take note of, yes?”

“Naturally.”

After some discussion, Liu Lan returned to where people from the Green Sun Hall stood.

There were already people calling the juniors in their hall, heading towards the pathway not far from Long Chen.

The pathway was about ten metres wide, and at the end was a membrane of light. This membrane rippled like water and produced glimmering reflections. It was a thing of beauty.

A mysterious aura was being emitted by these reflections.

“This is the entrance to a Small Cosmos World, which appears to have been left behind by some expert!”

Within the sword, Lingxi exclaimed in surprise.

“Does that mean there’s something amazing in there?”

“I doubt it. The Lingwu family has been here for so many years, and this place isn’t all that big either. It’d long since have become their personal assets. All the good things are probably gone by now.”

Long Chen then gave up on his intentions in this area.

The Sky Martial Realm Competition was something he was forced to participate in. All he wanted was to train and get stronger.

Team after team passed by Long Chen and headed into the entrance to the Sky Martial Realm.

After a while, the Green Emperor Hall which had about twenty people approached them. The leader’s status was not as high as Chu Yunyao’s, and hence, she walked in front.

When they got nearer, Chu Yunyao suddenly advanced towards Liu Lan, “Yunyao greets Sister Lan. My brother wanted me to pass the message that he has something on and cannot get away from it this time, which is why he isn’t here. He says he misses you.”

Upon hearing this, Liu Lan’s expression became unnatural, “Alright, I understand. Yunyao, be careful in the Sky Martial Realm Competition.”

Yunyao nodded and left.

This young girl was extremely cold to everyone. Only when she spoke to Liu Lan

was there a hint of respect in her eyes.

“Brother? Does that mean this woman and her brother are together?”

At the thought that this charming woman already had someone, Long Chen had a feeling like all the good things in the world belonged to those who didn't deserve it.

Liu Lan suddenly turned and spoke indifferently, “You must always think of the big picture in the competition. I'll wait for you here. I wish you luck.”

Feng Wutian and the others complied, and he then brought everyone towards the entrance.

As Long Chen walked past Liu Lan, he kept staring at her. She had a smile about her face as she looked straight back at Long Chen, seemingly not the least bit guilty about arranging Long Chen's participation in this dangerous competition.

After Long Chen left, Liu Lan shook her head and thought to herself, “He's only just entered the Human Dan Realm. Under the pressure from cultivators at the perfect mastery stage of the Heaven Dan Realm, how could he survive? Is my training method too harsh?”

At the thought of that person, Liu Lan frowned, “If nobody can hinder it, my fate does not seem to be able to be changed. Could this be karma?”

While she was deep in thought, Long Chen followed the others and entered the membrane of light.

A refreshing feeling surrounded him, and Long Chen felt as if he had fallen into a pool, rapidly descending. In a few moments, his body stopped and he suddenly found himself standing on yellow soil.

He looked around. On this huge land, all he could see was solid yellow soil. Short, sturdy trees and shrubs dotted the land, and while it could not be said to be a pretty sight, it wasn't exactly ugly either.

He looked up at the sky, finding that it was yellow. There were dense yellow clouds that crowded the sky.

A desolate feeling was produced from this area, and Long Chen knew that he was now in another world.

“Is this... the Sky Martial Realm?”

The only person who was at a loss in this situation was Long Chen, as compared to others who had already entered the Sky Martial Realm before.

Seeing him looking like a bumpkin, the others sneered and mocked him.

In the Green Faction, all the other teams who had already arrived at the Sky Martial Realm had left. Feng Wutian first brought them all to a place with short shrubbery.

The search for the Heart Corroding demonic beast really depended on luck.

Feng Wutian looked around and pointed in a direction. "Follow me. None of you are allowed to wander off."

Having said this, he gave Long Chen a long look, as if giving him a warning.

"

However, Long Chen had no plans on staying with them. At this moment, he spoke, "I'm relying on you guys to find the Zenith Crystal Sword! I'll make a move first."

He wasn't on good terms with Feng Wutian nor the rest of the team, and there was no point in staying here. He wasn't going to bother with wasting time.

Long Chen already knew that while Feng Wutian looked calm, he had long since wanted to take care of Long Chen. Of course, after hearing his words, the expression on Feng Wutian's face became icier.

"Chief Elder has already said that everyone has to listen to my orders in this operation. Are you going to disobey me?"

"Disobey? I wouldn't dare do that. However, my lack of strength will only tie down all of you geniuses. In my opinion, you should let me leave on my own and focus on obtaining the Zenith Crystal Sword. That would be more worth it."

Long Chen's tone was a little sarcastic.

From the very beginning, the others did not think well of Long Chen. Now, he had suddenly become so firm and resolute! This made everyone quite interested and ready to ridicule him, as they all viewed Long Chen to be a clown.

Liu Ling hated Long Chen the most. Now that there were no seniors around and Long Chen actually dared to challenge the situation, she sneered, “Brother Wutian is our leader. His words are law, and if he wanted you to die, you’ll have no choice but to die. Do you still want to contradict him?”

Long Chen analysed the situation while glancing at them.

“If Feng Wutian is prioritising the Zenith Crystal Sword, he wouldn’t bother with me and would let me leave. If he says something to stop me, it means he’s already thought up a way to deal with me. Then again, if it were me, I wouldn’t allow a thorn in my side to continue existing in this world.”

As expected, Feng Wutian spoke, “Chief Elder has given me authority. In the expedition in the Sky Martial Realm, I am in charge. Long Chen, if you don’t know what’s good for you and cause me trouble, I have permission to kill you!”

“I’m afraid that if I follow you, I might die by your hand, Feng Wutian.” Long Chen smirked as he said something that caused Feng Wutian’s expression to change. Even Liu Ling could not help herself but shout, “Are you courting death!”

Seeing that she was on the verge of attacking, Feng Wutian held her back. The bloodlust in his eyes was finally apparent, and his voice become incomparably icy.

“Everyone, Long Chen refuses to listen to orders and is a hindrance to our operation. On behalf of the elders, I shall punish him with death. Does anyone have any objections?”

The other eight were extremely respectful to Feng Wutian. In their eyes, Long Chen was but a dispensable character anyway.

They all laughed, "Please make your move, Senior Brother. If anyone asks, we will also take the blame!"

They were haughty, and yet Long Chen was not the least bit afraid.

"Feng Wutian usually pretends to be magnanimous. Has he finally revealed his cunning side?"

Feng Wutian, who had gained approval from the elders, advanced from within the crowd and made his way towards Long Chen, step by step.

Chapter 105 – A Lesson!

The moment Feng Wutian bloodlust was apparent, that powerful aura put pressure on Long Chen's body. The imposing aura of one at the peak of the Human Dan Realm was something that really could not be ignored!

In Long Chen's eyes, Feng Wutian was now like a huge mountain peak that was pushing him down. Long Chen tensed his body and was able to resist the pressure being placed on him.

Long Chen was rather annoyed to be pushed around by Feng Wutian like this, but he was well aware that he was not a match.

"This Feng Wutian really is looking down on me. Though I'm not a match for you, it's a simple task for me to escape. However, if I just escape like this, you'll just complain a lot in front of that old man!"

Though Long Chen wasn't an opponent for Feng Wutian, the gap between them was not that big. Feng Wutian also had to take into consideration the Green Sun Hall team, and he could not simply abandon the rest and try to take Long Chen's life alone.

Long Chen was confident about this and relaxed.

At this point, Feng Wutian was already behind him, less than ten metres away.

"You killed Huang Feiyang. Today, I guess I'm seeking revenge on his behalf..."

o

At these words, Feng Wutian clenched his fist and a powerful undulation formed around his fist.

"I don't even need to use any battle techniques to deal with a little brat like you who just entered the Human Dan Realm,!"

Feng Wutian looked at him disdainfully, and like a tornado, headed towards Long Chen. That surging force seemed to possess an earth-shattering strength!

"Is that so?"

With just a look, Long Chen could tell that to withstand this attack, not only would he need to do the Dragon Soul Transformation, he would also need to use the Seal of the High Profound Dragon. This consumed a lot of mental and physical power, and with a step back, Long Chen used the fastest speed he could muster and exhibited the Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step. While Feng Wutian was moving, he ‘roamed’ away from the attack through Feng Wutian’s side!

Long Chen did not transform and was able to accomplish this. The main reasons were that Feng Wutian believed that he had only just entered the Human Dan Realm, so he used lesser strength. On top of that, Long Chen had almost gained the Thunder Flame Physique. The rise in the sturdiness of his body resulted in a bonus in his speed and agility. Hence, though Feng Wutian was strong, Long Chen was still able to dodge the attack!

Seeing Feng Wutian about to kill off that distasteful guy, Long Chen, everyone from the Green Sun Hall was filled with feelings of anticipation.

This was especially so for Liu Ling. Just as she was about to see her hero, Feng Wutian, elegantly eliminating Long Chen, Long Chen slipped away from the side in a flash and rushed towards her!

“How is this possible? His speed is even faster than mine!”

At this thought, a look of incredulity appeared on her face.

As for the others, they were similar stunned at Long Chen being able to dodge Feng Wutian’s attack.

However, what they did not expect was at the moment Long Chen avoided the attack, he charged towards Liu Ling at an even faster speed!

The distance between the two were originally not that far apart, and Long Chen’s actions were a huge surprise.

Liu Ling was not able to react in time and, in a short moment, Long Chen appeared before her, slightly red eyes seeming to be teasing as he looked at her!

“You bastard!”

Liu Ling cursed, aiming to attack Long Chen. In her eyes, though Long Chen’s

speed was faster than the average person at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, his attacks must be lacking in might!

In her hurry, she shouted loudly in a feminine way and clenched her fist nervously, aiming for Long Chen!

The attack from someone at the initial mastery stage would have beaten him half to bad if Long Chen encountered this. However, after fusing with 9 Thunder Flame Crystals, he was not the least bit afraid of this level of attack from Liu Ling!

Besides, Liu Ling was a young girl and had not gained any life or death experiences. In terms of battle experience, she was definitely lacking. At least, from what Long Chen could see, she basically had none!

Hence, in that short amount of time, Long Chen struck out with his fist, the faint red real Qi at his dantian gushing, accompanying it the power of flames and lightning, jolting Liu Ling's fist!

The two fists slammed to each other, and what was shocking was how Long Chen, who was supposed to be defeated, was entirely fine. Liu Ling, however, yelled in pain and on the verge of tears.

In Long Chen's real Qi, the force from the lightning and flames smashed into her fist, causing her tender little fist to become slightly charred!

Where would she ever have experienced such pain? She immediately began to wail, tears covering her face.

At this moment, Long Chen suddenly leapt behind her, hands turning into claws as he gripped the back of Liu Ling's pale throat, throwing her backwards!

"You bastard! Are you looking to die?"

Feng Wutian turned back, face turning crimson in his anger at the sight. A spectacular attack was aimed at Long Chen!

The other seven were also furious as they attacked Long Chen from all sides!

"This brat only just entered the Human Dan Realm and was actually able to evade Feng Wutian's attack. He even managed to sneak an attack on Miss Liu Ling?"

In the hearts of everyone present, they all felt unbelievably shocked. They had originally believed that Long Chen was a coward who had come from the countryside, but now, they all had a different perception of him!

“He even dared to sneak an attack on the Chief Elder’s daughter! This Long Chen is really looking to die!”

Everyone had gone all out to attack Long Chen, but unexpectedly, he was not the least bit afraid. Amidst Liu Ling’s shrieks, he picked her up and lifted her high, blocking the attacks.

Feng Wutian was momentarily shocked and quickly stopped his attack. Taking advantage of this, Long Chen quickly retreated and coldly spoke, “If you want her dead, then attack me! Stand right there! If anyone moves, I’ll kill this little doll in front of you!”

Hearing Long Chen’s vicious words, feeling his firm grip on her neck and the pain on several parts of her body, Liu Ling was so terrified that she began to tremble.

She had never met with such a terrifying situation before, face as pale as could be while she wailed, “No! No, don’t kill me! Brother Wutian, quick, save me! Wah...”

The Feng Wutian who she thought was invincible was now spitting fire. He glared at Long Chen and yet did not dare move, and could only roar, “Long Chen! Liu Ling is the daughter of the Chief Elder. If you touch even a hair on her head, he will definitely chop you into a million pieces! If you still have some common sense, let her go! You’re looking to die like this!”

“Is that so?”

Long Chen laughed coldly. “Do you think I’m an idiot? Weren’t you already planning on killing me? I’m going to die either way, so why shouldn’t I find someone else to go down with me?”

Seeing the little girl trembling in fear, Feng Wutian could do nothing. Only then did Long Chen heave a sigh of relief.

In this time, he had seized Liu Ling and retreated around 30 metres!

“This little girl has quite a strong backing. I should not go too far.”

At this thought, Long Chen did not joke around any longer and, under the gazes of everyone present, Long Chen suddenly pressed Liu Ling to his knee, spreading his palm and raising it high!

“You little bitch! You actually dared to spread rumours and slander me! I’ll make sure you get it today!”

In front of Feng Wutian, Long Chen’s palm mercilessly landed on Liu Ling’s buttocks. A clear ‘pak’ sound resounded in the air, and Liu Ling gave a miserable shriek that was enough to shake the heavens. Her originally dainty and pale features were now full of blood...

On such pale buttocks, a handprint would probably stay there for a long period of time!

At this point, Feng Wutian eyes were huge in his anger.

“Ling’er! Long Chen, die!”

Long Chen ruthlessly continued the beating until he was content, provoking Feng Wutian as he smiled. “I’m beating your girl. I’m pretty sure you don’t feel good about this, do you?”

He did not care for Feng Wutian’s expression that had turned black, and threw Liu Ling with all his strength towards Feng Wutian!

Feng Wutian had planned to kill Long Chen, but seeing Liu Ling’s body flying towards him, how could he not try to be careful and catch her?

At the moment he caught her, Long Chen laughed brightly, and with explosive speed, fled into the distance!

By the time Feng Wutian put down Liu Ling, Long Chen was long gone!

As for the others, they chased him for a period of time. However, since Feng Wutian had not moved from where he was standing, they could only return. His gloomy face kept them quiet out of fear.

At this moment, Liu Ling who felt her buttocks burning had begun to wail

loudly. Feng Wutian tried to console her to no avail, flustered at the situation.

“What are you still standing there for? Brother Wutian, aren’t you going to kill him?!”

Facing the questions from the little beauty whose face was filled with tears, Feng Wutian revealed a bitter expression. “Ling’er, that bastard runs too quickly, and we still need to find the Zenith Crystal Sword...”

“You scoundrel! You-go away! All you think about is the Zenith Crystal Sword and not me! I was bullied by him so much and you still aren’t killing him. Feng Wutian, you-you’re not a man!”

“Enough!” Feng Wutian’s face was ashen as he exclaimed, “Ling’er, I promise the next time I see him, I’ll capture and let you chop him up! Don’t make a fuss now!”

“Woo woo... But it hurts, it hurts!”

.....

Having fled far out of sight till they could not follow him, Long Chen heaved a sigh of relief and hurriedly spoke, “Little Xi, find some concealed area. I want to try fusing with the tenth Thunder Flame Crystal!”

“You bastard, did you only just remember that I’m here? Weren’t you very impressive just now?” Lingxi spoke behind gritted teeth, voice transmitting from the Lingxi Sword.

Long Chen immediately realised that the method he had bullied Liu Ling was what had made her angry. He quickly tried to flatter her, “Darling, don’t get it wrong! I was merely teaching her lesson. Don’t you find her behaviour irksome? That’s why I was so ruthless!”

“What does that have to do with me? It’s not like I’m related to you in any way!”

“ ... ”

Chapter 106 – Highly Effective Origin Reversion

In the Sky Martial Realm, it wasn't a boundless plain. There were many hills and mountainous regions.

The terrain in the external world was very similar to this place.

“The Sky Martial Realm actually looks the same as the external world! It's hard to tell that it's a small cosmos world. It's amazing!”

Seeing this world, Long Chen could not help but be in awe. The immense size as well as mysteriousness of this world far exceeded his expectations.

“That's true. However, when you get to the extreme ends of this small cosmos world, you'll be able to feel the walls of this world, while in the outside world, nobody truly knows where the walls are.”

Long Chen was aware that this 'wall' was too far for him to consider.

At this point, he had entered a valley, made from strange rocks. Long Chen carefully advanced forward, and finally found a place where he could hide.

This was a naturally formed crevice. After shifting a few large rocks away, Long Chen entered the crevice and covered it up with a large rock.

“I've turned into a gopher, hiding inside like this!”

Long Chen was a little gloomy that he had to conceal himself like this, but the people outside were searching for some Zenith Crystal Sword. It was obvious that they would be searching everywhere, and if Long Chen wanted to absorb the tenth Thunder Flame Crystal, he would definitely need a quiet environment.

If anyone interrupted him or if he were found by Feng Wutian, his life would be over.

“Long Chen, are you certain you're going to fuse with the tenth Thunder Flame Crystal?” At the thought that Long Chen might not be able to take it, Lingxi was extremely worried.

However, while she was still speaking, Long Chen had already undergone Dragon Soul Transformation and was now in his most powerful state. He then

sat cross-legged, retrieving the tenth Thunder Flame Crystal from his cosmos pouch.

While looking at this Thunder Flame Crystal, Long Chen's eyes showed his determination.

"Don't worry about this. I know what my limits are, and if I can't even deal with this, would I still be Long Chen? Besides, I behaved in such an unpleasant manner just now and they're definitely more keen on killing me now. If I don't have a breakthrough, it's obvious I will die tragically."

Seeing she was unable to persuade him, Lingxi merely sighed, "Be careful."

If Long Chen was unable to hold on, she'd have to think up some ways to help him.

Long Chen looked at the Thunder Flame Crystal in his palm, smiled slightly, and quickly drew it into his body without any hesitation.

The moment it entered his body, the crystal transformed into a streak of fire and electricity, fusing with the force of flames and lightning at his dantian. They combined, creating a huge, explosive reaction!

"The tenth Thunder Flame Crystal is indeed terrifying!"

It was just the start, but Long Chen was shocked to find that he could already feel short bursts of pain periodically. From a small to a large area, it engulfed his body. Even after having transformed, Long Chen still found this hard to withstand!

He could feel that this force was constantly destroying the composition of his body. This level of destruction exceeded the rate at which he could regenerate, and in no time, Long Chen felt a pain that was even more intense than he had felt from the ninth crystal. The pain tore at every corner of his body, and it was as if there were countless little blades hidden at every corner of his body, violently twisting into him.

This twisting was enough to make anyone want to go crazy. At this moment, Lingxi suddenly saw blood flowing from the corner of Long Chen's mouth.

However, he was still gritting his teeth and persevering.

The lightning and flames constantly twisted in his body, wave after wave, and even his dragon scales were damaged to a certain extent.

“At this rate, no matter how much he perseveres, he won’t be able to escape his fate of death. What should I do?”

Lingxi was frantic in her worry.

Aware of his current situation, Long Chen endured the pain and the destructive power of the crystal and tried to think up a plan.

“My body has been badly damaged. With the tempering and burning from lightning and flames, it’s probably more than my body can take!”

At this thought, Long Chen suddenly brightened up.

“Origin Reversion has a great regenerative effect on every minuscule injury in the body. I can test its effects here!”

At this thought, Long Chen immediately began to put Origin Reversion to use. This was a profound, middle-grade constitution battle technique. Even if he had received a grievous injury, Long Chen would be able to heal from it using Origin Reversion.

Streams of warmth began to move around in between the flames and lightning in Long Chen’s body. Wherever it went, muscles and flesh seemed to have been nourished and slowly restored themselves.

“It’s actually effective!”

Long Chen was exhilarated at this and quickly increased the power of this technique. Immediately, a hot rush travelled inside him. The areas that were damaged by the lightning and flames but were unable to be regenerated by his own body were nourished with the help of Origin Reversion.

This allowed the newly regenerated flesh that had been burnt and tempered to become even more durable and tough.

After taking in the tenth Thunder Flame Crystal, Long Chen looked to be in a pitiful state. However, after just a short moment, Lingxi could see that Long Chen was gradually becoming less pale.

“This is... the aura of Origin Reversion.”

Lingxi suddenly remembered that Origin Reversion might be useful in reducing the pain for Long Chen.

If he were to take Spirit Medicine, he would first need to refine the medicine before he could make use of the power within. Long Chen’s real Qi was now all focused on withstanding the force of lightning and flame. How possible would it be for him to put half his attention on refining the medicine?

However, Origin Reversion itself was within Long Chen’s body. With just a thought, he could use it.

This was the amazing part about constitution techniques. They were quick, convenient and very effective. Most importantly, they were limitless and free of charge.

“This fellow is really lucky.”

If not for Origin Reversion, Lingxi had no idea if Long Chen would be able to get through this stage. The situation was slightly better now, and Lingxi felt a little more relieved.

With Origin Reversion, Long Chen was somewhat able to hold on. However, keeping this up for five to six days was an extremely arduous task. With his situation, this did not bode well for him.

After all, using Origin Reversion would consume real Dragon Qi. However, the moment it diminished, it was a chance for the flames and lightning to gain the upper hand.

Long Chen was sharp and anticipated this issue. By the time his real Qi was

diminished, around two days had passed.

In these two days, Long Chen's body rapidly increased in sturdiness. He was on the verge of obtaining the legendary Thunder Flame Physique.

With the exhausting of real dragon Qi, the force of flames and lightning began its counterattack. Originally quite obedient, it suddenly became wild and, like a swarm of bees, spread throughout Long Chen's body.

Lingxi had noticed that it was considerably quiet around Long Chen's body, lightning and flames peacefully tempering Long Chen's body. However, all of a sudden, this force suddenly seemed to rebel, invading his body and charging towards his red Human Dan!

"This is bad! This is the precursor to the body exploding!"

Long Chen was now in cold sweat. The might of the lightning and flames was now on top of his Human Dan at his dantian. All the real Qi he had left was insufficient for him to resist it.

If this force entered his dantian, with Long Chen unable to withstand without his real Qi, his Human Dan would be destroyed. Those who had fused and had their bodies explode while fusing with the Thunder Flame Crystal had been in the exact same situation as Long Chen was in now.

"Am I just that little bit too far away from being able to fuse with the tenth crystal? I... I'm not willing to accept this!"

Thinking about all the things he had yet to do, Long Chen was filled with reluctance. The Yang family was still waiting for him to rescue them, and Lingxi, too, required his assistance.

When he had chosen to fuse with the tenth crystal, Long Chen had already thought of this situation. Anything with risk meant there was a possibility of failing. Long Chen had somewhat underestimated the might of the tenth Thunder Crystal Flame, so it would not be unexpected if he were to die here.

"No! I won't die here!"

A cold glint exploded from Long Chen's eyes! The stubbornness he had was incomparably strong. If he were to die just like this because of the Thunder Flame Crystals, it would be too much of a waste!

"How can I, Long Chen, die!"

Long Chen practically roared his sentence, his voice resounding in the little valley!

At this moment, the might of flames and lightning turned into blue streaks of flames and lightning, aiming to destroy his dantian.

Within his dantian, only a dim Human Dan existed. As he had used too much real Qi, his Human Dan was not very useful.

Within the blood-red Human Dan, the dark veined pattern of a dragon finally made itself known.

Seeing that the force was about to enter his dantian, Long Chen gritted his teeth and prepared to block the attack with everything he had. Suddenly, at his dantian, the pattern seemed to come to life, emitting a piercing light.

A pair of blood-red rays were shot out from the eyes of the dragon-shaped pattern, aimed towards the force.

Bloody mist permeated the force of lightning and flames, and under the control of this immense power, Long Chen felt as if this the force of lightning and flames was undergoing a huge change.

Not long after, Long Chen actually saw that the blue force of lightning and flame stuffed full in his dantian had now completely turned red, lightning and flames existing in his dantian.

Chapter 107 – Thunder Flame Physique

This sudden change startled Long Chen.

He could never imagine that the red, dragon imprint on the Human Dan was able to turn the power of the ten Thunder Flame Crystals crimson, with just a ray of light.

Long Chen felt that he seemed to be able to control this force of lightning and flames, which was crimson in colour!

“Has the might of the Thunder Flame Crystal fused into my real Qi?”

Currently, this lightning and fire was attached above Long Chen’s Human Dan. The Human Dan, which was originally red, was now burning with crimson flames, at the same time having crimson lightning winding around it.

The force of flames and lightning from the Thunder Flame Crystal had completely mixed with Long Chen’s real Dragon Qi.

This real Qi was now ten times-no, even more than that when compared to before, in terms of its nature and offensive abilities!

At the same time, under the gentle tempering of the crimson flames and

lightning as well as nourishment from Origin Reversion, time flowed slowly. Long Chen's flesh body became increasingly stronger, and in one or two days, Long Chen believed he would reach the critical boundary.

Before this, Lingxi suddenly felt the rebellion within Long Chen's body and that had scared her half to death. However, in the blink of an eye, Long Chen had tamed this power, and Lingxi could only gaze at this young man in surprise.

"What kind of secret does Long Chen have? When he had first obtained the inheritance of the ancient dragon, he was on the verge of death but was miraculously able to survive and get the inheritance. Now, he's not supposed to be able to withstand the force from the Thunder Flame Crystal, but miraculously survived it again. From the looks of it, he must be successful in fusing with the tenth Thunder Flame Crystal..."

Though Lingxi was very knowledgeable, she still knew nothing about whatever secrets there were on Long Chen's body.

Long Chen could feel himself reaching the boundary, and as long as he could break through, he could gain the Thunder Flame Physique and become a Thunder Flame Cultivator!

If this was in the past and the force of lightning and flames rebelled in his body, it would be extremely difficult for Long Chen to break through.

However, things were different now. Long Chen was now capable of manipulating the force of lightning and flames, and able to slowly temper and forge his body. Time slowly passed, and with all his energy spent on controlling this force, he was naturally able to break through.

“A Thunder Flame Cultivator...”

He could feel the power rapidly increasing within his body.

Long Chen laughed, stood up and opened his palm. He found that the image of a Thunder Flame Crystal had appeared at the centre of his palm, though there was a small difference-it was crimson.

Long Chen knew that this was the symbol of a Thunder Flame Cultivator. He now had another identity on top of being a dragon cultivator; he was a Thunder Flame Cultivator!

A Thunder Flame Cultivator had a large quantity of real Qi, and had very resilient flesh. Long Chen only had a level 1 Thunder Flame Physique, but the effects could be even better than Profound, middle-grade Body Refining battle techniques!

It must be noted that Profound, middle-grade Body Refining battle techniques were quite rare. Long Chen’s Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist had come from that mysterious metallic tile, and his profound middle-grade constitution battle technique had come from the Origin Reverting fruit.

In the entire green faction, the reward given to the most outstanding cultivator at the Human Dan Realm was only a profound, middle-grade spirit sword and battle technique. This implied the preciousness of profound middle-grade objects!

Long Chen had only just entered the Human Dan Realm, and he now basically possessed three types of battle techniques, mainly offensive, refining and

constitution type techniques, and all of them were extraordinary!

“Long Chen, have you become a Thunder Flame Cultivator?”

Lingxi was overjoyed and quickly went in circles around Long Chen, constantly prodding at his body.

Long Chen had now dispelled his Dragon Soul Transformation, and was in his most harmless state.

Come to think of it, Long Chen still had some concerns regarding his Dragon Soul Transformation. He was thought to be a Beast Warrior, and now that he was in the Human Dan Realm, he obviously needed to refine a new beast spirit.

Long Chen’s transformation gave people the feeling that he was still using the spirit of a huang-grade beast, which implied that Long Chen had yet to kill a profound-grade beast!

However, Long Chen was not going to think about this for now. Now that he was a Thunder Flame Cultivator, he could relax.

With this amount of strength, he might not be able to contend against Feng Wutian, but surviving was something that was extremely easy!

“Hm, aren’t I great now that I have the Thunder Flame Physique, Little Xi?”

Seeing Long Chen so proud of himself, Lingxi spoke with disdain, “Tsk, back in the day, I was more powerful than you by ten thousand times! Only an idiot like

you would be so proud despite achieving so little. Don't celebrate too soon!"

In her heart, she actually understood that with the environment Long Chen was in and possessing so little resources, it was amazing to be able to reach this stage in such a short period of time.

At the very least, it was much more difficult than it had been for her to reach this level of strength.

Inside her heart, she was in awe of Long Chen, but she was definitely unable to say this aloud.

"If I praise him just a little, he's going to be so proud that his nose is going to point so high in the air."

Lingxi thought to herself.

Long Chen calculated and found that only four days had passed since he had entered the Sky Martial Realm.

"I wonder if that bunch of idiots have found the heart-corrosive beast yet. There's still a lot of time, and I haven't used my Blood Transmuted Qi in a long time. It's a good opportunity for me to go out there and take a look, and maybe even kill a few beasts!"

After leaving his hiding spot, Long Chen came to a valley. This valley was narrow and long, and there were dark forests everywhere. There was a very massive aura hidden in the deepest part of the forest.

While strolling in the Sky Martial Realm, Long Chen met numerous beasts, and the least powerful one was at the first level of the Profound grade. There was not even a single huang-grade beast here.

“If utilised properly, this Sky Martial Realm is basically heaven for me...”

Long Chen sighed to himself, and gradually entered the deeper parts of the forest. With Lingxi guiding him, Long Chen quickly met a few beasts that were in a group.

“This is the Large Devil Ape and is at the first level of the Profound grade. Its advantage is in its amazing strength and is a very good match for you.”

“Is that so?”

Long Chen looked at the few Large Devil Apes that were roaring and chasing after him.

They were almost three metres tall and had dark furs all over their bodies. Their flesh was as hard as rock.

“You pass! You’ll be my food for today!”

Having said this, Long Chen roared towards the apes and charged.

After the increase in his strength, his power was incomparably stronger compared to the Large Devil Ape despite being in the same realm. They were not

his match and in less than fifteen minutes, they had all turned into corpses.

Long Chen used his Blood Transmuted Qi and refined them, but immediately after, he furrowed his brows.

“What’s wrong, did you make a breakthrough?” Lingxi asked in concern.

Long Chen shook his head.

“No. I think it’s only a first level profound grade beast, and its blood essence is useless to me. I need to find a beast of a higher level. I believe no matter how many first level beasts I find, there won’t be any effect.”

“That’s true. While you were at the fifth Dragon Vein, you swallowed a seventh level Huang grade Underground Blood Lizard king. When you were at the eighth Dragon Vein, you swallowed a first level profound grade beast, the Blue-Eyed Snow Lion.”

At this point, Long Chen had retrieved the demonic cores of the Large Devil Apes and taken out four transparent beads.

“Their demonic cores and beast spirits can be exchanged for contribution points. I can’t waste them.”

Seeing the transparent beads in Long Chen’s hands, Lingxi asked, “When did you bring the Spirit Congealing Beads? Why didn’t I see it?”

“When I want to bring something, do I have to report everything to you?”

He laughed, and used the Spirit Congealing Bead and extracted the beast spirits.

This Spirit Congealing Bead had a powerful suction force that was used on dead beast spirits. These spirits had to exist in the beads, or else they would dissipate.

“Long Chen, tell me this. Do I seem like these beast spirits trapped in the Spirit Congealing Beads?”

At this, Lingxi voice was fuelled with sorrow.

Long Chen was startled, “You fool! What are you saying? You’re ten thousand times cuter than these beasts. Don’t compare yourself to them. It’s not as if you’ll be stuck in that sword forever.”

In actuality, the Lingxi sword was an item that was mysterious to the extreme. Long Chen knew that Lingxi must have been extremely powerful then, but even she had been unable to withstand this sword. It was definitely treasure, just that whether it was Lingxi or Long Chen, neither of them had found the secret to the sword yet.

As for the name, the “Lingxi sword”, this was purely something she had made up for fun.

After congealing the beast spirits, Long Chen began to find his next target. In a day, he killed quite a few level 2 profound grade beasts and gained many useful items.

“I’m really going to strike it rich! Little Xi, calculate this for me. How many contribution points can I get from this?”

“Demonic cores and beast spirits can be sold to Martial Families. The level one profound grade beasts can be exchanged for around two to three contribution points, while level 2 beasts can be exchanged for around 10 points.”

While at the Lingwu Family, Lingxi would occasionally poke around Long Chen’s room and look at some books regarding the Lingwu Family. She probably knew more than Long Chen did about the Lingwu Family.

“Does that mean my contribution points total more than 50?”

He was rich again! Like a newly rich person, Long Chen was overjoyed.

However, though he had used the Blood Transmuted Qi on a few level 2 profound grade beasts, it was a pity that they were not much use to Long Chen. Though there were quite a few of them, it was not enough for Long Chen to enter the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm.

“I wonder if the search for the Zenith Crystal Sword is over yet. Lingqing learnt the Seven Hallucinatory Sword Slash, and if possible, once she’s at the Deity Dan Realm, I can probably give her the “Way of the Zenith Crystal Sword”. As a brother, I really must work harder.”

“However, before that, I need to find a level 3 profound grade beast. I don’t believe a level 3 profound grade beast more powerful than a beast at the perfect mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm isn’t enough for me to rank up!”

Chapter 108 – Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast

In the Human Dan Realm, level 1 Profound grade beasts were everywhere. There was the occasional level 2 Profound grade beast, but when it came to level Profound grade beasts, they were nowhere to be found.

These beasts were situated at different zones. Long Chen was now in an area where there were few beasts, and he thus had no choice but to change his location and head in the direction the Lingxi pointed.

While moving, Long Chen did not see any teams.

“The Sky Martial Realm is now being held by the Green Faction. Within the Human Dan Realm, there shouldn’t be anyone from other factions. This is a very large area where there are only eight teams around, so it’s not unusual not to see any of them.”

“This implies that the Heart-Corrosive Beast hasn’t been found yet. If not, the Sky Martial Realm Competition would have concluded earlier, allowing those from other factions to enter this realm. When that happens, I’ll see more people from other factions.”

The Sky Martial Realm was about the size of the Lingwu City, and Long Chen resided in a small area within the Lingwu City.

After walking for about half a day, Long Chen arrived at a barren sand dune.

Here, forests and plants were sparse, and there were only a few cacti growing in this area where water was scarce.

“It’s just a Sky Martial Realm but it has forests and even a desert.”

Long Chen couldn’t help but praise.

After exploring this desert for a period of time, Long Chen felt his surroundings growing increasingly hotter, and he asked, “Little Xi, there shouldn’t be beasts here, right? Even if there are, they wouldn’t be level 3 Profound-grade beasts.”

“Let’s walk further and see how things go.”

With Lingxi’s request in mind, Long Chen had no choice but to proceed further. Not long after, the sandy area ahead suddenly caved in, and Lingxi quickly had him stop.

“What’s wrong?”

There was a hint of excitement in Lingxi’s voice as she whispered, “Deep in the sand there, there’s a beast crawling. It’s probably sunbathing and cultivating at the same time.”

Long Chen advanced, and after walking for a long while, lay on the ground, and glanced at the area where the sand had caved in. Immediately after, a flash of excitement glinted in his eyes.

“Isn’t this... the level 3 Profound-grade Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast?”

The beast at the bottom looked like a large lion. This Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast was about ten metres long. If it were to actually stand up, it would be about as tall as a house.

Its fur was a gold colour, and the fur at its neck was even more dense, causing it to look majestic. The one thing that could make anyone get scared witless was the dim red flames on its fur, and its two eyes which were like two bundles of flames the size of a lantern.

“It really is the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast! Even amongst the third level Profound grade beasts, this Suan Beast is a very powerful existence.”

Long Chen guessed.

“This beast is probably at the same level as Feng Wutian. Looks like I can use you to measure the durability of my Thunder Flame Physique!”

After making his mind, a boundless fighting spirit exploded forth.

While dealing with the level 2 Profound grade beast, he hadn't needed to use Dragon Soul Transformation. However, with this strong enemy, the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast, he really had to be in his most powerful form.

Perfect dragon scales and spurs appeared on his body. Now that he was a Thunder Flame Cultivator, crimson lightning and flames winked in and out of existence around his body, a frightening power erupting.

The pattern of the crimson Thunder Flame Crystal was the opening where the force of lightning and flames in his body connected with his own might.

“The strength I have now is now a lot more powerful than before. With just the durability of my body, I should be able to take care of someone at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. On top of that, my Dragon Qi has the force of lightning and flames...”

Long Chen was confident that he could deal with this Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast.

After Long Chen completed his Dragon Soul Transformation and appeared a distance away from the Suan Beast, it finally noticed him!

It had been getting some rest, but upon noticing this little fellow brazenly entering its territory, it was instantly enraged.

In this region, it was basically a king. To think there was a nameless little thing that dared to offend it! It quickly got up, towering above Long Chen and staring hard at him, flames of ire soaring from its body.

Though Long Chen was small, there was a strange quality about his body that caused the Suan Beast to feel a sense of fear.

Lions were usually the rulers, the kings, but Long Chen seemed to possess more of this aura and quality.

Roar!

With a large bellow of rage, the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast crawled on the ground, speed suddenly increasing. Tremendous bloodthirstiness was aimed at Long Chen, who was charging forth, and these two bodies, one a human and one a beast with a large difference in size, collided mid-air. That enormous power from flames was like a hurricane as it whirled towards Long Chen!

“Now that I have the Thunder Flame Physique, do you think I’m afraid of these flames?”

With a sneer, Long Chen rushed into the sea of flames, and an attack that was like a storm flew towards the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast!

With the Thunder Flame Physique and the added bonus from Dragon Qi, Long Chen suddenly released an attack.

“Seal of the High Profound Dragon!”

All of a sudden, the phantom of an ancient dragon surged up violently and attacked the Suan Beast. Upon seeing Long Chen actually charging into its flames, the Suan Beast was astonished, but it was not enough to cause it fear. However, Long Chen’s attack, the Seal of the High Profound Dragon, caused its heart to sink.

The Seal of the High Profound Dragon actually had intense crimson lightning breaking out within, and crimson flames blazed on the phantom of the crimson ancient dragon. Even the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast did not dare let its guard down in the face of such a terrifying attack!

Roar!

It snarled loudly, and the Suan Beast opened its huge mouth. A scarlet fireball with a diameter of more than a metre long was like a hurricane as it approached Long Chen's Seal of the High Profound Dragon!

Rumble!

The Seal of the High Profound Dragon collided with the large fireball, and this clash caused tremors to form, sand and rocks flying, and smoke and dust filling the sky!

"This is merely a scarlet fireball and it can actually wipe out my Seal of the High Profound Dragon? As expected, it isn't so easy to deal with!"

In terms of quantity, Long Chen possessed lesser real Qi than the demonic power the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast had. However, he had the upper hand in terms of abilities, which was how their battle power was similar!

Long Chen had realised that this Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast was the most powerful opponent he had ever seen.

"These demonic beasts have trained and developed techniques through generations of battles. Just a simple attack has the might of a battle technique, and that huge scarlet fireball by the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast must be one of the unique techniques it is proficient in!"

The Seal of the High Profound Dragon actually had a bonus of the force from lightning and flames, and yet it had been wiped out just like that. Long Chen was

not discouraged and, like a red tornado, charged towards the Suan Beast!

In terms of agility, this little thing seemed to be several times quicker than the Suan Beast itself, and it was alarmed at this thought. It immediately snarled, scarlet fireballs rising one after another, and at least ten bundles of fire flew in Long Chen's direction.

Long Chen was shocked and quickly used the Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, his nimble body turning into afterimages as he dodged from the sides of the fireballs. The heat from the flames did cause him some harm, but this was not enough to affect him!

Long Chen was unable to avoid the very last scarlet fireball, and he had no choice but to use the Seal of the High Profound Dragon here!

Rumble!

The scarlet fireball burst, and Long Chen waved off the smoke and pierced towards the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast like an arrow.

Demonic beasts had bodies that were typically quite powerful. Compared to cultivators who had trained and tempered their bodies, these beasts' bodies were even more durable. The Suan Beast was furious that Long Chen had actually gotten so close to its body, and it slapped its claws that were stronger than steel towards Long Chen.

Long Chen was not to be outdone. However, immediately after clashing with the scarlet fireball, he was met with the attack from the claws, which made him feel a little suffocated.

“My Thunder Flame Physique isn’t afraid of something like you!”

A fist and a claw collided with a rumble, and the tremors were so strong that the human and beast were both pushed backwards. What surprised the Suan Beast was that Long Chen, who was but a small thing, had actually been able to block its claws with just the power of his body.

This enraged the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast further!

Roar!

Its huge body pounced towards Long Chen!

“You’re so heavy and clumsy, and you still want to do a close-ranged battle with me?”

Long Chen laughed sarcastically, displaying his Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, leaping away from under his opponent’s body. The Suan Beast’s body of flames was really making him feel quite uncomfortable.

“Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist has a fire attribute, and my real Qi also has the power of flames. I wonder how powerful this attack will be if I use it?”

At this thought, Long Chen dodged the furious attacks from his opponent and made preparations to attack using the Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist.

“I’m creating quite a ruckus while battling with it. Looks like it’s time to land

the final attack!”

Only after battling with the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast could Long Chen tell how powerful the Thunder Flame Physique was. Of course, this also included the power of lightning and flames in his real Qi. It must be noted that the body and demonic power of the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast was extremely tyrannical, even amongst third level Profound grade demonic beasts.

In terms of his body and real Qi, it was extremely difficult to be at the same level as the Suan Beast, considering he had only just entered the Human Dan Realm.

The scarlet fireballs seemed to be inexhaustible, and the aftereffects of the attacks caused ashes to fly everywhere, almost affecting Long Chen’s sight. Long Chen stayed close to the body of the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast, preventing it from launching more attacks.

“This ends now, Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast!”

This time, Long Chen jumped away from under its body, and the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast focused its attention on his figure. Immediately after, seven to eight scarlet fireballs appeared.

At this moment, Long Chen’s figure was burning with crimson flames, and on his fist, a crimson bundle of fire was rapidly taking shape. When the Suan Beast released its scarlet fireballs, Long Chen punched forward with a shout.

“Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, crimson flames that burn the heavens!”

A crimson imprint of a fist made of fire was launched, and there seemed to be a human face in the middle of the fist.

The large fiery fist smashed the scarlet fireballs of the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast to smithereens, and struck the entire head of the Suan Beast.

Rumble!

Chapter 109 – Initial Mastery Stage at the Human Dan Realm!

Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist struck the Scarlet Flaming Suan Beast head on, and that tumultuous strength smashed its skull!

The Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast gave an earth-shattering howl, and its large body collapsed to the ground. The whole ruckus here thus ended.

Long Chen was extremely emotional having killed this Suan Beast. He quickly retrieved a scarlet demonic core the size of a fist from its brain, and then collected its beast spirit using a Spirit Congealing Bead.

“I must really have struck gold having these two items.”

The Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast was a demonic beast at the third level of the Profound grade. The demonic core and beast spirit would be able to be exchanged for a large amount of contribution points.

Long Chen was now afraid to go to the Daybreak Merchants' Union. With his current Thunder Flame Physique, things would be troublesome if he were to be discovered. He could only go to the Treasure Exchange Pavilion and exchange for items there, and what he needed was contribution points!

While refining the beast spirit, Long Chen was planning to use Blood Transmuted Qi on the Suan Beast, but at this moment, a group of people appeared in his line of sight, charging in Long Chen's direction.

Long Chen knew that his battle with the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast had caused a large commotion, which resulted in all these people rushing here. They were all the cream of the crop, and their speed was naturally very fast. Just after Long Chen had refined the beast spirit, there were already three young men who were almost twenty years old surrounding him.

The others rushed over in quick succession.

Upon seeing Long Chen, they were stunned. They all had no idea which hall Long Chen had come from.

The three young men who had first arrived were actually experts at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm.

They were so young, and yet already had such a high ranking, which proved they were truly geniuses. Long Chen placed the Spirit Congealing Bead into his cosmos pouch, a half-smile on his face, "From the way you're looking at me, could it be that all of you think I'm extremely charming and are now bewitched by me?"

The three young men were stunned, and one of them coldly spoke, "Which hall are you from? Why have I never seen you before?"

"That should be my question. Who are all of you, and why have I never seen you before?"

While in the Sky Martial Hall, Long Chen had actually seen them before, but did not know which hall they were from.

“We are from the Green Piercing Hall. Kid, tell me, did you kill this Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast?”

Long Chen was now in his Dragon Soul Transformation state and now had the aura of a king. Of course, he also had a malicious aura, but in their eyes, Long Chen did not seem to be powerful enough to kill the Suan Beast.

“What are you saying?” Long Chen teased them, “How could I have killed such a large beast? Finder keepers okay, the beast spirit and demonic core are all mine. Are you trying to rob me?”

The three experts from the Green Piercing Hall glanced at each other, and the desire was apparent in their eyes. Though they were a little suspicious of Long Chen’s lack of fear towards them, this did nothing to extinguish the greed in their hearts.

“Go!”

The three of them acted immediately, attacking Long Chen from all sides.

“So they really want to rob me?”

From the moment they appeared, Long Chen knew that they coveted the corpse of the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast. In their eyes, Long Chen was just a disciple who had come across this treasure by chance and would be easily taken care of.

The three of them were experts who were at the perfect mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm. Though none of them were a match for the Suan Beast, their

combined battle power when they worked together was even stronger than that of the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast.

However, Long Chen had no plans to clash with them. All of a sudden, Long Chen made a hole in the chest of the Suan Beast and escaped!

That heavy Suan Beast actually began to move at a high speed!

“Escaping?”

The faces of these three young experts changed, and they began to chase after Long Chen. The movement of the corpse of the Suan Beast was not as fast as them, but while they were chasing, they seemed to be able to see the corpse slowly decaying...?

In the blink of an eye, the Suan Beast began to dry up, and the three were shocked.

“What’s going on? Why did this happen?”

They dashed forward, grabbing towards the dried up body of the Suan Beast. At this moment, the body suddenly exploded, blood and flesh flying everywhere, and out of all this, the largest piece of meat smashed into the three young experts!

The seemingly harmless piece of flesh still possessed a lot of force, and the three were forced to halt.

At this moment, crimson light filled the sky and Long Chen, who had disappeared just now, appeared in front of them. However, his eyes were now even redder and his gaze was firmer. It seemed like he was even more powerful.

“Kid, you’re finally showing your face? Hand over the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast’s demonic core and beast spirit, and I’ll reward you by not killing you!”

Long Chen paid no heed to his words, laughing slightly.

At this point, the blood that was boiling in his body had been suppressed. The Human Dan at his dantian had shrunk in size, becoming more solid.

If the Human Dan from before was a size of 9, it was currently 8. Long Chen knew that as long as he persevered on, it would decrease in size and, by the time he was at the perfect mastery stage of the Heaven Dan Realm, it would be the size of a bean.

The cultivation at the Human Dan Realm would result in there being more real Qi, meant to attack the Human, Earth or Heaven Dan at the dantian. The Human Dan would then be tempered and become more solid, and when there was enough real Qi to attack it, Long Chen could go up a rank.

Previously, he had been stuck at the entrance of the Human Dan Realm. After refining countless level 2 Profound grade demonic beasts, he had accumulated enough Qi such that he was not far from the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. After refining the essence of the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast, he had gained a large amount of crimson real Qi which charged at his dantian, causing his Human Dan to become even more solid. This allowed him to advance to the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. Long Chen’s real Qi had thus increased in quantity by many times!

“Is this the power at the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm?”

Previously, when he had just entered the Human Dan Realm, he was already able to kill a level 3 Profound grade Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast. Now, with an increase in his power, Long Chen could now disregard the people in front of him.

“I wonder what kind of surprise I’ll give Feng Wutian when I fight him next!”

At this thought, Long Chen was very excited.

He had entered the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm, and had successfully become a Thunder Flame cultivator. His goal in coming to the Sky Martial Realm had been reached. Next was to see if he was able to obtain the Zenith Crystal Sword for Yang Lingqing, and that battle technique, ‘Way of the Zenith Crystal Sword’.

In the eyes of the three young men at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, Long Chen seemed to have suddenly gotten stronger, but he was still merely at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm.

Any one of them could easily kill Long Chen. However, during this competition, relatives and elders had warned that they were not to create a large conflict, and it was best not to kill anyone.

Hence, one of the experts spoke coldly, “Kid, I’ll give you one last chance. If you still don’t listen, you can’t blame us if you die!”

“I’ll count to three. After three, we won’t care about how we’re all part of the Lingwu Family. We won’t be lenient if you don’t hand over the demonic core and Spirit Congealing Bead!”

Feeling the surge of power in his body that had reached the limits, to the point that it did not feel like his own, Long Chen had the urge to try it out.

“Just see if I don’t beat you three fools until you’re crawling and looking for your teeth!”

Long Chen exclaimed unhurriedly, and the three of them were hopping mad in answer. They were about to make their move, but all of a sudden, fireworks bloomed in the air, and a loud rumble was heard. The three experts were stunned, but immediately glanced at each other, “The Heart Corrosive demonic beast has appeared!”

“What should we do?”

They should rush there with the fastest speed they could muster, but Long Chen...

They knew their priorities. Long Chen had offended them, but as long as they were all in the Lingwu Family, there were definitely opportunities to seek revenge. Hence, they quickly made their choice to lead the disciples in their hall and rushed in the direction where the fireworks had been set off.

“Everyone, follow me!”

After glaring at Long Chen, the three from the Green Piercing Hall ran ahead.

Everyone else from the Green Piercing Hall was mostly at the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm and rushed to follow them at the fastest speed they could. There was one youngster who had just entered the Human Dan Realm and was merely around thirteen years old. Unfortunately, he was left behind by the others.

He restrained his tears and tried to match the pace of the large group, but with the appearance of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, who would bother with him? He was thus left far behind.

“Is the Heart Corrosive demonic beast appearing now? I guess I should go there and have a look.”

At this thought, Long Chen laughed and quickly ran alongside the youngster from the Green Piercing Hall. The youngster was shocked to see Long Chen, and tried to intimidate him, “Don’t even think about attacking me. My Senior Brother Li, Senior Brother Zhang and Senior Brother Wang will take care of you!”

“Do you mean those three who wanted to steal my stuff?” Long Chen laughed, not feeling the least bit intimidated.

“What rubbish! They want what you have because you’re not strong enough and aren’t qualified to have it!” This youngster spoke righteously.

“Really? Then do you believe that I can keep your three senior brothers here such that they won’t be able to see the Heart Corrosive demonic beast?”

The youngster was dazed at that, and then sneered, “Are you dreaming? My

three senior brothers are experts of the Green Piercing Hall at the perfect mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm. With just your pitiful skills, you actually dare brag like that?”

“I’m not bragging. You’ll see...”

Long Chen laughed, and under the stunned gaze of the youngster, his speed increased by over a hundred times, overtaking an expert at the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm. Like a gust of wind, he charged to the front of the group!

Chapter 110 – Heart Corrosive Demonic Beast!

“How-How is he so fast!”

The boy at the back of the group was stunned.

He hurriedly rubbed his eyes, and what he really did see was Long Chen, who had already dashed to the frontmost of the group.

The experts at the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm that had been surpassed by Long Chen had the same expression as the boy. Senior Brother Li, Senior Brother Wang and Senior Brother Zhang had also noticed Long Chen.

Just like the others, they were extremely shocked. As the Heart Corrosive demonic beast was now their top priority, they were at their fastest speed. How had Long Chen been able to catch up to them?

“Kid, you’re looking to die by coming here!”

Senior Brother Zhang, who was the furthest back, sneered at Long Chen while still hastening ahead. He had thought that this would scare Long Chen off, but unexpectedly, Long Chen still had an evil grin and pounced towards him!

This speed cause Senior Brother Zhang’s expression to change!

Real Qi surged in Long Chen's body, turning into crimson flames that blazed about his body. Flames had already formed at Long Chen's fist.

With Long Chen's Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, he seemed like a phantom as he charged to Senior Brother Zhang's side. That explosive aura from Long Chen's fist caused Senior Brother Zhang much fear. He couldn't be bothered to think anymore, gritted his teeth and used his most powerful technique to counter Long Chen's attack!

"Surging Tide of the Angered Sea!"

"Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Crimson Flames Blazing Heavens!"

Rumble!

The two who were advancing at a rapid pace slammed into each other with a loud rumble, causing an explosion in the air. Everyone behind them was stunned. Senior Brother Zhang, who had been running in front, had been overtaken by Long Chen and sent flying with a punch. His clothes were now burning fiercely, a mouthful of blood shooting into the clouds.

"Senior Brother Zhang!"

"Old Zhang!"

To everyone trying their best to keep up, this scene was spectacular. This was especially so for that boy whose legs were still moving subconsciously despite his bewilderment.

“Was-Was he for real when he said he was going to teach our three Senior Brothers a lesson?”

“That can’t be. They’ve never lost before...”

Even though he could not believe it at all, the truth was right in front of him. At the sight of the crimson figure in front, the boy lost all hope.

Senior Brother Zhang was beaten up, and nobody knew if he was still alive or dead. Those who were dashing forward quickly went to help Senior Brother Zhang, who had collapsed. Meanwhile, Long Chen’s first attack was successful and he decided to use it again. While using the same ‘Crimson Flames Blazing Heavens’ move of the Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, he pounced towards Senior Brother Wang.

“Senior Brother Wang, be careful!”

Just after this had been shouted, the enraged Senior Brother Wang used his most powerful attack and clashed with Long Chen. Time seemed to turn back and, yet again, another figure was sent flying while spitting out blood. Everyone took a closer look, finding that the person in this terrible situation was their Senior Brother Wang.

“It can’t be!”

At this moment, Senior Brother Li who was running at the very front could not believe this. The others were now numb to the sight, having seen this scene twice already. Senior Brother Li was the leader of their team and also the

strongest. Hence, everyone glanced at him, pinning their last hopes on him.

Senior Brother Li was still heading in the direction of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, and upon turning back, he was met with the sight of Zhang and Wang in a terrible state. Long Chen was now advancing in his direction, and that malicious grin caused shivers to go down Senior Brother Li's spine.

"Goodness, what kind of freak is he? What bad luck I have today. What did I do to provoke him?"

Senior Brother Li had completely lost his will to fight. Seeing Long Chen approaching, he quickly stretched his feet and broke out his fastest speed, fleeing!

Seeing that even their strongest Senior Brother Li was escaping, everyone stopped and exchanged glances, astonishment apparent in their eyes. That boy at the back had his eyes so wide they were on the verge of falling out at the sight of Senior Brother Wang and Zhang's injuries.

"Just-Just who is he?"

Their last hope, Senior Brother Li, was escaping like his life depended on it, yelling desperately as he ran, "Who exactly are you? Which hall are you from? There is no enmity between us and you've already harmed two of my people. Are you still not satisfied?"

"What do you mean there's no enmity between us? You wanted to steal something from me just now."

“I just said that in passing. Could you-Could you forgive me? Our Green Piercing Hall will withdraw from the contest for the Zenith Crystal Sword. Is that enough?”

While saying this, he could feel Long Chen’s deadly aura approaching himself step by step. Senior Brother Li was on the verge of a nervous breakdown.

“What does it matter to me whether you withdraw or not?”

Senior Brother Li was now merely two to three metres away from Long Chen. Seeing the perky butt Senior Brother Li had moving from side to side, the gears in Long Chen’s mind began to turn, and he quickly flitted past Li’s body and disappeared.

Senior Brother Li was now bewildered. In the time he had been in a daze, Long Chen had disappeared.

“Why? Why didn’t he hurt me?”

Senior Brother Li’s expression displayed his confusion, and he slowly turned back to face the front, his mind drawing a blank. No matter how much he wondered, he couldn’t understand the reason why Long Chen had let him off.

“Is he afraid of Green Piercing Hall?”

At this thought, Senior Brother Li finally had an explanation and quickly walked to the front of the other disciples. However, they were all staring at him in shock, and he was startled, “What’s with that look on your faces?”

“Senior-Senior Brother Li, you, you don’t have... any clothes on.”

Senior Brother Li looked down, and then produced an ear-piercing shriek.

Apparently, while Long Chen had flitted past him, Long Chen had pulled off his clothes in a practised manner...

.....

“The Heart Corrosive demonic beast is a Profound grade level 4 beast. Though it doesn’t specialise in offensive attacks, it has this skill called “Heart Corrosion”. It can affect a person’s willpower, and is not any ordinary technique.”

Long Chen recalled memories regarding the Heart Corrosive demonic beast.

“Long Chen, you actually did that to Senior Brother Li. Do you-do you like men...?”

Lingxi asked in a low voice from the Lingxi Sword, at a loss.

Long Chen was now in cold sweat, twitching his lip as he spoke nonchalantly, “Girl, when I peel the clothes off your skin and push you down onto the bed, you’ll know whether I like men or women.”

“You-You hoodlum!”

Amidst the laughter and curses, Long Chen could feel the auras of multiple people in the forest ahead.

This region was completely different from the sand dune.

The earth here was black and more fertile. Hence, there were many tall trees that formed a forest, little hills and rocks in a disarray, all of this creating a complicated terrain. Long Chen entered this forest, along with many others.

Long Chen could hide his footprints, and thus, not many people saw him. Soon enough, Long Chen sensed a very dignified and mysterious aura lying in wait deep within the forest.

“This forest is very dark and wet, and the Heart Corrosive demonic beast is one of the dark element. It will naturally hide itself here, and is the direct opposite of the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast.”

Following the aura, Long Chen quickly advanced and an open space appeared in front of him. Long Chen concealed himself behind a tall tree, observing the situation.

At this moment, there were many people entering from all sides and were surrounding the pure black demonic beast.

“Is this the Heart Corrosive demonic beast?”

This demonic beast was a little smaller than the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast. It was four-legged and black from head to toe. There were strange crimson patterns on its fur, forming a symbol that looked like a rune. What stood out the

most were its blood-red eyes that were like a fog. If they were stared into closely, one would be lost in those eyes, unable to extricate oneself from them.

This demonic beast was somewhat like a wolf or a dog, with a long snout and four sharp claws. Its tail was like a ponytail filled with thorns and held up high, and seemed to hold within a very powerful attack.

“As expected, this Heart Corrosive demonic beast is much stronger than the Scarlet Flamed Suan Beast.”

Meanwhile, the Heart Corrosive demonic beast was being surrounded by so many people and was gradually becoming enraged. However, amongst all these people, there were a few that struck fear in its heart, which was why it had yet to make its move.

This Heart Corrosive demonic beast’s intellect was a lot higher than that of the Suan Beast.

At the back of the crowd, there were a few experts. By this time, the experts of all the other seven halls had arrived.

The only hall that was not here was the Green Piercing Hall. There were some who wondered why the Green Piercing Hall had not arrived, but nobody really cared.

Not counting the Green Piercing Hall, the people who were going to be useful in battle were only people at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. Out of the hundred or so people around, there were only around ten who met this requirement. As for the cultivators who were at the peak of the Human Dan

Realm like Feng Wutian, only Chu Yunyao was his equal.

The others who were at the perfect mastery stage were almost as powerful, but compared to these two people, there was still a large gap between them. Currently, Feng Wutian and Chu Yunyao were standing in front and behind the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, deterring it.

Long Chen chanced a glance at Feng Wutian who was extremely high-spirited, and a sneer raised on his lips.

“You can be all impressive now, but when I make my move, you’re gonna be in trouble.”

He found Liu Ling in the crowd. Quite a few days had passed, and Liu Ling still looked the same, her beautiful eyes nervously fixed on Feng Wutian.

“I wonder if that huge bloodied handprint on her buttocks has disappeared yet...”

Long Chen wondered elatedly, before turning his focus to Chu Yunyao.

“Though this girl is still young, she has a very mature temperament and is very charming. If not for Lingxi watching, I’d definitely put my hands on her!”

Just as he was fantasizing, Lingxi suddenly asked, “What kind of evil plan are you hatching up?”

Long Chen was startled and immediately sighed, “I was just thinking. Why is it

that they're also females, yet my Lingxi is so pretty and they're so ugly?"

At this moment, the Heart Corrosive Monster finally could not hold it anymore and decided to attack.

Chapter 111 – Vermillion Bird Law

“In the past, I usually charge straight to the frontlines. This time, I’ll let you all go first, and when you’ve almost succeeded, I’ll stick in, finish this off and infuriate you!”

Long Chen had this plan in mind and concealed himself, preparing to watch the show.

Nobody here would think that there was an expert lying within their midst.

Under the orders of their leaders, these cultivators at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm were retreating to the sides, leaving about a dozen behind. These were all experts at the perfect mastery stage.

This number was more than enough to deal with the Heart Corrosive demonic beast.

For them, killing the demonic beast was just one portion of the battle. After its death, there was the most important part-the contest over the Zenith Crystal Sword.

After the death of the demonic beast, known, outstanding experts at the Human Dan Realm in the Green faction would then mercilessly slaughter each other.

This would be the start of a fierce battle!

Even before Feng Wutian and Chu Yunyao made their move, a young cultivator at the perfect mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm punched towards the Heart Corrosive demonic beast!

This was evidently a basic profound-grade battle technique. In the hands of this expert, it was made use of in a very matured manner. The immense offensive power caused the demonic beast to let out a low roar.

All of a sudden, the Heart Corrosive demonic beast turned into a black afterimage and sped towards this cultivator at a speed ten times that which he had showed off.

The speed caused Long Chen some shock.

“This is really a level 4 Profound grade demonic beast. With the speed it can go at, that fellow’s done for...”

Just as this thought flashed through his mind, everyone present saw the person from earlier being run into by the Heart Corrosive demonic beast. He was extremely pale, and it was obvious that the collision had been extremely strong.

This was merely an average charge from the Heart Corrosive demonic beast.

At this scene, everyone’s brows furrowed. All of a sudden, Chu Yunyao’s clear voice suddenly sounded, “Everyone, let us attack it from all sides. I doubt this beast can cope with our attacks!”

Long Chen found that this young girl was adept at fanning the flames. The moment her voice rang out, all the experts at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm exchanged glances and then roared, sending out powerful attacks towards the demonic beast!

Those ten or so magnificent attacks were extremely powerful. If Long Chen himself were to meet with this situation, he would definitely be injured. However, the Heart Corrosive demonic beast was calm and unhurried.

It coldly glanced at this group of people. All of a sudden, a strange aura was emitted from its body, and with a long ferocious whistle, dense black smoke was spat out from its mouth.

This black smoke was like a long snake, sweeping towards the people who were attacking it. Chu Yunyao's face changed, and she immediately exclaimed, "Get away, it's the 'Heart Corrosive Demon'!"

Those who had come here were extremely knowledgeable regarding the Heart Corrosive Demon. They definitely knew about this signature attack and what it entailed.

Everyone quickly retreated.

Chu Yunyao's words, as well as the strength she possessed, had turned the Heart Corrosive demonic beast's attention her.

Its scarlet eyes were trained on her, and in the next second, its body was like an arrow that had been released from a bow, pouncing towards her!

In the face of this powerful incoming attack, Chu Yunyao was calm. It was apparent that her mental strength was something Liu Ling could not be compared to.

At this moment, the demonic beast used its claws. As these sharp claws were brandished, boundless black rays attached to the claws. It was obviously an attack comparable to a battle technique, and it did not seem to be weak at all.

“These must be the legendary Demonic Claws of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast.”

Chu Yunyao’s expression remained unchanged. Long Chen saw a pure-white item that was like white jade appearing in her hands. She lifted it, and flashes from a sword closed in on the demonic beast!

“Pure Hearted Sword Shadow!”

These glints were like a wave that hindered the Heart Corrosive demonic beast from moving. Upon seeing this attack, Long Chen’s brows furrowed, “This sword is probably a Spirit Sword that is at the basic profound-grade. I can’t tell if I can deal with her attacks...”

Long Chen had thought that he was the only one watching the battle from afar, but little did he know that on his left not too far away, eight people were watching while chatting and laughing.

“Ms Yunyao’s Pure Hearted Sword Shadow is already so practised to the point that it’s almost perfect. In the Human Dan Realm, she’s practically invincible.”

Liu Lan's bountiful chest bounced while she spoke, her beautiful eyes watching the battle.

They were the leaders of the eight halls. They had not appeared at all in the competition, and only when the Heart Corrosive demonic beast show up did they watch on from a distance. The other reason why they were there was so that they could deal with any accidents.

"No, no, Enforcer Liu is off the mark. Feng Wutian of Green Sun Hall has the Vermillion Bird bloodline, which is something quite remarkable. He's also a little older than Ms Yunyao and holds even more battle experience. The champion almost certainly belongs to the Green Sun Hall."

Glancing at the person who was speaking, she found that he was staring at her body passionately. Liu Lan gave a slight smile and did not bother with this person who was drooling at her body, and turned her attention to someone else, "I wonder why nobody from the Green Piercing Hall is here yet?"

That person looked around, and upon realising Liu Lan was speaking to him, pretended to be unperturbed. "Those brats are probably a distance away. I'm sure they'll be here soon enough."

"Is that so? I thought their plan would be to wait till the battle ended and then arrive, reaping all the benefits after everyone here gets tired out from fighting."

Liu Lan's words were an obvious provocation, causing the other to be stunned. However, if Chu Yunyao could be said to be the strongest at the Human Dan Realm, Liu Lan would definitely be the strongest at the Earth Dan Realm.

He wasn't a match for Liu Lan and could only hold back the resentment and annoyance he was feeling.

Meanwhile, everyone turned their focus to the field where the situation had slightly changed.

Chu Yunyao's Pure Hearted Sword Shadow clashed with the Demonic Claws of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, causing a powerful explosion and prevented the beast from advancing forward.

Chu Yunyao had already retreated, yelling to the rest, "Everyone, let's do this together!"

The Green Emperor Hall was the most powerful in the Green faction. In addition, Chu Yunyao was also the main force here, which was why everyone heeded her words.

There were a few people here who were hoping that she would gain more injuries, such that when they vied for the Zenith Crystal Sword, they could take advantage of the situation. However, if she sustained too many injuries, they might just all lose their lives here, which defeated the whole purpose of coming here.

Hence, everyone, including Feng Wutian, chose to go on the offensive.

Long Chen knew that Feng Wutian was rather arrogant. When Chu Yunyao had stolen the limelight just now, Feng Wutian, who was another expert, was slightly annoyed.

His power burst out, and red fiery phantom wings appeared on his back!

Feng Wutian lightly flapped his wings, bursting out in a speed that was incomparable and overtook everyone. He punched the head of the demonic beast, creating a loud rumble.

Boom!

“Awoo...”

The Heart Corrosive demonic beast howled in pain and moved back, bloodstains on its forehead. Its fur had also been scorched by Feng Wutian’s attack.

This was the first time that the Heart Corrosive demonic beast had gotten hurt, thus evoking its anger. It had originally been focusing on Chu Yunyao, but when Feng Wutian had attacked it, its scarlet eyes had been trained on him.

Feng Wutian knew the situation wasn’t in his favour.

Liu Ling, who was behind him, jumped for joy upon seeing Feng Wutian displaying his prowess, being the first one to hurt the demonic beast, “Brother Wutian, you’re amazing!”

At this point, the Heart Corrosive demonic beast had no eyes for anyone else. It was dying to make mincemeat out of the person who had injured it.

Feng Wutian had also realised this and couldn’t help but regret his actions.

However, it was already too late. Hence, he gritted his teeth and charged towards the Heart Corrosive demonic beast!

The flaming wings at his back had become more prominent, and with the flapping of the wings, Feng Wutian began to accelerate at a low altitude, and while flying, his real Qi turned into a gush of flames that hissed beside him. Soon enough, it turned into a fiery bird in the palm of his hands!

“Vermillion Bird Law! Amassing Spirit Feathers!”

Under his manipulation, the fiery bird flew towards the Heart Corrosive demonic beast and exploded, turning into flaming feathers that fell like raindrops towards the demonic beast.

Seeing this attack that affected such a large area, the Heart Corrosive demonic beast howled, and its speed rapidly increased. It was actually able to zoom past most of the spirit feathers, and while running, it suddenly spat out a cloud of black smoke, hurtling towards Feng Wutian!

The surge of black smoke definitely did not mean well for anything it made contact with. Seeing that the Heart Corrosive demonic beast was specifically targeting him, Feng Wutian couldn't help but feel a little gloomy. However, he had been the one to cause things to turn out this way, and all he could do now was to block against this attack!

“Everyone, please lend me some of your power!”

While the Heart Corrosive demonic beast was focused on dealing with Feng Wutian, this was a great opportunity for everyone else!

The Heart Corrosive demonic beast did not pay attention to attacks from everyone else, which meant that meanwhile, they could take this opportunity to kill the beast!

After exchanging glances and recognising a similar fire in their eyes, Chu Yunyao led everyone and frantically rushed towards the Heart Corrosive demonic beast!

What nobody noticed was the callousness in Chu Yunyao's gaze.

"I don't believe you can block against my intermediate profound-grade sword technique!"

While the Heart Corrosive demonic beast was using its Heart Corrosive Toxic Smoke to deal with Feng Wutian, everyone had released their most powerful attacks against the beast, of which, Chu Yunyao's was the most terrifying!

Chapter 112 – Way of the Zenith Crystal Sword

Feng Wutian's attack had provoked the ire of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, causing it to disregard all other attacks and focus all its attention on him.

Of course, this also had to do with the demonic beast underestimating everyone else. In its eyes, only two people were dangerous enough for its attention. One was Chu Yunyao, and the other was Feng Wutian, which it was now attacking. As long as it took care of these two people, the rest would then be minced meat in a second!

Seeing the black smoke of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast that was like a powerful current headed towards him, Feng Wutian did not dare linger. The flaming wings on his back became even more intense, and reddish flames blazed in his eyes.

“You bastard. Do you think I won't kill you?”

Feng Wutian quickly formed a seal, and it was astonishingly much more complex than Long Chen's own dragon seal. Hissing flames rapidly twisted around Feng Wutian, and there was even the cry of a godly bird being produced from within.

“Vermillion Bird Law. Fire Spirit Seal!”

Having formed the seal, what pounced towards the Heart Corrosive Beast's demonic beast's black smoke was a surge of flames!

These flames transformed into a blazing godly bird and then crashed into the black smoke with a rumble, and even more concentrated black smoke was ignited, soaring towards the sky.

Not far away, one of the experts sighed in admiration, "This spirit seal of Feng Wutian's was utilised quite aptly. It can even somewhat block this attack of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast. Look, the beast is done for!"

Liu Lan was also looking at Feng Wutian with excitement. Her beautiful eyes were sparkling, full of pride.

"Oh right, what about that kid, Long Chen..."

She scanned the crowd, but Liu Lan did not see Long Chen. Her expression, which had initially been that of pride, instantly became cold.

"As expected, he's disappointed me. He was probably killed by Feng Wutian the moment they entered the Sky Martial Realm... I guess I wasted my effort on him."

Nobody could hear what Liu Lan was thinking.

At this point, the attack of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast had been somewhat blocked by Feng Wutian, and all the experts of the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm struck at the demonic beast with powerful attacks.

Numerous wounds appeared on the body of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, but this was not enough to truly injure it. At most, all it did was cause it to become even more furious.

As expected, besides Feng Wutian and Chu Yunyao, nobody present was able to deal with the Heart Corrosive demonic beast. The beast had just attacked Feng Wutian and also endured the attacks of others, yet it did not turn back. However, the fury it was feeling had reached the limit!

Though Feng Wutian had withstood the attack of the demonic beast, it knew that if it were to do it again, Feng Wutian would surely die.

As long as Feng Wutian died, it could then focus on Chu Yunyao. Hence, the Heart Corrosive demonic beast steeled itself and endured the pain from its injuries and charged madly towards Feng Wutian!

It vented all its anger on Feng Wutian, but all of a sudden, there was a mighty bloodlust aimed at it from behind it.

The Heart Corrosive demonic beast finally realised that it had underestimated Chu Yunyao!

Even Long Chen's eyes widened at the attack.

"This is definitely an intermediate profound grade battle technique."

Not everyone was able to use a technique that was one rank higher. In

addition, the higher the grade of the battle technique, the more difficult it was to use. There were only a few freaks, such as Long Chen, who were able to do so.

Somewhere else, Liu Lan's eyebrows were deeply furrowed.

"The Great Elder used to be part of the Green Emperor Hall. It looks like Chu Yunyao has already learnt the first move of the Way of the Zenith Crystal Sword. Seems like this competition was especially created for Chu Yunyao, since the Zenith Crystal Sword is practically made just for her... But I'm sure Wutian will shock all of you!"

At this point, Chu Yunyao had run behind the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, shimmering with mist around her. She looked like the white jade sword in her hands, sparkling and indescribably beautiful.

However, if one were to deny her formidability because of this, you were dead wrong!

Meanwhile, a whirlwind was crazily surrounding her sword, and within this whirlwind concealed multiple tiny blades. All of these were virtual images, but their sharpness did not lose out to any real blades. They might even be countless times sharper than real blades!

The hundreds, or even thousands of blades rapidly revolved around the white jade sword, and while Chu Yunyao chased up to the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, she yelled delicately and raised her sword with a rumble. Numerous blades turned into light glinting of these blades and charged straight for the beast!

At this moment, the Heart Corrosive demonic beast was preparing to kill Feng Wutian.

Chu Yunyao had grasped this timing well. Even Long Chen, who was looking on from a distance, sighed in admiration.

“This girl really is really quite amazing.”

“Tsk, that’s nothing much. Back then, when I displayed those moves, you’d have been so scared you’d have pissed your pants in terror!”

Lingxi pursed her lips after seeing Long Chen praise Chu Yunyao, unhappy.

Long Chen’s eyes were now fixated on the battlefield and did not bother with her. When Chu Yunyao sent out that move, even the weather seemed to be affected!

The glints off blades headed straight for the Heart Corrosive Demonic Beast.

“Way of the Zenith Crystal Sword! Jade Crystal Sword!”

The Heart Corrosive demonic beast let out an earth-shattering howl as it was slashed into by these blades. Its efforts were all on destroying Feng Wutian, and once more, it opened its mouth and black smoke that was even darker and denser than before, heading towards Feng Wutian!

At this moment, Chu Yunyao took this chance and suddenly landed a fatal strike!

Numerous wounds appeared on the body of the demonic beast, while the deepest cut had pierced through its skull!

Such a bad injury caused the Heart Corrosive demonic beast to let out a whine, and its huge body collapsed to the ground.

Though this did not immediately kill it, but the Heart Corrosive demonic beast had now lost its ability to fight. It could only wait to be slaughtered.

As long as Chu Yunyao dealt one more blow, no matter how light, it would definitely die.

Meanwhile, Chu Yunyao was preparing for her next move, but the direction was towards Feng Wutian!

At this scene, everyone cried out in alarm.

Previously, while trying to deal with Feng Wutian, the Heart Corrosive demonic beast had been killed by Chu Yunyao, but that last “Heart Corrosion” attack had been meant for Feng Wutian.

Feng Wutian was now busy dealing with “Heart Corrosive Demon”, but never did he expect that Chu Yunyao would be so sly as to attack him at this critical moment!

Feng Wutian, who had been dealing with “Heart Corrosive Demon”, found it difficult to withstand the attack of the Pure Hearted Sword Shadow and paled.

The black smoke, which was named the Heart Corrosive Demon, pounced onto Feng Wutian at this moment!

“Brother Wutian!”

Feng Wutian had been awe-inspiring just moments before, but he had been struck head on by the smoke, and it did not look to be good. Liu Ling was instantly scared witless and she glared at Chu Yunyao with hatred, eyes filling with tears as she struck towards Chu Yunyao.

“Evil woman, you deserve to die!”

Everyone in the Green Sun Hall held her back. Without Feng Wutian around, nobody had the guts to deal with Chu Yunyao!

Chu Yunyao looked indifferent as she stood by the side of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, sweeping her gaze towards everyone present. Her icy gaze and her looks, with the visual effect of her being beside a beast, caused everyone to fall silent out of fear.

Other cultivators who were at the Perfect Mastery Stage at the Human Dan Realm knew that this was the time to vie for the Zenith Crystal Sword, but seeing Feng Wutian in this state, nobody dared to make a move.

Long Chen was also very surprised by this outcome, and he took the time to measure up this young girl. “She’s such a beautiful girl, yet her methods and her heart are a little too much. Just as expected, she’s not my type.”

At Liu Lan’s side, everyone was glancing at each other, silent.

Liu Lan's eyes were fixed on this young girl, and could only sigh in resignation.

"The people that the Green Emperor Hall groom are truly first class in both their temperament and strength. Guess it was impossible for us to get the Zenith Crystal Sword after all."

She glanced towards Feng Wutian, who was still surrounded by the black smoke, and her brows furrowed. "Now that he's affected by the Heart Corrosive Demon, he won't receive any injuries but might temporarily lose his consciousness. I hope nothing bad comes out of this..."

Just as she thought this, Chu Yunyao was right about to retrieve the Zenith Crystal Sword, but the smoke around Feng Wutian suddenly dissipated, a thin layer around him. Long Chen found that Feng Wutian's eyes were slightly smoky and there was a fiendish aura emanating from his body!

"Has he been possessed?"

Long Chen had been planning to show himself, but upon seeing Feng Wutian in this state, he decided to wait a little longer and see what would happen.

"After being possessed, Feng Wutian's seems to have gotten much stronger."

Everyone here could see that.

Chu Yunyao was no different. She had been planning to retrieve the Zenith Crystal Sword but noticed Feng Wutian's cold gaze on her.

“This guy has been affected by Heart Corrosive Demon and is difficult to deal with. If I fight with him like this, someone else will definitely benefit, but if I retreat first, he’ll make a move against others, which would have nothing to do with me. Now that he’s possessed, he wouldn’t take the sword, so I don’t have to worry.”

At this thought, Chu Yunyao tactfully looked innocent and harmless and slowly backed away from the Heart Corrosive demonic beast.

Feng Wutian’s eyes were not on her. Rather, it was on the Heart Corrosive demonic beast.

Seeing the pitiful state of the demonic beast, the blackness in Feng Wutian’s eyes became even more concentrated, as if the person who was injured was he himself. He roared, and as if he had turned into the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, he bellowed and pounced towards everyone, bloodlust evident in his eyes!

Chapter 113 – Scheming

“This is what’s so remarkable about the Heart Corrosive Demon. It can even affect the spirit! Feng Wutian only exists as a Heart Corrosive demonic beast in his mind. Now, seeing another demonic beast on the verge of dying, he’s enraged.”

Seeing Feng Wutian scanning his surroundings fiercely, Lingxi stuck out her tongue and spoke.

“It’s no wonder that girl quickly moved away from the demonic beast. Though Chu Yunyao’s looks are enough to cause calamities, it’s apparent that she is quite sly.”

Long Chen did not really like girls like this. What he liked were people like Yang Lingqing, tenacious and pure, or someone like Lingxi, who was innocent and cute.

Meanwhile, everyone was silent as they watched Feng Wutian hovering around the demonic beast and growling once in a while. Even Chu Yunyao had retreated to the back, while everyone else did not dare move.

“How about we all work together to take care of Feng Wutian?”

Somebody suggested.

“That’s not right. If we do that, we might even kill him. Feng Wutian is the treasure of Green Sun Hall. If any of us kill him by accident, it’ll be hard to answer to the hall.”

This was what the experts at the Perfect Mastery Stage at the Human Dan Realm were worried about.

Chu Yunyao, who was supposed to go up, did not move at all. Her icy gaze was fixed on Feng Wutian as she thought to herself, “Any of you who want to deal with him can go up there. If you don’t do it, once time is up for the possession, he’ll faint and the Zenith Crystal Sword will still be mine.”

With this thought in mind, Chu Yunyao led the people of Green Emperor Hall and retreated backwards, looking on from afar but not leaving the area.

Feng Wutian’s eyes full of bloodlust finally turned towards everyone else.

“Retreat!”

The leaders of the halls quickly brought their teams to the back after seeing Chu Yunyao herself retreat, afraid to be involved.

Those who did not retreat were the group of Green Sun Hall. Without Feng Wutian, Liu Ling was unwilling to leave and kept making a fuss, causing everyone to be agitated.

“Miss Ling’er, we need to go. After the time of Brother Wutian’s possession is

up, he will naturally return to normal!”

However, Liu Ling was unwilling to leave no matter what was said. Her eyes were wet as she glanced at Feng Wutian. On one hand, her heart ached, but on the other hand, she never knew that the man who had always been a god-like existence to her would ever be in such a pathetic state.

“Why did this happen... Right, it’s all because of the wretched woman!”

At the thought of Chu Yunyao, icy bloodlust exploded from Liu Ling’s eyes.

Meanwhile, besides people from Green Sun Hall, everyone retreated to the back. In Feng Wutian’s eyes, the people of the Green Sun Hall stood out to him, which meant those eyes clouded with black mistiness were fixated on them.

“Roar!”

In an instant, he exploded forth with astonishing speed, like an arrow that had been released from a bow, and charged towards people of the Green Sun Hall!

Seeing the bloodlust in Feng Wutian’s eyes, everyone was surprised. To counter Feng Wutian, who was rushing over, one expert at the Perfect Mastery Stage at the Human Dan Realm dashed out.

“Get Liu Ling and leave!”

No matter what, Liu Ling was the daughter of the elder of Green Sun Hall, Liu Yuan. Hence, it was their duty to protect her.

While saying this, the expert met with Feng Wutian.

“Feng Wutian, you’d better wake up!”

With a rumbling fist out, he punched towards Feng Wutian. In that moment, a powerful wave swept towards Feng Wutian!

Seeing that this person actually dared make a move against him, Feng Wutian let out a roar and the scarlet phantom flaming wings once again appeared behind his back. With just a flap, Feng Wutian’s speed increased by several times.

At this moment, a flaming god-like bird appeared in Feng Wutian’s hands, and an immense pressure exploded!

This was clearly one of the moves of the Vermillion Bird Law that Feng Wutian had used while dealing with the Heart Corrosive demonic beast. It was named Spirit Congealing Feathers and was extremely terrifying. Currently, these flaming feathers were akin to countless arrows, flying towards the Human Dan expert at the Perfect Mastery Stage who was trying to intercept Feng Wutian.

It was clear who was on the upper hand here. Everyone in the Green Sun Hall was full of shock and grief, because they could see that this cultivator had now been burnt till he was skinless, and without being able to make a sound, his charred body fell to the ground.

“Senior Brother Liu!”

Everyone yelled in sorrow, but they did not have much time left. After Feng Wutian had killed that person, he did not stop moving and dashed towards Liu Ling and the rest!

“Run!”

At this point, nobody bothered with Liu Ling. They pulled her a few times, and upon seeing her motionless, they could only give up on her and run for their lives.

Running in the face of death was only human nature. However, this meant there was only Liu Ling left facing Feng Wutian.

“Brother Wutian...”

Liu Ling was currently immeasurably pale, standing in a daze while looking at Feng Wutian, whose eyes were filled with bloodlust and coldness. Unfortunately, Feng Wutian couldn't recognise her and only saw Liu Ling alone standing there, since everyone had fled. Hence, his thirst for blood was fixed on Liu Ling!

Feeling that cold bloodlust of Feng Wutian, Liu Ling felt real terror.

At this point, she realised that in this empty area, only she and Feng Wutian were left. Feng Wutian, who had given her a sense of security had now turned into a devil, trying to take her life!

The icy bloodlust aimed at her caused her body to tremble violently, and meanwhile, Feng Wutian had already let out a furious growl and lunged towards her.

Liu Ling let out a pitiful sound, and in her surprise, she could only raise her arms to block her face, shivering...

At this scene, Liu Lan shook her head and prepared to make her move and save Liu Ling, and then announce that the Green Sun Hall was going to leave the competition for the Zenith Crystal Sword. However, at this moment, a blood-red figure rushed in front of Liu Ling at a speed that was difficult for even cultivators at the Perfect Mastery Stage at the Human Dan Realm to achieve. In that instant, he jolted Feng Wutian out of the way!

Only then did Liu Lan halt her footsteps, staring at this blood-red figure in confusion. Upon seeing who it was, Liu Lan gaped, expression filled with shock.

“How can it be Long Chen?”

Liu Lan knew how strong a person needed to be in order to achieve that speed, and this was something Long Chen was able to do. This astonished her.

“He hasn’t been killed and has been hiding in the shadows till now? Then again, it’s always been his character to hide around and then come out at the last minute and harm others. However, that little bit of power you possess is far from enough to defeat Feng Wutian and seize my sister’s heart.”

Liu Lan had misunderstood, thinking that Long Chen’s intentions in saving Liu Ling was because he liked her, and wanted to gain her affections.

This ‘saving a damsel in distress’ thing was definitely quite effective, but it was not his intentions.

“Enforcer Liu, which Hall is that beast cultivator from?”

“He’s a disciple of my Green Sun Hall.”

They had seen Long Chen before, but not when he used his Dragon Soul Transformation. They were only asking to confirm their suspicions.

“It’s the Green Sun Hall again. Haha, didn’t that kid see a cultivator at the perfect mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm die by Feng Wutian’s hands just now?”

Besides the people around Liu Lan was, everyone else had also noticed Long Chen’s appearance. Those who were not familiar with him were naturally confused.

Chu Yunyao was also bewildered at the sudden sight of this beast cultivator. Confused, she asked quite a few people before one seemed to remember something, “I remember there’s a beast cultivator who recently entered the Green Sun Hall. His name is Long Chen, and there seems to be some conflict between him and Feng Wutian. The first day he entered the Sky Martial Realm, he was chased away by Feng Wutian. I didn’t expect him to appear now.”

Long Chen?

Chu Yunyao had never heard this name before, but she didn’t think too much of it. She only gazed at Long Chen with interest, hoping he had some talent.

The person who was the most baffled by Long Chen's appearance was Liu Ling, who was behind him.

Trembling, she gazed at Long Chen, perplexed.

Some time ago, Long Chen had escaped from the team of the Green Sun Hall, causing a ruckus and mercilessly teaching Liu Ling a lesson. Liu Ling fervently wished to slash Long Chen into thousands of pieces, but now, with the way he was appearing and saving her from death's door...

Liu Ling had believed that if this situation were to ever happen, it would be Long Chen killing her, and Feng Wutian would ruthlessly teach Long Chen a lesson. That was supposed to be the correct course of action. However, their roles were now reversed, and this made it hard for her to adjust.

At this moment, Long Chen suddenly turned back and revealed an evil grin, "Hey, doll, were those slaps comfortable? How do you feel about me doing it again? Don't worry, I won't make the fees too expensive for you..."

Seeing this despicable teenager watch her with a teasing grin, Liu Ling realised that she could not even bring herself to get angry.

She stared blankly at Long Chen, unsure of what she should do.

At this moment, she saw Feng Wutian rushing towards Long Chen with fury in his expression from the corner of her eyes and shouted, "Be careful!"

"Don't worry."

Long Chen replied, turned back, and watched as Feng Wutian's figure closed in...

“Feng Wutian, I never expected to battle you again under such circumstances. Now that I'm at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, I wonder what amazing expressions that lunatic Liu Lan would make if she sees me defeating you right under her nose...”

Chapter 114 – Vermillion Bird Imprint

What Long Chen did not know was that Liu Lan was currently watching him.

“His aura has gotten considerably thicker. He’s probably reached the Initial Mastery Stage of the Human Dan Realm.”

It had taken less than a month for Long Chen to advance from the eighth Dragon Vein to the initial mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm. Hence, no matter the results of Long Chen’s battle, Liu Lan would still think highly of him.

“If I groom him well and stimulate his potential, it’s not impossible for him to surpass Feng Wutian.”

Liu Lan nodded while looking at Long Chen.

Meanwhile, Long Chen had collided with Feng Wutian in the battlefield.

What shocked everyone was that with just Long Chen’s bodily strength, he had withstood Feng Wutian’s attack, simultaneously pushing Feng Wutian backwards. This way, the battle was a slight distance away from Liu Ling, and they would thus not accidentally hurt her.

Liu Ling was aware of this. Suddenly, she found her eyes getting wet. Somehow, Long Chen didn’t seem that terrible anymore. The only reason why she had hated him so much at the start was for Feng Wutian.

“The peak at the Human Dan Realm...”

Through that attack, Long Chen somewhat knew Feng Wutian’s strength.

Just the amount of real Qi that Feng Wutian possessed was near that of a person at the Earth Dan Realm, which was over ten times what Long Chen possessed. Long Chen’s Dragon Qi was purer than real Qi by ten times. With the added bonus from his power of lightning and flames, he did not lose out to his opponent in terms of real Qi.

At this moment, a layer of dull red flames was travelling along Long Chen’s dragon body, with faint electricity currents flowing.

“I have an intermediate Profound grade battle technique as well as this Thunder Flame Physique. These are all to my advantage, but Chu Yunyao also has a sword technique of the same grade. I wonder what Feng Wutian has...”

While thinking all these, Long Chen had already broken out the Seal of the High Profound Dragon, creating a bigger commotion with Feng Wutian.

Feng Wutian was now aware of Long Chen’s might, and he used the attack that had been displayed previously-the Fire Spirit Seal!

Two powerful seals crashed together with a rumble in mid-air. The Seal of the High Profound Dragon was an advanced Huang grade battle technique, while the Fire Spirit Seal was a basic Profound grade battle technique, and they were only a level apart. However, Long Chen’s body was more durable, and in this collision, the explosion merely pushed them backwards.

“How is this possible?”

Long Chen actually using an advanced Huang grade battle technique to evenly match and block Feng Wutian’s attack. Even Chu Yunyao did not dare take this attack head on, and she was hence thoroughly shocked at this sight. Only then did she begin to take Long Chen seriously.

“This guy... has he been hiding elsewhere, preparing to wait for an opportunity and take advantage of the situation in the end?”

At this thought, Chu Yunyao’s gaze that was now directed on Long Chen was glimmering with hostility.

“Luckily for me, I was quick witted in the face of this situation and let Feng Wutian turn out like this. If not, after I battle Feng Wutian till I’m drained, you might really just benefit if you appear at the end.”

At this point, everyone knew that besides Feng Wutian and Chu Yunyao, the third strongest person in the Sky Martial Realm Competition was Long Chen.

However, it was apparent that Long Chen had yet to reach the peak of the Human Dan Realm, which was why they were not so optimistic towards him.

This included Liu Ling. Previously, Long Chen had fled from Feng Wutian in a pitiful state. Now, though he had somewhat blocked Feng Wutian’s attack, the huge disparity between their cultivation realms was not something luck could compensate.

“Brother Wutian...”

Now, Liu Ling was still hoping for Feng Wutian to wake up and become his usual wise, formidable self.

As for Long Chen, she now found that she no longer hated him that much, but it wasn't to the point of liking him.

However, just Long Chen's Seal of the High Profound Dragon was enough to block Feng Wutian's Fire Spirit Seal. This caused Liu Lan to be shocked as she blinked, trying to ensure she had not seen things wrongly.

"He improved so much..."

The others were speechless.

"Green Sun Hall has these two young juniors. One is Feng Wutian marked as four stars and having immense potential. Long Chen should also be judged to have four stars as his potential."

Long Chen was definitely oblivious to their conversation.

Now, he was currently mulling over what was actually special about Feng Wutian. At this moment, Feng Wutian had come out of his daze, his cold gaze on Long Chen.

At this moment, Long Chen suddenly saw a light red imprint appearing on Feng Wutian's forehead. This tiny imprint looked like a firebird.

“Is this the imprint of the Vermillion Bird...”

Long Chen’s auditory abilities were great, and he heard what others were saying.

“This imprint is probably Feng Wutian’s bloodline, which Liu Lan mentioned before.”

Long Chen knew little about things like bloodlines. However, after the Vermillion Bird Imprint appeared, Feng Wutian’s aura rapidly grew, which meant he was becoming increasingly stronger!

A fearsome flame burnt around Feng Wutian’s body, turning him into a man of fire.

“Fire Bath of the Vermillion Bird is an attack using his bloodline that can double the amount of real Qi he possesses. The quality of this real Qi is also more than three times than before. Feng Wutian is now immeasurably close to the Earth Dan Realm.”

Chu Yunyao furrowed her brows. The Fire Bath of the Vermillion Bird was an ability from Feng Wutian’s bloodline that caused her to fear him. Otherwise, how could a mere Feng Wutian from the Green Sun Hall be an opponent for her, the ultimate expert at the Human Dan Realm groomed by the Green Emperor Hall?

Though Long Chen did not know what this power of Feng Wutian’s bloodline was called nor where it originated from, what he knew was that Feng Wutian’s real Qi had increased and had become much more powerful than Long Chen’s own.

“Is the power of bloodlines so amazing?”

Long Chen was confused, but suddenly, he recalled his Blood Transmutation and Dragon Soul Transformation. These two were techniques that he had inherited from the blood essence of the Ancient Dragon. Didn't it mean that these two techniques were the power of his bloodline?

Blood Transmutation and Dragon Soul Transformation were truly heaven-defying techniques.

Long Chen no longer had the luxury to care further. Since Feng Wutian had even used the Fire Bath of the Vermillion Bird, everyone was extremely nervous. If Long Chen could not block Feng Wutian, the flames of fury of Feng Wutian could very well reach them.

Though Long Chen's appearance was surprising, Chu Yunyao was still quite happy.

“If that kid called Long Chen can block Feng Wutian and use up more of his stamina, I can make my move with more ease later. Long Chen really knows how to pick when to show up.”

Long Chen did not dare underestimate Feng Wutian. He had already used Fire Bath of the Vermillion Bird and he was surrounded by flames, letting out an agitated growl as he rushed madly towards Long Chen!

Feng Wutian's aura had now risen to the extreme. The flames revolved around him madly, becoming larger and larger, and an intense heat rushed towards

everyone.

Long Chen could already feel the power hidden within these flames!

All the flames had now converged together, forming a large blazing god-like bird in front of Feng Wutian. An ear-piercing bird cry resounded, and Long Chen suddenly felt a rumble by his ear.

“Law of the Vermillion Bird, Sole Flaming Deity Bird!”

Feng Wutian’s body had vanished, leaving behind a huge flaming bird flapping its large wings. It whistled towards Long Chen, and no matter where it went, whether it be soil or rocks, everything was charred black, and all the foliage was burnt to nothingness.

“Does Feng Wutian also have an intermediate Profound grade battle technique? He also has a remarkable bloodline. It’s no wonder Liu Lan thinks so highly of him.”

With such an attack from Feng Wutian, Liu Ling was terrified and deathly pale as she shrieked. Everyone else thought that Long Chen was dead meat. Even Chu Yunyao was not confident that she could face such an attack, so she shook her head, “It’s going to end...”

However, Long Chen actually laughed after seeing this attack.

“Heaven Burning Crimson Flames of the Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist is probably not enough to defend against this. Feng Wutian is not too powerful than me in many areas, and I still haven’t had the opportunity to use that move

after I learnt it.”

While Feng Wutian was preparing his Sole Flaming Deity Bird, strong black rays exploded from Long Chen’s eyes. It was as if there were two mysterious black suns in his eyes!

An immense force combining red and black colours coiled around Long Chen. He was now like a dazzling jet-black sun.

A blazing force burst out from Long Chen’s body. That formidable aura was incomparably bright and many shifted their gazes away, not daring to look at him.

“What does he plan to do to face up to the Sole Flaming Deity Bird?”

Nobody understood, but Long Chen was already explaining with his actions. Under the appalled gazes of everyone present, a powerful aura that did not lose out to his opponent exploded. It was as if a black sun had burst out from his body, fiercely burning and producing a charred smell in the air.

If it was said that Feng Wutian’s flames were fierce and powerful, then Long Chen’s black sun was ten times more so than Feng Wutian’s flames!

Long Chen faced up to Feng Wutian, jumping up high and fitting his two fists together. A black ball formed of real Qi whizzed as it took form, and like a meteor hitting the earth, Long Chen aimed it at Feng Wutian.

“Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Earth Piercing... Demonic Sun!”

Chapter 115 – Piercing Earth Demonic Sun

“What? An intermediate Profound grade battle technique?”

Chu Yunyao covered her mouth, shocked at the scene. Liu Ling could only stare on in awe.

She knew how strong Feng Wutian was, but when did Long Chen get so powerful?

In general, everything that had happened today was akin to a dream for her.

To the astonished gazes of everyone present, Long Chen’s even more formidable attack of Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist-Piercing Earth Demonic Sun clashed with Feng Wutian’s Sole Flaming Deity Bird. These were the two most powerful attacks that these two people had, which they had both used under their most formidable conditions. The resulting scene was stunning.

There were a total of two attacks in Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist; Heaven Burning Crimson Flames and Piercing Earth Demonic Sun. Compared to Heaven Burning Crimson Flames, Piercing Earth Demonic Sun was much stronger.

It was even more powerful than Feng Wutian’s Sole Flaming Deity Bird, even after he had released it after the Fire Bath of the Vermillion Bird!

This time, Long Chen did not hold back, exhibiting his most powerful move. He had recently attained the Thunder Flame Physique, his Dragon Qi storing this force of lightning and flames. Even his Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step was used in this Piercing Earth Demonic Sun, which was an added bonus to what was already a terrifying attack. At the beginning, the strength of Piercing Earth Demonic Sun could somewhat match Sole Flaming Deity Bird. However, the moment it made contact with this technique, that destructive power it held within finally exploded.

It was as if the sun had smashed into the ground with a crash. The Sole Flaming Deity Bird exploded into pieces after crashing into Piercing Earth Demonic Sun just like that.

Tremendous explosions sounded repeatedly, and the harsh rays of light formed made it impossible for everyone to open the eyes. However, they had witnessed Piercing Earth Demonic Sun win against Sole Flaming Deity Bird.

Long Chen's attack had destroyed Feng Wutian's attack with a loud bang. The ferocious ripples from the attack struck his opponent, and this powerful attack caused Feng Wutian to spit out a mouthful of fresh blood, flying backwards and falling to the ground. His body was now charred completely black, and he was delirious.

Meanwhile, Long Chen landed on the ground steadily.

Now that everything was over, everyone could only stare at this young man in a daze, completely silent.

Chu Yunyao's expression was rather interesting. She had originally wanted Long Chen to expend Feng Wutian's energy in battle, but Long Chen actually had

the advantage and defeated Feng Wutian without using any tricks, despite Feng Wutian using his ultimate technique...

“This is no joke.”

Chu Yunyao stared at Long Chen blankly, astonished.

On the other hand, Liu Lan’s expression was even more marvellous than Chu Yunyao’s.

She had always been a goddess-like existence to everyone. Her every move, every expression was full of grace, and yet at this moment, she was stunned and her mouth was slightly open. Her eyes were now filled with shock.

Long Chen’s looks were now etched in her heart.

When she had first seen him, she had thought him interesting and looked down on him. That was until now, where Long Chen’s display had struck her right in the heart!

“What kind of person is he?”

Liu Lan took a deep breath, her plump chest bouncing. She then shook her head, and could not help but laugh.

This time, she had entirely lost face in front of Long Chen. Before coming to the Sky Martial Realm Competition, she had constantly repeated that there was a 90% chance that Long Chen would die in the Sky Martial Realm Competition.

Unexpectedly, Long Chen had defeated Feng Wutian, who she had been grooming for years for and had always been proud of.

If this was let out, absolutely nobody would believe what had transpired.

“Brother Wutian...”

Liu Ling had come back to herself after the endless tremors. She noticed Feng Wutian’s injuries and could not tell if he was alive or death. Broken-hearted, she began to sprint madly towards Feng Wutian.

The other members of the Green Sun Hall snapped out of their shock and chased after her.

Feng Wutian had now completely lost consciousness. Liu Ling could do little but hold him, and it was someone else who took out some Spirit Medicine and gave it to Feng Wutian to consume.

However, Feng Wutian was currently in tattered clothing, face black and hair burnt till he was unbelievably ugly. He had long since lost his image as a pretty boy.

This was the first time Liu Ling had seen Feng Wutian in such a pitiful state. This was all thanks to Long Chen, and yet, she found herself still unable to hate Liu Ling.

Now, Long Chen’s name had thoroughly spread far and wide in the Green Faction.

After news of what had happened here travelled out, Long Chen would instantly become famous in the Green Faction, and could possibly be known by even people of other factions!

“Enforcer Liu, if we were to spare no effort and groom Long Chen further, he might even be able to take part in the selection to enter the inner faction.”

Someone suddenly spoke by Liu Lan’s ear. She did have some thoughts about this, but upon recalling something, she could only shake her head with a wry smile, “The selection requirements for the inner faction is extremely stringent. It’s practically impossible for Long Chen to pass.”

“That’s true. I believe Yunxi, Yunyao’s brother is going to take part in the selection this time. This time, it’s the Eastern Green Dragon Family’s turn, right?”

Liu Lan nodded, feeling a headache coming on at the mention of this name.

Chu Yunxi was Chu Yunyao’s brother. He was merely eighteen years old, but had already entered the Earth Dan Realm over a year ago. Now, he had already achieved even more power and was at the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm.

One year ago, when he had just entered the Earth Dan Realm, he was said to be the number one genius of the Green Faction. It was best to have good relations with this kind of person. However, what caused Liu Lan a headache was that that kid was actually fond of her, and had claimed that he would not marry anyone but her in his lifetime.

“Father is already preparing to agree to the marriage planned by the Green Emperor Hall. Am I really going to marry that guy and live the life of a wife?”

Liu Lan was extremely against this idea. Since young, she had been in charge of matters regarding the Green Sun Hall, which had formed her decisive and sure personality. She was unwilling to let go of what she currently had. However, she was not a sprightly young woman anymore, and that meant she might just have to resign herself to this fate.

The development in the battle caused Liu Lan to focus on something other than her headache.

Long Chen had defeated Feng Wutian, but had ultimately lightened his hand and not killed him. With the medical treatment from the others from the Green Sun Hall, he was able to preserve his life. However, it was impossible for him to regain consciousness for now.

Now that the issue with Feng Wutian was over, what was more important was getting possession of the Zenith Crystal Sword. The terrifying abilities of Long Chen had caused all the experts at the Perfect Mastery Stage at the Human Dan Realm to exchange glances, none daring to make their move.

Everyone, except Chu Yunyao.

This Zenith Crystal Sword was something she definitely needed to obtain. She was not going to give up just because of the appearance of the dark horse, Long Chen.

“I’m sure that attack must have used up a lot of that kid’s energy. I’m stronger than Feng Wutian. Looks like this Zenith Crystal Sword is going to be mine after all.”

At this thought, Chu Yunyao did not say anything further and calmly walked towards Long Chen.

That Heart Corrosive Demonic Beast that was still fighting for its life was still between them.

Aware that there was a good show about to start, everyone’s eyes were fixed on them.

Chu Yunyao spoke while looking at Long Chen, “I am in admiration of you for being able to defeat Feng Wutian. However, I do hope you would be so kind as to leave the Zenith Crystal Sword to me. I see that you don’t use a sword, and I imagine this Zenith Crystal Sword would not be of much use to you.”

Long Chen laughed, “You really say such funny things. Even if I don’t use swords, does it mean I can’t take it away? It’s going to fetch a good price if I exchange it for some money.”

Despite being so courteous, Chu Yunyao found that Long Chen had no intentions of ceding, and she felt a slight burst of anger.

However, she had seen how formidable Long Chen was. She would not make a move unless it was absolutely necessary.

She now looked at Long Chen, who was solemn. The gears in her brain began

to turn hurriedly, hoping to find a way to deal with Long Chen. Soon enough, a figure rose in her mind and she smiled sweetly, “Have you heard of Dongfang Tianyu? I’m on good terms with him. If you let me have the Zenith Crystal Sword, he might even be willing to guide you in your cultivation.”

“Dongfang Tianyu? I’ve never heard of him before. Girl, stop talking. Isn’t the Zenith Crystal Sword something we get based on our combat abilities? Don’t worry, I’ll be less hard on you...”

While he said this, though, a trace of worry rose in his mind.

There were nine great outer factions in the Lingwu Family, and four inner factions. The outer factions were separated into Red, Orange, Yellow, Green, Blue, Purple, Silver and Gold, while the four large inner factions comprised of Eastern Green Dragon, Southern Vermillion Bird, Western White Tiger and Northern Black Tortoise.

The members of the Green Dragon faction had the surname Dongfang, and the Dongfang Tianyu that Chu Yunyao spoke of was obviously of this faction.

Seeing Long Chen still not getting the point, Chu Yunyao did not get angry but rather, laughed.

“I don’t dare to attack for fear of harming the peace we now have. Do you think I’m afraid of you? Then again, since you aren’t willing to give up, I’ll let you know how large the gap is between Green Emperor Hall and your Green Sun Hall, which is ranked at the bottom!”

“Oh?”

Long Chen exhibited a look of surprise and even looked a little lecherous as he laughed out loud, “Looks like you’re pretty nimble with your lips. I’m quite sure your mouth must be rather skilful. How about we find a time and you show me your skills?”

Chu Yunyao did not seem to understand what he was implying, looking confused before turning cold and looking ready to murder someone.

However, those who understood flushed a deep red. They could only bow down and admire Long Chen’s guts from the deepest part of their hearts.

Even Liu Lan gritted her teeth at Long Chen’s words, cheeks red as she thought, “That kid even dares make fun of the woman Dongfang Tianyu fancies. I wonder how long he can live for with that personality?”

While thinking this, a gust of wind blew past, and a young man donning white robes with a green dragon embroidered onto it appeared by Chu Yunyao’s side.

This man’s face was unbelievably clear and fair. He had an impressive appearance and was a rarely seen beauty.

He was now smiling at Chu Yunyao, “Yao’er, what’s with that expression? Did someone bully you? Tell your Brother Tianyu, and I’ll take care of it for you...”

Chapter 116 – Dongfang Tianyu

The appearance of this young man caused Long Chen to become wide-eyed.

Though they were the same age, his status and power were both things Long Chen aspired to achieve.

In terms of strength, the only group of people that could cause Long Chen fear was those at the Earth Dan Realm and above. He was definitely the genius of geniuses to be at the Earth Dan Realm at such an age.

He had also called himself Brother Tianyu. There was no doubt about it; he was Dongfang Tianyu, whom Chu Yunyao had recently mentioned. He was one of the members of the Dongfang faction, which was part of the four inner factions.

Long Chen knew that with someone of such a status in front of him, all he could do was endure. Endure!

It was like how he had been when facing Huang Feiyang and Feng Wutian. Only by enduring could he preserve his life.

Chu Yunyao was obviously someone that Dongfang Tianyu fancied. Long Chen suddenly felt a chill down his spine-if Dongfang Tianyu had heard his words, he would definitely not even have a skeleton now.

When he had just entered the Lingwu Family, Gan Lin had once told him that the four inner factions were the true faction members. The owner of the outer

factions was an existence that one did not dare provoke.

Though Long Chen resisted the idea, he had to admit that the Lingwu Family was much too large. In front of such an organisation, he was a mere ant, and he could do little about it.

That was why he had removed Dragon Soul Transformation and returned to his youthful, lively appearance.

After transforming, he was indeed strong, but also very intimidating. If Dongfang Tianyu loathed his looks, he was done for.

“The timing isn’t right. I need to temporarily pretend to be an obedient kid.”

Seeing Dongfang Tianyu’s appearance, Chu Yunyao was pleasantly surprised and exclaimed in high spirits, “Brother Tianyu, how did you know I was here?”

“I heard from your father that you’re participating in the Sky Martial Realm Competition, so I came over. What’s wrong with the outer faction? Why is there a need to hold some competition? It wouldn’t be good if you got injured. Oh, right, you seemed pretty upset just now. What happened?”

Dongfang Tianyu looked at Chu Yunyao worriedly.

Chu Yunyao thought of Long Chen, evilness glinting in her eyes for a split second. She shot a glance at Long Chen and cutely answered, “It’s nothing much. We’re just fighting over the Zenith Crystal Sword in the body of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast’s body. It isn’t that surprising.”

Dongfang Tianyu furrowed his brows, sounding cold. He turned to look at Long Chen while he spoke, “He actually dares vie over something with you? Doesn’t he know the existence of I, Dongfang Tianyu?”

He contemplated Long Chen, eyes already glinting with icy cold bloodlust.

Long Chen hurriedly answered, “Ms Yunyao wants this to be a real competition and requested that we go all out. We only dared to make our move when she said that. If not, with you around, how would we dare fight over this with Ms Yunyao?”

If he kept a good image, he had lesser to worry about in the future. If he pretended to be a good person and kept his life, he might still have the chance to take revenge, so Long Chen didn’t mind that much.

Even if he might be looked down upon.

“Is that so?”

Dongfang Tianyu nodded, Long Chen’s words sounding favourable to him.

Meanwhile, everyone was flabbergasted at the large change in Long Chen’s attitude. Chu Yunyao had wanted to use Dongfang Tianyu to tactfully eliminate Long Chen, but those words made it impossible for her to do anything.

If she were to pester him continuously and try to prove Long Chen was lying, Dongfang Tianyu might think her less pure and have a vengeful heart. She could

only grit her teeth and let Long Chen off for now.

“Kid, as long as you’re still part of the Lingwu Family, I’ll still have the chance to take your life! Nobody who crosses me survives!”

At this point, Dongfang Tianyu had already made quick work of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast and retrieved a cosmos pouch from its body. He grabbed a light green sword and passed it to Chu Yunyao, mumbling, “This Zenith Crystal Sword isn’t half bad. Take it. Once you’re at the Earth Dan Realm, I’ll get my father to give you something else.”

“Thank you, Brother Tianyu!”

Chu Yunyao was overjoyed as she took the Zenith Crystal Sword that she had been yearning for and placed it within her cosmos pouch. She secretly took a glimpse of that cowardly Long Chen, and the sight of his expression used to flatter Dongfang Tianyu made her feel like vomiting. She focused on Dongfang Tianyu, “Brother Tianyu, I’ve already obtained the Zenith Crystal Sword. The competition is already over too. Shall we leave?”

“That’s exactly what I planned. Yuanling City isn’t too far away, and there’s an absolutely stunning stream. The surroundings are beautiful and there are flowers everywhere. I was going to bring you there and admire it!”

The two were absorbed in conversation, not even bothering to take a look at anyone else. With Dongfang Tianyu taking the lead, they left the place to look at some ‘stunning stream’.

Long Chen then heaved a sigh of relief, though everyone was looking at him

strangely.

At the beginning, they had truly been in awe of Long Chen. However, he turned into a weakling the moment he met somebody strong, and that worsened their impression of him.

“He’s just a lowly person with no pride. It’ll be difficult for him to become anything great. I’d be embarrassed to even associate with him.”

Now that the Sky Martial Realm Competition had ended, Chu Yunyao had easily gained the Zenith Crystal Sword and won.

Everyone had accepted the outcome and dispersed.

Seeing it was over, Liu Ling and the rest quickly left with Feng Wutian, who was injured and unconscious. Only by bringing him back to the Green Sun Hall would he be able to be treated properly.

Soon enough, only Long Chen was left here. Beside him was the carcass of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast.

Long Chen was currently quite depressed.

“I spent so much effort on this, and the Zenith Crystal Sword was taken by that girl. Chu Yunyao, it’s not that easy to kill me. There’ll be a day where I’ll make you regret everything, and as for Dongfang Tianyu...”

The real person giving Long Chen pressure was Dongfang Tianyu.

The horrors of the four inner factions of the Lingwu Family had, for the first time, been made obvious to Long Chen. Long Chen now knew that he while might have defeated Feng Wutian, but he was still far too weak.

“The good thing is that there’s still the carcass of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, so I still have some rewards.”

Chu Yunyao had not taken the carcass of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast. With Long Chen still around, the others did not dare retrieve it.

Long Chen had recently refined the Scarlet Flaming Suan Beast and achieved the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. He wasn’t in a hurry now anyway and took out his cosmos pouch, placing the carcass within.

Just as he was about to leave the Sky Martial Realm, he realised the presence of a woman with outstandingly charming good looks enough to make anyone go crazy over her. Was it not the great Enforcer Liu?

Liu Ling had rushed out to find her, but Liu Lan was actually here.

Her being here so quickly meant that Liu Lan had been watching the competition. Long Chen could tell that Liu Lan had seen his performance just now, which was why there was no seduction in her eyes, nor any contempt for him. She looked calm.

“So? Are you finding it difficult to restrain yourself after seeing my exceptionally good looks?”

Long Chen approached Liu Lan, speaking shamelessly as he glanced at her delicate body.

He had pretended to be an upright gentleman previously and been teased by Liu Lan in the past. This time, he finally had the chance to strike back.

Liu Lan did not get mad. Instead, she smiled and stalked towards the entrance of the Sky Martial Realm, speaking at the same time, “I knew you weren’t any gentleman from the start so I tried to make you reveal your true colours. Guess it didn’t work then, but you’re exposing yourself right now.”

Liu Lan had initially believed that Long Chen was definitely not a match for Feng Wutian. However, he had proven himself to her. Long Chen knew that this woman was probably quite surprised but was pretending to be calm, not showing her emotions.

However, there was no longer that feeling where she was threatening him. Long Chen knew that he had somewhat subdued this woman.

The two of them walked together, conversing like old friends.

“To be honest, I did underestimate you, but you can’t overestimate yourself either. I believe you’re more than aware of that when you saw Dongfang Tianyu just now.”

Long Chen was clear of how powerful Dongfang Tianyu was. The memory of having to lower his head in front of Dongfan Tianyu was deeply etched into his mind.

“By the way, based on your performance, I should give you a new rating for your potential.”

Liu Lan looked at Long Chen coquettishly, a half-smile on her face.

“How much?”

“Four stars.”

Long Chen nodded, “This isn’t even five stars? How many people are there in the Green Faction with five stars as their potential?”

Liu Lan smiled wryly, “Just one, but you don’t need to know who it is. Long Chen, you now have four stars as your potential. Initially, the Lingwu Family could have done something for you and taken care of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, but unfortunately, this idea was turned down by the chief elder. I now know the identity of the leader of the sect.”

Long Chen furrowed his brows deeply, “Who is he?”

Liu Lan could only shake her head, “I didn’t know before, since his identity is a secret. Most people wouldn’t know. By the way, do you know the Beast Spirit Hall in the Yuandi City?”

Was there a relationship between the leader of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and the Yuandi City? Long Chen had a bad feeling about this.

“Yuandi City is on about the same scale as Lingwu City.”

Liu Lan continued, “The most powerful person in the Beast Spirit Hall there is called the Yuan Emperor. The Yuan Emperor in this generation has a lot of sons, and the leader of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is one of the grandsons of the current Yuan Emperor!”

Chapter 117 – Profound Grade Beast Spirit

Upon hearing this news, Long Chen suddenly shuddered. He shot Liu Lan a disbelieving look, stuttering, “Are you for real? The leader of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is the grandson of the Yuan Emperor?”

Liu Lan shook her head, her peach-like face holding a rueful expression.

“There are many coincidences in this world. Yes, the leader of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is the grandson of the Yuan Emperor. Though the Yuan Emperor has over a hundred grandsons and this particular one isn’t favoured, it isn’t to our advantage to do anything to the Sacred Sect and make things difficult between us Lingwu City and Yuandi City, just for your sake...”

Liu Lan glanced at Long Chen.

“Long Chen, I’m sure you understand that Lingwu City and Yuandi City are two powerful organisations like water and fire. Both went through tumultuous journeys to achieve the peace we currently have. Any small matter might be a spark that blows up the situation.”

Liu Lan’s meaning was obvious.

If the Lingwu Family were to touch the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, this could result in a backlash from Yuandi City, which was a large cost. The Lingwu Family placed emphasis on their inner factions, so with Long Chen as he was right now,

he was not important enough for the family to do this for him.

This was the reality.

However, Long Chen had no expectations for the Lingwu Family. He pondered over this for a moment, a smile about his lips.

Long Chen's indifferent attitude caused Liu Lan to furrow her brows, "Hey, are you actually thinking of dealing with them yourself?"

"There's a huge grudge between me and the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. If I don't kill them, they'll definitely kill me. In such a situation, why would I not deal with them?"

Long Chen raised his head, eyes flickering as he watched Liu Lan's pale face.

Long Chen's gaze was full of resolution that could not be tamed, and Liu Lan, who was used to controlling others, felt slightly uncomfortable.

She breathed in deeply, exclaiming, "Long Chen, when the time comes, don't blame me for not warning you. If the Yuan Emperor does not pursue the matter, it's your luck, but if he does, we will send you to him the moment we can."

"You don't have to tell me that. I know."

Long Chen pursed his lips, indifferent.

He had always been fearless in whatever he did. This was his style, but being fearless did not mean he was stupid.

“Besides, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect has a thousand followers, eight great protectors and five sect elders. These five sect elders are at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, and the leader himself is an expert at the Earth Dan Realm. With your current strength, you might be matchless against anyone in the Human Dan Realm, but you’re definitely going to die against anyone of the Earth Dan Realm!”

Seeing Long Chen seemingly unafraid to die, Liu Lan could only warn him once more. If this was in the past, she wouldn’t even have bothered to say this, but Long Chen had now displayed a formidable potential. In the green faction, there were less than ten people who could be rated as four stars. Even Liu Lan herself was rated at four stars.

“Is the Earth Dan Realm really so strong?”

Long Chen was slightly surprised. In his opinion, since he could defeat Feng Wutian who was immeasurably close to the Earth Dan Realm, that should mean he was able to deal with someone of the Earth Dan Realm.

“Do you know why the Deity Dan Realm is separated into the Human, Earth and Heaven Dan? That is because there’s an immense disparity between the beginning, middle and later parts in the Deity Dan Realm, which are each separated into three portions. (*tl note: entrance into x Dan Realm, initial mastery stage, perfect mastery stage) There’s a large divide between the Human and Earth Dan Realm, and yet another between the Earth and Heaven Dan Realm. Your current strength isn’t enough against someone at the Earth Dan Realm.”

Long Chen was unsettled by Liu Lan's narration.

However, this did not mean he was afraid. It simply meant he felt more stressed.

"The matter with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect has been dragging on for too long. With the Sky Martial Realm Competition over, I need to deal with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect as soon as possible so that I can be free from this.

While thinking this, Long Chen followed Liu Lan back to the Green Sun Hall.

Seeing this teenager so silent and still fearless, Liu Lan shook her head, "This kid is a really good seedling, but he's much too arrogant and petty. It might cause some trouble for the family..."

With the alluring Liu Lan walking with Long Chen, it was obvious that passers-by would stare.

In the outer factions, Liu Lan had an immense reputation, while Long Chen's name was being spread from this day on. It couldn't be helped that others would have fantasies while seeing these two people together.

Soon enough, Long Chen returned to the Green Sun Hall with Liu Lan. There was the same number of people in there as when Long Chen had left from this place, though there was no one of the younger generation there except for Long Chen.

Liu Yuan and the others sighed ruefully while looking at Long Chen. When he had left, none of them had taken notice of this kid. They had mostly remembered the laughable situation where Long Chen had not turned up for the match he had agreed to.

However, news of what had transpired in the Sky Martial Realm had now spread within the Green Faction. Liu Yuan and the others even knew of the tragedy regarding the three cultivators of the Green Piercing Hall, who were at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm.

“Long Chen, is it? Come here, take a seat.”

Though Long Chen had wounded Feng Wutian, it was an easy task for Feng Wutian to be treated given the resources the Green Sun Hall had at their disposal.

With Long Chen and Feng Wutian around, they would definitely be able to support geniuses in the Green Sun Hall in a few years, like what Liu Lan was doing. Their reputations would also rise in the Green Faction.

Liu Yuan watched Long Chen, finding him extremely pleasing to the eye.

What particularly stood out was Long Chen’s age. He was three years younger than Feng Wutian, and he could be moulded better than Feng Wutian.

Long Chen was already snickering in his mind as he glanced at this old guy. However, he was intelligent and obediently sat down, gleefully looking at Liu Yuan. With that expression of flattery, it was almost surprising that he did not call and recognise this man as his father.

“Youngster Long Chen greets the Chief Elder!”

Liu Yuan had initially thought that Long Chen was slightly arrogant, but he seemed to be quite humble now. Liu Yuan’s smile widened, “You’re not too bad. To be honest, I did underestimate you in the past. Though you did not obtain the Zenith Crystal Sword in the Sky Martial Realm Competition, you still helped me regain some reputation.”

“After coming to the Lingwu Family, uh, Sister Liu really helped me a lot. It’s my duty to contribute to the family...”

Long Chen was very thick-skinned, not even blushing while he spoke.

At the words ‘Sister Liu’, Liu Lan’s facial muscles twitched. When they had returned, Long Chen was all indifferent, but at the sight of Liu Yuan, his expression had completely changed.

Liu Yuan had only met Long Chen once. Long Chen had had nothing to say then, and Liu Yuan had automatically assumed that he was an introverted, cowardly disciple. His opinion had now changed, and he realised he had underestimated Long Chen. Long Chen respected his elders, was neither servile nor overbearing, and was the picture of an obedient child.

Liu Yuan now thought very highly of Long Chen, but Long Chen thought nothing of it. Even knowing his potential, Liu Yuan had not decided to aid him in the matter with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, implying he wasn’t so easily won over.

“Long Chen, I actually want to give you a reward.”

After discussing some issues, Liu Yuan suddenly stroked his beard and beamed at Long Chen.

“Many thanks, Chief Elder!”

Who wouldn't want rewards? Long Chen didn't know what it was yet, and simply prepared to accept it.

“I was planning to give you an intermediate Profound grade battle technique, but I've changed my mind.”

While he said this, the four elders and five enforcers were shocked. Liu Yuan had already decided on the reward for Long Chen beforehand but had suddenly changed his mind. This could only mean Liu Yuan loved Long Chen's likeable display.

“I wonder what Chief Elder plans to give me?” Long Chen anticipated.

If it was a profound grade battle technique, Long Chen already had Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, and no longer had a need for another.

Liu Yuan gave him a once over, “The first beast spirit you used at the dragon vein realm was the Blood Lizard at the fifth level of the huang grade. After entering the Deity Dan Realm, I doubt you've found any profound grade beast spirits. Coincidentally, I have one here, but it's much too precious for you. I can't give it to you just like this, so you'll still need to fulfil some conditions to get it.”

Long Chen was stunned, before remembering that he was a beast cultivator in everyone else's eyes.

In actuality, he didn't need beast spirits. The beast spirit from before was used to exchange for contribution points.

Liu Yuan's next words were what truly stunned him.

"This is the beast spirit of a level 6 demonic beast at the profound grade-the Enchanting Purple Dragon. It's the most powerful existence of all level 6 demonic beasts at the profound grade. In the Daybreak Merchants Union, this beast spirit can be sold for a hundred thousand deity jades!"

The words "ten thousand deity jades" caused Long Chen to find it hard to breathe. He was used to a life of poverty, and when he was at his wealthiest, there were at most a hundred deity jades in his pocket. How many things could be bought with a hundred thousand deity jades...

"Even in our Lingwu Family, you can't even dream of obtaining this beast spirit without ten thousand contribution points, but you performed so well this time. Besides, this beast spirit is my own, so I just need five hundred contribution points from you in exchange for it. This is a test for you!"

Liu Yuan watched Long Chen sternly, "You haven't done anything for the Green Sun Hall. If I were to just give this to you, others might gossip, so you'll need to work hard for it!"

At these words, Liu Yuan swept his gaze over the other elders and enforcers,

his meaning obvious. The people who might gossip would be them. When Liu Yuan had mentioned the beast spirit of the Enchanted Purple Dragon, a few of them looked uncomfortable.

Liu Lan looked at Liu Yuan, “Father is really throwing everything into this. He’s even willing to give up the beast spirit of a demonic beast at the sixth level of the profound grade. Even I would find it difficult to deal with that Enchanted Purple Dragon.”

She turned to Long Chen and thought, “The Enchanted Purple Dragon really does suit that kid. The only problem is that he’s planning to go to his death at the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. Where would he get the chance to get five hundred contribution points? Is it even that easy to get five hundred contribution points?”

Meanwhile, Long Chen’s thoughts revolved around how to obtain this beast spirit, and then sell it to get a hundred thousand deity jades...

Chapter 118 – Inner Faction Selection!

After explaining about the Enchanted Purple Dragon, Liu Yuan laughed as he watched the look of excitement on Long Chen's Face. He'd assumed that Long Chen was very passionate about this beast spirit and felt reassured.

Long Chen was an unexpected, pleasant surprise to him, and it had been far too long since he had felt so joyful.

He was also very pleased with his daughter. Liu Yuan knew that Liu Lan, who surely had pressured Long Chen all this while, had had a large role in Long Chen achieving the level he was currently at.

"Lan'er has already spoken to him about the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, so I don't have to mention it anymore. I need to talk to him about that other matter though."

Liu Lan spoke, "Long Chen, do you know about the upcoming Inner Faction Selection?"

Inner Faction Selection?

Long Chen had heard Gan Lin saying that the inner faction would take in outstanding disciples from the outer faction to groom. However, he had mentioned that Long Chen needed to at least be at the Earth Dan Realm.

“Is he hinting that I can take part in the selection?”

“Yes. Now, the various outer factions have already elected their members. I have the right to nominate someone, so I’ll pass on the information about you in these few days. As long as you pass the review, you’ll have the chance to participate in the inner faction selection!”

Long Chen suddenly felt that he had performed too well in front of Liu Yuan. Seeing this old geezer treating him so well, Long Chen quickly expressed his thanks.

“I, Long Chen, will definitely do all I can to repay Chief Elder!”

“Hehe...”

Liu Yuan stroked his long beard. He had previously underestimated Long Chen and even reprimanded him. His attitude had now undergone a 180-degree change, treating Long Chen so well that he himself was a little embarrassed.

“But don’t get too excited yet. You’re still at the Human Dan Realm and have yet to meet the requirements to enter the inner faction. You have to work harder, and you’ll only have a chance if you receive the beast spirit of the Enchanted Purple Dragon and increase your strength before the selection begins.”

“Is this selection process so stringent?” Long Chen tried to probe.

Liu Yuan nodded, “It is quite difficult. There will be ten to twenty people who pass the review, but only two will ultimately get in. The intention this time is for

you to make yourself known amongst the other factions. To actually enter the inner faction? I have a word for you. Difficult!”

Though he knew that he would definitely receive more supplies, be taken care of and, thus, improve at a quicker rate, Long Chen was in no hurry to become part of the inner faction. Seeing Liu Yuan get so agitated, it was probably rather difficult to get in.

Liu Yuan sighed ruefully, “The only young person in our faction with a five star rating for his potential is Chu Yunxi of the Green Emperor Hall. Chu Yunxi is currently eighteen years old and is already at the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm. He’s already been chosen to enter the selection process.”

At the very mention of Chu Yunxi, Liu Yuan became excited, but he soon turned silent after noticing Liu Lan glaring at him.

“Chu Yunxi? Eighteen? The initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm?”

Long Chen held his tongue. Only now did he realise that whether it was Huang Feiyang or Feng Wutian, they were nothing much compared to others. Chu Yunxi was a true genius, and Long Chen now realised how small his world was.

After defeating Feng Wutian, he had assumed that this meant he had joined the rank of geniuses. However, he realised he still had ways to go.

“There’s still a long way to go...”

Liu Yuan spoke, “That’s it for today. Long Chen, you were in the Sky Martial Realm Competition, so you should be a little tired. You may return first.”

Long Chen nodded and bade farewell to everyone before turning. They watched his back as he left, finding it tall and straight, and sighed.

“Lan’er, come with me.”

Liu Yuan exclaimed, left the hall and entered a garden at the back. He turned around and told Liu Lan, “When you were in the Sky Martial Realm, the chief elder of Green Emperor Hall, Chu Fengqing looked for me. He hinted at your marriage.”

Alarmed, Liu Lan replied, “Father, did you agree to it?”

“How could I agree without your approval? But Lan’er, he said that he would personally bring Chu Yunxi here in twenty days and propose your marriage. I didn’t say no then, so...”

“So in order not to destroy the relationship between our two families, I have to agree to his proposal, right?”

Liu Lan was desolate after having thought it through.

Liu Yuan’s heart ached at seeing his daughter like this, “Lan’er, don’t think too much of it. Chu Yunxi is an exceptional genius, and it’s very likely he’ll enter the inner faction this time. He has a very great future ahead, and I’d be reassured if you be with him.”

“Father...”

Liu Lan raised her head and could only say, “You don’t understand. He’s too overbearing and arrogant. No matter how much of a genius he is, I can’t accept him.”

.....

Long Chen left the Green Sun Hall and walked towards the Green Willow Residence alone. Along the way, those who saw him halted their footsteps, their gazes curious and respectful towards him.

News of Long Chen’s display in the Sky Martial Realm had spread.

“Stop right there!”

A shout sounded, and he realised there was a cute little beauty behind him-Liu Ling.

Her eyes were still a little red, and she must have been crying for Feng Wutian. Long Chen couldn’t help but find it hilarious. Feng Wutian had been the one who wanted to fight against Long Chen, but had ultimately been injured by him. Nobody could be blamed for this.

“Oh, you cried so much for your lover? How touching, the tears are almost streaming all over my face.”

Liu Ling had seen this despicable person by chance and had called out to him in her anger. To her surprise, she had been teased by him instead. If not for

remembering that he had saved her, she would definitely have gone forward to fight him.

“Long Chen, you’re really a large jerk inside and outside!”

Uncaring of her image, Liu Ling gnashed her teeth while pointing at him.

Long Chen seemed to be indifferent to her insults, “Huh? What did you want from me?”

Liu Ling really had the urge to go up to him and rip off his face.

“Kid, I called you to tell you not to be too happy about defeating Brother Wutian when he got possessed. That’s nothing much. He’s already awake!”

“Oh? He’s awake?”

“Yes! Are you afraid yet? In addition, he profited from this incident and is about to enter the Earth Dan Realm, so just wait till he teaches you a lesson!”

“Again about the Earth Dan Realm?”

Feng Wutian had been beaten up so badly by him, and his reputation had thus fallen. Now that he was awake, he was sure to look Long Chen up. Long Chen was currently in terrible shape worrying about the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, and now with a conscious Feng Wutian... His brows furrowed.

“Ha, you’re scared, aren’t you? What a coward. You only dare attack Brother Wutian when he’s not conscious!”

Having said this, Liu Ling snickered and left.

Long Chen shook his head and returned to his residence.

“Little Xi, I’ve been raising my power rather quickly, and it’s probably at the limit now. Can I still raise it further?”

“Of course.”

Lingxi could finally come out from the sword and stretch her body, rejoicing as she spun around the room and flew around. Only after that did she fly to Long Chen and wrinkled her nose cutely, “Your current strength is merely rated to be at the bottommost level at the Dragon Sacrificial Continent. Though you’re still a little slow in cultivation, you’re still much stronger than others.”

“How much stronger am I?”

“Don’t worry about it. There’s no issue if you want to increase your strength quickly.”

Lingxi had come from a good family and had much more knowledge than the people around Long Chen. Long Chen trusted her words wholeheartedly.

“Alright, I’ll just work hard and get rid of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect that’s been a thorn in my side. Only then will I plan how I’m going to progress.”

“Yeah!”

Lingxi nodded and then extended her hand, sneakily looking at Long Chen, “I want it!”

“What do you want?” Long Chen was alarmed.

“Food!”

Seeing Long Chen not getting the message, Lingxi made threatening gestures as she seethed at Long Chen.

“Oh.”

Long Chen could only answer, “I’ll refine all those beast spirits and demonic cores, and then go to the Treasure Exchange Pavilion and find you something.”

“That’s better.”

Lingxi smiled in satisfaction, her eyes narrowing into little bent moons. It was very charming.

Long Chen had a wry smile, “You used up a lot of energy when you helped me get those Thunder Flame Crystals. I was planning to help you get some stuff after I got out from the Sky Martial Realm, so it’s probably time to do so.”

“Thunder Flame Crystals?”

At the mention of this, Lingxi was in high spirits, “Right, now that you’re at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, your real Qi has probably increased by about ten times. You should be able to suppress even more Thunder Flame Crystals.”

“Does that mean I can absorb more Thunder Flame Crystals?”

Long Chen’s voice exhibited his excitement.

“Of course! If you don’t believe me, you can give it a try.”

Long Chen obviously believed everything Lingxi said, but he was not in any hurry now.

He went to the basement where he usually cultivated and tidied up his harvest from the competition.

“I have six profound grade level 2 demonic cores and beast spirits, but these aren’t that valuable. The most valuable ones are those of the Scarlet Flaming Suan Beast and the Heart Corrosive demonic beast.”

“How much can they be exchanged for? Lingxi was starry-eyed.

“With the two things from the Scarlet Flaming Suan Beast, it can fetch about 20 contribution points, while the beast spirit and demonic core of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast can fetch over 200 contribution points.”

“How much is that?” Lingxi couldn’t be bothered to calculate and asked.

“That’s about two thousand deity jades.”

Long Chen suddenly recalled what Liu Yuan had said regarding the five hundred contribution points. That level 6 beast spirit at the profound grade was a hundred times more valuable than one at level 4, but he only needed five hundred contribution points to get it. That was practically a gift to Long Chen.

“In other words, to get that beast spirit and exchange it for a hundred thousand deity jades, I need to kill countless level 4 profound grade beasts who are practically experts at the Earth Dan Realm?”

Long Chen was shocked after calculating it this way. He’d assumed that it was easy to get 500 contribution points, but now that he actually thought about it, it was very difficult.

“The Heart Corrosive demonic beast appeared in the Human Dan region and is probably the weakest of level 4 profound grade beasts. That’s how we were able to kill it.”

Hearing Long Chen mention a hundred thousand deity jades, Lingxi reminded him, “Stop dreaming. Where are you going to exchange the beast spirit for a hundred thousand deity jades from? If you go to the Treasure Exchange Pavilion, you’ll definitely anger that geezer to death.”

Only then did Long Chen realise that the beast spirit was a tricky matter. If someone gave it to Long Chen and saw that he did not refine it, he would

definitely be suspicious. When that happened, Long Chen would not know how to explain this.

“Whatever. I won’t think about it now. I’ll first refine the beast spirit of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast and then we’ll go to the Treasure Exchange Pavilion.”

Chapter 119 – Bad News

Long Chen arrived at the Treasure Exchange Pavilion, no longer as silent as he had been the previous time. All the members of the Green Faction had been especially attentive to the Sky Martial Realm Competition this time around and therefore knew of him.

However, Long Chen was still unfamiliar with the crowd and hence, nobody took the initiative to greet him. The mutters and discussion around him was to be expected though.

“He could even defeat Feng Wutian who had used the Fire Bath of the Vermillion Bird. He’s incredibly young as well. Long Chen is truly astonishing.”

“Indeed. Though he’s a little young and inexperienced, with some training and time, he’s sure to play an important role in the Green Sun Hall.”

“I heard the chief elder of Green Sun Hall, Liu Yuan, has already submitted his name for the inner faction selection. Though it’s impossible for him to pass, to even have the qualifications to be nominated means he has a rating of at least four stars.”

“But of course. The reason why Long Chen didn’t get the Zenith Crystal Sword is because of Dongfang...”

“Let’s not talk about the inner faction!”

Long Chen passed by these two middle-aged men. When one of them

mentioned the Zenith Crystal Sword, the other immediately stopped him.

Long Chen knew what they were implying. From their point of view, the fight over the Zenith Crystal Sword should have been between Long Chen and Chu Yunyao. The appearance of someone of the inner faction had broken the rules set by the outer factions. However, everyone could only complain about this, since the main body of the Lingwu Family was the inner faction.

“Is the inner faction so influential? If I don’t enter the inner faction, I’d probably be at the bottom for my entire life.”

Long Chen shivered at the thought.

Soon enough, he reached the Treasure Exchange Pavilion where he could exchange beast spirits and demonic cores. There was a wall here and a small, sealed channel the size of a plate. Items were presented, and Long Chen was unable to see who was at the other side.

“Place your demonic cores and beast spirits here. Oh, and your identification jade plate too.”

A low voice resounded from the other side of the wall.

Long Chen did not waste time and placed everything on it there. A pale arm then reached out, collecting everything.

Upon seizing the beast spirit and demonic core from the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, the person paused and suddenly asked, “Aren’t you going to refine this level 4 profound grade beast spirit?”

Long Chen now knew that even people of the Treasure Exchange Pavilion knew of him.

Long Chen was definitely a beast cultivator in everyone's eyes. He was at the Deity Dan Realm and ought to have refined beast spirits, yet had not done so.

Others had thought that he had not found a suitable beast spirit, but upon finding out he had gained that of the Heart Corrosive demonic spirit, they all assumed Long Chen would refine it.

"I'm not in a hurry to do that."

"Oh..."

That person answered with an 'oh' but did not say more. However, from that tone of his, Long Chen could tell that that person felt that he was not satisfied with even the beast spirit of a level 4 profound grade being, and must be extremely arrogant.

"Here's your identification jade plate. You will gain 250 contribution points in this exchange."

It was more than he had expected. Long Chen was in a great mood and thanked that person, before arriving at the area where the Spirit Recovery Fruits were. There, a Spirit Recovery Fruit could be seen put on display.

"I want this Spirit Recovery Fruit."

Long Chen told the staff in charge of this area, who was an elegant woman.

When Long Chen had come the previous time, this woman had seen him once. She did not remember much about him other than that he needed Spirit Recovery Fruits.

This time, Long Chen had a reputation and her attitude became much better. She laughed sweetly, "That's 9 contribution points. You did mention you needed Spirit Recovery Fruits the last time."

Noticing this beautiful woman and her engaging manners, his nature as an arrogant son of a great background revealed itself as he teased, "I did come here to buy Spirit Recovery Fruits, but I'm also here to visit you."

"How talkative. You're asking for a beating."

She grinned, covering her mouth.

Long Chen knew when to stop and enquired, "Sister, may I know if there are other spirit medicines in the Treasure Exchange Pavilion that can improve one's spirit?"

She thought for a moment, "If you're talking about Spirit Recovery Fruits, there aren't that many. Headquarters will only order to replenish their supply of spirit medicine, but not increase the numbers. But I do seem to recall there being a Spirit Grass on the second level in the Treasure Exchange Pavilion. It's a profound middle grade spirit medicine."

“Spirit Grass?”

Lingxi became quite emotional as she whispered in Long Chen’s ear, “Hey, the Spirit Grass is a lot more potent than the Spirit Recovery Fruit. It’s almost a profound high grade spirit medicine. A Spirit Grass is comparable to a hundred Spirit Recovery Fruits. If I have a Spirit Grass, I’ll be able to take on someone at the Earth Dan Realm.”

Upon hearing Lingxi mention she did need it, Long Chen asked, “Sister, may I know how much this Spirit Grass costs?”

The woman shook her head after hearing this question, “Let’s not talk about the price just yet. Only cultivators at the Earth Dan Realm are allowed to go up to the second floor.”

“Huh?”

Long Chen paled. The rigid and strict hierarchy in the Lingwu Family was really making him feel quite depressed.

“But if you really need it, on account of you calling me ‘sister’, I might be able to do something about this.”

“Then thank you so much, Sister!” Long Chen was excited.

“Don’t get too excited.”

She knitted her brows, “Spirit Grass is a profound middle grade medicine, and

is considered to be quite precious. It is very helpful in increasing one's comprehension, and without 300 contribution points, it's impossible to obtain it."

Upon hearing the number 300, Long Chen was about to keel over.

"I only have around 240 contributions now. To get 300, I'll need to enter the Sky Martial Realm again, but Liu Yuan, that old geezer wants me to give him 500 contribution points. What should I do?"

Long Chen furrowed his brows.

"If you aren't in urgent need of it, you can come purchase it after you have sufficient contribution points."

Long Chen nodded and thanked her before bidding her farewell, heading in the direction of the Green Willow Residence.

"Oh well. I'm not going to care about that old geezer. It'll be hard to sell that level six profound grade beast spirit anyway, so I might as well make sure Lingxi gets stronger and keep her safe. My opponents are going to be too strong, and if she tries to show off, she might even lose her life just like this."

He returned to the residence and got Lingxi to refine the Spirit Recovery Fruit, and then produced a Thunder Flame Crystal.

"The Thunder Flame Crystals really helped me a lot in this battle. I still have 38. What will happen if I fuse with all of them? If a rank 1 Thunder Flame Physique is equivalent to a profound middle grade body tempering battle technique, how

about a rank 2 Thunder Flame Physique?”

Since his real Qi had expanded by much, Long Chen tried to fuse with more Thunder Flame Crystals. Unexpectedly, the eleventh was much easier than it had been when he had fused with the tenth.

With the suppression from his Qi, Long Chen spent about an hour in pain but no real danger, and fused with the eleventh Thunder Flame Crystal.

“Next is the twelfth...”

While fusing with the crystals, Long Chen found himself unable to tell the passing of time, and after goodness knew how long, he had already fused with the fifteenth crystal.

Here onwards, Long Chen found it difficult. He had no choice but to undergo Dragon Soul Transformation.

“After I fuse with these Thunder Flame Crystals, I’ll enter the Sky Martial Realm and then help Lingxi get the Spirit Grass. I’ll then leave the Lingwu Family and look for the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.”

Long Chen had a clear goal.

However, while he was preparing to fuse with the sixteenth Thunder Flame Crystal, there was an urgent rapping on his door. Long Chen opened it and was met with the sight of an anxious Gan Lin.

Gan Lin had always given Long Chen the impression that he was not easily rattled. However, with that anxious look on his face, Long Chen was alarmed and asked, “Senior Brother Gan Lin, what happened?”

Gan Lin quickly answered, “Long Chen, there’s someone from your family looking for you. Quick, go to the Martial Arts Hall.”

“Family?”

Long Chen was surprised. That would mean the people of the Yang family. For people of that family to come all the way to the Lingwu Family, this meant that something terrible had happened!

Long Chen had a bad feeling about this and rushed towards the Martial Arts Hall. In moments, he saw the man who was beginning to look old-Yang Yuntian.

“Second Uncle, what happened?”

Yang Yuntian grieved as he looked at Long Chen, “Chen’er, Lingqing has been taken by people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect!”

Chapter 120 – A Bolt From the Blue

“What?!”

Long Chen was stunned. His breath accelerated and became rough, and his eyes gradually became bloodshot.

“Chen’er, don’t get so agitated yet. Wait for me to tell you everything!”

Seeing Long Chen like this, Yang Yuntian knew that he had to calm Long Chen down despite his own anxiety.

Long Chen and Yang Lingqing were akin to real siblings. Now that Yang Lingqing was in trouble, how could he stay calm?

He was just one step away from rushing to the sect.

Long Chen suppressed the killing intent in his heart, berating himself for this. He Chen knew that he had to be cool-headed about this.

However, as he recalled all the memories he had with Yang Lingqing and then the bastards of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, Long Chen clenched his fists tightly.

“Is it for the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony?”

Blood rushed forth in Long Chen's eyes.

Seeing that Long Chen had somewhat calmed down, Yang Yuntian felt more at ease. A deep sorrow appeared in his gaze, "It's all because of my uselessness as a father. I couldn't even protect my own daughter..."

Yang Yuntian had already lost a son. At the thought that he might also lose his daughter, his mind went blank.

"Second Uncle, don't blame yourself too much. Tell me exactly what happened."

Long Chen bit his lower lip and exclaimed.

"Chen'er, have you participated in the killings of the two great proctors in Crimson Blood Sacred Sect?"

Yang Yuntian raised his head and asked.

Long Chen was startled as he recalled Proctor Qin and Proctor Shi and was puzzled, "How do you know about this?"

Yang Yuntian shook his head, "It's what that bastard said. Two proctors of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect died at Yanluo town and he found that it was the doing of people of the Lingwu Family. Of the three names he had, yours was included in it. He then investigated your background and found out that you were part of the Yang family. For revenge, one of the proctors came to Poplar Town and found out that Xue Yuanzi had died by your hands, so he attacked us!"

Long Chen did not expect that the fact that he had killed Xue Yuanzi would be exposed. Of the eight proctors in the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, the death of three had some relation to Long Chen. It was no wonder that they had made their move against him.

Long Chen only blamed himself more after hearing this. All he wanted was to rush to the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, but he knew that it was not yet time to do so.

“Why did he want to kidnap Lingqing?”

Yang Yuntian answered in a pained voice, “My father had originally attained the Deity Dan Realm by using Soul Diffusion Fruits, and could somewhat match up to that person. However, in that battle, Lingqing was injured by mistake. Upon seeing the colour of Lingqing’s blood, which held traces of green, he exclaimed that Lingqing had a rare body that was seen only once in every hundred years-the Abstruse Shadow Body and took her away. Your grandfather only just entered the Deity Dan Realm and couldn’t do much about it...”

“The Abstruse Shadow Body?!”

Upon hearing these three words, Gan Lin jolted.

Long Chen immediately asked, “That person returned to the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, right?”

Yang Yuntian nodded, paling, “Based on what that person said, Lingqing’s Abstruse Shadow Body is very important in some Blood Sacrificial Ceremony. My

father has been in the South Ling City and found out that this ceremony will take place in two days!”

This was basically a large bolt from the blue for Long Chen!

“Two days’ time? The Blood Sacrificial Ceremony...”

Fury and hatred rushed up in Long Chen’s heart. With an icy glare, his fists were clenched and he gritted his teeth, “If anything happens to Lingqing... Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, I want everyone in your sect to be buried with her!”

Seeing that ruthless aura from Long Chen, Yang Yuntian knew this was no good and hurriedly spoke, “Chen’er, I’m not here to get you to seek your death in the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. You are a member of the Lingwu Family, so I was wondering if it was possible to borrow the strength of the Lingwu Family.”

The sect leader was the grandson of the Yuan Emperor. Long Chen wasn’t even a member of the inner faction of the Lingwu Family. Who would take this risk to help him?

Liu Lan, much less Liu Yuan would not do so!

“Second Uncle, you don’t have to say more. Get Grandfather to come and stay here. I’ll go to the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect right now. I promise you that I’ll bring Lingqing back safe and sound in a day!”

Long Chen’s voice was icy but full of resolution.

“Abstruse Shadow Body... The Blood Sacrificial Ceremony of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect requires the blood of a young girl. If Lingqing has this Abstruse Shadow Body, her blood will be drained...”

If this were to happen, Long Chen would literally go crazy!

Even now, he found it difficult to control the fury he was feeling.

Yang Yuntian knew that Long Chen had always been reckless and impulsive. He nervously looked at Long Chen and sternly said, “Chen’er, I’m not letting you go and put your life on the line! You have a bright future ahead and you’ve entered the Lingwu Family. It’s the time for you to rapidly develop and advance. I don’t want you to harm yourself for Lingqing’s sake. The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is practically hell there. Is that really a place for a young man like you to go to?”

In Yang Yuntian’s eyes, Long Chen had not even reached the Human Dan Realm, while the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect was filled with experts at the Earth Dan Realm.

“Long Chen, listen to me. Go and ask a favour of your Lingwu Family, and we might even have a chance!”

At this point, Liu Lan had just walked in through the door, looking stern. Gan Lin immediately bowed, “Lord Enforcer!”

Upon hearing the words ‘lord enforcer’, Yang Yuntian was momentarily startled.

He knew that this Lord Enforcer was the owner of this large Green Willow

Residence, and must be at or above the Earth Dan Realm. He immediately suppressed the excitement in his heart and respectfully said, "Commoner Yang Yuntian greets the Lord Enforcer!"

Liu Lan merely nodded at him and looked towards Long Chen. At this point, his gaze was filled with immense viciousness.

Seeing the rudeness apparent in his gaze, Yang Yuntian was shocked and went forward to warn him, but unexpectedly, Long Chen's voice was cold as he spoke, "Enforcer Liu, didn't you say you would pay attention to the actions of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and report their every move to me?"

Even an outsider like Yang Yuntian could hear the dissatisfaction in Long Chen's tone. He immediately pulled at Long Chen, looking apologetic, "Lord Enforcer, my nephew is young and insensible. Please don't fault him for this!"

Liu Lan looked indifferent and did not even spare Yang Yuntian a glance. Instead, she stared straight at Long Chen. Liu Lan herself was slightly surprised at the turn of events.

She then answered, "It's just a proctor from Crimson Blood Sacred Sect going to Poplar Town. I've been busy with the Sky Martial Realm these past few days and haven't paid much attention to this. Besides, Long Chen, didn't I tell you to give up on dealing with the sect? Are you unaware that this could be fatal for you? If you don't handle this properly, your entire Yang family might die without a proper burial!"

Long Chen was not the least bit scared and sneered, "Fine, I won't blame you. I just want to ask you this. Now that my sister has been taken, I want to take on the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. Will you or will you not help?"

Long Chen's tone was plain disrespectful.

From Yang Yuntian's understanding, Long Chen would be made quick work of by Enforcer Liu after saying something like this. Unexpectedly enough, Enforcer Liu seemed to think highly of Long Chen...?

Yang Yuntian watched the two oppose each other, neither of them backing down. A sudden question flashed in his mind. Just how powerful was Long Chen?

Had he, in just one month, entered the Human Dan Realm?

Recalling that Long Chen had a Soul Diffusion Fruit, Yang Yuntian felt that this was a real possibility.

Liu Lan hesitated and shook her head. "Even my father wouldn't agree to the Green Sun Hall taking such a huge risk on your behalf for your personal matters. Besides, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is not a power you can fight against. I won't allow you to go there!"

"What right do you have to stop me?"

Upon hearing her words, Long Chen had mostly given up on the Lingwu Family. He was laughing sarcastically inside while she talked about not allowing him to go.

"You-!"

Despite her staunch resolve, she was truly angry after being rebutted by Long Chen like this. Her curvy, delicate body trembled, and her eyes were fierce.

Yang Yuntian knew this was a bad situation. Long Chen had now angered Enforcer Liu, and Long Chen might just die here even before getting to the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect or saving Yang Lingqing.

He gestured to Long Chen quickly and tried to appease Enforcer Liu, “Lord Enforcer, Chen’er isn’t sensible and doesn’t think things through before speaking. Please don’t hold it against him. We’ll deal with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect ourselves and take our leave first, alright?”

Yang Yuntian’s words made Long Chen displeased and he pulled Yang Yuntian behind him, “You don’t have to flatter her. How amazing or capable is she to enjoy such treatment?”

Glaring at Enforcer Liu and ignoring Yang Yuntian’s shock, Long Chen answered in a low voice, “My precious younger sister is now in the hands of someone else, and yet you want to keep me here. Let me ask you, how am I different from an animal if I don’t do anything at all? How are you different from an animal if you don’t do anything at all?”

“Long Chen, don’t go too far!”

At the word ‘animal’, Liu Lan was flushed red in her anger, but Long Chen’s words were not without logic. She could not refute it.

“How am I going too far?”

Long Chen sneered and then gestured to Yang Yuntian, “If the Lingwu Family will expel me if I save my sister, then I’m not going to stay in the Lingwu Family. Second Uncle, let’s go!”

Having said this, he detoured around Liu Lan who was glaring at him, and headed towards the door.

“Long Chen, if you die this time, don’t blame me for not warning you!”

“What does my life or death have to do with oh, Great Beauty Liu?”

Hearing these words, Yang Yuntian was bewildered...

“Just how powerful is Chen’er for him to be able to speak to the enforcer like this...”

Chapter 121 – To Be Punished by The Heavens

Yang Yuntian was still stunned at Long Chen's display. Even after leaving Lingwu City, he was in a daze while looking at the young man in front of him.

"Do you know where the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is?"

Long Chen turned back. After leaving the Lingwu City, he was no longer as agitated as before. However, all the murderous intent he had was all hidden inside him.

"Your grandfather knows. He's in the South Ling City, and I know where he is!"

"Then let's meet up with Grandfather first."

Long Chen did not raise any objections and made haste.

Yang Yuntian tried to catch up from behind, eyes shining while looking at Long Chen. While hastening the journey, he inquired in a low voice, "Chen'er, can you tell me how strong you are now?"

If not, whether it was Yang Yuntian or Yang Cangqiong, none of them would let Long Chen enter the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

"I'm currently at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, but I'm confident that nobody in the Human Dan Realm is my match. During the Sky Martial Realm Competition by the Lingwu Family, I defeated a cultivator who was one step away from entering the Earth Dan Realm."

Yang Yuntian's eyes widened, unable to believe what he had just heard, "Are you serious? It's only been a month since you left..."

Long Chen nodded, "I'm still quite confident in handling this matter with the sect. I'm not stupid enough to just rush in recklessly."

"Let's decide on what to do after meeting your grandfather."

No matter how powerful Long Chen was, he was still a distance away from the Earth Dan Realm. Yang Yuntian did not dare think too much into this. Though Long Chen was their only hope for now, he wasn't sure that Yang Cangqiong

would allow Long Chen to make a move, since it was best that Long Chen continue to cultivate peacefully.

It was quite a distance between East Ling Region and South Ling Region. Long Chen and Yang Yuntian moved as quickly as they could and spent more than half a day before they arrived at the South Ling Region.

“Your grandfather stays in a small inn here.”

Compared to the East Ling Region, the South Ling Region was a more backward society. However, it was not something Poplar Town or even the Yuanyang City could compare to.

Soon enough, the two of them reached a simple and crude inn.

“The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is at the edges of the South Ling Region in Yuanling City. There is very little land there, so the sect is an independent power there.”

Compared to the Lingwu Family, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect was an unremarkable speck of dust, but this speck of dust was already a huge obstacle for Long Chen. Behind this obstacle was a more powerful backing.

“There’s a commotion in the inn!”

After reaching here, Long Chen continued to ask about the sect. All of a sudden, Lingxi, who had always been silent, suddenly spoke.

“Seems like your grandfather is about to get into a fight with someone at the Human Dan Realm.”

Long Chen was alarmed.

In one of the rooms in the inn, Yang Cangqiong was bewildered at the sight of a middle-aged man in crimson robes in front of him. This man was now sneering at Yang Cangqiong, “Here I was wondering who was asking around about the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. I never expected this from an old man like you who just entered the Deity Dan Realm. That’s pretty impressive of you, to be so active and come all the way from Poplar Town.”

Yang Cangqiong had been around for a long time and was naturally not scared off by his words. However, after realising he had been discovered, his hope

dissipated.

Now, with Yang Lingqing still in their hands, he, the most powerful person in the family, had been discovered by the opponent. Even if he could defeat this man and escaped, it was impossible for him to stay in this area.

The Blood Sacrificial Ceremony was going to be held after a day. By then, Yang Lingqing might lose her life.

He had just entered the Human Dan Realm and basically had little to no chance against such a powerful existence as the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

At this thought, he could only despair, though this did not show on his face.

“When it all comes down to it, I really do have to thank you for this. If not for you, I wouldn’t have discovered that Abstruse Shadow Body. I’m sure you know it as well, but the blood from the Abstruse Shadow Body is equal to the Yuanyin blood of thousands of young girls. The sect leader has given me a reward that even the five sect elders are jealous of!”

“You are creating a blood pool using young girls’ blood and cultivating within it. Aren’t you afraid of being struck by lightning and being punished by the heavens for this?”

“Heavens? What heaven? With power, we are the gods. We are the heavens!” The man exclaimed indifferently.

“It’s just like how I’m more powerful than you now, so the person being punished by the heavens will be you!”

Glaring at the man who was laughing maniacally, Yang Cangqiong felt powerless.

“Is Lingqing really going to suffer like this?”

At the thought of his beloved granddaughter dying like this, Yang Cangqiong’s heart squeezed. He would rather die on behalf of the graceful, intelligent Yang Lingqing.

“With one more Blood Sacrificial Ceremony, the might of our Crimson Blood Sacred Sect will rise once more. By then, we can take in more disciples and grow stronger. One day, we will reach the level of the Lingwu Family and Beast Spirit

Hall!”

“Dream on!”

Yang Cangqiong snickered at the man’s words. He had already thought up a plan to escape.

“Oh? If I take your old life right now, you’ll know whether I’m dreaming!”

Having said this, a powerful aura exploded and all the guests in the inn were startled. They were about to come upstairs and take a look, but the man’s cold voice sounded, “The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is handling some matters. All who are unrelated are to leave!”

People ran out of the inn one after another, looking flustered.

In a small area as the edge of Yuanling City, these people had gotten used to living under the fear of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

Yang Cangqiong was mournful, but he knew he was the backbone of the Yang Family. He could not topple over just like this.

“When we battled the previous time, I didn’t let you experience a profound grade battle technique. This time, I’ll let you see how formidable it is, you bumpkin!”

The man spoke, and Yang Cangqiong immediately paled. He could not beat this person, mostly because he had only just entered the Human Dan Realm and had no battle technique that could rival this man’s!

“If you want me to die, you need to pay a huge price!”

Yang Cangqiong’s eyes were now completely red and full of bloodlust. The man was startled, and immediately sneered, “An old fart like you is actually threatening me? You’re quite gutsy, but unfortunately, today is the day you die!”

Yang Cangqiong felt immense pressure on himself as real Qi exploded in the hands of the man in red robes, forming a phantom mark of a fist. This was a pressure that only belonged to a profound grade battle technique, and Yang Cangqiong was truly at a loss.

“Am I really going to die here?”

Recalling all that had happened in his life, he lamented that the older he became, the worse experiences he had to endure.

“Hopefully when Yuntian comes back, he’ll still be able to find my corpse and bury me in Poplar Town. But even if you want me to die, you shouldn’t even considering living on as well!”

Seeing him using a profound grade battle technique, Yang Cangqiong let out an enraged roar and began using the Seal of the High Profound Dragon.

These two powerful auras rapidly increased, and the two shouted loudly, darting towards each other.

A cold grin was about the lips of the man in red robes.

“Die! Shattered Jade Fist!”

“Seal of the High Profound Dragon!”

These two auras were on the verge of slamming into each other, and the Shattered Jade Fist that had already covered the Seal of the High Profound Dragon was about to claim Yang Cangqiong’s life. At this moment, the window was suddenly smashed through and a shadow situated itself in front of the man, extending its arm and grabbing the Shattered Jade Fist.

The man’s ferocious attack suddenly disappeared.

He was momentarily stunned and looked towards this new figure. Yang Cangqiong, on the other hand, withdrew his own attack after seeing that familiar figure while also shocked.

This young man had thoroughly stunned him. How could he not remember him?

However, Long Chen’s sudden appearance and his being able to stop the powerful profound grade battle technique with just a stretch of his arm, without even a change of expression, caused Yang Cangqiong to be thoroughly stupefied.

The look of surprise on Yang Cangqiong’s face was comparable to that on the red-robed man’s face.

The man in the red robes stared at Long Chen, appalled, and immediately kneeled, “M-My lord, may I know why you stopped my attack?”

“Why?”

Long Chen laughed, reaching out and patting his opponent’s cheeks. These pats were more like slaps with the sounds produced, but his opponent did not dare retaliate.

“You want to kill my grandfather, and you’re actually asking what this is about?”

Upon hearing Long Chen’s words, the man’s eyes widened and he was stunned, “Are you Long Chen, who entered the Lingwu Family? How are you so powerful?”

He was about to struggle free, but Long Chen held onto his arm and twisted. The man yelled, but that arm had already been twisted to a scary angle.

“I urge you not to move, or else I’ll break your other arm.”

Long Chen’s cold words made him give up. He understood the current situation and began to speak in a tearful voice, hoping to get Long Chen’s forgiveness.

“It’s not impossible for me to forgive you. As long as you answer me truthfully, I won’t kill you.”

Having said this, Long Chen turned back and looked at Yang Cangqiong, who was still in a daze, and spoke apologetically, “I’m sorry, grandfather. Chen’er has returned a little late...”

Yang Cangqiong came back to himself, “No, it’s not late at all. But Chen’er, is it really you?”

“How can it not be me?”

“How are you so strong?”

While asking this, Yang Cangqiong still could not believe his eyes. Long Chen had only entered the Lingwu Family a month ago. It was impossible for him to be able to deal with someone who had just entered the Human Dan Realm.

Yang Cangqiong had personally experienced the formidable strength of this man. He himself could do little about it, so how had Long Chen taken care of him so easily?

Yang Yuntian walked in at this moment, similarly astonished at the scene.

“Grandfather, if you have any questions, just ask Second Uncle. Let me interrogate this fellow!”

Chapter 122 – Crimson Tablet!

Yang Yuntian had heard of Long Chen's strength before but had never actually seen it for himself. Now, after seeing Long Chen easily taking care of the man in the red robes, he finally believed in Long Chen's skills.

"Father..."

Seeing the astonishment and excitement on this old man's face, Yang Yuntian felt the same way inside.

He silently stood by Grandfather Yang's side, watching how Long Chen was going to deal with this red robed man.

Grandfather Yang had a lot of questions, but he did not say anything. All he wanted to see was how powerful his grandson had gotten.

This was the territory of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. This red-robed man had caused a huge ruckus, and Long Chen knew that he could not stay for long. Hence, he had to finish this as soon as possible and obtain all the information he required.

The red-robed man was now under his control, and he had no way of escaping. He knew that Long Chen was part of the Lingwu Family, and his actions might cause a lot of trouble to the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, and that was what the man feared the most.

"I'm not going to beat around the bush with you. You are to answer whatever I ask you truthfully. If you lie, I'll break a limb of yours. How many limbs do you have, hmm?"

Long Chen stood before the red-robed man and asked coldly.

"I'll tell you, I'll tell you! Just ask."

Seeing that Long Chen was quite young yet his words and gaze was filled with viciousness, the man was distressed.

"Good."

Long Chen nodded in satisfaction. "The first question. When will the Blood

Sacrificial Ceremony be held?”

Long Chen’s main purpose here was to attend the ceremony. Hence, the red-robed man was not the least bit surprised at this question.

However, this information was not something only people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect were privy to, and he promptly answered.

“The Blood Sacrificial Ceremony will be held tomorrow!”

“At what time will it be?”

That was what Long Chen wanted to know.

Seeing Long Chen’s icy glare, the red-robed man quivered in fear. “Tomorrow at midnight, which is when there is the most Yin Qi. It is also the most appropriate time to hold the ceremony.”

Midnight? It looked like there wasn’t much time left.

Seeing Long Chen not answering immediately. The red-robed man tried asking miserably, “My lord, will you let me off if I tell you everything?”

“That depends on whether your answers can satisfy me. If I find that you hem and haw and try to cover up anything, you’ll die a pitiful death.”

Though Long Chen sounded calm, these words were extremely terrifying to the man.

Grandfather Yang and Yang Yuntian watched Long Chen, who was maturing day by day. They exchanged a glance and nodded.

“Looks like after Chen’er went to the Lingwu Family, both his strength and his personality have matured a lot.”

This helped them gain some confidence in Long Chen in wanting to save Yang Lingqing.

“He might actually succeed...”

Meanwhile, Long Chen asked the second question.

“In which part of your Crimson Blood Devil’s Castle will the ceremony be held?”

The Crimson Blood Devil's Castle was the base of operations of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

Recalling Long Chen saying that he would be let off as long as he answered honestly, the red-robed man saw the righteous air around Long Chen and concluded that he must be someone trustworthy. He honestly answered, "Our Crimson Blood Devil's Castle has an underground city, and the Crimson Blood Ceremony will be held there. The underground city is usually closed off, and only when it's time for the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony will followers be allowed to enter the city."

For the red-robed man, the questions that Long Chen asked could be easily answered by any follower of the sect. Hence, he was not afraid to be punished by the sect leader.

The underground city?

If it was still in Yuanling City, it was still possible to get there in time.

"One more question for you. You must give me an honest answer.

Long Chen looked at the red dot between the red-robed man's eyebrows. "What does your Crimson Blood Sacred Sect use to differentiate your followers?"

"You want to infiltrate the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect?" The red-robed man was appalled.

"Do you not want this arm of yours anymore?" Long Chen exclaimed coldly.

"I'll tell you!"

The red-robed man knew he should not waste more time and thought, "Even if this kid wants to enter the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, the sect leader and five sect elders will definitely take care of him. By telling him this, I'll be able to get rid of him!"

Having thought this through, he immediately answered, "The followers of our sect all have a vermillion mark between their eyebrows, known as the Crimson Mark. I see you have a red dot between your eyebrows, so you don't need the Crimson Mark to enter. We also have a Crimson Tablet used to identify

ourselves.”

“Crimson Tablet? Show me.”

The red-robed man produced two crimson tablets from his cosmos pouch, passing one to Long Chen. He took it and found there was a strange pattern on the front, while there was a name at the back-Proctor Zhoutai.

“Your name is Zhoutai?”

He quickly nodded and passed another tablet to Long Chen, “My lord, there are over a thousand followers of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. There are around a hundred people I have jurisdiction over. The owner of this tablet infuriated me and I’ve already killed him on the sly. Nobody knows about this. If you would like to enter the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, you can use his identity. Nobody will find out.”

After taking the tablet, he saw the words written at the back-Follower Huangtian.

Seeing Long Chen not saying anything, the man was anxious and spoke carefully, “My lord, I’ve told you everything that I need to. I’ve even given you a tablet and arranged for you to have an identity. I wonder if you are satisfied? I guarantee that as long as I get to leave this room, I’ll immediately leave Yuanling City and never return nor have any dealings with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect!”

“Is that so?”

Leylin laughed gently and kept the Crimson Tablet. Beaming at the red-robed man, he spoke, “Don’t be in such a hurry. I’ll let you go when the time comes, but I have one more question. Where are the young girls that the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect has been kidnapping during this period of time? Describe the area and the way there, and then you can leave.”

“My lord, this... I really do not know. In order to prevent the plan from falling through, our sect leader has been extremely careful about this. I’m afraid only he knows this information!”

After hearing the question, the man paled and answered anxiously.

“Do you mean you don’t want this arm anymore?” Long Chen’s expression darkened.

“No, I really don’t know! All I know is it’s somewhere in the underground city, but it’s so large. How would I know where it is?”

Seeing the unfriendly gaze in Long Chen’s eyes, he was now ill at ease.

Long Chen merely laughed coldly, acting without any warning. However, his goal was not the arm of the man. Rather, it was his skull. With a strike from his palm, Long Chen subdued the man and killed him.

Till his death, the red-robed man would never know why Long Chen had killed him.

Firstly, Long Chen had said that as long as he did not give the right answer, Long Chen would break his limbs, but did not say that he would take his life. Next, from the perspective of the red-robed man, a young rash fellow like Long Chen would usually honour his promises.

“Chen’er, why did you kill him?”

Grandfather Yang and Yang Yuntian were both shocked.

Long Chen kept the corpse of the red-robed man in his cosmos pouch and then cleaned up the area, concealing all traces. “Someone is coming in this direction. We can’t stay here for long. Grandfather, let’s find a safe place and then continue discussing our plans.”

Under Long Chen’s lead, the three of them arrived at a forest at the outskirts of Yuanling City. This was an area not too far away from the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, and was a place where they could easily take cover.

“Grandfather, Second Uncle, you’ve heard everything that I asked about. Stay here. I’ll go and grab a few people from the sect and ascertain the information we obtained is correct. Then, I’ll infiltrate the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace and save Lingqing!”

“No!” Yang Yuntian was agitated, “Chen’er, the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace is extremely dangerous. How can you go in alone? Lingqing is my daughter; let me accompany you!”

Long Chen shook his head, “Forget it, Second Uncle. With my current strength, I can definitely retreat even if I’m against the sect leader, but if you enter, you’ll only inconvenience me. I hope you can believe in me. I will do whatever I have to even if I might die from it!”

Yang Yuntian wanted to say more but was stopped by Grandfather Yang.

Grandfather Yang’s gaze was full of affection while he looked at Long Chen, “Chen’er, do as you wish. We can’t do much anyway, but you are the hope and future of our Yang family. Grandfather can only warn you to be more careful. Also, your life is the priority. Don’t give it up so easily. It’s not worth it.”

Long Chen nodded and left, his back disappearing into Yuanling City at a flying speed, leaving Grandfather Yang and Yang Yuntian glancing at each other in dismay.

“Father, do you think he will succeed?”

Grandfather Yang gave a long sigh, “I don’t know, but now, our Yang family can only resign ourselves to what fate has in store for us.”

.....

After tossing away the fourth corpse, Long Chen glanced in the direction of Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace.

“With the affirmation from these four regular followers, there shouldn’t be any issues with what the red-robed man said. However, I still don’t know where Lingqing is being held captive. Looks like I’ll have to enter the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace to know.”

Looking at the Crimson Tablet in his hands, Long Chen beamed.

“To save himself, this guy has even prepared an identity for me. That’s a very intelligent choice. One, that’ll give me a reason to let him off. Two, even if I don’t let him off, he believes that I’ll be dead anyway even if I successfully infiltrate the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.”

Long Chen had also asked the four followers about the original owner of his tablet, Huangtian, and found that there were few who were good friends within the sect. If he was careful enough not to bump into anyone that Huangtian was

close to, he would be able to enter Crimson Blood Sacred Sect successfully.

“Lingxi, your senses are very powerful. When the time comes, help me find her.”

“I know. Lingqing is also my sister, so if anything happens to her, I won’t let you off!” Lingxi was also very worried after finding out Yang Lingqing had gotten into trouble. The closer they got to Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace, the more keyed up she got.

“That’s good, but you have to promise me something.”

“What is it?”

“As you used a lot of your spiritual force to steal those Thunder Flame Crystals, there isn’t much left. That’s why you are not to do anything this time!”

Though Long Chen’s words were cold, they were filled with warmth and care, and Lingxi obediently nodded.

“Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, here I come...”

Long Chen advanced towards the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

Chapter 123 – Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace

The construction in front of him was several times larger than the Green Willow Residence. Though it was called the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace, it was extremely beautiful. There were multiple buildings and foliage everywhere. It was very much similar to the places where large families or elegant scholars resided.

Long Chen observed at the entrance for a long while. With Lingxi’s sensing abilities, he quickly found a way to enter the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace. It was very simple. All he needed to do was to show his Crimson Tablet and then report the name of the proctor he was under.

“Huangtian, under Proctor Zhoutai.”

The four guards at the door were at the peak of the ninth dragon vein. Though Long Chen was multiple times more powerful than them, he did not dare let down his guard.

Nodding, he took his Crimson Tablet from one of them and entered the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace.

“There are probably shifts for those guards at the door, so they don’t know Huangtian. However, there might be someone who knows him, so I have to be careful.”

Having this in mind, Long Chen strolled around the gigantic Crimson Blood Devil’s Sect. Of course, he tried his best to feign and keep with his identity as someone of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect.

As the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect were preparing for the major Blood Sacrificial Ceremony, followers would all return to the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace in order to witness this significant moment. Hence, it was very lively within the palace.

It was evident that those who entered the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect were generally ruthless and introverted. Hence, while it was lively, there weren’t people linking arms or throwing their arms around others’ shoulders, which

actually made things easier for Long Chen.

Long Chen calmly meandered around the palace, hoping to find out more information regarding the underground city but to no avail.

“Looks like I’ll have to be more daring.”

While the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace was big, Long Chen went through the area in a short period of time, finally halting in the hall of the Devil’s Palace. At this moment, a burly man walked to his side and gazed upon him with suspicion for a while, “Kid, you look very unfamiliar. Are you new to the sect?”

Long Chen had already prepared himself for such a situation. Huangtian had only entered the sect not too long ago, so Long Chen did not hesitate, “It hasn’t even been a month since I entered.”

The man chuckled, “I imagine you haven’t experienced the blood bath yet, right? The feeling when cultivating in the blood bath really brings up fond memories for me. Honestly though, kid, you’re really lucky to be able to enjoy the blood bath when you’ve only just entered the sect!”

Giving Long Chen a few heavy pats on the back and seeing the resulting grimace on Long Chen’s face, the burly man laughed brightly and left.

However, the moment he left, Long Chen’s expression of misery dissipated.

“There’s no use in my wandering around here. There are lesser people at night, so I should wait till then to investigate, which is probably more effective. If I wander about like this, they might get a hold on me.”

In the Crimson Blood Devil’s Palace, everyone had a residence. However, Long Chen could not go to where Huangtian stayed. The sky was gradually darkening, and he found a corner to conceal himself. As night fell, lesser people were out and about.

“The sect leader stays in the Blood Pavilion here. I imagine I’d need to enter the Blood Pavilion to find out information regarding the underground city. If I’m not wrong, the entrance to the underground city should be in the pavilion!”

Having made his mind, Long Chen proceeded towards Blood Pavilion.

Blood Pavilion was right smack in the centre of the Devil’s Palace and was a

sealed courtyard. Usually, only important people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect were allowed entry, so the closer he got to the pavilion, Long Chen found that there were lesser people passing by.

Soon enough, Long Chen saw a building that was completely red. From afar, a malicious aura emanated from the Blood Pavilion.

“The sect leader is at the Earth Dan Realm. If I rashly charge in, not only would I find it difficult to retreat, I might even harm Lingqing as well! I’ll need a plan.”

Long Chen furrowed his brows and gazed at the crimson building from the corner he was hiding in, silent.

“There is indeed an Earth Dan Realm cultivator in there, as well as five cultivators at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm.”

Lingxi warned him worriedly.

This situation was very troublesome, with a cultivator at the Earth Dan Realm and five at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. Long Chen was merely at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm and still had a mission to save Yang Lingqing.

“Damn it! If those people approach me, I’ll make sure they get it from me!” Long Chen’s expression darkened as he gritted out.

“Someone’s here...” With Lingxi’s whispered warning, Long Chen quickly hid himself. Soon after, three shadows sneakily crept towards the Blood Pavilion. From their physique, it seemed like there was one woman and two men.

“Long Chen, they must have snuck in as well.”

Long Chen knew this without Lingxi having to point it out. After all, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect had caused a huge ruckus after kidnapping a large number of young girls. There were sure to be many who harboured a hatred for them.

Out of those three, the two men were at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, while the sole woman was at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm.

They stopped at a place not far from Long Chen, secretly gazing at Blood

Pavilion. The woman spoke, "The entrance to the underground city is in the Blood Pavilion, but that devil, the sect leader is also inside. I'm not his match. What are your plans?"

One of the men spoke, "How about us brothers go in to attract the attention of the sect leader, while Elder Sister Li enters the underground city and save your sister?"

Elder Sister Li shook her head, "No. If that happens, you'll definitely die. In addition, there are five sect elders in there, and there are thus a total of six people who are stronger than us. How many do you think you can lead away?"

At this point, their brows were deeply furrowed.

"Elder Sister Li, I really don't care anymore. I've seen how many people the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect has harmed. They've even extended their claws to your sister! Even if I have to pay with my life, I'll make it so that they wish they were dead!"

"Shut up! We're still not powerful enough, so we have to come up with a plan. Don't just go in recklessly, because that'll just do harm to all of us!"

The two men quieted down after being reprimanded.

"These three do have some power. It might be helpful if I make contact with them."

While the three were at their wits' end, Long Chen appeared. In order to avoid misunderstandings, he presented his identity as soon as he appeared.

"I'm not of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and have the same goal as you do. Would you mind giving me some of your time?"

Initially, the three of them had been startled at Long Chen's appearance and were prepared to fight. However, after Long Chen introduced himself, they heaved a sigh of relief and looked him up and down. They were a little speechless at Long Chen's young age.

"This kid is young but has some guts to dare intrude the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect alone. Well, it's not like we'll have any ideas just standing around here. We might as well find a place and discuss this properly!"

At this thought, the woman called Elder Sister Li nodded, "Then let us talk."

Following the woman, Long Chen went a few rounds around the Crimson Blood Devil's Palace and finally arrived at a small room. These three were actually able to possess rooms of their own here without being suspected, which was rather surprising to Long Chen.

"No need to be too surprised. The three of us had the intention of getting rid of the sect a few years ago. How can we eliminate them without going into the lion's den? About a month ago, we entered the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect and have been moving around here in order to prevent suspicion."

So that was the case. It was no wonder that the three of them were so familiar with the area.

The four of them enthusiastically sat at a square table. Long Chen glanced at this tall, valiant looking woman and the two middle-aged men who looked similar and introduced himself, "My name is Long Chen. How should I address you?"

The woman cut to the chase, "I'm Li Jing, while these two are Li Peng and Li Cheng respectively. For what reason have you snuck into the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect?"

"The same as yours. My sister has been taken by the sect, and my goal is naturally to save her."

The three exchanged glances, and Li Jing spoke, "My sister was also caught in their evil scheme. Young brother, you're incredibly gutsy despite your young age, and I really do admire you for that. However, it's extremely dangerous here, and we're treading on thin ice..."

"Everyone, do you have any information regarding the underground city?" Not minding Li Jing's lamenting, he went straight to the point.

Li Jing was startled, and then answered, "There are a total of ten paths into the underground city, scattered around the Blood Pavilion. However, it's difficult to enter, and even more difficult to exit. The sect leader and sect elders all reside in the Blood Pavilion, and even if we were able to enter the underground city, it would be hard to leave."

"Is that so?" Long Chen furrowed his brows deeply.

Li Peng and Li Cheng kept sighing, speaking ruefully while looking at Long Chen's young face, "You're young but already value your family so much. However, the might of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect far exceeds your imagination."

"Exactly. I think it's best for you to return and, after becoming more powerful, come back and seek revenge. You shouldn't just give up your life here! Us brothers and Elder Sister Li are already prepared for death, hoping to make those demons pay even if we can't save Elder Sister Li's sister!"

Seeing Long Chen so young and with boundless prospects, they tried to convince him out of goodwill.

Long Chen understood where they were coming from, but this did not mean he was convinced.

"My sister is extremely important to me. No matter what happens, I will save her even at the cost of my life!"

Seeing Long Chen so stubborn, the three of them looked at each other and sighed, and were about to speak. At this moment, there was suddenly an explosion outside.

"There are spies!"

Chapter 124 – Crimson Blood Sacred Sect Leader

Upon hearing the chaos outside as well as someone yelling ‘spies’, Long Chen and the other three were shocked. However, nothing was happening to them, and only then did they realise that the person who had been exposed was not them. They could thus relax.

“Let’s go and take a look!”

Li Jing, whose name implied quietness(1) yet was actually very forthright and tenacious took the lead and rushed out of the room. Long Chen and the others had no choice but to follow.

“In the Crimson Blood Hall, you need to be careful in everything you do. No matter what happens, you can’t let anything slip or harm anyone else!”

Li Jing’s words were mainly for Long Chen. After all, he was young and had experienced very little, and could easily be scared off by others. If they revealed anything now, this mission was done for.

Soon enough, everyone reached the Crimson Blood Hall. There were already many people crowded around, with most at the banister of the second floor. Looking down, one could see that out of over a thousand followers of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, hundreds were gathered here!

Most of them were watching the scene.

Following their gaze, Long Chen looked downwards and saw a great many people, at the centre of which was a tall, burly man. Looking frantic, he was currently battling against two red-robed men.

“Isn’t that the man who spoke to me just now? He actually snuck in too?”

This burly man was the one who had patted Long Chen on the back at the Crimson Blood Hall.

“That fiendish aura really convinced me that he was actually of the sect. I didn’t expect him to be found out.”

The people battling the man were naturally two proctors of the Crimson Blood

Sacred Sect. The burly man was merely at the ninth dragon vein and was naturally not a match for experts at the Human Dan Realm. Hence, through the battle with the two proctors, he was soon heavily injured and at death's door.

“Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, or rather, Crimson Blood Demonic Sect! You devils do such utterly heartless things. Heaven will punish you sooner or later!”

The burly man's eyes and upper body were stained red with blood. A fiendish aura emanated from his body, and he continued to fight madly despite his injuries. Hence, while the two proctors were stronger than he was, they had yet to kill him.

“Heaven? Punishment? This is a dog eat dog world. Humans and beasts are all alike. What is this talk about being punished by the heavens?” One of the proctors sneered.

“You actually dare cause trouble before the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony at our sect! Youngster, you're pretty gutsy. I think I'll dig out your guts today and see how big they really are!”

“If you want to kill me, then I'll make sure you go down with me!”

Fresh blood spilt in the Crimson Blood Hall.

“Sect leader is here!”

All of a sudden, someone exclaimed. A path was opened up within the masses, and a young person dressed in luxurious, embroidered clothing in red and white, with a faint red on his features laughed demonically. He did not look past twenty years of age. Escorted by the masses, he approached the three people who were fighting.

“We pay our respects to the sect leader!”

Besides the proctors who were in battle, everyone else bowed deeply.

When the sect leader arrived, Li Jing's expression changed. While everyone was kneeling, she immediately pulled at Long Chen.

In her mind, a young kid like Long Chen was probably rash and would not bow down. Unexpectedly, Long Chen was even more quick to go down, looking like a devout follower gazing upon the sect leader the way he would his father.

While putting on an act, Long Chen stared at the sect leader.

“He’s not that old but his aura is very dense. His eyes are exquisitely evil. Someone like this evidently has a powerful background. Liu Lan mentioned that he is the grandson of the Yuan Emperor, and it looks like she isn’t wrong.”

Sensing the frightfulness of the sect leader, Long Chen knew that it really wasn’t going to be easy to deal with someone at the Earth Dan Realm.

“I have a fourth level profound grade demonic beast and the blood essence of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast. I don’t know if that’s enough for me to reach the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, but as long as I reach that level, it will be possible for me to handle him.”

After figuring this out, Long Chen calmed himself down.

Now, the sect leader’s expression remained unchanging as he scanned the area, finally halting his gaze on the three people fighting. In his eyes, Long Chen could see a hint of impatience.

“Two pieces of trash.”

The sect leader’s cold voice sounded in the hall, and everyone could only see a red phantom image floating past and suddenly, two figures flew backwards while spitting out blood, falling to the ground with a loud thud.

At the battle area, all that was left was the sect leader, who was still smiling gently, as well as the burly man. He was now stained with blood all over, his aura weak while being clasped at the throat by the sect leader, unable to move at all.

His eyes still exhibited his hatred, but he was not far from death.

At this scene, nobody dared make a sound, especially Li Jing and the others who gasped, fearful. Long Chen also squinted his eyes.

“This guy is really difficult to handle. How should I save Lingqing...”

At this thought, Long Chen was now under more pressure.

Those who had been sent flying were the two proctors of the sect. Now, disregarding their injuries, they were terrified as they knelt towards the sect leader, begging for forgiveness.

“Your subordinate is useless for not being able to handle someone at the Dragon Vein Realm. Please do take into account your subordinate’s loyalty towards the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect for numerous years, and spare our lives!”

The sect leader shot a glance at them, and merely said two words- ‘get lost’. The two hurriedly got up and disappeared into the crowd.

The might of the sect leader was enough to reduce his proctors to this state. It was evident that he was a terrifying person.

“Elder Sister Li, since the sect leader is here, should we take the opportunity to get into the Blood Pavilion?” At this important moment, Long Chen suddenly asked.

Li Jing was shocked and immediately whispered, “Don’t speak. There are five sect elders in the Blood Pavilion, and it’s impossible for us to go now.”

While she was speaking, the scene ahead changed again.

The sect leader was now dragging the burly man and lifting him. Though the leader was not as tall, the man’s legs were hanging down and trailing on the ground, unable to support his body any longer.

“You actually dare sneak into our sect...”

The sect leader exclaimed while smiling, seemingly ruminating on the situation.

“You devil, you’ll eventually have a tragic end!”

Gritting his teeth, the dying man answered.

“Is that so?”

The sect leader spoke indifferently, “In this world, power is king. If there’s anyone here more powerful and can win against me, I have nothing to say. However, it seems like there are none, which means that in this area, I am free to do as I like.”

“You’ll die a dog’s death!” The burly man spat out a mouthful of blood and exclaimed coldly.

“I’ll die a dog’s death? You even have the guts to curse me. Well then, I’ll make

sure you die a dog's death.”

Even before he finished speaking, the sect leader suddenly grabbed the burly man's arm and, under the astonished gazes of everyone present, suddenly pulled hard. Fresh blood gushed out, unable to stop.

He had forcefully torn off the man's entire arm!

One hand on the burly man who was giving a blood-curdling scream of pain, the other on the man's torn-off arm, the sect leader allowed the blood to spurt onto his body and face while his expression remained unchanging.

Hss!

Tossing the arm he held, the sect leader then tore off the man's other arm. His face was now sprayed with blood, and everyone was now scared stupid by the shrieks of the man.

Long Chen and the others clenched their fists while watching on.

The burly man was already heavily injured. With another huge blow, the intense pain affected his internal injuries and finally claimed his life. If not, he would die only after immense torment.

Throwing the burly man's corpse to the side, the sect leader licked the blood at the corner of his lips and muttered, “The blood of a man is not as delicious as that of a woman, especially that of a girl...”

That sentence that was thought aloud scared everyone into silence, and it was as quiet as a cicada was in the winter.

“That annoying f***!”

If not for Long Chen's previous warning, Lingxi, feeling incredibly indignant at the injustice, would long since have charged forth and had it out with the sect leader!

“In the long period of time I've been alive, it's the first time I've seen someone so revolting! Long Chen, promise me this. No matter what, you have to kill him and prevent him from harming anyone else!”

“I know.”

Long Chen was not any less determined to kill the sect leader than Lingxi was. However, before finding Yang Lingqing, they still had a handle on him. For that reason, Long Chen did not dare do anything.

Scanning the area, the sect leader gave a hollow laugh, and a malicious voice sounded.

“We’re about to begin the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony. Just as well, since everyone is here. I’m going to tell you something.”

“Yes, sect leader!”

While watching his followers, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect leader was bathed with blood but seemed not to be aware of it as he continued, “Due to the existence of a special someone, the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony will be of a higher grade and even grander than before. Hence, all of you have to make the extra effort to ensure the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony will be held without a hitch, even at the cost of your lives.”

“We will do our best!”

“We aren’t afraid of difficulties and will do everything we can!”

“Good, good!” Surrounded by the agitated gazes of the masses, the sect leader clapped his hands. His gaze turned cold as he looked around, “I know there still are spies amongst you, but know this. The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is my territory, and this person right here could very well be you in an hour, or in a day.”

“The girls are currently kept in my Blood Pavilion. If you’re interested, all spies can enter the Blood Pavilion. I’ll be there waiting for you.”

His gaze seemed to pierce into everyone’s heart. Even the followers who were loyal to him were fearful.

“That’s all I’m going to say. You may all go. Let us anticipate the arrival of tomorrow. Crimson Blood is invincible!”

“Crimson Blood is invincible!”

Under the yells of the masses, the sect leader bathed in blood left, leaving behind a corpse in the Crimson Blood Hall. Long Chen and the others left as well

and returned to that small room. All of their expressions were dark.

“With the sect leader around, it’s impossible for us to enter the underground city beforehand.”

“Looks like we can only make our move while the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony is being held.”

Chapter 125 – Underground City

“Long Chen, what are your plans?”

The three of them eventually decided on making their move during the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony.

“If you want my advice, I think it’s best not to do anything for now. While someone is alive, there’ll still be hope. The three of us have reached the apex of what we can ever achieve, but it’s different for you. If possible, we would like you to avenge us.”

“Elder Sister Li...” Long Chen was a little troubled.

“Look, you’re already addressing me as your elder sister. You’ll help, won’t you? I’m not going to be a stranger either, so I’ll call you Little Chen. Little Chen, the three of us will risk our lives here. If it doesn’t work out, avenge us!”

Seeing Li Jing insisting, Long Chen couldn’t do anything but reply, “I’ll definitely kill the sect leader. I promise you not to do anything before the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony. Unless there is some life or death situation, I definitely won’t reveal my identity. Is that alright?”

If they were to die, someone would take revenge on their behalf. That was more than enough for them.

At this age, Long Chen was already at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. Compared to the sect leader, he might be less exceptional, but if he persisted on, he had the chance to get stronger.

“Come, let us discuss the ceremony. Little Chen, you don’t know anything about it, do you?” Li Peng asked.

Long Chen nodded.

“Li Peng, explain it to him.” Li Jing was the leader here, and with her instructions, Li Peng and the three sat while he began to speak.

“There are three parts to the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony. First, all the followers go to the underground city and worship the sect leader, and then offer incense

to the gods. The second part is to massacre young girls and lead their blood into the blood pool till it is full. The third is the blood bath. The sect leader will first bathe in the pool, followed by the five sect elders and the other proctors, and then the followers. Only then will the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony be considered over.”

“In other words, we have to make our move while they are offering incense. If not, when they start killing people, hundreds of lives will be lost. All of them would also be young beautiful girls... My sister is within their midst as well!”

At this point, Li Jing’s voice was incomparably cold.

“Those beasts!” Li Peng and Li Cheng sighed.

“They’re even worse than beasts.”

Long Chen was full of killing intent. He had used blood transmutation before, but this was only for beasts. The times he had used it on Bai Zhanxiong and Xue Yuanzi had been because of his hatred for them. They were all Long Chen’s opponents. As for the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, there were hundreds and thousands of innocent, powerless girls who had been caught!

“There shouldn’t be any good soul who would enter the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. This time, I’m not going to have any inhibitions and kill as I wish.”

At the thought of a mad massacre, countless crimson dragon shadows roared in Long Chen’s body, the aura of bloodthirstiness slowly erupting from his body.

The second day would arrive soon, and with the four patiently waiting, the curtain of night descended upon them soon enough. Long before the sky turned dark, Long Chen and the others assembled with the thousand followers and headed towards the Blood Pavilion.

The followers of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect were typically at or above the fifth dragon vein. A thousand people were gathered together, a strength that could not be comparable to Poplar Town.

Under the influence of the sect leader, a bloody and vicious aura spread in the sect. Long Chen looked around and found that there were few who did not look fiendish.

“I wonder how many innocent people died at the hands of these beasts...”

Following the large group of people and, being guided by the proctors, Long Chen and the others entered the Blood Pavilion. He saw the tunnel to the underground city, which was a narrow pathway with a descending staircase. Only two people could pass through at a time.

Long Chen was at the end of the line. Only after he walked for a long period of time through the tunnel to the underground city did the path open up.

This was a huge area that was dug out using manpower. It was the underground city, and was basically modelled after a city. The only difference was that the walls here were all red, with all sorts of strange drawings on them that made them seem terrifying.

“It’s better to be careful.”

Li Jing warned him, and the three of them separated from Long Chen. They were going to fight the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect openly, and Long Chen was merely here to watch.

Of course, that was what Li Jing and the other two believed.

After walking around the underground city for a long period of time, everyone moved in a specific direction. Finally, Long Chen saw the heart of the city a distance away. In front, there was a large pool that could allow over a thousand people to enter. The pool was now empty, but from the blood stains, it could be inferred that this was the blood pool.

The followers of the sect formed organised lines at one side at the blood pool, while at the other end, there was a giant crimson altar. Three large sticks of incense burned, spirals of smoke rising to the top of the underground city.

Under the altar stood the sect elder, as well as five elderly of different genders. They all wore golden-red robes and were the legendary sect elders of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. All of them were formidable.

Long Chen’s gaze landed on them.

“I can tell that none of these five are good people. The sect leader is devoid of conscience, and I imagine they aren’t any better. From the vigour bursting out of

their bodies, they must have killed many people.”

Sensing the strength in his body, Long Chen furrowed his eyebrows.

“A fourth level profound grade demonic beast, as well as the blood essence of the Heart Corrosive demonic beast still isn’t enough for me to enter the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. Before I battle the sect leader, I’ll need to do some blood transmutation to break through to the perfect mastery stage...”

Long Chen was a little unwilling to use blood transmutation on humans.

“Don’t think too much. If you don’t do this and something happens to Lingqing, you’ll regret it for a lifetime.” Lingxi sensibly consoled him.

At the thought of that girl, Long Chen had no choice but to nod. “It’s alright. I can make an exception for her!”

“Long Chen, blood transmutation is a heaven-defying ability. I’ve never seen anything more amazing than it. It represents an inexhaustible strength, and people go crazy over it. To be able to control yourself at this age is laudable.”

Long Chen revelled in Lingxi’s heartfelt praise.

“Well, I’ve always been an extraordinary existence...”

“How shameless!”

With Lingxi’s cheerful banter, Long Chen’s stifling emotions eased. The sect leader from before had caused him too much stress.

“The Blood Sacrificial Ceremony begins now. Everyone, kneel!”

Out of the five sect elders, there were four males and one female. An ugly old woman screeched, her voice piercing the ears of everyone around. Long Chen, too, felt discomfort in his ears as he followed the masses and knelt.

The old witch roared and turned back, speaking to the sect leader for a while before standing aside.

Long Chen timidly knelt and, while everyone was in trepidation, looked everywhere.

“Little Xi, do you sense Lingqing?”

Lingxi turned her head sideways in the Lingxi Sword and furrowed her brows, “At the left of the blood pool, there are a few large doors. They are about a hundred metres away from the pool, and there are hundreds of young girls behind. Lingxi doesn’t seem to be there. I’ll continue searching...”

Unsure of Yang Lingqing’s whereabouts, Long Chen did not dare do anything.

By this time, the sect leader had already announced the commencement of the ceremony. He first ascended to the altar and offered incense. Shortly after, the five sect elders devoutly did the same.

Above the blood pool was a bridge that led to the altar. Everyone passed the stone bridge and offered incense, and then drew a bowl of red liquid from the side of the altar. It was fresh blood.

After offering incense, everyone returned to their original positions, but now with a bowl of blood in their hands. Even the sect leader was no different.

“Everyone, this is a very important time for us all. Now, hold the bowl of fresh blood firmly. Sect leader!”

The old witch’s piercing voice rang out, and she sternly glanced towards the sect leader. He laughed heartily for a while and then exclaimed, “Brothers, cheers!”

“Cheers!”

“Good!”

Taking the initiative, the sect leader drank the bowl of blood and with a crash, flung the porcelain in the blood pool, and it broke into smithereens. Right after that, bowls fell into the blood pond one after the another, filling it with fragments.

As they had made contact with blood, the fragments were all red.

“Open the door and bring in the blood sources!”

The sect leader commanded, and on the left of the blood pool, large doors rumbled as they opened. There were four heavy doors, each even more thick than the other, and even with Long Chen’s current strength, it would be difficult to destroy these stone doors in a short period of time.

The sect leader had made ample preparations to ensure the ceremony proceeded smoothly without a hitch.

The stone doors opened one after another, and shrieks, as well as wails could be heard. The sounds of people about to break down caused the followers of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect to laugh maniacally.

“Cry on, cry on! These are the last few minutes you have in this world. Cry as much as you like. You should be honoured to be able to make us stronger with your blood.”

The sect leader’s crazed laughter boomed in the underground city.

Long Chen tightly clenched his fists from within the masses.

“Long Chen, I’ve found Lingqing! She’s under the altar!”

Chapter 126 – Abstruse Shadow Body

“Altar?”

Long Chen’s eyes had been focused on those girls who were crying behind the doors. Seeing the doors open, they were even more afraid, their legs going weak.

They did know who was gathered outside, and hence were too afraid to come out. However, from just the cries, Long Chen could tell there were around 500 people in there.

Killing off five hundred beautiful young girls was something that Long Chen could only admire the sect leader for his methods and callousness.

“How is she under the altar?” Long Chen quickly asked.

“I didn’t expect it either and thought she’d be with those young girls downstairs. Apparently, there’s some mechanism under the altar and Lingqing is tied to a metal pillar. Looks like she’s already fainted, though her body is fine.”

With Lingxi’s words, Long Chen could finally heave a sigh of relief.

Looking at the sect leader’s proud smile, the wrath and killing intent in him rose.

At this moment, the sect leader was paying no attention to the weeping girls and spoke to the masses, “There might still be many who don’t know this. What’s so special about the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony this time? Let me tell you!”

As he spoke, the sect leader faced the altar and pressed down on a protruding rock. All of a sudden, a stone brick in front of the altar shifted away, and a metal pillar slowly rose from underneath. Everyone could see there was a charming young girl who was tied to the pillar with chains.

Feeling the tremors of the pillar, Yang Lingqing who had gone pale regained consciousness. Upon seeing the unfamiliar surroundings around her, as well as the thousand followers who were staring at her like a bunch of starving wolves, she sucked in a cold breath.

“She is the greatest surprise for me, and do you know why? Because...”

With a gaze full of appreciation as if for an artwork, the sect leader strolled towards Yang Lingqing and seemed to go crazy, “Because she has the Abstruse Shadow Body!”

“The Abstruse Shadow Body?”

“What is this Abstruse Shadow Body? What can it do?”

The followers were mostly at the Dragon Pulse Realm and knew very little. It was expected that they did not know about this ‘abstruse shadow body’.

“You don’t need to know what it is. All you need to know is that within this beautiful girl lies blood equal to that of a thousand young girls, or perhaps more than that...”

Having said this, the sect leader chuckled heartily, and upon hearing this, all the followers felt a fire in their hearts as they looked towards Yang Lingqing, extremely excited.

“With her around, most people will be able to raise their strength by a level just with this blood bath and with a little more effort. It is very possible for cultivators at the ninth dragon vein to solidify their Deity Dan through this process. When that happens, our Crimson Blood Sacred Sect will have at least thirty Human Dan Realm cultivators! This is therefore a significant time for us where we will rise to the top. Everyone, look forward to it!”

Hearing the words of the sect leader, the followers all began to cheer.

This was especially important to cultivators at the ninth dragon vein. As long as they could solidify their Human Dan, they could instantly achieve success!

The sect leader then turned towards the five sect elders and clicked his tongue, “Sect elders, I want to find out as well. Who amongst you will reach the Earth Dan Realm?”

The five sect elders were so emotional that they sank to their knees, grateful, “We owe everything to the sect leader. If we gain more power, we will follow the sect leader until our deaths, going through fire and water and any adversity for you. Our lives are yours, sect elder!”

With the sect elders leading, the followers agitatedly knelt and were insanely happy.

Yang Lingqing quietly watched on.

She had thought that after the dispersal of the Bai family, she would be able to live a peaceful life. Never did she expect that she would get into such a dangerous situation again. Long Chen was physically not too far away and could save her the last time, but this was different.

She was trapped here alone, and every single person around her was a powerful existence she could not compare to. Any of the people here could easily take care of Grandfather Yang. With all these formidable people around, not even a god could save her.

Hence, Yang Lingqing had now entirely given up hope.

It was impossible for her to say she was not afraid, but since she was facing death already, many figures flashed before her eyes. At the thought of the last person in her mind, she suddenly felt like things weren't so scary anymore. Her delicate body was filled with immense strength.

"I hope that with my death, the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect can let the Yang family off. Brother, please train peacefully. Once you truly become strong, avenge your sister. I know you will..."

"With you around, nobody can bully me, but the reality is ruthless. No matter how strong you are, there's always someone in this world who can best you."

Biting her lips, Yang Lingqing forced herself to be strong. She raised her head, gazing at the beasts around her disdainfully.

"Only by doing this will I not humiliate you, brother..."

The underground city was now sealed off. Yang Lingqing scanned the crowd and then laughed helplessly, speechless at her own actions.

With the emotional words of the sect leader, all the followers were stirred up. The fear and complaints they had towards their sect leader vanished.

Long Chen coldly looked on. Yang Lingqing was right in front of him, but the sect leader was right beside her. He did not act rashly.

Upon seeing Yang Lingqing, Long Chen's could feel his killing intent spreading throughout his body.

"Long Chen, endure it for a while longer. It's still not yet time!"

With Lingxi's warnings, Long Chen kept his composure.

While the followers were still cheering, a sudden explosion sounded. A blood-curdling screech rang, and blood splattered everywhere!

Yang Lingqing raised her head, pleasantly surprised as she shouted, "Brother..."

However, her expression was soon frozen stiff. What she saw was not a familiar figure, but three people she had never seen before. Though they were grappling with their enemies, Yang Lingqing could not bring herself to be happy.

In that moment, she had assumed that Long Chen had arrived. However, as she had not seen him, she could not help but be hit with a wave of disappointment.

"What am I thinking? Coming here to save me would only cause himself trouble..."

At this thought, Yang Lingqing could only shake her head and force a smile.

The sect leader watched the scene beside Yang Lingqing, expression unchanging. A cold expression appeared on his face as he indifferently spoke, "Elder Yan, if they can't take care of it, then you will do it."

The elder beside him nodded and headed towards the bridge over the blood pool.

Long Chen had anticipated that those three who were prepared for death would act at this moment. Right before this, everyone in the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect was rejoicing. Who would have thought that anyone would do anything here? Hence, when Li Jing and the other two put their plan into action, the tens of people around them were instantly slaughtered.

Previously, when Long Chen still did not know what was happening, Li Jing had used a flying dagger filled with real Qi to attack. Each flying dagger held within it the power of a large rock, and was entirely capable of piercing through bodies.

With Li Peng and Li Cheng's efforts at hiding all these happenings, a massacre started all of a sudden on the sly!

"The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect must die!

With Li Jing's resolute tone and rapid movements, the followers who were still at the Dragon Pulse Realm were cut through like vegetables being chopped through, with numerous people dying all at once. Only then did everyone suddenly react and try to escape. All that was left were a few proctors who, with a loud cry, slashed towards the three people.

All these proctors had strength at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm and could not be underestimated. Li Jing and the other two exchanged glances and immediately headed in the direction where more people were. Not only could this help conceal them, but also allow them to kill more people!

"Elder Sister Li, I'll take care of the proctors. Use the opportunity to save those people!"

"No! You aren't strong enough to take care of them! I'm going to go all out. If we're going to die anyway, everyone is going down with us!"

With the killing spree of the three, the people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect wailed and cried in despair. One of them was at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, while the other two were at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, and were far too strong. The only one able to rival them were the few proctors.

Focusing on Li Jing from within the masses, the sect leader smirked, "So there's still someone at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. Elder Yan, Elder Chen, take care of it lest it becomes more troublesome.

After ordering this, the sect leader clicked his tongue at Yang Lingqing, judging her smooth skin and sighing in even more appreciation after witnessing her icy glare. He applauded, "Yes, those are the eyes. I love girls that are durable like you, but it's a pity that your Abstruse Shadow Body is my sustenance. I won't hold back then."

"Don't be so pleased with yourself. I wish a bastard like you an early death. It's even better if the king of hell takes away your life!" Yang Lingqing spoke calmly.

The sect leader burst out into laughter till he could not straighten his back. After that, he pointed in Li Jing's direction, while his eyes were on Yang Lingqing, "Do you mean those three clowns jumping around there want to take my life? My two sect elders are more than enough to flay them alive!"

Yang Lingqing sneered and closed her eyes, not answering him. The sect leader was about to fly into a rage out of humiliation, but all of a sudden, a racket sounded from the other side of the blood pool.

"What's going on?"

The sect leader turned in that direction, shocked.

Previously, when they had seen the two sect elders of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect heading in their direction, Li Jing and the other two knew they were done for. At this moment, Li Jing could no longer care for her sister. In this situation, it was basically impossible for her to rescue her sister, and all she could do before her death was to kill even more followers and disrupt their Blood Sacrificial Ceremony!

"Brothers! Kill them!"

The three of them seemingly transformed into wild beasts, with Li Jing charging forward alone to take on the two sect elders while Li Peng and Li Cheng darted towards the other proctors!

"If I kill one, it'll be worth it. If I kill two, I've made a profit!"

The two sect elders were calm while they met the desperate attacks of their opponent. "A tiny little existence like you dares to show off in front of us?!"

The moment they acted, an attack that was like howling winds and torrential rains sent Li Jing flying while coughing out blood. With two at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm against one Li Jing, she lost out in terms of quantity.

"This won't do. Even if I die, one of them needs to go too!"

At this thought, Li Jing did not care for her injuries and continued her attacks while gritting her teeth. At this moment, however, a burning force pulled her backwards!

Suddenly seeing a streak of blood flying in front of her, Li Jing's eyes widened.

“Who is it?”

Chapter 127 – This is Long Chen?

“Who is it?”

Li Jing shouted, as the mysterious person behind her pulled her backwards.

This caught her in a daze. All of a sudden, she saw blazing flames exploding forth and turning into fiery handprints heading towards the two sect elders in front. What surprised Li Jing was under the assault of this mysterious person, the two sect elders were actually pushed backwards. In less than two breaths, they were rendered corpses!

“How can this be? He’s a beast cultivator!”

Li Jing and the two brothers of the Li family stopped whatever was at hand and watched the fight with the sect elders, and how this beast cultivator was able to take care of them in such a short period of time.

This beast cultivator was Long Chen.

Long Chen had laid low just now, waiting for the five sect elders to leave the side of the sect leader of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect. He had finally waited for this moment, so why would he not make his move?

Long Chen was at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, and had already attained the Thunder Flame Physique that was at the same level as a middle-ranking profound grade battle technique! He could also use the middle-ranking profound grade battle technique, Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, and an attack like that was not something even Feng Wutian, who was at the peak of the Human Dan Realm could deal with. This was even more impossible for the two sect elders.

After taking care of these two sect elders, Long Chen continued with his next technique.

Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, begin!

Making use of Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, Long Chen quickly grabbed these two corpses and quickly dove into the crowd. He had already undergone Dragon Soul Transformation, and in this state, he could absorb these two

experts at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm using Blood Transmutation in merely two breaths' time!

For Long Chen right now, the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm was merely somewhat similar to a profound grade level 3 demonic beast. To absorb and refine them was a very simple task.

"I can't deal with the sect leader right now. At most, I can attract the attention of the sect elders and take in their blood essence, which will hopefully be enough to make me reach the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm!"

This was Long Chen's strategy. Using Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, he quickly moved about within the masses. The only person who would be able to trace him was the sect leader, but he was now preoccupied with speaking to Yang Lingqing.

Two dried up corpses were flung in front of everyone, and they all gasped.

By the time they had made sense of the situation, Long Chen had already disappeared.

Or rather, he had already snuck into their midst.

"What's going on?"

Li Jing and the other two searched quickly from within the masses, but that person seemed to have disappeared.

"Senior! All of the people of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect should be killed. Please do it!"

Li Peng and Li Cheng exchanged glances, both thinking that being able to kill two people at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm meant he was at the Earth Dan Realm and therefore, could deal with the sect leader!

However, there was no reaction to their words. Everyone looked for the beast cultivator in confusion but to no avail. Li Jing saw Long Chen still staying at the same spot obediently and was relieved.

"Who was that expert just now?"

While everyone was puzzling over this, the sect leader had gathered what had happened through the words of the three sect elders.

“You two, go take care of those three clowns. If anyone else appears, I’ll take care of them personally!”

The sect leader did not dare let down his guard now. This person must be somewhat powerful to be able to kill two sect elders.

“However, he’s doing all this on the sly and not out in the open, which means he’s scared of me. It seems like he’s still not a match for me, and only won because he launched a sneak attack.”

By this time, the sect leader had already gone to the bridge, staring tenaciously at the other side.

He did not cross, and instead killed anyone who passed. He was deathly afraid that Yang Lingqing, who was the star of the show, would be rescued.

“Grandmother Huang, guard this girl well. I’m going to meet this person who’s been causing trouble!”

After making himself clear, the sect leader glared at Yang Lingqing threateningly, and then stood right in the middle of the blood pool while scanning the masses. He knew this person was definitely in there.

Meanwhile, Yang Lingqing was staring at the two corpses in a daze.

She knew a little about what was going on with Long Chen, and much more importantly, this was how Bai Zhanxiong had died.

“Brother, did you come...”

Yang Lingqing’s originally deathly pale face gradually brightened. However, at the thought that these two sect elders were powerful and how, when Long Chen left Poplar Town, was only at the eighth dragon vein and therefore far below that red figure, Yang Lingqing was not that hopeful.

“Though I didn’t see clearly, that red figure should be him. But how can he be so powerful?”

Yang Lingqing shook her head.

“Looks like I’m thinking too much to the point that I’m hallucinating.”

She laughed wryly inside and bit her lip, and continued watching the sect

leader.

It could be seen from how Long Chen had saved Li Jing that one time, that by getting the other two sect elders to attack them, the sect leader could definitely force Long Chen out. This was a very smart move.

“If you’re really a man, then have a one-on-one fight with me out in the open. Why are you so afraid? What kind of man, what kind of hero are you?”

The sect leader’s cold gaze scanned the area but found there was no response. He then made eye contact with the other two sect leaders, who then attacked Li Jing and the others. Li Jing could still deal with one person, but the two brothers, Li Peng and Li Cheng were caught in danger.

Long Chen, who was hidden, was instantly furious at seeing Li Peng and Li Cheng in this situation.

“It feels like I’m about to break through to the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. Looks like I need this last fight!”

At this thought, when Li Peng and Li Cheng were almost at death’s door, Long Chen suddenly did his Dragon Soul Transformation, and like a bloody arrow, charged towards the two sect elders!

“Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Scarlet Flames Burning Heavens!”

Long Chen employed these two techniques, one on each hand!

Such a powerful attack caused the two sect elders at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm to go deathly pale and immediately set up their strongest defensive techniques to save themselves. Meanwhile, upon sensing where Long Chen was, the sect leader charged towards Long Chen with the fastest speed he could muster!

“You wily traitor! Die!”

However, he had underestimated Long Chen. Long Chen was much closer to the two sect elders, and a blazing whirlwind brushed passed by. By the time the whirlwind was gone, all that was left were two corpses.

The sect leader’s eyes bulged!

On top of that, while killing the two sect elders, he had obviously not let their

blood essence leak out of their bodies.

“These two old geezers took the side of evil, and even death cannot wipe out the crimes they have committed. By transmuting their blood, I’ll have the chance to reach the perfect mastery stage. Whatever it is, I have succeeded!”

Lugging the two corpses away, Long Chen displayed his Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step once again and charged into the crowd. By using blood transmutation, blood that could be seen with the naked eye entered Long Chen’s body and was forcefully transmuted to crimson real Qi, flowing into the Human Dan in his dantian!

“Who are you! How dare you kill my sect elders!”

The sect leader did not even blink when his followers died, but these five sect elders had followed him for several years and were extremely loyal to him. For Long Chen to kill four of them in the blink of an eye, the sect elder was now about to go crazy!

“The sect leader really is at the Earth Dan Realm after all. His speed is incredibly fast!”

Sensing his opponent rapidly approaching despite him being hidden in the crowd, Long Chen wrinkled his forehead.

“But there’s still enough time for me to refine this blood essence!”

After absorbing all the blood essence, Long Chen ruthlessly tossed the corpses towards the sect leader, who was very close by. The sect leader was currently furious, a killing intent constantly bursting out from him.

Long Chen did not waste any time and refined the blood into real Qi, but unfortunately, while his Human Dan did quiver a little, it was not enough for him to reach the perfect mastery stage.

“I’m right on the verge of breaking through though. It looks like I have no choice but to deal with him now!”

There was no doubt that the sect leader was powerful, and Long Chen had no idea how he would fare against this person. He was initially not prepared to do anything he was not confident in, but for Yang Lingqing’s sake, he could not

avoid this battle.

Yang Lingqing's eyes were now completely wet.

When Long Chen had paused and pulled out his Dragon Soul Transformation, how could Yang Lingqing not tell who it was?

She didn't bother wondering about how Long Chen was this strong. All she knew was that Long Chen had come to save her, and no matter what, it was already enough for her.

"Brother..."

Yang Lingqing subconsciously called out, her tears involuntarily falling in a rush, wetting her face.

Her words were heard by Grandmother Huang, who was beside her. After pondering it over, she was suddenly startled and immediately shouted at the sect leader, "Sect leader, this guy is Long Chen of the Lingwu Family! He's the one who killed Proctors Xue Yuanzi, Qin and Shi. He's the one of the Yang Family!"

This shout caused the sect leader to pause. He had now forced Long Chen out from the crowd and was already preparing to attack. The words of the old woman had shocked him, and he immediately started to recall information about this person. If that was the truth, then everything made sense, but this strength was not how it had been described to be.

"You're Long Chen?" The sect leader was entirely capable of winning over him, and was hence able to compose himself and ask.

"This is Long Chen?" Li Jing and the other two looked in this direction, eyes wide and mouth gaping, their chins about to drop to the ground.

Chapter 128 – Blood Shadow Step

Now that he had been recognised, Long Chen had nothing more to hide.

For followers of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, Long Chen was like a plague. Everywhere he went, people died.

When Long Chen had finally been caught by the sect leader, the followers all drew back in terror and hid away. All their eyes were focused on Long Chen and the sect leader at the centre.

The most shocked amongst them were Li Jing, Li Peng and Li Cheng.

“Elder Sister Li, didn’t you say that Long Chen was merely at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm? How can he have such immense battle power?”

“I don’t know either.

There was, however, a huge change in Li Jing’s mood. “We underestimated him. Long Chen has immense talent and far surpasses us. All those things we said to him were really uncalled for.”

Initially, they had not wanted Long Chen to do anything.

“Oh right, I heard something about Long Chen being part of the Lingwu Family?”

Li Jing nodded, “That’s true. Only people of the Lingwu Family can have such heaven-defying talent and aptitude. However, judging by his surname, he should be part of the outer faction.”

“People of the outer faction don’t seem to have a high standing in the Lingwu Family. It’s no wonder that he came here alone.”

They were full of praise for Long Chen. Previously, they had thought that Long Chen was the weakest of them all, but in actuality, it was the exact opposite.

“To even be able to kill someone at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm so easily, Long Chen’s battle power might not be at the Earth Dan Realm, but he’s definitely near there.”

Li Jing could hardly believe that someone at the initial mastery stage at the

Human Dan Realm could possess such strength.

The sect leader was also quite interested in Long Chen. Clicking his tongue in astonishment while measuring Long Chen up and down, he sighed ruefully, “I heard that when you left your family, you were still at the eighth dragon vein. In just a month or so, you reached the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, and you even have the battle might of one at the peak of the Human Dan Realm. Kid, I didn’t expect you to be a genius.”

At this point, the only way to deal with this matter was to put his life on the line and fight. The sect leader had to kill Long Chen no matter what.

“Sect leader is young, and yet already has such great achievements. In comparison, you are more of a genius than I am!”

“Is that so?”

The sect leader broke out into a smile, “You’re of the Lingwu Family and yet came alone. Looks like you know my real identity. You’ve disrupted my Blood Sacrificial Ceremony and ruined my mood. I want your life for this!”

“Bring it on!”

In this intense atmosphere, the two’s auras constantly rose, becoming the focal point here.

“Die!”

The sect leader yelled, and under his prowess, Long Chen did not yield. This incurred the wrath of the sect leader, and his aura at the Earth Dan Realm pressed down on Long Chen, while he himself turned into an afterimage.

“Experts at the Earth Dan Realm are truly much stronger than those at the Human Dan Realm!”

Long Chen furrowed his brows and exhibited his Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step. Though this was an elementary profound grade battle technique, it was enough to sidestep his opponent if used aptly.

“He even has a battle technique for his movements! However, I have what you possess as well, and it’s even better!”

“Blood Shadow Step, begin!”

The moment the sect leader put this technique to use, he turned into crimson afterimages and was evidently much faster than Long Chen. Long Chen suddenly felt a great amount of pressure!

“Is the sect leader that strong?”

Then again, he was the grandson of the Yuan Emperor. Though he wasn't favoured, the materials he was given since birth was not something Long Chen, who had come from a small place, could ever have.

Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step was an entire level lower than Blood Shadow Step. No matter how one saw it, this was a middle profound grade movement technique!

“In terms of attack, the durability of my body as well as constitution, my techniques are all at the middle profound grade. I should bring out the best of these techniques to increase my battle power!”

Offensive attacks as well as durability of the body could be combined. A powerful body gave a large bonus to one's attacks, defence and speed. Long Chen now knew what he had to do.

“You aren't half bad, but you are far from my match!”

This Blood Shadow Step had already forced Long Chen into a corner. In this battle, despite both sides not having actually attacked, the sect leader had already grasped the flow of the battle.

“The Blood Sacrificial Ceremony cannot be interrupted for too long. Long Chen, I guess I'll finish you off in one move. It would be an honour for you to die by this attack.”

A teasing voice sounded by Long Chen's ear.

“Dream on!”

Yang Lingqing was now watching on closely. At the beginning, she had been very confident in Long Chen's abilities since he was able to kill cultivators at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. However, it was a fact that Long Chen was still not a match for the sect leader.

Seeing Long Chen forced into a corner by the sect leader, Yang Lingqing was

full of worry and fear. When they had come to the Crimson Blood Devil's Palace, she had already known that this meant a certain death for herself. However, if Long Chen might lose his life as well, she was unwilling to accept this outcome.

"Brother Chen, leave! Don't bother with me!"

There came a heartbreaking yell, but Long Chen pretended he heard nothing.

At the next moment, Yang Lingqing saw the sect leader unleash a torrential attack on Long Chen.

"In this one attack, that kid will definitely die!"

Yang Lingqing watched on at a side, the woman guarding her, Grandmother Huang, smirking. Grandmother Huang's wrinkles were bunched up together, like a demon that had strolled out of hell.

Spiritual Qi from the heavens and the earth gathered at the hands of the sect leader at a crazy pace, while his fingers quickly formed seals. Dim red real Qi spiralled around on top of his palms.

"Do you know why the red dot between my eyebrows is called the Crimson Seal?"

Facing this powerful attack from his opponent, Long Chen sucked in a deep breath and displayed his Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, quickly pouncing towards his opponent. On the other hand, his opponent had also launched his most powerful attack!

Not hearing Long Chen's answer, the sect leader continued on anyway, "That's because this attack is called..."

"Crimson! Seal!"

With a rumbling echo, real Qi exploded under the manipulation of the sect leader, forming a large crimson handprint, and was thrown in Long Chen's direction.

Meanwhile, on Long Chen's end, a blazing energy had been formed. It looked to be a black sun, colliding with the crimson handprint!

"Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Piercing Earth Demonic Sun!"

“It’s a middle profound grade battle technique. Kid, not bad!”

Amidst the laughter of the sect leader, Long Chen clashed with him!

Such a grand and fierce fight caused Li Jing and everyone watch on, eyes wide.

“Elder Sister Li, do you think he can win?” Li Cheng muttered in question.

“Long Chen is already spent from the earlier battles, and to win against someone at the Earth Dan Realm? Difficult! Very difficult!”

While saying all these, Long Chen and the sect leader fought each other head on.

Using Piercing Earth Demonic Sun, which was Long Chen’s most powerful attack here, had caused Feng Wutian grievous injuries.

However, the sect leader was evidently much more powerful than Feng Wutian. That mysterious crimson seal had a power that even Piercing Earth Demonic Sun could not compare to. Or rather, Long Chen’s real Qi was still unable to pull off Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist at its full strength.

It was the first time he was seeing Piercing Earth Demonic Sun of the Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist be broken through by his opponent’s attack. That tumultuous wave of his opponent’s attack was like a wave of the sea, crashing into Long Chen loudly.

Though he had done his utmost to dodge it, the formidable attack of the Crimson Seal still caused Long Chen to spit out blood.

It had been a long time since he had last gotten hurt. That scorching pain was extremely uncomfortable for Long Chen. In that instant, his battle power was reduced by a large amount.

“If I get hit by this once more, I’ll definitely die here!”

“Long Chen, Origin Reversion!”

With Lingxi’s reminder, Long Chen used the shortest amount of time possible and regained his balance, using the middle profound grade constitution technique, Origin Reversion!

A white light surged through his body, restoring the damage done to his

organs, muscles and flesh.

Though the sect leader's attack was strong, Long Chen's Thunder Flame Physique, and his dragon scales had increased his defence. On top of his dodging, the injuries he had sustained were therefore not that severe.

However, the sect leader, as well as everyone present, believed that this one attack was enough to end Long Chen's life. Yang Lingqing was so worried that a cry escaped from her lips. Li Jing and the other two were also furious, prepared to impulsively rush forward and fight it out with the sect leader.

"Such a pity that a fine talent like him opposed me. Serve you right!"

With this thought in mind, the sect leader prepared to eliminate Li Jing and the other two.

"You're too imaginative. Do you think an attack to this extent is enough to kill me?"

His injuries were not too serious, and on top of that, with the regenerative powers of Origin Reversion, Long Chen had already almost completely recovered.

"How is this possible?"

Seeing Long Chen unharmed, the sect leader's eyes widened, shocked.

He knew how powerful his Crimson Seal was. He had even killed an Earth Dan cultivator with it before. How could it have lost its powers against a mere cultivator at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm?

"That's impossible. Long Chen, here's one more for you!"

Noticing Long Chen was fine, Yang Lingqing regained her colour. However, the sect leader's next attack caused her heart rate to rapidly increase, feeling like there was a heavy rock weighing down on her.

"Brother, you need to pull through..."

Now that he had escaped with his life, Long Chen was calm.

"Using my Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, and coupled with my Thunder Flame Physique and Origin Reversion, it'll be difficult for the sect leader to kill me!"

He shot a glance at Yang Lingqing and found that girl watching him with her eyes glimmering with tears. His heart broke, and he thought, “But all I can do is stall for time. It’s not enough for me to save Lingqing!”

Long Chen was now in a tough situation, but there was no time for him to think this through. The sect leader attacked once more, with the very same Crimson Seal.

Long Chen was terrified of this move.

“It’s not that easy to kill me. Piercing Earth Demonic Sun!”

Relying on the previous method, Long Chen dodged this attack once more, and the sect leader had finally lost his patience.

“Everyone, listen up. Kill the blood source. Grandmother Huang, I’ll leave that Abstruse Shadow Body to you!”

Chapter 129 – Blood Engulfing Zone!

Long Chen was immediately stunned at the sect leader's words.

All he could do was stall for time. However, it was evident that the sect leader was no saint. Though four sect elders had died, the Blood Sacrificial Ceremony was not to be stopped.

“As long as the blood bath is completed, I can enter the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm. With such talent, even back in the Yuandi City, my strength will definitely be recognised!”

At this thought, the sect leader began to laugh maniacally.

“Kill all of them. Proctors, stop those three clowns.”

Out of the eight proctors there were in Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, four had died, leaving four at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. Two of them hindered Li Peng and Li Cheng, while the other two temporarily pinned Li Jing down. The rest of the followers were in an uproar as they made to kill the harmless and defenceless girls.

For a bunch of wolves like them, all they needed was a short period of time to kill hundreds of girls. When that happened, even if Li Jing and the other two broke out, there was little they could do.

For Long Chen, what was the most dangerous was that sect elder called Grandmother Huang. She had already produced a dagger that was glimmering in the light, about to slash across Yang Lingqing's pale neck that was as white as a goose feather.

“You must be anxious and furious, yes? But Long Chen, do you think you can escape from the palm of my hand?”

Blocking in front of Long Chen, the sect leader chuckled.

Though his stance was casual, he could launch an attack at any time. No matter how powerful Long Chen was, it was impossible for him to rescue Yang Lingqing at this point. The rest of the followers had also dashed towards the young girls.

“Brothers, kill them! Only by killing these maidens can we become more formidable!”

“Kill them! Haha, after tonight, we’ll be living in the lap of luxury! After killing them, won’t there be more than enough girls for us outside?”

Amidst howls and wails, these girls began crying harder after hearing that their lives were about to end. A few of them turned pale and even fainted.

“Bastards!”

Long Chen’s eyes were now completely red. His fists were tightly clenched while he trembled.

“I promised grandfather and second uncle to bring Lingqing back safe and sound, but there is little I can do now!”

“Strength! Strength! I need more strength!”

Long Chen ducked his head, his entire body trembling violently. An ancient and bloody aura suddenly erupted from his body, and the sect leader who had initially been laughing hard suddenly froze.

“What is this?”

While he was still puzzled, Long Chen let out a huge roar, and that was enough for the entire underground city to shake!

The sect leader, who was standing in front of Long Chen, saw two crimson rays of light shooting out of his eyes, lines of scarlet dragon patterns spreading on his dragon scales from his face to his feet.

Roar!

This roar of the dragon was enough to shock the heavens, causing everyone eager to attack to pause their motions, staring at Long Chen while in a daze.

Within Long Chen’s body, countless crimson dragons roared and soared, a formidable spiritual force sweeping towards Long Chen’s mind.

“Is this... Blood Transmutation?”

When Yang Lingqing had gotten into danger, Lingxi had prepared to save her despite not knowing her chances of success.

At this moment, Long Chen, who was furious yet powerless, gathered an inexhaustible desire for strength, and his body seemed to transform to grant his wish.

Long Chen's body was now like a red whirlpool. When that power exploded, everyone in the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect was shocked.

"What's going on?"

Even the sect leader could feel the blood in his body expanding, not to say everyone else. Under the formidable absorption ability of this crimson whirlpool, numerous people cried out pitifully immediately.

These people were the weakest, with their strength not even reaching the fifth dragon vein. The situation that had happened to Bai Zhanxiong now appeared on everyone here. The first to be affected were those at the fifth dragon vein, and then those above this level of strength.

As long as they were of the sect, all were affected.

An inexhaustible amount of fresh blood spurted out of their bodies, excitedly gushing towards Long Chen. Under the immense absorption and filtering abilities of the whirlpool, the blood was forcefully transmuted into crimson real Qi that Long Chen took in.

"The very foundation of any soul comes from the bloodline. It is what continues life and can be inherited."

This was why blood transmutation was such a remarkable ability. The strength hidden within a bloodline was much too powerful.

"What's happening?"

The followers who were weaker collapsed to the ground with blood spurting out, while the others were not any better. Even Grandmother Huang at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm grimaced in misery, the dagger in her hands clattering to the ground.

Li Jing and the other two were utterly stunned.

Even their opponents, who were at the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, could not control their bodies while their facial muscles contorted.

Li Jing's gaze turned cold, and she pierced three flying daggers into four people's hearts. Right after that, the fresh blood in their bodies flew towards Long Chen.

Though stunned and unsure of what had happened, Li Jing, Li Peng and Li Cheng exchanged glances and came to a mutual understanding. They then shouted and crazily slashed at all who had yet to fall, while Li Jing charged towards Grandmother Huang!

"What kind of freak are you?"

Though his followers were being massacred, the sect leader remained motionless.

He was also resisting that immense absorption force from Long Chen's body, which was making the blood in him boil. He even guessed that if he, too, were to launch an attack and moved too much, he might end up like the others, with blood exploding out of his body.

The absorption force from Long Chen's body had now reached the peak. With the help from Li Jing and the other two, the followers of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect soon turned into dried out corpses.

The maidens did not faint in fear after seeing this terrifying scene. In their eyes, what were being killed were beasts, and no matter how they died, it was a release for them.

Everyone's eyes shifted to the source that was swallowing all the blood. Those who had never seen Long Chen before were now guessing what was going on.

"These bastards wanted to use our blood to cultivate, but instead, he absorbed their blood. This must be the judgment given by the heavens!"

Yang Lingqing stared at the scene, and then at the man.

It was not the first time that his might had become uncontrollable. There were multiple secrets in Long Chen's body, and these were what helped him to get stronger.

Seeing his followers dying one by one and he himself almost turning into a leader of none, the sect leader was ready to spit out flames.

“Grandmother Huang, kill that Abstruse Shadow Body!”

The sect leader yelled, but with a turn of his head, realised that Li Jing was already battling Grandmother Huang. Both of them were initially at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, but Grandmother Huang was now restricted by Long Chen’s Blood Transmutation. In no time, she was stabbed by Li Jing’s flying dagger, and the fresh blood within her body gushed out and gathered towards Long Chen.

“Ah!”

She produced a miserable shriek, and her originally wizened body shrivelled. Soon enough, she, like other followers of the sect, turned into a dried up corpse.

The people of the sect collapsed one after another and turned into corpses. This scene was extremely spectacular, and after Grandmother Huang died, the followers at the dragon pulse realm could not hold on any longer and collapsed.

The sect leader was stunned, because he now had nobody to command. Crazy enough, none of the people of the sect had survived!

As long as they were at the dragon pulse realm, they had been killed by Long Chen’s Blood Transmutation. Those who weren’t at the dragon pulse realm were, with the aid of Li Jing and the other two, killed. Long Chen had killed over a thousand people!

He had never imagined that he would turn into a homicidal maniac, but this was not the time to worry about this. The moment the blood of Grandmother Huang, an expert at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm entered his body and transmuted into crimson real Qi, the boundary between the initial and perfect mastery stage shook.

Boundless crimson real Qi surged around his dantian, and the Human Dan there began to revolve intensely, bearing the inexhaustible real Qi as it entered. While revolving, it rapidly shrunk.

“Is this the might of the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm? Only this level of strength can be considered the Human Dan Realm...”

Dissipating the ability of Blood Transmutation, this underground city finally regained its original appearance.

However, the situation now was that besides the sect leader, everyone in the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect was dead.

Dried up corpses lined the area and presented a terrifying sight.

Long Chen and the sect leader stood by the blood pool, while on the other end, Li Peng and Li Cheng went to save those girls. Li Jing, meanwhile, had assisted Yang Lingqing off the metal pillars and met up with Li Peng.

Though such a huge change had transpired, everyone was still feeling heavy at heart. This was because the most powerful sect leader was still unharmed.

Blood Transmutation was only effective towards cultivators at the dragon pulse realm. Cultivators at the Human Dan Realm, such as Grandmother Huang, would be able to hold on if not for Li Jing's attacks.

For the sect leader, though this could hinder his movements, it was not enough to hurt him.

This Blood Transmutation was varied from before. Long Chen had used it while he was in a very tight spot, and the difference was that it was a large-scaled attack.

This move was essentially blood transmutation, but it had another name, which was 'Blood Engulfing Zone'!

The sect leader's reddened eyes now shifted towards Long Chen.

"This time, all of you will die!"

Chapter 130 – Killing the Sect Leader

Everyone belonging to the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect was dead, but nobody could let down their guard yet, because the sect leader was still alive. He was the root of the sect, and only with his death could the sect be considered destroyed.

However, it was a fact that killing the sect leader was a very difficult task.

After Li Jing handed Yang Lingqing over to Li Cheng and Li Peng, she headed towards Long Chen, who was currently facing the sect leader and definitely under immense pressure.

“Long Chen, let me help!”

Seeing Li Jing about to intervene in Long Chen and the sect leader’s fight, Long Chen suddenly exclaimed, “Elder Sister Li, just go back. I’ll take care of this bastard alone.”

“What?”

Li Jing was in a daze, but Long Chen’s resolute gaze was hard to defy and Li Jing halted in her footsteps.

“He’s an expert at the Earth Dan Realm. You’re not a match for him!”

Li Jing’s concern for him still did not change his mind.

Seeing Long Chen waving her away, Li Jing could do little but withdraw. At this moment, the sect leader turned to shoot her glance, “What are you so anxious about? When it’s your turn, I’ll kill you myself!”

His icy, bloodthirsty gaze landed on Long Chen.

“I don’t know what demonic move that was, but you destroyed the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect that I painstakingly established. In that case, I’m going to drink your blood!”

Long Chen was now in his strongest condition. He was in the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, which meant he was truly at the Human Dan Realm. The power he now held was more than ten times of what he previously had.

He had only been able to barely contend with his opponent before. Now, he was now filled with confidence.

Turning to an emotional Yang Lingqing, he gave her a look of confidence before facing the sect leader.

“Enough with the bullshit. From hereon, you’ll see the real stuff.”

“You’re still unrepentant and fearless...”

Ferocious glints of red could be seen in the sect leader, Yan Chixue’s pupils, now giving him a more savage aura. It was evident that he was much more furious than before, charging towards Long Chen with his most powerful killing technique!

“I told you. None of you will be able to leave this place alive today!”

With a shout, Yan Chixue transformed into a bloody arrow, piercing towards Long Chen.

“The only person dying will be yourself!”

Feeling his own formidable strength, Long Chen increased his speed by ten times instantly.

Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, begin!

“A movement battle technique? It’s just an elementary profound grade movement technique. How can it compare to my Blood Shadow Step that is at the middle profound grade?”

The two launched their techniques and soared in the air, giving a feast for the eyes of their audience. The two figures were like a whirlwind, whizzing about fiercely and creating whooshing sounds.

“Huh? How are you so fast?”

Yan Chixue’s astonished voice travelled over, and the two suddenly clashed at this moment, both knocked backwards.

The immense force from Long Chen’s fist caused Yan Chixue’s expression to change.

“So you’re already at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm?”

However, there's still a large disparity between the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm and the Earth Dan Realm!"

Long Chen could already make some comparisons between his and Yan Chixue's strength through this battle.

"After attaining the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, things are really quite different."

Long Chen knew that besides Yan Chixue, everyone was staring at him anxiously. If Long Chen were to lose, that meant all of them could not escape the fate of death!

This was an incredibly crucial battle.

"So what if your speed increased? If you have the guts, don't run!"

At this point, Yan Chixue felt like he could not catch up to Long Chen when he was using Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, which made him want to vomit blood. Long Chen was now like a mud fish, slippery and difficult to grasp hold of, and all his attacks were in vain, causing him to become even more furious.

He had developed his somewhat calm temperament in these ten or so years, and this was now completely wrecked by Long Chen today.

"Then I'll give you what you desire!"

At this moment, Long Chen suddenly turned back.

Seeing Long Chen no longer dodging, Yan Chixue snickered and released his Crimson Seal once more, but this time, it was much more powerful than before. The wrath in Yan Chixue's heart was now enough for him to unleash his most formidable attack.

"Long Chen, die! Crimson Seal!"

The second he turned, Long Chen had also unleashed his most powerful move.

After reaching the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, his methods in using this middle profound grade battle technique had matured, and he could basically bring out the full power of Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist!

"So that's how it is! Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Piercing Earth

Demonic Sun!”

At the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, there was ten times more real Qi within. Just in terms of real Qi, Long Chen was on about the same level as an Earth Dan Realm cultivator. With his Thunder Flame Physique, Long Chen knew that Yan Chixue was probably not a match for him.

The Piercing Earth Demonic Sun that he used once more was stronger than before, and Yan Chixue, who was using his Crimson Seal, suddenly noticed the black demonic sun that was about ten times bigger than before above him. In that moment, his expression changed.

“How is that possible? He’s still at the Human Dan Realm!”

While Yan Chixue was still in shock, the two of them clashed powerfully, but the situation was now the exact opposite.

Before this, Long Chen had not been able to rival Yan Chixue, but this time, under Long Chen’s Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Crimson Seal had been completely exhausted, while a large part of the attack engulfed Yan Chixue. Under his stunned, despairing gaze, he was engulfed and turned into charcoal.

Yan Chixue, who had initially been in good condition, suddenly turned into charcoal in a second, still standing at the same spot. Meanwhile, Long Chen was completely fine and dispelled his Dragon Soul Transformation, chuckling as he glanced in Yang Lingqing’s direction.

“All done. My good sister, aren’t you going to say anything?”

Nobody made a sound. It was dead silent.

Only when Yan Chixue’s corpse turned into flying ashes and piled on the ground did people come back to themselves.

Those girls obviously had no idea of how powerful Long Chen was. All they knew was that he had won and they were safe, and naturally began to cheer.

Li Jing and the other two were aware of Long Chen’s strength, but Long Chen had somehow killed the sect leader and resolved their crisis. The very idea of it was inconceivable to them.

“Long Chen really killed the sect leader?”

Li Jing's teeth chattered as she asked the two brothers for confirmation.

Li Peng looked at the pile of black powder and nodded with difficulty, "I think so."

She then looked at Long Chen who was looking indifferent and laughing mischievously, and finally believed it.

"This guy should be quite highly regarded in the Lingwu Family. If he works a little harder, he might even be accepted into the inner faction!"

She sighed ruefully, and brought Yang Lingqing to Long Chen.

From the moment Long Chen used Blood Engulfing Zone, Yang Lingqing knew that the situation had changed.

She had guessed that Long Chen would pull through despite the massive disadvantage. This was not the first time this had happened, but it was also because this was not the first time that Yang Lingqing was particularly touched.

"Brother..."

Limping a little, Yang Lingqing approached Long Chen.

"Give me a hug. You're my sister; there's no need to be shy."

Long Chen spread his arms, looking like a gentleman.

"No!"

Yang Lingqing initially was a little uncomfortable, but was quickly teased into laughter by Long Chen.

"I saved you, and you can't even give me a hug? Sigh, this isn't worth it. If I'd known, I would have let that guy drain your blood and let you end up like those people."

As he spoke, Long Chen pointed towards the dried up bodies.

Upon seeing them, Yang Lingqing furrowed her brows and doubtfully asked, "Is it alright to kill so many people?"

Long Chen was also stunned, and only then did he realise that he had taken the lives of numerous people. The thought suddenly made him uncomfortable.

“Long Chen, don’t think too much of it. The people who deserve to be killed will have to be killed anyway.” Lingxi suddenly spoke up.

Long Chen was not one to take things too hard, and he could only keep this thought deep inside. He then eyed Yang Lingqing with a roguish expression, “Grandfather and your father are both waiting for you. Let’s go home now.”

At the word ‘home’, Yang Lingqing was suddenly in tears. Without the young man in front of her, she would never be able to return home, nor see the people she missed the most.

“Alright, let’s go home.”

She silently walked by Long Chen’s side, wiping her tears and suddenly mischievously looping her arm around Long Chen’s.

Feeling the warmth from her body, Long Chen was rather surprised and looked quite satisfied.

“That expression of yours is disgusting.” From within the Lingxi Sword, Lingxi got jealous.

Long Chen pretended not to have heard it and brought Yang Lingqing out of the underground city. En route, he turned back and yelled brightly, “Elder Sister Li, I still have some things to do so I’m leaving first. The Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is no more, so help me send each and every one of these young ladies home. If there’s any trouble, come find me in the Green Sun Hall in the Lingwu family’s Green faction!”

Long Chen had already completed the most difficult part of this mission, and Li Jing as well as the other two were very willing to take care of everything else.

“Goodbye, little Long Chen!”

All the beautiful young ladies remembered Long Chen’s name well.

They had only just regained hope from their initial despair, and were still slightly confused. However, the young man by the name of Long Chen was someone they would remember for the rest of their lives.

“Let’s hope we can meet again.” Watching them leave, Li Jing shook her head and laughed wryly.

Long Chen still remembered the exit out of the underground city, and just as he was about to leave, two people arrived through the entrance. The formidable strength they possessed caused Long Chen to stiffen.

Chapter 131 – Beitang Mo

Long Chen was alarmed, but upon noticing one of them was an acquaintance, he heaved a sigh of relief.

Of the two people, one was the charming Liu Lan.

Liu Lan was now walking behind the man, looking deferential. The languid and seductive ways she previously had disappeared, and in place of it was solemnness and graveness.

Liu Lan's behaviour gave Long Chen a clue—the person that was walking with her must have a substantial amount of power and status.

Long Chen glanced over and found that this man was around twenty years old, and his features were quite plain. However, his eyes were like two deep abysses, like ancient wells with no ripples, giving off a very profound aura.

Of the young experts Long Chen had seen who were weaker than Mo Xiaolang, there was Dongfang Tianyu at the Heaven Martial Realm. However, while Dongfang Tianyu seemed more impressive than this young man, Long Chen could tell that he was far from this person's match.

“Long Chen, this person is a cultivator at the Heaven Dan Realm. He's just one rank weaker than Mo Xiaolang.”

Lingxi's weak voice sounded by Long Chen's ear.

Such an expert had even gathered Liu Lan's respect, which meant he was probably a member of the inner faction of the Lingwu Family.

Long Chen concluded.

The young man entered the underground city with Liu Lan, and even they were stunned at the sight that met them.

From their line of sight, none of the girls who had been kidnapped had died, and the thousand followers of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect had somehow turned into withered corpses.

This was far from what they had expected to see.

The scene in front of them was far too spectacular.

Long Chen brought Yang Lingqing and stood before Liu Lan, who turned her attention to him, looking appalled.

“Long Chen, you did this?”

Feeling the man’s profound, abyssal gaze on himself, Long Chen had no choice but to nod.

Liu Lan was stunned, and sighed after a long while. From the situation here, it was obvious that Long Chen had solved the issue. Liu Lan exchanged a glance with the man, and then spoke to Long Chen, “Where’s the sect leader?”

Long Chen honestly pointed to the black ashes on the ground, “That’s him. He looks quite good, doesn’t he?”

While asking this, Liu Lan already had some expectations, but she still found it hard to accept the truth even after seeing Yan Chixue at the Earth Dan Realm burnt to ashes.

When she had first seen Long Chen, he was merely at the eighth dragon vein, and Liu Lan had hence not paid much attention to him. Unexpectedly, Long Chen then killed Huang Feiyang and defeated Feng Wutian, and even killed Yan Chixue who was at the Earth Dan Realm!

“Not bad for someone at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm to be able to kill a person at the Earth Dan Realm, .”

The young man spoke matter-of-factly.

Whether it was the tone of his voice or his movements, everything seemed quite calm, but it was precisely this calmness that Long Chen feared. It felt as if all his thoughts could not escape this person.

Even Liu Lan had to believe what this young man had said. She then introduced him, “Young master Mo, he is Long Chen from my Green Sun Hall. Yang Lingqing is his sister.”

She then turned to Long Chen, “Long Chen, this is Young Master Mo of the Northern Black Tortoise* in the Lingwu Family. Quick, greet him.”

(TL note: Northern Black Tortoise is written as Beitang, which is his surname.)

“Long Chen greets Young Master Mo.”

Though he had no idea why this person was here, Long Chen was more than aware that he lacked strength and therefore needed to behave well. If Liu Lan could easily put him in order, then so could this Beitang Mo, which was why he bowed hastily.

He shot a glance at Long Chen, and then shifted his gaze over to Yang Lingqing, who had been holding onto Long Chen. His calm voice sounded.

“Yang Lingqing, are you willing to join my Northern Black Tortoise in the Lingwu Family?”

These sudden words stunned both Long Chen and Yang Lingqing. Li Jing and the other two who were behind them were similarly confused.

Seeing Long Chen and his sister bewildered, Liu Lan immediately gave him a meaningful look and added, “The Beitang martial clan uses Yin and water type battle techniques as their foundation. Long Chen, your sister has the Abstruse Shadow Body, and as long as she enters the Beitang Family, the techniques there will definitely help her improve leap and bounds. It would be easy for her to even surpass you.”

Ever since Long Chen had entered the Lingwu Family, Yang Lingqing knew how power was divided in the Lingwu Family. She also knew that Long Chen had merely joined the outer faction, while the inner faction was where the truly strong were.

Someone was now inviting her to just enter the inner faction of the Lingwu Family like this?

Yang Lingqing had just escaped death, and the people she wished to see the most was her parents and family. The appearance of Beitang Mo caused her some worry, and she did not dare speak and hid beside Long Chen.

Seeing this young girl so flustered, Liu Lan really felt like she was going crazy. This was a great opportunity that many could only wish for.

“Long Chen, you can make the decision. Your sister hasn’t been able to obtain a suitable cultivation method, which is why she’s still at the Dragon Pulse Realm. If she enters the Northern Black Tortoise, she’ll definitely soar to the skies. If not

for Gan Lin having heard your conversation, I wouldn't have known about your sister having the Abstruse Shadow Body. Honestly speaking, the reason why we're here is to help you take care of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect, but I guess we were late."

The gears in Long Chen's mind were now turning quickly.

"If it's the Abstruse Shadow Body, then she does need a compatible cultivation method to blossom. In a year or two, she'll definitely be able to reach the Heaven Dan Realm. Long Chen, it's not bad if your sister enters this Northern Black Tortoise."

Lingxi had much knowledge, and her opinions helped clear Long Chen's doubts.

Beitang Mo, who had been silent all this while, exclaimed, "Think about it. Your life will be completely different if you choose to enter. If you don't want to be a nobody for your entire life, leave with me. You don't need to worry at all. Your brother will gain access to even more resources in the Lingwu Family, and your own family can be secretly protected by Earth Dan Realm cultivators. All the people around you will benefit because of you."

Though Beitang Mo's words were concise, they cut right to Yang Lingqing's concerns. She raised her heads, eyes sparkling as she watched him, speaking clearly, "Do you mean my brother will be nurtured even more than he is now, and nobody will be able bully my family?"

"Unless the enemy is more powerful than the Lingwu Family."

Beitang Mo smiled slightly, a boundless self-confidence held within.

Everyone knew that in the Yuanling County, there was no power stronger than the Lingwu Family. In other words, as long as the Yang Family was still in Yangling County, they had nothing to worry about.

"Brother..."

Just by looking at her eyes, Long Chen could tell Yang Lingqing had made her choice.

"It's your life, so decide by yourself. No matter what, I'll stand by your side and

protect you.”

Long Chen laughed wryly. He was really quite happy for Yang Lingqing, since it was very difficult to enter the inner faction even from the outer faction.

“No.”

Yang Lingqing giggled craftily, “It’ll be my turn to protect you, as well as our family!”

Hearing her words, Liu Lan heaved a sigh of relief. Yang Lingqing had agreed.

Seeing this girl not going crazy with excitement at being invited to the Lingwu Family, only wanting to protect her family, Beitang Mo nodded.

“Alright, I’ll join you.”

Yang Lingqing answered formally.

Beitang Mo smiled, “Many years later, you’ll definitely be grateful for the decision you made today. Northern Black Tortoise is the most suitable place for you to be.”

Long Chen could guess the uniqueness of the Abstruse Shadow Body. After all, how could blood that was equal to over a thousand young girls’ blood be anything simple? Hence, Northern Black Tortoise needed new blood like this to cultivate, which might one day even be its trump card.

Since Yang Lingqing had already agreed, Long Chen had nothing to say. He spoke to Beitang Mo, “Young Master Mo, my sister just escaped death, and her grandfather and father are both waiting outside worriedly. I was thinking we could go back home for a while and take care of matters there before returning to the Lingwu Family. What do you think?”

Beitang Mo nodded, “That’s not an issue. Lingqing, I’ll wait for you at Northern Black Tortoise. The Earth Dan Realm cultivators that I told you about will be dispatched to Poplar Town by today. That’s all for now. Till we meet again.”

Having said this, Beitang Mo did not hang around and headed outside. Liu Lan looked towards Long Chen, “Leave this place as soon as possible. I’ll help to send those girls back.”

Liu Lan was slightly late in getting Beitang Mo here, but it was easy to tell her

intentions were true. She now spoke to him amiably, and Long Chen did not bicker with her. He thanked her and, with Yang Lingqing in tow, left the underground city.

“Long Chen, remember to return to the Green Sun Hall. You still have a chance for the Inner Faction Selection.”

Before Long Chen left, Liu Lan exclaimed. When Long Chen’s figure disappeared from the underground city, Liu Lan shifted her gaze, looking emotional.

“If he can get a place in the inner faction, he might be of help to me. But this doesn’t seem to be fair to him...”

Long Chen, of course knew nothing of what Liu Lan was thinking. When Long Chen brought Yang Lingqing before Grandfather Yang and Yang Yuntian, their eyes filled with tears.

“Chen’er, Qing’er...”

Seeing Yang Lingqing crying in Yang Yuntian’s arms, Grandfather Yang was filled with pride and was pleasantly surprised. While looking towards Long Chen, he wiped his tears, “Chen’er, you are what I am most proud of in my life...”

Long Chen laughed, “You’re wrong. You should be most proud of your precious granddaughter, because she’s been invited to enter the inner faction of the Lingwu Family.”

Chapter 132 – Eccentric Man

It had been a long since he had returned to Poplar Town. Now that he was back and realised how backwards it was, Long Chen had an indescribable sense of superiority.

Here, he was the only powerful person here. Nobody was on the same level as him.

“I can’t stay here for my whole life, or else this will be my limit. Now that the matter with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect has been dealt with, I’ll focus on staying in the Lingwu Family. Lingqing is going there as well; that is the place that I should stay in.”

“In the Lingwu Family, Liu Yuan did not dare offend the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect on my behalf. Unexpectedly, Beitang Mo paid no heed to all considerations and came to the headquarters of the sect with the intentions of killing people. Beitang Mo is really something. He’s even sending Earth Dan Realm cultivators to protect the Yang Family. This way, the Yang Family will definitely not come to any harm.”

The Yang Family had no worries for the future now that the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect had disappeared. From hereon, Long Chen just needed to put all his focus on the Lingwu Family.

The people of the Yang Family had heard the news that Yang Lingqing was going to enter the inner faction of the Lingwu Family. Everyone in the family, or really everyone in Poplar Town celebrated for a whole day.

Long Chen and Yang Lingqing were celebrities of Poplar Town and even of quite a few towns surrounding them.

Long Chen had initially been a no-good hedonistic son born to rich parents who had slept his life away. Now, however, things had taken a 180-degree turn. He now had the image of a shining hero, which he was extremely proud about.

Two days later, under the eyes of the numerous people in Poplar Town, Long Chen brought Yang Lingqing away from Poplar Town and headed in the direction

of the Lingwu Family.

“Lingqing, we’ll walk for awhile more before I introduce you to someone very important to me.”

The two of them each rode a good horse and were jolted along the way.

Long Chen had already told Yang Lingqing about the Ebony Scaled Horse she had gifted him. Yang Lingqing did not blame him, and instead reproached herself for the trouble it had caused Long Chen.

“Very important?”

Glancing at this young man who had been born on the same year, month and day as she had, Yang Lingqing was quite curious about how important this could be.

Riding into the forest after passing through the town, Long Chen turned back, looking like he had some secret. Yang Lingqing now glanced around and asked, puzzled, “Is the important person you talked about here? Why can’t I see anyone?”

Long Chen laughed and snapped his fingers, “Little Xi, come out!”

Under Yang Lingqing’s startled gaze, Long Chen’s stud earring suddenly emanated bright white light. A figure that was about two metres tall and was shrouded in white mist floated out. Soon, she appeared before Yang Lingqing and it was evident that her looks were the type enough for the masses to go crazy

Yang Lingqing was immediately stunned.

“Wha-What is this?”

“How rude. This is your sister-in-law.” Long Chen made a weird sound.

“Sister-in-law?”

Yang Lingqing was even more puzzled.

Lingxi was humiliated at being called Long Chen’s sister-in-law and spat at Long Chen, and then skilfully smiled at Yang Lingqing, trying to act like a senior to her, “Sister Lingqing, my name is Lingxi. Don’t listen to his rubbish; I’m not your

sister-in-law.”

When Lingxi began to speak, Yang Lingqing stared at the two of them in shock and gloomily asked, “You two... Explain this to me! What’s going on?”

Long Chen spent much energy and told Yang Lingqing some information regarding Lingxi, and also spoke about what they had gone through together.

After hearing that Lingxi had rescued Long Chen countless times, Yang Lingqing quickly accepted this girl. Lingxi was in a rather pitiful situation now, and Yang Lingqing couldn’t help but take pity on her. The two of them got on good terms with each other soon enough, completely forgetting about their middleman, Long Chen.

Seeing them playing together and treating him as a third party, Long Chen had a sour expression on his face.

It was Lingxi that had suggested to meet Yang Lingqing. Long Chen was the closest to Yang Lingqing and agreed cheerfully. Unexpectedly, this was how the situation had turned out. Long Chen could only complain deep inside as they became more familiar with each other.

“It’s all karma...”

While Lingxi and Yang Lingqi were having fierce conversations, they soon arrived at Yuanling City. Once they were there, there were already people waiting at the gates to the city to receive Yang Lingqing. When this happened, Lingxi had no choice but to return to Long Chen’s earring.

The person receiving Yang Lingqing was Beitang Mo.

Due to Yang Lingqing’s connection to Long Chen, Liu Lan had accompanied Beitang Mo out. Two famous people of the Lingwu Family had gathered here, which attracted much attention.

“Looks like they’re welcoming someone.”

After a while, Long Chen and Yang Lingqing appeared before them, and everyone then knew who Beitang Mo was looking for.

“Where is this girl from, for even Beitang Mo and Liu Lan to be waiting here?”

“Who knows? There’s one just at the Human Dan Realm, while the other is at

the Dragon Pulse Realm. In Yuanling City, they're like needles thrown into an ocean. They aren't enough to cause any ruckus."

"Exactly. Don't consider how bright and beautiful Yuanling City looks. How many geniuses have been buried here?"

Under envious and jealous gazes, Long Chen and his sister went to Beitang Mo's side. Without another word, he brought them into a luxurious carriage and headed towards the Lingwu City.

On the way, Beitang Mo did not speak a word. Only after they were almost there did he speak to Yang Lingqing, "Once we're at the Beitang Family*, listen to everything I tell you to do, though I'm not worried since you seem obedient and not the type to cause trouble. If you have any questions, ask me."

(TL note: Beitang Family = Northern Black Tortoise)

"Alright, I understand." Yang Lingqing nodded.

Yang Lingqing's mind was blank, but Long Chen was very worried.

Yang Lingqing was merely at the Dragon Pulse Realm, but an exception had been made for her to enter the inner faction. There were sure to be many who were jealous of her, and even if she did not provoke anyone, there were definitely people finding excuses to provoke her. If she was not careful, she might even die without knowing what happened.

Holding Yang Lingqing's hand, Long Chen could tell that she was actually nervous, but was not displaying it.

"Qing'er, remember this well. If there's anyone who bullies you, tell me, no matter how strong they are. I'll take care of them for you."

While separating, Long Chen leant his head towards Yang Lingqing's ear and exclaimed in a tone that could not be declined.

"I understand, but if I don't do anything, nobody will bully me."

Though Yang Lingqing was afraid, she tried her best to squeeze out a smile and waved her little fist at Long Chen, threatening him, "You need to take care of Sister Lingxi, or else I'll hurt you."

Long Chen had no choice but to nod, smiling wryly.

The two of them then truly separated. However, Beitang Mo seemed to have heard what Long Chen said to Yang Lingqing. He looked at Long Chen closely, “Seems like you’ve already submitted the application for the inner faction selection?”

Long Chen nodded.

Beitang Mo suddenly snickered, “Don’t be so naive. The enemies Lingqing will be taking on are going to be far from what you can handle. All you need to do is try harder so that it doesn’t reflect badly on Lingqing.”

Having said this, he flung his robes and left.

As Yang Lingqing left as well, she kept turning back to look at him occasionally. He suddenly realised that she would have to face a lot of matters alone in the future, and Long Chen couldn’t help but be concerned.

“I don’t know if it was the right decision for her to enter the Lingwu Family...”

Long Chen pondered over this matter. In order for Yang Lingqing not to be bullied in the Lingwu Family, he would need to get stronger.

“He said that I don’t have any qualifications to deal with the opponents that Lingqing will face? Hehe, just watch and see...”

Anyone who had intentions of causing trouble for Yang Lingqing had to be within the inner faction. Long Chen knew that in order to protect her, he first had to enter the inner faction.

“I wonder if I’ll have a chance in this inner faction selection...”

Long Chen’s gaze was filled with an unyielding stubbornness as he watched Yang Lingqing leave. Liu Lan took all this in and smiled sweetly, “So? Are you unconvinced?”

She was naturally referring to what Beitang Mo had said before he left.

“I won’t accept it for now. I’ll convince you in the future.”

Long Chen raised his head and stared straight at Liu Lan, spouting very big words.

“You’ve turned gutsy.”

Liu Lan shook her head, seeming to exclaim coquettishly.

Looking at this resolute young man, she felt slightly dazzled.

Noticing her eyes that had turned a little strange while staring at him, Long Chen was startled and laughed, “Why are you looking at me with such emotion? Are you planning to prey on young men?”

Having said this, Long Chen suddenly felt an icy-cold gaze on himself and turned. At a pavilion far away, a young man was staring at him without moving. Long Chen couldn’t tell who it was, nor did he care.

Liu Lan did not get mad at Long Chen’s teasing and instead, played along with him and placed her fair fingers that were like cogongrass on his shoulder, “Of course I’m planning to eat you up. Would you let me?”

Long Chen suddenly went limp. He still found it difficult to tolerate such spicy words and immediately drew back, laughing in embarrassment.

“Coward...”

She rolled her eyes at him and got serious, “What are your plans?”

“Of course, it’s to obtain the beast spirit of the Enchanted Purple Dragon. Time is of essence; I won’t talk to you anymore. Bye.”

Without saying anything more, Long Chen went past her and, uncaring of Liu Lan’s fury, proceeded forth.

“Liu Lan seems to be too enthusiastic towards me, especially in such a public area. What does she want?”

Recalling the man who had been staring at him from the pavilion, Long Chen felt something was off.

“I didn’t even take his girl. What’s his problem?”

Chapter 133 – Not Closing the Door When Bathing

Back to the Green Willow Residence, Long Chen headed towards his home.

He was already at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, and by the request and arrangement of the Lingwu Family, he was now moved to where First Grade Disciples resided in. It was the first time Long Chen was going there, which was why he was unfamiliar with the route.

“There are 240 contribution points left, and it costs 300 points to get the Spirit Grass. However, old geezer Yang wants me to use 500 contribution points to exchange for the level 6 profound grade beast spirit because he thinks highly of me.’

“Then just go into the Sky Martial Realm!”

“Hm, I’ll first take a look and see what my new residence is like.”

While in Poplar Town, Long Chen had gotten more than enough rest, and it was a good time for him to use all that energy.

The Lingwu Family was unbelievably rich. All the buildings were very luxurious, and even Third Grade Disciples resided in rather elegant places, not to mention the First Grade Disciples.

Using his identity jade, Long Chen quickly found the doorway to a large courtyard. It seemed to be tiled with white jade and was a splendid mansion.

“Is this where I’m going to live? The Lingwu Family truly is generous.”

Just as Long Chen was planning to use the jade to open the door, Lingxi suddenly exclaimed, “Look at the house over there. The door isn’t closed properly, and the person inside seems to be the enforcer’s sister.”

“Liu Ling? Has she reached the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm too?”

Liu Ling was actually a neighbour to him, and she didn’t even close her door properly. Would it make sense for Long Chen not to pay her a visit?”

“After entering the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, she must

have her nose high up in the air. I'll go tease her for a bit!"

At this point, Long Chen opened the door to her courtyard and entered.

"The places where Grade One Disciples live in must be similar to where immortals must reside in."

"She seems to be in that room. I wonder what she's doing."

Lingxi could only sense where people were, but she had no idea what they were doing.

Long Chen stealthily pressed himself close to the door and pushed in. Just as he was about to play around and scare Liu Ling, he was suddenly stunned at the sight in front of him.

Liu Ling was now comfortably lying in a bathtub with her eyes closed.

Long Chen took a look and had pretty much seen everything.

"In a year or two, this girl is going to be like her sister..."

Long Chen felt his mouth go dry and turned to escape. At this moment, Liu Ling had also seen him and she covered her vital areas, giving a loud shriek.

"I'm doomed."

Long Chen hurriedly returned to his own residence and closed the door properly. Without his identity jade, Liu Ling would not be able to enter.

"She doesn't even close her door while she's bathing..."

Remembering her alluring body and fair skin, Long Chen regretted not seeing more, but he did not dare go over again.

"I think you're elated!"

Lingxi's furious voice travelled from the Lingxi Sword, and Long Chen felt a sharp pain in his ear.

"Little Xi, forgive me! It definitely wasn't on purpose!"

Long Chen kept trying to explain himself and he was pure. Only after that did Lingxi forgive him and said ruthlessly, "If you dare look again next time, I'll want your worthless life. Hmph!"

Even Long Chen had not expected this to happen. However, he knew that Liu Ling had once hated him, and with what had just happened, she would harbour even more hatred towards him and perhaps even cause him trouble.

“Whatever. She’s definitely outside waiting. I’ll leave after I fuse with more Thunder Flame Crystals.”

The real Qi he had at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm was much firmer than before, and could suppress even more Thunder Flame Crystals. While Long Chen was in Poplar Town, he had already fused with 21.

“Based on my calculations, my limit should be 30 now.”

Though he still had a level 1 Thunder Flame Physique, Long Chen’s body was able to be strengthened through fusion with the Thunder Flame Crystals.

The crystals were extremely effective. With each one, he could feel his strength increase.

“Three days have passed, and I’ve fused with the 25th. The Spirit Grass is a guarantee for Lingxi’s life, so I can’t waste anymore time. Looks like I’ll have to go to the Sky Martial Realm.”

Long Chen did not believe that Liu Ling would still be lying in wait outside. When he opened the door, he heaved a sigh of relief. As expected, there was nobody there, and he quickly headed towards the Sky Martial Realm.

Long Chen’s name was beginning to be known in the Green Faction, and most people knew him. However, Long Chen had yet to have any good friends in the Lingwu Family.

“The matter with the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect is finally dealt with. It’s time to live my own life.”

Long Chen was very confident in himself. This confidence came from the mysterious dragon jade that Long Qinglan had given him, as well as that mysterious drop of blood essence.

Dragon Soul Transformation, Blood Transmutation, and the other version of Blood Transmutation, Blood Engulfing Zone.

“Blood Engulfing Zone is even more bloody and cruel. Unless I’m in a dire

situation, I can't use it."

This was similar to a domain. The domain could affect everyone within, and it could even suppress the boiling blood Qi in them and cause their battle might to be reduced. If they were weak, basically all of them could be devoured by Long Chen.

"If used well, Blood Engulfing Zone would be an even more heaven-defying ability."

Long Chen knew that as long as it was related to blood, everything had to do with that mysterious droplet of blood essence.

"With such a powerful blood-related ability, that blood essence is probably that of the ancient ruler of blood and slaughter-the immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon!"

Lingxi furrowed her brows and spoke.

"But Long Chen, the immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon is very powerful. You need to hold fast to your principals in order not to be lost in the pursuit of strength. Use it as little as you can."

Long Chen kept Lingxi's warnings in mind.

Soon enough, Long Chen arrived at the Sky Martial Realm.

Compared to the Green Faction's competition before, the Sky Martial Realm was now bustling with life. There were around two thousand people in the Green Faction, and about a thousand were frequent visitors to the Sky Martial Realm. There were now two hundred or so people leaving and entering the Sky Martial Realm.

Within the Sky Martial Realm, there was one route to the Heaven Dan region, five to the Earth Dan region, and ten to the Human Dan region.

Long Chen was right about to enter the Sky Martial Realm and was looking around, when he felt a look of hatred focusing on himself. Long Chen turned, and who else could it be than Liu Ling, who was quivering in anger while glaring at him?

"Crap!"

Without even having the opportunity to escape, Liu Ling had already appeared before him. Long Chen noticed there was a middle-aged man wearing skintight clothing meant for cultivators, which had red and white alternating on it.

“He’s an Earth Dan Realm cultivator, but thankfully, he’s only just entered this realm.”

Now that he knew the strength of this middle-aged man, Long Chen was calm.

“You lewd bastard!”

Approaching Long Chen, Liu Ling could only grit her teeth and scolded, knowing she could not attack him here.

“Hm? What are you saying? I didn’t do anything to you, so why are you calling me that?”

Long Chen was fearless as he spoke with a thick skin.

“You’re still not admitting it. Three days earlier, didn’t you...”

At this point, someone made a loud shushing noise, and only then did Liu Ling realise that people were crowded around and watching her. Recalling her words, it might cause some misunderstandings and she went pale, fervently hoping for a hole to hide inside.

Previously, Liu Ling and Feng Wutian had been on good terms. Now that Feng Wutian had been defeated by Long Chen...

“Long Chen is pretty amazing. He dealt with Feng Wutian and even took care of Liu Ling.”

“Such a love-hate scene only appears in novels. I didn’t expect it to happen in real life.”

“Damn it, all the good stuff have been taken by pigs. I’m so talented, so why aren’t any of these happening to me?”

Amidst these discussions, Long Chen looked extremely proud, while Liu Ling felt like killing herself. All she wanted to do was to have it out with Long Chen, but just when she was about to act, the middle-aged man behind stopped her.

“Ling’er, follow me into the Sky Martial Realm.”

“No! Uncle Yan, I want to kill him!”

The middle-aged man stared at Long Chen coldly, “Are you going to enter the Sky Martial Realm?”

Seeing the provocation in his eyes, Long Chen did not back down, “Of course. Are you going to entertain me?”

Anyone could see that this expert at the Earth Dan Realm was preparing to teach Long Chen a lesson in the Sky Martial Realm. However, Long Chen, who was still at the Human Dan Realm, had taken on the challenge. He was truly fearless and unafraid of death.

“I told you, all the pigs that get the good stuff will be slaughtered sooner or later.”

“Looks like after defeating Feng Wutian, Long Chen’s becoming too cocky.”

Amidst the comments, Uncle Yan’s expression did not change as he held Liu Ling’s hand and spoke to Long Chen, “Well then, let’s meet in the Sky Martial Realm.”

Long Chen was about to reply, but Liu Ling suddenly began to laugh. “Long Chen, there’s something else you don’t know yet, right?”

Long Chen was stunned and answered, “Could it be that you’re planning to give me your heart after what happened?”

There was a roar of laughter from their audience, and Liu Ling really wanted to explode from her anger. Her voice trembled as she spoke, “My Brother Wutian entered the Earth Dan Realm, and he’s been recruited into the Southern Vermillion Bird Family. Long Chen, just wait to die!”

She then entered the Sky Martial Realm with Uncle Yan.

Long Chen reacted after a while and laughed bitterly, “Southern Vermillion Bird? Has the inner faction become so easy to enter lately?”

“It must be because he has the bloodline of the Vermillion Bird. Long Chen, that girl hates you to the bone, and she also has Feng Wutian backing her. She’s definitely going to cause trouble for you again.”

Lingxi explained with a sour expression on her face.

“Then let’s see who’s even more powerful! After being defeated by me once, they won’t be able to win against me ever again!”

At the mention of Feng Wutian, everyone knew that Long Chen was in deep trouble. Feng Wutian had lost to Long Chen while not having a clear mind. How could he take this lying down?

“He’s been doing well, but he’s much too haughty. Looks like he’s dead meat.”

Listening to the comments, Long Chen who had seemed impressive now had the opposite image.

“Just watch me!”

Long Chen did not bother defending himself and entered the Human Dan region within the Sky Martial Realm.

Chapter 134 – Gold Faction!

The Human Dan region in the Sky Martial Realm.

Long Chen wanted to kill the level 4 profound grade demonic beast. The reason he had entered through the Human Dan region was for insurance.

If he had entered directly through the Earth Dan region, there would be level 4 profound grade demonic beasts everywhere, and it would be a surprise if Long Chen was not killed there. On the other hand, if he entered the Earth Dan region through the Human Dan region, the demonic beasts were placed such that it was a gradual progression. The Heart Corrosive demonic beast previously, for instance, had been at the boundary between the Human Dan and Earth Dan region.

Within the Sky Martial Realm, there was a clear and boundless sky as per normal.

If one could kill quite a few level 3 profound grade demonic beasts, it would be possible to obtain around 300 contribution points. However, these beasts were not much of a challenge for Long Chen. Only level 4 profound grade demonic beasts were difficult enough for him.

The Sky Martial Realm belonged to the Lingwu Family. All those who entered were of various factions, and there might even be some from the inner faction.

However, because of how large the Sky Martial Realm was, Long Chen went deep into the Earth Dan region and had yet to see anyone else despite staying in there for more than half a day.

He did, however, meet with quite a few demonic beasts.

It was evident that there were more demonic beasts in the Sky Martial Realm than there were people in the Lingwu Family.

“The Sky Martial Realm really is a little Cosmos World used to raise demonic beasts. The Heavenly Spirit Qi in the air here is mixed with some Demonic Qi, which is very suitable for demonic beasts to grow and mature in. The Lingwu Family truly is rather lucky to be able to find a place like this.”

Seeing there was nobody around, Lingxi stayed on Long Chen's shoulders.

"I guess the Lingwu Family was established by relying on this Sky Martial Realm. Didn't you say this was a small-scaled ruin?"

"That's correct, but too much time has passed and everything here has been excavated."

"What a bunch of idiots. They should have left a few things behind for me..."

"I'm going inside. There's someone in front."

Lingxi was about to speak, but suddenly exclaimed and disappeared into the Lingxi Sword. Long Chen quickly became vigilant and raised his head while taking a few steps and going through the forest. He suddenly saw a group of people gathered together, and they seemed to be roasting meat.

With Long Chen's appearance, they all turned back to glance at him. These youngsters were actually around fourteen to fifteen years of age, but there were two who were already at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm.

Amongst these young men and women, there was a sloppy looking man who was drinking. He seemed to be almost thirty years old, and though he looked this way, it was evident that he was an expert.

"Another expert who just entered the Earth Dan Realm."

Yan Chixue, Uncle Yan from just now and this slipshod man had about the same level of strength.

"Little brother, are you in the mood for some drinks?"

Seeing that Long Chen was alone, his eyes brightened and he beckoned to Long Chen.

This was the first time Long Chen had met anyone so cordial in the Lingwu Family. Though his smile looked slightly nauseating, it was definitely from the bottom of his heart. Long Chen went over and laughed, "Of course I'm in the mood for drinks, but are you going to give me the good stuff?"

"Don't give me that rubbish, everything that I, Ma Tianyang drink, is the good stuff. Quick, take a seat, and eat and drink something. These little kids are eating the meat, but none of them can drink with me. It's terrible!"

Ma Tianyang did not hesitate and pulled Long Chen down beside him. He then grabbed a bit of meat that a youngster had just roasted and passed it to Long Chen, giving him a pot of wine and then exclaiming brightly, “Kid, are you going to give me face?”

“Of course! Since you’re a few years older than me, I, Long Chen, shall call you Brother Ma!”

After taking the good wine, Long Chen finished it with relish and showed the shining bottom of the pot to Ma Tianyang.

“Good, good! I’ve finally found a little guy that suits my tastes!”

Ma Tianyang became increasingly satisfied the more he looked at Long Chen.

The youngsters he was leading all wore beautiful garments, and every movement was graceful. Not to mention drinking, they even ate so slowly that Ma Tianyang was getting anxious.

At this moment, all of these youngsters stared at Long Chen coldly, especially the one who had had his meat stolen. His expression displayed his fury and he wanted to act upon his desires, but did not dare do so.

“Don’t bother with these brats. They’re all little geniuses and very arrogant. Come, Long Chen. Let us go somewhere else to drink heartily and have a great talk!”

Ma Tianyang ignored the unhappy looks from those youngsters and pulled Long Chen deep into the forest, finding a thick branch. They then sat facing each other and began to chat.

“I wonder which faction Brother Ma is from, and why are you bringing these young men and women into the Sky Martial Realm?”

Brother Ma smiled helplessly, “Well, I’m just an errand boy in the Gold Faction, and I’ve been given the task by the great elder to bring these little geniuses at the Human Dan Realm to see some level 4 profound grade demonic beasts. To be honest, this is really a very boring task. All of them are uncommunicative and always suspicious of each other. They’re great at competing with each other, but when it comes to drinking, all of them are useless!”

So that's what was happening. Long Chen ran his eyes over the youngsters who were quietly having their meal, and somewhat understood Ma Tianyang's feelings. Ma Tianyang was an irritable and very direct man, and what he could not stand the most were people like these. It really was difficult for him to have to stay with these youngsters, which was why it seemed he really regretted not having met Long Chen earlier.

"I come from the Green Faction, and the reason why I'm in the Sky Martial Realm is also to take a look at a few level 4 profound grade demonic beasts."

Long Chen drank and silently praised the flavour of this wine, and then spoke.

"This is high quality Monkey Wine. It took me a lot of effort to get it, so take it easy." He first took care of his own wine before looking Long Chen up and down, "Kid, you're not half bad. You're young, and yet you've already reached this level, and you're even much stronger than those youngsters. Others might think you're looking to die by coming in here alone and even heading towards the Earth Dan region, but I think you have guts. You're a real man!"

Ma Tianyang was a very honest man, and Long Chen found him very likeable.

"This meat was roasted well."

"It's because that kid roasted it well that I dared give it to you. It looks like he wants to teach you a lesson though."

Ma Tianyang glanced in the direction of the kids and laughed indifferently.

"My task this time is really very boring. Long Chen, if you really want to meet level 4 profound grade demonic beasts, how about you come with me?"

Long Chen initially wanted to reject Ma Tianyang's kind invitation, but it was fate that he had met someone he truly liked, so he nodded, "How can I reject Brother Ma's invitation? Besides, I haven't had enough of Brother Ma's wine yet."

Ma Tianyang patted Long Chen's shoulder roughly, "You really suit my tastes. If there's anything in the future, just find me in the Gold Faction. I'll make sure you get everything you need!"

The two chatted for awhile more, and by then, the youngsters were done with

their meal. Ma Tianyang brought Long Chen back, packed up, and they then set off together.

Those youngsters all glared at Long Chen, and the person whose meat had been stolen exclaimed unhappily, “Mentor Ma, is he coming with us?”

“Yes, he’s an amazing guy called Long Chen. Get along with him!” Ma Tianyang grinned.

“But Mentor Ma, isn’t this experience meant for just us four-starred geniuses of the Gold Faction? Why is someone who has nothing to do with this here?”

“Exactly, I don’t want anyone from another faction here to pull us down. Kid, which outer faction are you from?”

Ma Tianyang looked at Long Chen, feeling a little awkward at how Long Chen was being interrogated, but he merely laughed, “I’m from the Green Faction. Any problems with that?”

“Green Faction?”

That youngster sneered, “In the nine great outer factions, the Green Faction is ranked second from last. How can it be compared with our Gold Faction, which is first?”

This youngster’s obvious taunt really made Ma Tianyang feel humiliated. At first, he was full of smiles, but in the next second, his expression turned cold, and a powerful aura exploded forth. This caused everyone to get caught in a daze, not daring to move.

“The great elder has already said that I will be the one leading you. If you have any objections, tell the great elder. If you give me this rubbish now, I’m not going show mercy.”

Startled by Ma Tianyang, they did not dare speak in their embarrassment, but their gazes towards Long Chen were filled with poison.

The group of them continued their journey.

“Long Chen, you won’t be so petty as to bother with them, will you?”

“Of course not.”

Long Chen laughed, not minding at all. Long Chen and Ma Tianyang walked at the front, and on the way, Long Chen suddenly asked, “Brother Ma, in the nine great outer factions, is there such a thing as ranking?”

“Only idiots would care about that blasted thing. As long as we’re part of the outer faction, we all need to answer to the orders of the inner factions. Is there a point in a short person and a dwarf comparing heights?” Ma Tianyang asked matter-of-factly.

“In the nine outer factions, the Gold and Silver Factions are probably a little stronger, but it’s not to the point that their strength is that exceptional.”

Long Chen understood a little better.

“By the way, your potential rating should be around four stars, right? Did you sign up for the inner faction selection that’s coming up?”

Ma Tianyang began to talk about the contest, and Long Chen nodded, “The elder of my hall has already put up my name, and I’m on the waiting list.”

Ma Tianyang’s eyes brightened, “Not bad, kid! To be able to get the recommendation of the elder, you must be the top genius in one of the halls in the Green Faction!”

Long Chen laughed but did not deny this.

“I heard that in this struggle to enter the inner faction, there’s someone called Chu Yunxi in the Green Faction who’s already got a place. There’s also a genius like that in the Gold Faction, as well as tens of people on the waiting list.”

“Tens of people? That’s quite scary. Oh right, how strong is that genius you spoke of?”

“Him? He’s quite something. Since young, he’s always been famous and has been nicknamed the little prince of the Gold Faction. He’s eighteen and already a cultivator at the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm, and is much stronger than me. He’s known as the second genius of the outer faction.”

“Second?” Long Chen was stunned, “Then who’s the first?”

“The first?”

Ma Tianyang’s expression darkened, and he spoke in a low voice, “The first, ah,

he's a legend. His name is Mo Xiaolang..."

Chapter 135 – Five Great Divine Weapons

At this name, Long Chen's heart faltered and his expression changed.

"What's wrong?"

Ma Tianyang was bewildered at the change in Long Chen.

When Long Chen had asked Gan Lin about Mo Xiaolang, Gan Lin had been unwilling to give him information. Now, he had finally heard something about Mo Xiaolang from Ma Tianyang.

"Brother Ma, do you treat me, Long Chen, as a brother?"

He raised his head, eyes shining as he looked at Ma Tianyang.

Seeing Long Chen suddenly so serious, Ma Tianyang's expression turned sober as he nodded, "Though it hasn't been long since we met, I like your personality, so you can be considered half a brother of mine. If we experience a battle where we fight together and undergo a life and death experience, we will truly be brothers."

"Half a brother is enough. Honestly speaking, it's been less than a month since I entered the Lingwu Family. I would like to know more about Mo Xiaolang. Please tell me more!"

Ma Tianyang was startled and turned back to look at the elites of the Gold Faction, and then told Long Chen gravely, "The faction has orders for us not to spread more information about him. If you really want to know, though, I'm willing to take this risk. It's nothing much, but first, you'll need to tell me your relationship with him."

They didn't have much of a close relationship. Long Chen was basically grateful towards Mo Xiaolang, and he told Ma Tianyang everything.

Ma Tianyang nodded. Since Long Chen was concerned over Mo Xiaolang due to his gratitude towards him, it was evident that Long Chen was one to place importance on these ties and spoke in a low voice, "Just don't spread whatever I say. Mo Xiaolang's aptitude is really up there. Even the geniuses of the inner faction would be envious of him. At fourteen, he was already at the initial

mastery stage at the Heaven Dan Realm. Isn't that terrifying?"

Fourteen years old, and already at the initial mastery stage at the Heaven Dan Realm?

This basically meant that he was even stronger than old monsters like Liu Yuan, and was near the strength of the nine great elders of the outer factions. In Poplar Town, Long Chen was seen to be a monster, but in the Lingwu Family, Mo Xiaolang was the devil.

"When he was ten, Mo Xiaolang entered the Silver Faction and his cultivation improved by leaps and bounds, resulting in a commotion over him. If not for his own persistence, he would long since have entered the inner faction, instead of his landing himself in his current state."

Long Chen was puzzled. If Mo Xiaolang had such an aptitude, why had he not entered the inner faction?

"Why didn't he enter the inner faction?"

Ma Tianyang shook his head, "I don't know either. Do you know about the five great divine weapons of our Lingwu Family?"

"Divine weapons?"

Long Chen had never heard of it before.

"Of the five great divine weapons, four have been distributed to the four great inner factions. They are the Azure Dragon's Battle Halberd, Vermillion Bird's Devil Crest, White Tiger Sacred Sword and the Black Tortoise Deity Hatchet. The last is shared among the nine great outer factions and is named the Sky Wolf Phantom Blade. I think Mo Xiaolang might have wanted this blade, which was why he decided to stay in the outer faction. He did acquire it, and what is more terrifying is that not only did he gain the acknowledgement from the Sky Wolf Phantom Blade, he also trained in the 'Ways of the Sky Wolf Phantom', and can thus control it!"

Long Chen knew nothing about these five great divine weapons, but what he was most concerned about was Mo Xiaolang's whereabouts.

"Brother Ma, what happened to him after that?"

Ma Tianyang shook his head and sighed, "About this... I heard he killed a few experts in the inner faction and even some young geniuses. He's been locked in the Infernal Celestial Jails."

"What?"

Long Chen was stunned. He had assumed that Mo Xiaolang had fled after that, but he had been taken prisoner. He was grateful towards Mo Xiaolang, and at the thought that he was in this state, Long Chen did not feel good about this.

"How did this happen?"

"I don't know, but that's what I heard. I don't think they made public who died, but he can only blame himself for not entering the inner faction. Isn't it out of the norm for someone of the outer faction to kill the higher levels in the inner faction?"

At the thought of Mo Xiaolang, Ma Tianyang sounded a little regretful.

"Brother Ma, where is the Infernal Celestial Jail?"

Long Chen calmed himself and asked.

Ma Tianyang turned back and said grimly, "The Infernal Celestial Jail is where our Lingwu Family locks up all sorts of criminals. It's incomparably dangerous, and is located right in the centre of the Sky Martial Realm. There are high levelled profound great demonic beasts guarding, so it's best if you give up all thoughts of saving him. Though your aptitude is quite something, it'll be hard for you to pass through the Earth Dan region, much less the Heaven Dan region and the Infernal Celestial Jail."

"It's deep inside the Heaven Dan region?"

Long Chen hung his head, crestfallen.

Patting Long Chen's shoulder, Ma Tianyang sighed ruefully, "There is much to the Lingwu Family. The two of us are like two little ants in the eyes of this great family. If you want to do anything to make others acknowledge you, you should wait till you become a lion."

Hearing Ma Tianyang's words, Long Chen then decided to suppress thoughts of rescuing Mo Xiaolang deep within his heart.

Having discussed Mo Xiaolang, Long Chen felt even more solemn, and Ma Tianyang did not bother him. Instead, he slowed his footsteps and spoke to the youngsters who were gesturing at the two of them, “Little rabbits, we’re almost at the Earth Dan region. When we’re there, you need to focus 100%. If anyone dies, I’m not going to be responsible for you!”

Upon hearing that they were almost at the Earth Dan region, all of them shivered in fear and looked around worriedly. In order to protect them, Ma Tianyang joined them, together with Long Chen.

Seeing Long Chen settled here, one of the youngsters muttered, “Cramming yourself here so that we can protect you? How naive.”

Long Chen merely dismissed this with a laugh.

“Stay with them. I’ll probably be fighting in a while and I can’t take care of you. Just don’t run all over the place.”

Ma Tianyang arranged for Long Chen to be there.

However, the moment Long Chen went closer, these young people quickly avoided him and formed a group, staring at Long Chen hostilely, as if he had a strange smell on him.

“Damn it, those little bastards!”

Ma Tianyang was about to get cross, but Long Chen stopped him, “Brother Ma, it’s fine. Don’t worry. I promise I’ll be safe even if they aren’t around.”

Only then did Ma Tianyang nod. In his eyes, for Long Chen to obtain a recommendation from an elder, he had to be stronger than these little elites.

“What a coward. He only knows how to fawn on others.”

“He’s been sweet-talking Mentor Ma. What if he’s planning to get his hands on the beast spirit and demonic core? We can’t let him have his way!”

Long Chen could not be bothered with them and strolled to the back.

If not for Ma Tianyang, he wouldn’t even want to walk with them.

He had heard about news regarding Mo Xiaolang from Ma Tianyang, which meant he had made the right choice.

“If the information they gave me is right, there’s a level 4 profound grade Giant Demonic Vicious Bear in a cave not far away. This guy is quite violent and very powerful. Even cultivators who’ve just entered the Earth Dan Realm would find it hard to deal with, excluding me.”

At the name ‘Giant Demonic Vicious Bear’, the youngsters all quivered in fear, and one spoke, “Mentor Ma, is our training with this Giant Demonic Vicious Bear?”

Ma Tianyang impatiently turned back, “Kid, you’ve asked this more than ten times already. Are you afraid? If you are, get lost. You’re only watching the battle, and I’m not even getting you to do anything. What are you so scared of?”

Only then did this child duck his head, not daring to speak.

“The information says that there is a Giant Demonic Vicious Bear there, which is why I was asked to lead them. I’m a speed-type Earth Dan Realm cultivator, and I’ve killed three of these bears. In other words, I am somewhat experienced. These little kids are all treasures of the faction, so I hope nothing goes wrong!”

Ma Tianyang arranged for them to be in a hidden area from which they could view the battle. He gave Long Chen a meaningful glance, and then elegantly walked towards the cave.

This was a secluded, peaceful mountain stream, with a bluish green natural pond opposite it. Beside it was a cave full of moss, but it was evident there were signs of the moss being stepped over. The rocks that were nearby also had giant claw marks, which sent a chill down the spine.

“Look at how high the cave is. Looks like this Giant Demonic Vicious Bear is really huge...”

Long Chen estimated.

Walking into the nest of the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear, Ma Tianyang’s expression was grim as he picked up a rock and threw it into the cave with a whooshing sound.

“Stupid little bear, come out!”

The deafening cry of Ma Tianyang travelled into the cave, along with the rock.

Right after, the snarl of a bear sounded in the cave, causing the cave to tremor!

“What?”

Ma Tianyang, as well as Long Chen and the others, turned pale. What they heard were two different tones!

“There are two demonic beasts? To be able to stay in the same cave as the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear, it must also be a level 4 profound grade creature!”

At this thought, Ma Tianyang’s expression changed. Even he had not foreseen this.

He only had some time to tell everyone ‘run’, when two demonic beasts able to cover the skies pounced out, causing the earth to quake.

Long Chen raised his head and saw a giant bear that was already four metres tall while only on all fours, trembling with fear.

The two demonic beasts that had appeared were both Giant Demonic Vicious Bears. They had pitch-black fur all over, with thick and solid flesh that were like metal. Their teeth were like steel drills, eyes revealing their thirst for blood.

The two bears were roaring, and it was evident that Ma Tianyang had infuriated them. Those roars were so loud that they caused a girl to start crying in fear.

Seeing how furious these two bears were, Long Chen was slightly annoyed and looked towards their crotches. Then, all was clear.

“I was wondering why a single Giant Demonic Vicious Beast turned into two. So one of them found a lover and was trying its best to reproduce, but Brother Ma interrupted them. The result... is rather obvious...”

Chapter 136 – Giant Demonic Vicious Bear

Life often played tricks like this. The information given by the Lingwu Family had stated there would only be one Giant Demonic Vicious Bear here, but suddenly, the bear had lost its single status and was trying its best to create more young. This time, Ma Tianyang was in trouble.

Amongst level 4 profound grade demonic beasts, the Giant Demonic Vicious Beast was an elite existence in terms of strength and offensive power.

Ma Tianyang trained in a profound middle grade technique and could skilfully take care of one bear. Two, however, were more than he could handle.

There was one male and one female bear who had just charged out from the cave, pouncing towards Ma Tianyang. Ma Tianyang only had the chance to get the rest to escape first, before the bears had reached him. The bear's arm that was even thicker than his body grabbed towards his waist.

If he was caught, Ma Tianyang's slender waist would definitely be sliced into two.

Ma Tianyang got the youngsters of the Gold Faction to leave first. As long as they left, these Giant Demonic Vicious Bears would definitely not be able to catch him, and he would be able to flee. However, the issue was that these youngsters' hearts were far too weak.

The Giant Demonic Vicious Bears looked much too terrifying, which was why when they heard Ma Tianyang's flustered voice, most of them were intimidated. One of the girls cried, while the others began to quiver, their legs shaking. There were few who left obediently.

With such a loud sound coming from their side, how could the bears not have noticed with their hearing abilities?

This was their territory, and with the interruption, their wrath could not be calmed by anything other than Ma Tianyang being smashed into meat patty.

Noticing there were still people who were frail and weak around, one of them huffed roughly, and with a great roar, darted in Long Chen's direction. In the

blink of an eye, it had appeared before everyone.

“No!”

Ma Tianyang yelled, breaking away from his opponent and, with his greatest speed, chased that bear.

However, as he had been held back for that short moment, he was too late. Even if he hurried there, all that would be left were corpses.

With the strength of this bear, it would be impossible for the youngsters to even survive one strike from it.

Knowing they could not escape, Ma Tianyang’s eyes widened and he yelled, “Don’t flee, attack!”

As long as somebody stepped up to block that attack, Ma Tianyang would be able to get there in time.

Though Ma Tianyang was not exactly fond of these guys, they had statuses. Since young, they had grown in the outer faction of the Lingwu Family, and their parents were enforcers or even higher-ranking members in the family. If they were to die, not only the Gold Faction would lose value, but Ma Tianyang would also die.

As long as that one attack could be blocked, Ma Tianyang could get there in time. However, what made him speechless was that all the youngsters at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm who had the ability to block the attack had escaped far away in terror. All that was left were the weakest amongst them.

With just a palm strike, these guys would be flattened!

At the thought of this scene, Ma Tianyang’s heart went cold. Squeezing out all his potential, he tried to increase his speed further.

Seeing the figure of a bear reaching them from above, the thick smell of blood already in their nostrils, the little geniuses were on the verge of crying. They kept trembling and collapsed to the ground, and it was impossible for them to attack anyone.

“I’m doomed, I’m doomed...”

Ma Tianyang had lost all hope.

At the moment everyone had given up, a human figure suddenly collided with the body of the bear, and caused it to take several steps back. The human figure, too, retreated tens of metres before he could steady himself.

“Long Chen!”

Seeing that Long Chen had blocked the bear, Ma Tianyang, who had despaired, was now pleasantly surprised. He had forgotten about Long Chen, but unexpectedly enough, it was Long Chen who had come out at the last second and saved those guys.

“How is he unhurt?”

Though Long Chen had some dust and grime on his face, everyone could tell that he was unharmed, and could be said to be in perfect condition.

However, Long Chen was cursing inside.

“That lousy bastard. Since I haven’t undergone Dragon Soul Transformation, I really am not a match for it. Using the Seal of the High Profound Dragon, it was pushed just a few steps back.”

Those few steps of the bear amounted to ten or so metres. Now, Ma Tianyang could finally stand in front of Long Chen, blocking everyone from the two bears.

Those few guys had originally been prepared for their deaths, but at the last second, they could only gape at how Long Chen had rescued them. Recalling how they had scorned and taunted him before, a flush rose onto their faces.

With Ma Tianyang and Long Chen shielding them, they finally fled after recovering from their fear, meeting up with the rest who had already escaped.

“What’s going on? Weren’t you about to be killed?”

The people who had first escaped had not seen Long Chen’s act.

“It’s that guy from the Green Faction who rescued us...”

“That’s impossible. He’s only at the Human Dan Realm. How can he contend with a level 4 profound grade Giant Demonic Vicious Bear?”

“I think I saw it too, but I think that bear isn’t strong at all. Brother Bei,

Brother Dong, you're all cultivators at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm. You can go take care of it as well. Don't let that kid from the Green Faction take all the limelight!"

Hearing one of the girls say this, two young men who were slightly taller were filled with heroism. However, turning and seeing the frightful body of the bear, all that spirit was drained from them as they waved their arms, "That kid's too eager to show off. Let's leave this chance to him. The Gold Faction is a great faction, and should thus maintain the generosity that all great factions should possess."

"Wow, Brother Dong makes so much sense!"

A few of them immediately began to flatter him, completely unaware of how pitiful they had looked while fleeing just moments before.

On the other hand, Ma Tianyang had finally pinned down the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear. Though he was shocked at Long Chen's strength, it was still impossible to take care of two of these bears.

He then exclaimed, "Long Chen, help me bring those brats back to the Human Dan region. I'll shake off these two beasts and then meet you guys."

He had expected Long Chen obediently leave, but Long Chen stayed where he was and hurriedly spoke, "Brother Ma, aren't we here to see level 4 profound grade demonic beasts? Your Giant Demonic Vicious Beast seems to be able to give a good price."

Long Chen, who had initially been reliable, suddenly said something so ridiculous that Ma Tianyang was stunned. At this moment, the bear's attack approached once more.

"Quick, Long Chen! I can't hold on for much longer!"

However, what he now saw were dense crimson scales and sharp bone spurs emerging from Long Chen's body. In a second, Long Chen's body was covered and he looked completely different.

This appearance was extremely stylish.

"You're a beast cultivator?" Ma Tianyang was amazed.

“Let’s have a competition and see who takes care of their opponent faster. How’s that?”

Long Chen quirked his lips in a grin.

Ma Tianyang was confused.

Upon seeing Long Chen’s cool equipment, these youngsters were all stunned. One of the girl’s eyes became starry-eyed as she supported her chin with her palm, “How cool...”

“What cool? Those scales can withstand at most one pat from the bear before it shatters.”

The young man called Brother Bei spoke confidently.

“He’s a beast cultivator, which means he wasn’t at his peak condition just now. Brother Bei, do you think he’s stronger than you?”

Brother Bei pondered over it for a while and then shook his head, “Though he’s extraordinary and can be considered a great genius in the Lingwu Family, he’s still weaker than me.”

At this moment, Long Chen and Ma Tianyang were already engaged in battle.

When Long Chen had said that, Ma Tianyang did not have the time to react before Long Chen charged forward, slamming head-on into a Giant Demonic Vicious Bear.

“Seal of the High Profound Dragon!”

A crimson dragon crashed into the thick arm of a bear that was pouncing over. The two forces collided, and the bear let out a long roar and withdrew. There were already traces of the Seal of the High Profound Dragon on its arm.

“Is it even more furious now?”

Long Chen snickered and displayed his Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, quickly circling to the bear’s back. Meanwhile, the boundless demonic force from its body exploded out. Just its offensive power was much more formidable than the average cultivator who had just entered the Earth Dan Realm.

This bear was led away by Long Chen just like this.

“Trained in Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step? Looks like he can contend with that bear for a while more. I need to take advantage of this and take care of this bear as quickly as I can, and then aid him!”

Having made his mind, Ma Tianyang then fought with the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear!

Seeing these two battles, many of the young men and women widened their eyes. This was indeed what they had planned to see, though there was one more Long Chen and one more bear.

“Why do I feel like the kid from the Green Faction has a more entertaining fight?” The females murmured.

Though they had no idea how long Long Chen could hold on for, they now no longer looked down on him. Instead, they were filled with gratitude. If not for him, a few of them would have died just now.

However, at the thought of how they had teased Long Chen, it felt like they were slapping themselves as they watched him.

Long Chen was very skilled at dealing with the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear.

“The physical body of this bear is extraordinary. I have the Thunder Flame Physique as well, so it’s just as well that I can fight it out with you to compare who’s stronger!”

Chapter 137 – This Beast is Crazy

On Long Chen's body, crimson electricity flashed. Upon closer inspection, crimson flames could be seen on the surface.

After fusing with the Thunder Flame Crystals, the force from the lightning and flames constantly tempered his body, and had even fused with his real Qi.

After taking in 25 crystals, Long Chen's body had become extremely durable. Even when compared with medium profound-grade constitution techniques, his body would still be considered amazing.

With this powerful Thunder Flame Physique, Long Chen began an astounding battle against the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear.

At Ma Tianyang's side, he used exquisite footsteps to evade the bear, before finding opportunities to attack. However, it was different with Long Chen. He used his entire body and, with brute force, battled it out with the bear.

If anyone heard Long Chen was attacking a Giant Demonic Vicious Bear with brute force, they would think he was crazy. However, whether Ma Tianyang or anyone else present, they all knew he was not crazy, as he was not on the losing end. Instead, the bear roared miserably and with anguish, causing the surrounding trees to shake.

The two youngsters who had been bragging now did not dare speak.

Long Chen's battle was really quite terrifying. If either of them were in his position, they would be smashed into meat patty in a few seconds.

"Good luck!"

A few girls prayed. Long Chen's placing in their hearts was constantly rising. He now seemed not much weaker than Ma Tianyang, and even seemed to be more relaxed.

Ma Tianyang found a chance to glance at Long Chen and was astonished.

"I really am too unfortunate to have met with two Giant Demonic Vicious Bears, but I managed to have the fortune of making friends with Long Chen. In

general, my good luck outweighed the bad, and so I've made a profit here!"

He had initially been very tense, but could now relax and focus on his opponent.

"This is really an interesting fight, but I can't lose to Brother Ma."

After battling with the bear for a while till it was full of injuries, Long Chen began to lose interest.

All of a sudden, he drew back. The bear had the impression he was going to escape and immediately snarled. Unexpectedly, the moment Long Chen took several steps back, the real Qi in his body began to emerge with a rumble. He shouted, aimed his fist forward, and the world began to shake!

"Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Piercing Earth Demonic Sun!"

This image of a fist was like a black sun, striking the body of the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear and causing it to howl while its body sent flying. It began to fall in the direction of where the youngsters were.

Fresh blood sprayed all over.

The youngsters shrieked and immediately dispersed, before the bear landed on the ground with a thud.

When everyone looked over in fright, they realised there was a huge hole in its stomach. All its organs had been destroyed under Long Chen's attack, and the originally terrifying Giant Demonic Vicious Bear was now dead.

Long Chen rushed over and, with a wave of his arms, kept the corpse in his cosmos pouch, looking elegant while going about this. The youngsters stared at him in a daze, unsure of what to do.

"What? You want to steal my spoils of battle?" Long Chen fiercely questioned.

"Of course not, of course not..."

They quickly took several steps back, their footsteps uneven in their fear. Even Brother Bei and Brother Dong who had been bragging could only wish for a place to hide, after realising Long Chen was several times stronger than they were.

"That's better."

Long Chen smiled slightly and then headed towards Ma Tianyang's battle.

Ma Tianyang and the other Giant Demonic Vicious Bear had seen Long Chen's victory, and Ma Tianyang in shock. The bear, on the other hand, noticed the carcass of the female that had just been under him, and broke out in furious howls as the body was kept.

"That beast has gone crazy."

Ma Tianyang knew this was his chance.

"Brother Ma, I won this bet. Bring out whatever good wine you have and don't hide it, or else I'll look down on you."

While Ma Tianyang was battling, Long Chen teased him from a distance away.

Ma Tianyang instantly forced a smile in answer. Previously, Long Chen was younger than him, and he could thus reject his requests. However, Long Chen and he were now more familiar with each other, and with Long Chen's strength, they were at a similar level. Ma Tianyang knew that all of his precious treasures would probably be taken by Long Chen.

He could only vent his annoyance on the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear.

Ma Tianyang was proficient at speed and sneak attacks. He was naturally the nemesis of these bears, and it was rather effortless for him to deal with one Giant Demonic Vicious Bear. Besides, it has lost its will to fight, and moments later, all that was left under Ma Tianyang's feet was a carcass.

"Damn this guy. Why did you choose now of all times to get a girl? You almost cost me my life!"

He kicked at the bear a few times and was prepared to keep the body. Like Long Chen, he was about to place it in his cosmos pouch, but Long Chen suddenly asked.

"Brother Ma, besides its beast spirit and demonic core, do you have a need for anything else?"

"No. The flesh, muscles, bones and fur aren't worth much." Ma Tianyang answered.

"Then give them to me. I have a use for them."

Ma Tianyang nodded. Though he had no idea what Long Chen needed them for, he did not ask and instead, extracted the beast spirit and retrieved the core. Long Chen then kept the body.

“The body of the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear has more blood than the Heart Corrosive demonic beast. Two demonic beasts at the fourth level of the profound grade should be enough for me to advance.”

The higher the realm, the more real Qi required. Long Chen was now only at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, but to break through to the Earth Dan Realm, level four profound grade demonic beasts were insufficient. Two of these vicious bears could probably only fill his stomach.

“I wonder how powerful the beasts have to be when I reach the Heaven Dan realm or even beyond that...”

Ma Tianyang and Long Chen each took care of a demonic beast. Only then did the youngsters dare approach them, not daring to look Long Chen right in the eye. At most, they would glance at him and immediately turn away, feeling awkward.

“After this dangerous experience, it’s good for you all to make some friends. Come on, this is your Brother Long. Try saying his name.”

Ma Tianyang was not an idiot. How could he not have noticed their disdain for Long Chen? Now, Long Chen had basically slapped them hard, and he could use this opportunity to make a dig at them.

“If I don’t give it to them, they will always think too highly of themselves.” Ma Tianyang thought to himself.

Though they were unwilling, they could only call ‘Brother Long’ a few times under Ma Tianyang’s instructions. It was the first time Long Chen was being called like this, and he felt rather superior.

Having taken care of the bears, this experience was over. Ma Tianyang was prepared to return, and Long Chen nodded in agreement. He suddenly looked into the distance and spoke, “You’re being so suspicious there. Aren’t you going to come out?”

Ma Tianyang and the rest were stunned, unsure of what Long Chen was talking

about. However, when they realised there were two people walking over from a hill, they realised there had been people watching them.

These people were Liu Ling and Uncle Yan.

While Long Chen had been fighting with the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear, it had caused a huge ruckus. The two of them had been nearby and rushed over, right in time to see Long Chen making quick work of a bear.

Liu Ling had originally planned for Uncle Yan to teach Long Chen a lesson, or even kill him in the Sky Martial Realm. However, that scene was like a huge tide that gave her a huge blow.

On the way there, Uncle Yan could only say, “Ling’er, Long Chen could deal with that bear with such ease. I doubt I am a match for him.”

For even Uncle Yan to say this, Liu Ling felt powerless towards Long Chen. However, at the thought that Feng Wutian was at the Earth Dan Realm and in the inner faction, she regained her confidence.

“Uncle Yan may not be able to win against you, but Brother Feng Wutian will definitely beat you up. The moment I leave the Sky Martial Realm today, I’ll go look for him!”

When Long Chen shouted for them, that was what Liu Ling was thinking inside.

“What were your plans when you spied on us? Do you want to steal our gains?” Long Chen scolded her without hesitation.

“It’s just a level four profound grade demonic beast. Why would I need that?”

Upon noticing Long Chen’s intense gaze, she felt extremely uncomfortable.

“Then what would you need? My Brother Ma? Brother Ma is so handsome and wouldn’t even want to see an ugly person like you. You’d better give up. Brother Ma, let us go, or else this ugly person here will start pestering you!”

Long Chen sneered, pulling at Ma Tianyang and immediately leaving.

The youngsters noticed Liu Ling, who was on the verge of exploding from her anger, and left after looking at each other.

“Long Chen, you’re the ugly one! I wish you a painful death!”

Liu Ling was so enraged that she felt the urge to cry. This was the first time she was feeling so wronged.

“Uncle Yan, I want to look for Brother Wutian. We must find him!”

On the other end, Long Chen walked a distance before Ma Tianyang patted his head, half-joking as he scolded, “Kid, you can pick up girls however you like, but don’t drag your Brother Ma into this and humiliate me!”

“Bah, I wasn’t picking her up. You wouldn’t understand anyway. Let’s go drink some alcohol!”

“What did you say? I know much more about women than you do. Have you heard the phrase that fighting is a way to show love? Isn’t whatever you have with her love?”

Long Chen laughed but did not deny this.

The person he was fighting and having fun with, was Lingxi.

Chapter 138 – Spirit Grass

After bidding Ma Tianyang farewell, Long Chen headed towards the Treasure Exchange Pavilion.

“Hey, are you sure you don’t want that Enchanted Purple Dragon’s beast spirit? It can exchange for a lot of deity jades!” Lingxi was conflicted.

“Come on, you’ve asked that so many times. I’m going to first get the Spirit Grass. Besides, with my level of strength, getting 500 contribution points shouldn’t be that difficult.”

Only then did Lingxi pout and back down.

She knew that Long Chen was someone who was insecure. He was worried that something might happen to Lingxi, which was why he wanted to ensure she was safe before he could focus on doing other things.

This was very touching to her.

After entering the Treasure Exchange Pavilion, Long Chen found that beautiful girl from before.

“Little brother, why are you here again? Are you going to buy the Spirit Recovery Fruit?”

She had a very deep impression of this young man who only wanted Spirit Recovery Fruits.

“Would you believe me if I told you that I want the Spirit Grass this time?”

“You already have 300 contribution points?” The girl gaped, shocked.

“No.” Long Chen spoke confidently.

“You brat!” She giggled and waved her arms, “Stop joking with your sister. If there’s anything you need, tell me.”

“Wait, I did say I don’t have it now, but I’ll have it soon enough.”

Long Chen immediately ran away smugly, and the beautiful woman shook her head, “That guy seems to have a lot of secrets...”

Upon reaching the area collecting beast spirits and demonic cores, Long Chen handed over those of the Giant Demonic Vicious Bear.

“Level 4, profound grade Giant Demonic Vicious Bear?” The person inside was slightly surprised and looked up at Long Chen.

“Who gave you this?”

“I found it in the Sky Martial Realm.” Long Chen laughed and exclaimed.

If this was so easily picked up, then everyone would be striking the jackpot. The person did not believe him so easily.

If Long Chen was unwilling to answer, he did not ask further. He took the beast spirit and demonic core, “Based on the price list, you should get 400 contribution points. Give me your identity jade.”

Long Chen handed his identity jade over, and in a while, the number of contribution points changed to 641.

“Buying a Spirit Grass will cost me 300 contribution points and leave me with 341. It’s definitely not enough for me to exchange for the beast spirit of the Enchanted Purple Dragon.”

Long Chen was a little gloomy. He knew that if he really wanted the beast spirit of the Purple Enchanted Dragon, he would need to enter the Sky Martial Realm once more. This trip was actually very smooth-sailing, where he obtained 400 contribution points, befriended someone like Ma Tianyang and gained information regarding Mo Xiaolang.

After returning to the region selling spirit medicine, Long Chen showed his identity jade to the beautiful woman, and she was stunned.

“641 contribution points? What did you sell?”

“The demonic core and beast spirit of the Giant Demonic Vicious Beast. Do you believe me?” Long Chen laughed.

“The Giant Demonic Vicious Beast? That’s a level 4 profound grade demonic beast! How would I believe you? I think you must have killed quite a few level 3 profound grade demonic beasts in the Sky Martial Realm, yes?”

“Ha, you actually got it right! I would like a Spirit Grass. Could you get it for

me?”

The beautiful woman’s eyes that were like peaches glanced at Long Chen softly and chuckled as she nodded.

“You must have killed at least ten or so level 3 profound grade demonic beasts. You’re quite tough, and based on this alone, your sister here would have to help you.”

“Thank you, sister!”

Long Chen was now becoming increasingly likeable. She took Long Chen’s identity jade and went up to the second floor.

“I still don’t know sister’s name...?”

“Hm? My name is Qingya. You can just call me Sister Ya.”

To be able to enter the second level of the Treasure Exchange Pavilion, one had to be at least at the Earth Dan Realm.

After a while, she came downstairs and placed the identity jade, as well as a box, in Long Chen’s hands. “This is the Spirit Grass. You’d better use it with care and not waste it.”

“I promise I’ll eat every bit of it.”

Long Chen was overjoyed and carefully kept the Spirit Grass. From within the Lingxi Sword, Lingxi felt the presence of the Spirit Grass and was immediately stirred up.

“Little guy, you can’t eat the Spirit Grass. You have to refine it.”

Long Chen nodded, “Thank you, Sister Ya. Once I have enough contribution points, I’ll come over again. Goodbye!”

He then hastily left. Watching his back, Qingya couldn’t help but laugh, “I heard that this guy even signed up for the inner faction selection, but he hasn’t reached the Earth Dan Realm yet. Looks like he doesn’t stand a chance.”

.....

Having returned to his residence, Long Chen closed the door.

“Quick, quick, the Spirit Grass!”

Lingxi was very impatient. The moment his foot went through the door, she came out from the sword and fluttered around Long Chen.

After they went to the basement, Long Chen produced the box with the Spirit Grass from within his cosmos pouch. As he opened it, what he saw was a little grass that was like white jade that gave off a very refreshing scent. Just a sniff of it made Long Chen feel intoxicated.

“A medium profound-grade medicine is truly extraordinary. Compared to the Initial Returning Fruit, this Spirit Grass is several times more expensive.”

The Lingxi Sword began to dance and floated before Long Chen. A white fog then swept past, and the Spirit Grass in the box disappeared.

“I’m going to refine it!”

After finding a corner, Lingxi quickly began the process. Seeing how hurried she was, Long Chen had a sense of accomplishment.

“The blood of two level 4 profound grade demonic beasts and Thunder Flame Crystals. I’ll deal with them now.”

Everything quietened down. As he had just entered the perfect mastery stage of the Human Dan Realm, Long Chen was in no hurry to use the blood of the demonic beasts. Instead, he used the Thunder Flame Crystals and fused with up till the 25th. Any more than that, and he would need to use Dragon Soul Transformation.

Time slowly passed. By the time a day went by, Long Chen had fused with the 26th. At this moment, Lingxi had finished with her refining and was anxiously waiting for Long Chen.

After refining the Spirit Grass, Lingxi’s body looked clearer, and her aura became more dense. It was evident that she had become much stronger and looked prettier. In the following battles, she would definitely be able to offer Long Chen some assistance.

“Little Xi, what’s wrong?”

Seeing the anxiety in her expression, Long Chen quickly asked.

“Liu Ling found that guy called Feng Wutian. They’re already outside waiting

for you, and they say if you don't open the door, they're going to force their way in!"

"Feng Wutian?"

Long Chen suddenly recalled that he had angered Liu Ling, which was probably why she had entered the inner faction and pulled Feng Wutian out. It seemed like Long Chen was going to be skinned this time.

"He lost to me once. Is he back for it again?"

Fearless, Long Chen stood up.

"Be careful. He's probably stronger than Yan Chixue and Ma Tianyang."

Feng Wutian had the bloodline of the Southern Vermillion Bird, and was now part of that family. Long Chen naturally knew that Mo Xiaolang was imprisoned because he had killed someone of the inner faction, and thus knew he should avoid this.

He opened the door and found Liu Ling pulling Feng Wutian's hand while giving Long Chen a poisonous glare. Long Chen laughed involuntarily at that. It seemed like being seen bathing had driven her mad.

"What's there to be so angry about? I only saw it once. At most, I can just let you see me if you want." Long Chen teased her and looked towards Feng Wutian.

"This guy has really changed. Looks like this trip to the Sky Martial Realm has benefited him."

Feng Wutian now looked much more energetic, his eyes shining with spirit. Though he did not intentionally show it off, the aura of an expert that leaked out caused Long Chen to narrow his eyes.

"Feng Wutian truly is a large enemy."

Seeing Long Chen come out, Liu Ling sneered at him, "Does the terrified tortoise finally dare show its head? I thought you'd stay in there for a few days. I'm sure you must have wet your pants a few times inside there, no?"

In the face of Feng Wutian's suppression and Liu Ling's taunting, as well as passers-by ready to watch a good show, Long Chen chuckled, "Senior sister Liu

even knows that I wet my pants. Perhaps your mind and mine are connected?”

Liu Ling did not want to seem too fierce in front of Feng Wutian and calmed herself, suppressing the fury she had towards Long Chen and laughed coldly, “I won’t try to talk you around. Today, Brother Wutian is here as a member of the inner faction and wants a battle with you on the Platform of Life and Death. You must go.”

Inner faction. It was always about the inner faction.

Feng Wutian spoke matter-of-factly, “It’s Long Chen, right? I heard that when I was possessed by the Heart Corrosive demonic beast, I lost to you. I, Feng Wutian, have never lost to anyone in my life, and you are the first. However, that battle doesn’t really count. Do you have the guts to fight me on the Platform of Life and Death?”

Though Feng Wutian sounded calm, his words made it hard for Long Chen to reject him. The image that Long Chen had constructed for himself was now on the verge of crumbling, and he would be made the laughing stock of the Green Faction once again.

Anyone could tell that Long Chen was not a match for Feng Wutian.

“After entering the inner faction, he’s become more crafty and ruthless.”

Long Chen knew that there was no way for him to avoid this. Then again, he had no wish to avoid it.

“Feng Wutian has entered the Earth Dan Realm and has gotten many rewards from the Southern Vermillion Bird. However, I’ve defeated Yan Chixue and a Giant Demonic Vicious Bear, so it’s not certain that I will lose to you.”

Long Chen had once defeated Feng Wutian and was also a genius. Feng Wutian was an arrogant person and definitely would not take this lying down. If this was in any other situation where Long Chen injured him slightly despite his status as a member of the inner faction, Long Chen would be in trouble. Today, Feng Wutian had invited Long Chen to the Platform of Life and Death, and even if Feng Wutian were to get injured, there was nothing he would be able to say about it. This was actually a great opportunity for Long Chen.

“I know that you lack the guts. Long Chen, even if you agree, you wouldn’t

dare go to the Platform of Life and Death like what happened the last time!” Liu Ling snickered, holding onto Feng Wutian tightly and staring at Long Chen proudly.

At the thought of what had happened previously, everyone began to whisper amongst themselves and point at Long Chen.

“Is that so?” Long Chen smiled slightly and raised his voice, “What happened has already happened. This time, I’m agreeing to this. What’s it to you?”

“What?”

Now that Long Chen had actually agreed, everyone was bewildered.

“Are you going to agree and then not show up?” Liu Ling glanced at Long Chen with contempt, “You know that my Brother Wutian is several times stronger than Uncle Yan. You’re not even a match for one attack from him.”

“Since you’re afraid I won’t go, how about we go to the platform right now?”

Long Chen’s bright voice rang in the Green Willow Residence, and this news began to spread amongst the Green Faction.

Chapter 139 – Between Long and Feng!

News of Long Chen and Feng Wutian going to the Platform of Life and Death quickly spread throughout Green Sun Hall, and even the entire Green faction.

By the time Long Chen and the others reached the platform, Liu Yuan, the four grand elders and five enforcers were already there.

Feng Wutian was now a member of the inner faction, and Liu Yuan as well as Liu Lan no longer had any hold over him. However, they had been on good terms, and it was thus possible to negotiate with him.

“Wutian, what are you doing?”

Honestly speaking, Feng Wutian had reached the Earth Dan Realm and left for the inner faction. Now, Long Chen had taken over his position and was now the genius within the Human Dan Realm in the Green Sun Hall.

Feng Wutian now seemed very imposing and fierce, and it would be extremely troublesome if Long Chen were to be heavily injured or killed here.

Once they were on the Platform of Life and Death, the result would only be life or death.

“Elder, he has already agreed to go up to the Platform of Life and Death with me. Please don’t try to say more.”

Feng Wutian used to be extremely respectful to Liu Yuan, but his tone right now had become indifferent.

This battle was not just for Liu Ling, but also for himself, and his intention was to teach Long Chen an unforgettable lesson. Liu Yuan’s status was not higher than his own, and thus, could not stop him.

“Long Chen, you really agreed to this?”

Looking towards Long Chen, Liu Yuan seemed slightly grim and anxiously exclaimed, “Stop causing trouble! Wutian is part of the inner faction, and it will be your own doing if you get injured or killed. However, if you wound him...”

At this thought, he recalled that Feng Wutian had already entered the Earth

Dan Realm, and it was basically impossible for Long Chen to win. Liu Yuan's speech thus ended here.

"Don't worry, Elder. Once we're on the platform, nothing will matter but who lives and who dies."

While Feng Wutian was Long Chen's arch-enemy, he was still a very candid and frank person.

Meanwhile, Liu Lan pulled Long Chen aside and asked in a low voice, "Are you confident?"

Long Chen smiled wryly and shook his head. "I don't know."

"Then why did you agree to this?"

Long Chen rolled his eyes at her, "You've been alive for so long already. Don't you know that once an arrow is on the bow string, it has to be released?"

By mentioning her age and unwittingly lowering his gaze towards Liu Lan's pale breasts, he was basically mocking Liu Lan and saying that she had a large chest and no brains. Exasperated, Liu Lan scolded, "You bastard, you can't blame us if you want to die so badly! Feng Wutian entered the inner faction, and I actually wanted to advise you not to create conflict with him. To think you're already seeking your death before I could say anything!"

Long Chen laughed, not expressing his opinion.

At this point, more and more people had gathered. Having heard this, everyone began to gesticulate at Long Chen.

The inner faction meant power and terror to everyone else. For Long Chen to dare fight with a person who had recently entered the inner faction, he was truly much too gutsy for his own good.

The five grand elders and the other four enforcers, besides Liu Lan, found that this situation had nothing to do with themselves and retreated to a corner. Exchanging glances, one of the elders whose surname was Chen asked, "What do you think the outcome of the battle will be?"

Out of the four enforcers, the oldest one whose surname was Zhang, was about the same age as an elder. He was now looking Long Chen and Feng Wutian

up and down, “Feng Wutian entered the Earth Dan Realm and has been nurtured by the Southern Vermillion Bird Family. His cultivation must be far from someone who has only just entered the Earth Dan Realm. Long Chen is at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm and is still far from Feng Wutian’s strength. However, Liu Lan did say that he’s killed the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect leader, which means he might be able to put up a fight with Feng Wutian.”

Another elder whose surname was Liu pursed his lips, “That depends. Liu Lan did not personally see Long Chen killing the sect leader. There is a large gap between the Earth and Human Dan Realm. Long Chen might have been able to defeat Feng Wutian then, but there must be a large difference between them now.”

“Makes sense.”

Enforcer Zhang nodded, “Have you seen any instances in battles between youths of the inner and outer factions, where the inner faction has been defeated before?”

Everyone shook their heads, the answer and outcome obvious to them.

Seeing that Liu Yuan’s words fell on deaf ears, he could only head to the side with Liu Lan. Liu Yuan was now beginning to look anxious, “Lan’er, did Long Chen really kill the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect leader?”

“That’s for sure. I even heard that a few days ago, he killed a Giant Demonic Vicious Bear. Uncle Yan saw this for himself, and even said that he would not be a match for Long Chen.”

“Oh? For even old Yan to say that, it seems Long Chen does have a chance...”

Liu Yuan had achieved his goal of getting Long Chen to stay here.

“I hope you can be shrewd and don’t overdo it by infuriating Feng Wutian.”

Watching Long Chen calmly walking with Feng Wutian to the Platform of Life and Death, Liu Lan shook her head, sighed and exclaimed.

It was not as if she did not know Long Chen’s nature. This time, he would probably be in trouble.

“The moment Long Chen dies, my plan is done for.”

While still thinking about this plan of hers, everyone's eyes were fixed on Long Chen and Feng Wutian, facing each other on the spacious, firm platform.

"Based on their surnames, this is a battle between Long and Feng*. However, the phoenix seems to be at an advantage now."

(*Long = Dragon, Feng = Phoenix)

Long Chen seemed to hear these comments in the background.

It was expected that nobody would think well of him. After all, Feng Wutian was an expert at the Earth Dan Realm, while Long Chen was still at the Human Dan Realm. On top of that, there was a large difference between their statuses.

"The previous fight with you was a disgraceful moment in my life. However, that was in a situation where I had lost my consciousness, so I'm going to erase that humiliation with this battle."

"Erase it? Don't shame yourself more by turning into a huge-lipped handsome young man..."

Long Chen yawned and then laughed indifferently.

"How stupid."

Rather than getting angry, Feng Wutian gathered his real Qi at the Earth Dan Realm, which began to surge crazily and formed a tornado in front of him.

Such earth-shattering power began to suppress Long Chen like a huge mountain.

"He's much stronger than the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect leader..."

Long Chen was apprehensive but not afraid. His real Qi that was at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm was not to be underestimated either!

"Dragon Soul Transformation!"

Under this technique, his real Qi increased its quality by ten times, allowing it to rise to the Earth Dan Realm, and he could somewhat be on equal grounds with Feng Wutian.

"Feng Wutian just entered the inner faction. Even if he managed to obtain a good battle technique, he probably hasn't had time to cultivate in it yet."

After using Dragon Soul Transformation, crimson real Qi surged within his body, the force of electricity and flames crackling around Long Chen's body.

"Long Chen's beast transformation seems to be able to amplify his strength by a huge degree. I reckon that beast from when he was at the Dragon Pulse Realm should not be the Underground Blood Lizard, but the level 7 huang grade Underground Blood Lizard King."

Liu Yuan mumbled, and then looked regretful, "If Long Chen can get through this and then obtain the beast spirit of the Enchanted Purple Dragon, his strength will definitely increase by a huge amount. It's a shame..."

Liu Lan planned to tell Liu Yuan about how Long Chen had used 300 contribution points and exchanged them for a Spirit Grass. However, Long Chen and Feng Wutian were now beginning their battle and she shut her mouth, watching them closely.

"Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Scarlet Flame Burning Heavens!"

"Vermillion Bird Law, Fire Spirit Seal!"

Feng Wutian utilised his Fire Spirit Seal, which was now at least ten times stronger than before. A giant fiery bird collided with Long Chen's blazing fist imprint. Two fire-based attacks struck each other, and with a loud explosion, the spiritual force of the heavens and earth surged violently in all directions. The Platform of Life and Death even began to shake!

"These attacks are both just as powerful!"

Noticing that Long Chen was able to take on this attack of Feng Wutian's, everyone was astonished. It must be noted that Feng Wutian's Fire Spirit Seal was something that even cultivators who had just entered the Earth Dan Realm found difficult to withstand.

"Looks like Long Chen isn't all talk. He might really have killed the leader of the Crimson Blood Sacred Sect."

Enforcer Zhang nodded, a rare look of approval on his face.

"The result will still be the same. Long Chen will definitely be unable to withstand Feng Wutian's most powerful attack, Sole Flaming Deity Bird." Elder

Chen shook his head.

On the platform, Long Chen displayed his Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, and was rapidly exchanging attacks with Feng Wutian.

“Looks like you aren’t half bad. You’re merely at the Human Dan Realm and can take on my Fire Spirit Seal. I guess I underestimated you.”

Feng Wutian’s dull voice rang by Long Chen’s ear.

“Don’t be in such a hurry. The surprise is yet to come.”

Long Chen acknowledged the power of the Fire Spirit Seal, which had shaken Long Chen so much that he had sustained injuries. However, Long Chen’s miraculous constitution technique, Origin Reversion, was able to take care of these wounds.

“I heard my Sole Flaming Deity Bird lost to you before. This time...”

While Feng Wutian was speaking, his aura was rapidly increasing. What could be seen was a Vermillion Bird Imprint flashing on his forehead, and his aura as well as real Qi increased by a twofold.

“Long Chen, stop wasting time. Try my most powerful attack-Sole Flaming Deity Bird!”

At the moment, a sharp whistling sound hurtled towards Long Chen, sending him flying.

What he could see was intense flames in front of him, and the image of a deity bird that pounced towards Long Chen fiercely. Everyone watching could also feel this mighty aura, their legs turning weak in their fear.

“Feng Wutian is truly powerful...”

“Even if he doesn’t die, Long Chen is going to be badly injured.”

“That can’t be. Doesn’t Long Chen also have another offensive technique?”

The moment this person spoke, Long Chen had decided he was in a tough spot and needed to use Piercing Earth Demonic Sun!

After reaching the initial mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, the might of Piercing Heavens Demonic Sun Fist had increased tenfold. The black demonic sun

fist imprint appeared with a rumble and smashed into Feng Wutian's Sole Flaming Deity Bird.

"They're actually evenly matched?"

Everyone's expressions were marvellous, especially that of the four elders and enforcers, who quickly exchanged glances and looked extremely embarrassed.

"My previous words were truly embarrassing..."

Liu Yuan was delighted that Long Chen possessed this level of strength, while Liu Lan's beautiful eyes were fixated on Long Chen.

Suddenly, Feng Wutian's icy voice was heard.

"You really aren't half bad, but if you're forcing me to use this move, you definitely won't be able to survive!"

Chapter 140 – The Prowess of the Blood Engulfing Zone!

“An attack that’s even more powerful?”

Everyone had been admiring Long Chen’s might, but when Feng Wutian threw out this icy sentence, everyone was stunned.

“Long Chen has even used his ultimate technique to contend with Sole Flaming Deity Bird, but to think Feng Wutian has another one! This...”

The higher-ups of the Green Sun Hall had now acknowledged Long Chen’s skills, but upon hearing Feng Wutian’s words, they could tell what the outcome would be. Their expressions were that of regret.

Liu Ling, who had become extremely gloomy upon seeing Feng Wutian and Long Chen on equal grounds, immediately rejoiced after hearing he had a more formidable technique. She yelled, “Brother Wutian, defeat him and teach him a lesson. Don’t hold back!”

Liu Yuan and Liu Lan shot each other a glance, having a bad feeling about this.

“Father...”

“Don’t worry. When the time’s right, I will make my move. After all, Feng Wutian is of the inner faction, and Green Sun Hall can only pin our hopes on Long Chen.”

With Liu Yuan’s word, Liu Lan relaxed. No matter what, Long Chen had now fulfilled all her requirements. Even if Long Chen were to lose to Feng Wutian here, it did not matter.

“There’s still another technique, huh.”

Long Chen narrowed his eyes.

Honestly speaking, in order to withstand Feng Wutian’s Sole Flaming Deity Bird, Long Chen had already expended all his effort. He had expected that he and Feng Wutian would not be able to win against each other, but unexpectedly, Feng Wutian still had another card up his sleeve!

When Feng Wutian said that, a powerful aura locked on Long Chen, and he

could immediately feel his movements being restricted.

“Don’t worry. This technique will be a unique experience for you, Long Chen! I didn’t want to kill you at first, but you’re making me feel threatened...”

Feng Wutian’s cold voice continuously sounded.

“You talk too much.”

Using Nine Heavens Roving Dragon Step, Long Chen was already forced to the edge of the Platform of Life and Death. At this moment, Feng Wutian began preparing his following technique. Just the energy and aura it possessed was several times more powerful than the Sole Flaming Deity Bird technique!

“A year ago, the Southern Vermillion Bird family gifted me this technique in secret. I have only recently managed to perfect it. Long Chen, you’re going to be the first person to die under this technique. You should be honoured!”

Feng Wutian now had a sinister expression.

Though Liu Ling supported Feng Wutian, that devilish grin of his was something she could not get used to. Liu Yuan and Liu Lan furrowed their brows.

“Feng Wutian was defeated by Long Chen the previous time. Though he does not mention it, that must have been very traumatic for him, which is why he must kill Long Chen now.”

Liu Lan’s voice displayed her concern.

At this moment, Feng Wutian suddenly produced a shrill bird call, and real Qi that turned into flames emanated out of his body. A pair of giant flaming wings suddenly formed, giving off a menacing aura.

“Die!”

Feng Wutian charged towards Long Chen.

“Phoenix Dance of the Nine Heavens!”

This great technique immediately left everyone trembling in fear. Even the enforcers, who were at the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm could not confidently say they could take on this attack.

What was even more surprising was that instead of escaping, Long Chen was

dashing towards Feng Wutian!

“He’s gone crazy!”

“Isn’t he seeking death?”

“Father!”

Liu Lan reminded, and Liu Yuan realised that he should be saving Long Chen. No matter what, he was an elder and had helped Feng Wutian in the past few years. Feng Wutian would not attempt to take his life just because he had saved Long Chen.

At this moment, blood-red spirals that numbered thousands appeared and began to rotate above Long Chen’s crimson dragon scales.

In that moment, a bloody mist shrouded the platform. All within the range of the mist was under Long Chen’s control!

Blood Engulfing Zone. Activate!

This was the second time Long Chen was using Blood Engulfing Zone. Compared to the first time, he found it much easier to manipulate, and the range it covered was now smaller.

Blood Engulfing Zone was a heaven-defying technique of the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon. As its user, he could take control of everything within the scope of the technique. Based on the previous usage of the technique, it had covered almost half the underground city. That was Long Chen’s limit.

Blood Engulfing Zone was something like a domain, and of all his enemies, the weakest would have their blood devoured by him, while those at a higher level than Long Chen like Feng Wutian would feel their blood boiling, and their movements restricted.

If it was someone Long Chen had no issues with, such as Yang Lingqing and the hundreds of girls from before, they were entirely unharmed despite not having cultivated before.

This technique would grow along with Long Chen, which was why Long Chen had no clue how powerful it would become. When he reached the apex in the continent, he would probably be able to decide the life and death of all living

things which a mere thought!

This was the might of the Immemorial Blood Spirit Dragon.

Blood Engulfing Zone was not an offensive ability, but for Feng Wutian who was about to display his Phoenix Dance of the Nine Heavens, it would have a large effect on him.

This was the first time Feng Wutian was employing this attack, and he could not control it skilfully yet. By making use of the absorption abilities of the Blood Engulfing Zone, there would be chaos in Feng Wutian's body.

Long Chen's attack was used at a very opportune time.

If he had used Blood Engulfing Zone while Feng Wutian displayed his Fire Spirit Seal or Sole Flaming Deity Bird, it would not be as effective as it was now.

At this moment, the blood in Feng Wutian's body seemed to have been summoned by some master and was now incredibly excited. It turned into little fine daggers and, within Feng Wutian's veins, began to attack the channels.

Feng Wutian, who had placed all his attention on Phoenix Dance of the Nine Heavens, couldn't have expected this situation where his blood acted against him. Though it did not injure him and would at most restrict his movement in normal situations, this situation now caused his energy to stray away.

Under his bewildered gaze, Phoenix Dance of the Nine Heavens abruptly exploded, sending himself flying!

Coughing out a mouthful of blood, he collapsed from the acute pain.

This unforeseen circumstance happened so quickly that even when Feng Wutian fell, everyone still had stiff expressions and had yet to react to the situation.

Long Chen never expected Blood Engulfing Zone, that he had employed in a hurry, had such a marvellous effect. He did know that Feng Wutian could not fully control Phoenix Dance of the Nine Heavens, which was how Long Chen was able to find this loophole.

If this was a very proficient technique, Long Chen might only be able to stop one attack and perhaps somewhat hinder his opponent's movements. It

wouldn't be to the extent of causing someone to have their move backfire on themselves.

However, now that he had defeated Feng Wutian, Long Chen could finally heave a sigh of relief.

Feng Wutian had been completely defeated under the eyes of the public. The issue was finally resolved.

Since Feng Wutian was now unconscious, the battle was over. Long Chen removed his Dragon Soul Transformation and smirked at the audience.

"What's wrong? Didn't Feng Wutian use his most powerful attack? Why did he hurt himself?"

"He must have been unable to control such a powerful move, which resulted in it backfiring on him. Long Chen truly is fortunate to be able to survive."

These low-ranked disciples could not tell what had happened, but the four elders knew this was definitely not the case.

"Did you see that? In that instant, many tiny crimson spirals appeared around Long Chen, before Feng Wutian's attack backfired on him!"

"It must have been Long Chen. If Feng Wutian dared to use it, he must have been somewhat confident in his abilities. Say, what mysterious battle technique do you think Long Chen used?"

The four elders and enforcers' gazes were completely different than before. In the past, they might have been condescending towards Long Chen, but now, all they had for him was reverence.

"It wasn't obvious before, but Long Chen seems very mysterious."

Long Chen's playful grin gave rise to embarrassment in these elders. They turned away, and Enforcer Zhang as well as two elders who had thought little of Long Chen wished they could find a hole to hide in.

Out of everyone present, the person who found this the most unbelievable was Liu Ling.

Her attention was not on Feng Wutian, but Long Chen on the platform with his mischievous smirk.

Before, Feng Wutian had been defeated by Long Chen under unexpected circumstances.

This man was fated to be her nemesis.

Liu Ling suddenly felt like breaking down. When Feng Wutian had been defeated by Long Chen the first time, she had given up all hope. However, because Feng Wutian later proved himself capable, she believed that she could take on Long Chen without any issues. Unexpectedly, the more formidable Feng Wutian had actually lost against Long Chen.

Face turning deathly pale, Liu Ling shook her head in disbelief before darting away.

“Ling’er!”

Liu Lan shouted, but Liu Ling did not turn back.

Liu Lan found it implausible for Long Chen to be able to turn the tables at the last minute. This was not the first time something like this had happened, but this was the first time that she was fully convinced.

In her eyes, Long Chen could truly fit the title of the ultimate genius!

“Wutian!”

This was the first time Liu Yuan had personally seen Long Chen’s heaven-defying display, and torrential waves rose in his heart. The image of the young man, Long Chen, was carved in his mind.

However, Feng Wutian’s terrible state was also extremely worrying. He couldn’t be bothered to speak to Long Chen just yet. If anything were to happen to Feng Wutian, Liu Yuan would definitely be in deep trouble. For this reason, he quickly called out to everyone and told them to help Feng Wutian.

Most of them gathered at Feng Wutian’s side, and under shocked gazes, Long Chen strolled away alone.

Chapter 141 – A Great Surprise!

News of Long Chen defeating Feng Wutian spread like the wind throughout the Green faction and even to other factions. Even those in the inner factions caught wind of this.

His reputation skyrocketed. At least, in the outer factions, he was just like a celebrity.

In terms of his popularity in the Green Faction, he had already surpassed Chu Yunyao and the others. He was already almost at the same level of popularity as Chu Yunxi.

Liu Lan was not yet thirty and already at the perfect mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm. Out of everyone at her age, she was the trump card in the Green Sun Hall, while for Long Chen's age group, he was their trump card.

After this duel at the Platform of Life and Death, Liu Yuan used all sorts of spirit medicine on Feng Wutian, and he recovered after a day. He did not say much but left the Green faction silently, and it was only then that Liu Yuan and everyone else could heave a sigh of relief.

Long Chen could finally be at ease and continue to cultivate. The number of Thunder Flame Crystals he could fuse with had yet to reach the limit, and he continued with this task. After fusing with the 28th, Liu Yuan suddenly summoned him.

“What does that old geezer want me for?”

He finally had the chance to get some rest, and Long Chen had been planning to visit the Sky Martial Realm again to obtain more contribution points. Unexpectedly enough, Liu Yuan picked this moment to summon him.

After entering the main hall in the Green Sun Hall, he found only Liu Yuan seated there. Upon seeing Long Chen, he was all smiles as he welcomed Long Chen.

“Could the reason for Elder Yuan's cheerful mood be a new addition to the family despite your old age?”

Long Chen's status was now different, and he made use of it to tease Liu Yuan.

Liu Yuan did not get mad and glanced at this brat helplessly, before he laughed, "Let me tell you some amazing news."

"What is it?"

He had not expected there to be some surprise, and Long Chen's ears immediately perked up.

Liu Yuan intentionally tried to be secretive, "Do you know the importance of the first day of the eleventh month is?"

(Eleventh Month = November)

"How would I know? Stop keeping me in suspense and tell me!" Long Chen was filled with anticipation.

"The first day of the eleventh month is the day that the Eastern Green Dragon, which in other words implies the inner faction, begins its selection."

"What does that have to do with me?" Long Chen brightened up and blurted out, "Old man, are you going to tell me that I passed the verification process? I can take part in the selection?"

The term 'old man' had been something Long Chen coined and used only in his thoughts. As he was much too emotional, it had slipped out.

Honestly speaking, Long Chen really did want to enter the inner faction. For one, he would be able to obtain a lot of resources and two, the recent spate of events made it clear the importance of status. From what he knew of Dongfang Tianyu, Feng Wutian, Beitang Mo, as well as the terrible state Mo Xiaolang was in, Long Chen knew that he needed to enter the inner faction in order to be able to raise his head in the Lingwu Family.

More importantly, Yang Lingqing was in the Northern Black Tortoise. Long Chen was most concerned that Yang Lingqing might be bullied, which was why he was so fixated on the inner faction selection.

"No matter what, I have to get into the inner faction..."

However, he had heard that he needed to be at least at the Earth Dan Realm to participate in the selection. Long Chen was now only at the perfect mastery

stage at the Human Dan Realm, which was why he held little hope for himself. However, from Liu Yuan's words, it seemed...

"You're really in luck, brat. Yes, the information has confirmed that you have passed the verification process. This is really out of my expectations..."

For young Long Chen to have such luck, Liu Yuan was deeply moved.

After obtaining Liu Yuan's confirmation, Long Chen was overjoyed.

"I'll definitely grasp this opportunity, but..." Long Chen glanced at Liu Yuan, "Elder Yuan, I'm still at the Human Dan Realm though. How could I have passed the verification process? Did they make a mistake?"

Liu Yuan shook his head. "I think news of you defeating Feng Wutian has spread. Though you're at the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm, you were able to defeat an Earth Dan in the inner faction. The person in charge must have realised this and acknowledged your potential."

Long Chen pondered over this and found this to be the only answer.

'Looks like watching Liu Ling bathing wasn't all for nothing. It's because I saw her that she got Feng Wutian to beat me up, which ended up with him losing to me, allowing me to even have the qualifications to take part in the selection for the inner faction. The development of matters in the world really takes me by surprise.'

A look of satisfaction appeared on Long Chen's expression as he thought.

"Long Chen, don't be too happy just yet." Liu Yuan's words were like a bucket of cold water being splashed all over Long Chen.

"Why?" He could not understand why this old man was suddenly so stern.

Watching this kid who thought too highly of himself, Liu Yuan shook his head, "The name list for the selection has already come down. A total of 20 people are qualified to participate in the selection. The Gold and Silver factions each have three places, while the other seven each have two places. For our Green Faction, there's only you and Chu Yunxi."

"What's the problem? Chu Yunxi seems to be at the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm. I'm not a match for him." Long Chen knew this very well.

Liu Yuan nodded. “Out of the 20 people, 5 obtained their places directly, of which Chu Yunxi is included. Those at the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm able to gain these places are the cream of the crop, their strength even nearing Lan’er. The weakest of all who have passed the verification process has just entered the Earth Dan Realm, and even then, is considered a peak existence who is slightly stronger than Feng Wutian. I’m going to be blunt-in all areas, you are the weakest person in this selection.”

Liu Yuan analysed the situation for Long Chen, and he now knew why Liu Yuan told him not to be too overjoyed so early.

“Elder Yuan, out of the 20 people, how many can pass?” Long Chen wanted to enter the inner faction, which was why he needed to know the answer to this question.

“Two.”

Liu Yuan could only answer, “That’s why I said not to celebrate too early. Even if you get a place, the difficulty in getting into the inner faction is beyond your imagination. Even the famous young expert, Chu Yunxi, isn’t that confident, let alone you.”

“In that case, what’s the point of this selection process? Am I going there just to have fun?” At the thought of this level of difficulty, Long Chen was speechless.

Liu Yuan could only laugh bitterly, “You’re absolutely right. This is just for you to broaden your horizons and know how powerful the other experts in the outer faction are. This is also very important for you. However, Long Chen, there is a chance of death in the selection, so you’d better prepare yourself. I don’t want my Green Faction to lose a genius.”

“There’s a chance of death?”

Long Chen could feel the pressure bearing down on him. After all, he had already done all he could to deal with Feng Wutian. In the face of 20 geniuses who were even more formidable than Feng Wutian, it was basically impossible to be one of the two to enter the inner faction.

“All opportunities are accompanied with a certain risk, and the inner faction selection is no different. If you’re afraid, you’re fated to be held back forever.

Only the brave can move on in the path of cultivation.”

Liu Yuan stroked his beard, sighing ruefully.

Long Chen was unafraid, but he did feel a lot of pressure on him.

“Whatever it is, there’s still some time before the first day of the eleventh month. If I work hard now, I might be a whole level stronger. Even if I don’t enter the inner faction, I need to keep my own life.”

Long Chen was going to compete against the best talents in all nine great outer factions.

His opponents had ranged from Huang Xiang to Huang Feiyang, and even to someone who was about the same level as Chu Yunxi, who was the number one genius in the Green faction. It was apparent how fast his progress was.

However, at the thought of Lingqing, whose strength was far too weak in the inner faction, Long Chen knew he needed to go all out for her sake.

Seeing the fighting spirit in Long Chen’s eyes, Liu Yuan nodded in satisfaction. However, another matter came to mind, and his brows furrowed, “Long Chen, there’s something you did that’s really too much.”

There were far too many things that Long Chen should not have done. Liu Yuan’s sudden words gave him a shock, “Could it be that the old man found out about me seeing Liu Ling while she was bathing? If he makes me marry her, I’m done for!”

He was right about to look for an excuse, but Liu Yuan was actually referring to something else.

“I told you to get 500 contribution points, and I’ll give you the beast spirit of the Enchanted Purple Dragon. What’s this about you using 300 contribution points to exchange for Spirit Grass?”

So it was about this matter. Long Chen sighed in relief and immediately answered, “Elder Yuan, the Spirit Grass is very important to me, but it’s not like I don’t want the beast spirit either. I’ll go to the Sky Martial Realm right now and get some contribution points.”

At the mention of this, Liu Yuan was really quite annoyed. He had bestowed it

to Long Chen because he thought it would be very important to him, but Long Chen did not seem to want it. What was with this situation?

“Forget it.” Liu Yuan waved his hands, “There’s not much time left till the selection. For the remaining time you have, just train hard. Treat the beast spirit of the Enchanted Purple Dragon as a gift from me.”

“Really?” Long Chen was elated, because this was worth a hundred thousand deity jades.

In general, this old man treated him quite well. Long Chen had had some misgivings about him, but Long Chen was now truly grateful towards him.

Liu Yuan treated him as the trump card of the Green Sun Hall, and his reputation rose along with Long Chen’s own. However, something like the beast spirit of a level 6 profound-grade was not something that could be gifted so easily.

He produced a spirit congealing bead from his cosmos pouch. The bead had already been dyed purple from the beast spirit of the Enchanted Purple Dragon, and Long Chen could somewhat see a purple demonic dragon roaring within it.

“Don’t waste any time and make this dragon your life beast spirit at the Deity Dan Realm. When the time comes, your strength will definitely be pulled up!”

At the mention of this, Long Chen paled. He could not refine beast spirits at all.

However, all he could do now was to take it.

“Go back and cultivate. Oh, right, there’s something else...” Liu Yuan suddenly remembered something and reminded him, “Five days later, Chu Yunxi will come and propose to Lan’er. When that happens, I’ll arrange for you two to meet, since you’re going to become a team.”

Chapter 142 – Number 1 Genius of the Green Faction

Chu Yunxi? A proposal?

Long Chen was stunned. “Isn’t Chu Yunxi the 18-year-old genius? He’s proposing to Liu Lan, instead of Liu Ling?”

Longchen thought Liu Yuan had misspoken.

“Yes, it’s Liu Lan. Everyone knows Yunxi has been harbouring a crush on Liu Lan for awhile now, but it’s normal for you not to know since you’ve only just joined the Lingwu family.”

“An 18-year-old crushing on Liu Lan... Interesting.”

Long Chen snickered, but at the thought of Liu Lan’s alluring beauty and her thrilling, mature aura, it was no wonder that anyone would be captivated by her. If Long Chen did not have Lingxi around, he might even be tempted.

“Sigh. Lan’er is probably going to marry into the Green Emperor Hall, but if Chu Yunxi enters the inner faction, Lan’er will definitely have a higher status as well.”

Liu Yuan sighed ruefully.

“This exceedingly alluring delicate flower is going to be offered up to a pig?” Long Chen scolded inside.

Seeing Long Chen so silent as if he had no interest in this, Liu Yuan immediately exclaimed, “Anyway, you should leave and refine that beast spirit.”

“Elder Yuan, what was it about teaming up with Chu Yunxi?” Long Chen did not forget about this.

“The inner faction selection is similar to that of the outer faction selection. There are two rounds, and the first is a competition between teams of two. You and Chu Yunxi are members of the Green Faction and can be made into a team. As for more concrete details regarding the selection, I’ll tell you in detail sometime later. If I were to tell you now, I’m not certain if there are any changes to the rules.”

Long Chen nodded and bid Liu Yuan farewell, returning to his residence.

After reaching, Lingxi came out from the sword and seemed to be elated, wandering around everywhere, wrinkling her nose and humming little tunes.

“Little Xi, what’s got you so happy?”

“I’m not going to tell you! Hmph!”

Long Chen teased, “Could it be because beautiful Liu Lan is going to get married?”

Lingxi was astonished. “How did you know? Hmph, I’ve seen that stinking woman trying to get fresh with you. It’s about time she got married!”

“Hm...” Long Chen had long since made sense of Lingxi’s thought processes.

“Do you think I have a chance in the inner faction selection?” Long Chen sat in the basement.

“Of course. Isn’t there still some time? You’re still at the Human Dan Realm, and merely at the bottom-most level in terms of cultivation. Cultivation works very quickly. By merely training a little here and there, I mentioned to break through to the Heaven Dan Realm.”

Lingxi’s tone of difference as she said this surprised Long Chen.

“When she was younger, she must definitely have been high above everyone else. How would she know how hard peasants like us have to work to achieve the same results...”

After refining the Spirit Grass, Lingxi’s energy was at its peak. She spent the day running everywhere in the residence, and Long Chen let her do as she liked.

As long as he had a bit of time, it would be used for cultivation.

“It’s about time to refine the blood of those two Giant Demonic Vicious Bears. If it’s in my cosmos pouch for too long, its effects might decrease.”

There were still five days until that proposal thing Chu Yunxi was going to do. In those five days, nobody would bother Long Chen either, and he decided to completely refine the blood of these two beasts.

“Two level 4 profound grade demonic beasts filled with blood only allowed me to improve by a little. There’s still a huge distance to the Earth Dan Realm...”

Long Chen picked out the Spirit Congealing Bead with the Enchanted Purple Dragon inside. This was a treasure to all beast cultivators, but it was useless to Long Chen. He was a dragon cultivator, not a beast cultivator.

What he needed was the blood essence inheritance of an ancient dragon, and not a beast spirit...

“Regular beast cultivators probably would have completely refined this beast spirit by the start of the selection. If Old Liu doesn’t see that I’ve refined it, I wonder how he’s going to kill me. Ugh, I need to find a way to exchange it for a hundred thousand deity jades secretly.”

However, Long Chen could not think up anything in a short period, and so kept the beast spirit well and took out the Thunder Flame Crystals.

“I’ve used up almost all the Thunder Flame Crystals. My limit right now should be 30 of them, so in these five days, I’ll fuse with another 3 such that my Thunder Flame Physique can reach a higher level!”

A rank 1 Thunder Flame Physique would require fusion with 10 Thunder Flame Crystals, while for rank 2, he believed he was almost there. As long as he broke through a certain limit, he would definitely be able to obtain the rank 2 Thunder Flame Physique.

A rank 2 Thunder Flame Physique was comparable to a profound high-grade body tempering technique, and would definitely be very formidable!

Four days slowly passed, and on the morning of the fifth day, Long Chen finally escaped from pain and suffering. While using Origin Reversion to heal himself, he was excited, “I’ve fused with a total of 30 Thunder Flame Crystals, and my body is now three times as powerful as when I had just fused with the first. However, it still has yet to become rank 2.”

Only after his body completely recovered under Origin Reversion did Long Chen stand up and wriggle his limbs.

“As my body becomes stronger, the effects of Origin Reversion decrease. If my body reaches the level of a high-grade profound technique, Origin Reversion will definitely weaken further.”

It was now morning, and the day that Liu Yuan had spoken of had just begun.

Right at this moment, Long Chen had finished his fusion with the Thunder Flame Crystals, and the timing was impeccable.

“Proposal? I don’t need to be involved in that. After they’re done with that, we’ll meet with that Chu Yunxi and see how powerful the number 1 genius of the Green Faction is!”

After tidying everything up, Long Chen lay on his back relaxedly, teasing Lingxi and waiting for someone to summon him.

“Hey, that gorgeous lady is going to get married. Aren’t you sad?” Leaning against the edge of the bed, Lingxi pursed her lips, her jealousy evident.

“I’m obviously so sad that I want to die. Little Xi, shall we go steal the bride?” Long Chen suddenly sat up and said excitedly.

Only after Lingxi’s expression turned completely unhappy did Long Chen burst out in laughter, spreading his arms and ready to pinch her little cheeks. With a shout, Lingxi pushed him away and glared at him.

“You bastard, don’t even think about touching me.”

Long Chen immediately apologised, “Don’t get mad, I was just messing around. She’s old and ugly; who would want her? Besides, our Lingxi is young, pretty, and so very lovable.”

“Tch, who wants to be lovable.”

Hearing the praise, Lingxi was in a better mood, though she still retained her expression of nonchalance.

Their time together passed quickly, and before it was even afternoon, someone was already outside knocking the door.

“Long Chen, Enforcer Liu wants you to go to her residence for a while.”

“To her residence? Am I not supposed to go to the Green Sun Hall to meet with Chu Yunxi?”

Gan Lin had no idea either and shook his head, “Just go to Enforcer Liu’s place and see what’s going on. I still have some things to take care of, so I’ll take my leave now.”

Long Chen was baffled, and could only tell Lingxi, “Lingxi, let’s visit her.”

“That’s strange. What does that stupid woman want you there for?” Lingxi tilted her head, annoyed.

“I don’t know. Let’s talk about it later.”

“I’m not going.” Lingxi controlled the Lingxi Sword and left Long Chen’s ear. “I don’t want to see her. Go alone. I’ll be at home, so just come back once you’re done with everything.”

With a huff, Lingxi disappeared. Long Chen could do little but close the door and head towards Liu Lan’s residence, which was also the core of the Green Willow Residence.

.....

In the Green Sun Hall, Liu Yuan was seated on the left, while there were the other four elders and four enforcers, with Liu Lan not around.

Beside Liu Yuan was a burly middle-aged man, eyes profound and looking extremely powerful. There was also a handsome young man who looked quiet.

The middle-aged man, Chu Fengqing, was the current elder of the strongest hall in the Green faction, the Green Emperor Hall. Beside him was naturally his son, who was proclaimed the number 1 genius in the Green Faction, Chu Yunxi. Chu Yunxi’s outer appearance seemed quite different from Chu Fengqing, and rather, looked more similar to his sister, Chu Yunyao.

The two of them had come here especially to do a marriage proposal.

“Yunxi has always been very diligent and unwilling to lose to anyone else, which is why he’s been so far ahead of everyone else, to the point that he’s even directly gotten the qualification to enter the inner faction selection. If you think about it, he’s probably some boy wonder.”

Chu Fengqing did not hold back at all. At the mention of his son, he was full of praise.

“For the inner faction selection, how confident is Yunxi?”

Liu Yuan chuckled, and then placed his attention on Chu Yunxi.

Chu Yunxi thought for a moment and respectfully answered, "Uncle Liu, I believe I have about a 50% chance. I know how powerful the other competitors are. One spot will definitely belong to Jin Ensheng, while I have some hope of getting the other place."

At the mention of Jin Ensheng, Chu Fengqing sighed ruefully, "That kid from the Gold faction is truly amazing. Amongst the younger generation in the outer faction, he's probably at the top."

Liu Yuan could only nod helplessly, "He really is not half bad."

"By the way, when Liu Lan participated in the inner faction selection back in the day, was she not on the verge of entry?"

"Brother Chu thinks too highly of Lan'er. She had been at the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Real, but she was not all that powerful. In the first round, she was already kicked out. How could that be considered 'on the verge of entry'?"

Hearing their conversation, Chu Yunxi furrowed his brows, "Uncle Liu, I'll definitely help Sister Lan fulfil her dreams!"

Liu Yuan admired this young man from the depths of his heart. He was actually rather pleased that Liu Lan would be able to marry him, but Liu Lan's was slightly too stubborn about this.

"My Xi'er has been thinking of your Lan'er day and night. Brother Liu, seeing how in love he is, let's just consider this matter done. What do you think?"

Liu Yuan could only smile wryly, "Of course, I want to agree, since I have high hopes for Yunxi. However, Lan'er isn't here yet. Let's wait for her before we decide on anything, alright?"

At this moment, a young cultivator knocked the door and entered, respectfully reporting, "Elder Yuan, Enforcer Liu requests that Young Master Yunxi goes to the Green Willow Residence."

Chu Yunxi got up from his seat.

Chapter 143 – Storm Seizing Finger!

“This girl is being so mysterious. What does she want from me?”

Lingxi did not follow him, leaving Long Chen feeling empty.

At the heart of the Green Willow Residence was a beautiful little courtyard within which Liu Lan resided. Upon arrival, Long Chen realised the door was open and knocked cautiously. He called out a few times but was met with no response and decided to walk right in while wondering about this situation.

“This wretched woman actually lives in a great place, with such enchanting scenery, birdsong and the fragrance of flowers.”

There were dark green bamboos everywhere, and while it was slightly cold, the bamboos were growing extremely well.

After passing through the bamboo forest, there were a few fine wooden houses. He searched around but was not met with the sight of Liu Lan, and was immediately annoyed, “Damn it, how dare you make a fool of me.”

He searched for a while longer and found that there was some sound from within one of the wooden houses. The door was concealed.

“It can’t be that she’s bathing, just like Liu Ling had been, right?”

Long Chen had some unhealthy thoughts, but he knew it was impossible to meet with the same lucky situation twice. It was still manageable with Liu Ling, but if it was Liu Lan and her steaming-hot body, Long Chen might find this all difficult to stomach.

“That woman is really just the devil, tsk tsk...”

Long Chen walked over and, as expected, felt someone’s presence. Having had dealings with her for such a long period of time, he could tell that this was Liu Lan’s aura.

“Great Beauty Liu, what did you want from me when you summoned me here?”

Long Chen spoke loudly and opened the door, only to be caught in a daze, eyes opened as widely as they could be.

This was obviously a bathroom. White steam rose and shrouded the room, revealing a pale white figure. Her lithe body lay languidly within the water, the vague beauty of this scene leaving Long Chen on the verge of a nosebleed.

“Damn it, why is she actually bathing?”

Long Chen had no idea what Liu Lan was planning. This was completely different from that time with Liu Ling. Then, she had forgotten to close the door, and Long Chen had unwittingly entered. This time, Liu Lan was intentionally luring him inside!

“Could it be that she thinks I’m so handsome that, at this critical juncture, she wants to give up her body to me? It’s a good thing Lingxi isn’t around...”

Long Chen wondered vulgarly, eyes fixated on the curves within the mist, a heat rising in his belly.

However, Long Chen knew very well that there was no free lunch in the world. Now that Long Chen had had the lunch, it was time to be tormented by her!

Guessing that Liu Lan must have some crafty plan in place, Long Chen glared at Liu Lan’s pale figure once more and prepared to leave. However, at this moment, a powerful aura burst forth from Liu Lan’s body, and a white piece of cloth hooked on to Long Chen’s left ankle and dragged him inside.

“My precious, you’re already here. How could you just walk out like that?”

A voice that made Long Chen’s body go numb entered his ears. Before he could even react to it, he had already fallen into the water with a plonk.

He ferociously struggled free of the white cloth and pulled it up from within the water. Opening his eyes, he found Liu Lan in front of him, her tender red lips inches away from him, and unfocused eyes filled with desire glancing at him. Those sexy curves and soft skin were all within Long Chen’s reach.

The one thing that was rather disappointing, however, was that the more vital areas were covered by white cloth. In all honesty, it made this all the more exciting.

“Does this look nice?”

Liu Lan seemed to be breathing out flowers, charmingly looking at Long Chen, eyes seemed to be hinting at something.

“What nice, you’re not even as sexy as I am!”

Though the scene before him was full of temptations that might be difficult for the average person to hold back from, Long Chen was not one to lose his mind over the charms of a woman. He threw off Liu Lan’s bindings and jumped out of the water. Holding on to his wet clothes, he darted out of the room without looking back.

Behind him, Liu Lan giggled.

“What the hell is that woman doing? Why is she letting this happen?”

Though he had gotten quite an eyeful, Long Chen knew something was off. Just as expected, the moment he darted out of her bathing area, he was met with a handsome, impressive young man. When he saw Long Chen, his expression immediately turned cold as he spoke coldly, “You again! Why are you here?”

This young man seemed to recognise himself, but no matter how Long Chen pondered over this, he had no idea who the other party was.

“You know me?”

Long Chen was now completely covered in water from head to toe, and there was even the fragrance that came from women and flowers. It was truly quite a spectacle.

“I’ve seen you before. You were talking to Sister Lan the other day!”

Long Chen was stunned, and only then did he remember. So this was the young man who had been staring at him from afar. It was the day he had been separated from Yang Lingqing, and he had only spoken to Liu Lan for a short while.

“Kid, I’m speaking to you. Why are you here at Sister Lan’s? Where is Sister Lan?!”

At this moment, a sweet female voice travelled from the bathroom.

“Long Lang*, why aren’t you coming in?”

(* In olden times, ‘lang/lang jun’ was a way for females to address their husbands/lovers.)

The moment her words fell, Liu Lan walked out while wrapped in a towel. Upon noticing the young man not far away, her face changed, “Yunxi, why are you here?”

“What’s with this situation?”

Long Chen had been completely bewildered at being called Long Lang. However, after hearing the name ‘Yunxi’ and thinking back to Chu Yunxi’s intentions of proposing to Liu Lan, he immediately understood. He was now being used as a shield.

Meanwhile, Chu Yunxi looked on in grief and despair.

From his point of view, Long Chen had exited his goddess’ bathroom dripping wet, with even a few little flowers in his hair. Liu Lan had even called him ‘Long Lang’ and, while wrapped in a towel and hair damp, followed him outside...

What could they have been doing inside there?

Chu Yunxi, who had come to see Liu Lan in an excellent mood, immediately saw red. Long Chen could feel rage and a murderous spirit exploding from Chu Yunxi’s body. The power that could only belong to the number 1 genius of the Green Faction at the initial mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm almost threw Long Chen over!

“You-you! Why? Why?!”

Chu Yunxi, who had initially been all gentlemanly, found his sweetheart doing something with someone he could not even bring himself to say, and instantly turned into a beast.

Uncaring of Liu Lan, his eyes focused on Long Chen.

“That son of a bitch! He wants to kill me!”

Long Chen seemed to be able to understand Chu Yunxi’s intentions from his gaze. Liu Lan, too, was aware of what this meant, and immediately called out, “Yunxi, stop. Listen to me!”

“Who’ll listen to you!”

Long Chen scolded inside, furious. Chu Yunxi had completely lost his rationality and was now focusing on killing Long Chen. That sentence from before was obviously just a pretence.

Upon seeing this scene, Liu Lan hastily rushed back into the bathroom. Long Chen guessed that since her evil plan had already worked out, and she was probably going in there to change.

“That damned woman! If I ever get my hands on you, see if I whip your ass until it blooms like a sunflower!”

Known as the number 1 genius of the Green Faction, how could Chu Yunxi be anyone simple? Just his aura alone was enough to overpower Long Chen. In order to save himself, Long Chen instantly underwent his Dragon Soul Transformation and, with the fastest speed possible, fled backwards.

“Chu Yunxi, don’t do anything yet. Don’t be taken in by Liu Lan’s evil plan! She evidently doesn’t want to get married to you, which is why she’s using me as a shield!”

Long Chen explained while escaping.

“How dare you come up with excuses when I’ve already seen everything! Whoever you are, you must die for touching my girl!”

Long Chen was momentarily stunned into silence. It was no wonder that Chu Yunxi liked a woman like Liu Lan who was years older than him. He was basically an inflexible guy with a one-track mind. If he set his mind to something, nothing could change his mind. Sly old Liu Lan had taken this into account and tricked Long Chen here. With a little acting, Chu Yunxi was thoroughly duped!

“Storm Seizing Finger!”

In that moment, Chu Yunxi used this powerful move, and a grand storm emerged. Dust and sand flew everywhere, and an inexhaustible hurricane holding within a powerful force headed in Long Chen’s direction with the intent to kill!

In the face of such a ferocious move, Long Chen no longer had time to

convince anyone. All he could do was grit his teeth and release a fist and struck out with the Demonic Sun Fist!

“Burning Heavens Demonic Sun Fist, Piercing Earth Demonic Sun!”

The two forces collided, but what made Long Chen want to break down was that the Storm Seizing Finger that Chu Yunxi had casually used was even more powerful than Feng Wutian’s Sole Flaming Deity Bird. Long Chen’s Piercing Earth Demonic Sun instantly crumbled, and a formidable force struck Long Chen, causing him to fly backwards, fresh blood spurting out.

This injury was even worse than anything he had experienced, to the point that his body continued to convulse while he lay on the ground. After experiencing this move, he had now lost all ability to battle.

He hurriedly got up, enduring the pain in his body. There was no choice but to use Origin Reversion, albeit with some difficulty, and healed his wounds.

There was no way to express the fury Long Chen had from being used by Liu Lan as a pawn out of nowhere, and now gaining these injuries.

Though Chu Yunxi looked to be refined, he was used to considering everyone beneath him. Since he had determined Liu Lan to be his, Long Chen would have to die for touching what belonged to him.

Long Chen had initially believed that all grudges against him was all due to Liu Lan, and this was a huge misunderstanding. However, the moment Chu Yunxi did not bother with making clear the situation, aiming to take Long Chen’s life with one move, Long Chen knew there was no way to make peace.

“Chu Yunxi, I tried to explain this to you, but you did not listen at all and wanted my life. I’ll remember this move of yours. I’ll make sure you regret it if I don’t die today!”

Though this was a misunderstanding, Long Chen was definitely infuriated to be injured so badly.

Seeing Long Chen sitting cross-legged to heal his injuries, the anger on Chu Yunxi’s face did not diminish at all. Sneering at Long Chen, he roared, “That move didn’t take your life? Well then, here’s another. Die!”

Chapter 144 – Hostility

That life-threatening attack instantly closed in on Long Chen.

“He doesn’t see to reason at all and wants my life?”

There were no ripples in Long Chen’s heart. Instead, all was calm.

He knew that he was still valuable to Liu Lan, and she would not let him die by Chu Yunxi’s hands.

Thus, he sat cross-legged at ease, using the profound-grade healing battle technique-Origin Reversion healing.

As expected, full of rage, Chu Yunxi was about to dash towards Long Chen, but a lithe body flew out of the room and quickly stood in front of Long Chen, slapping towards Chu Yunxi. This move held within a huge momentum and sent Chu Yunxi flying.

It was his first time seeing Liu Lan attacking, and the strength of someone at the perfect mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm truly could not be concealed. Just a casual move could send the so-called number 1 genius of the Green Faction flying!

“Sister Lan, you’re actually attacking me for him?”

Chu Yunxi’s eyes were bloodshot, looking grim.

“Yunxi, don’t think too much into this.”

Liu Lan turned, looking as if her heart was breaking at Long Chen’s plight. Putting on a look of misery, she spoke to Chu Yunxi, “Since you’ve seen this, I’m not going to hide this from you anymore. I never agreed in the past, only because I already have someone in my heart...”

Long Chen was on the brink of coughing blood at her shameless words.

He was about to scold Liu Lan, but unexpectedly, Liu Lan seemed to know what he was going to do. With a turn of her head, her hand steadily landed on Long Chen’s shoulder at an angle where Chu Yunxi could not see, and all the words

Long Chen wanted to say disappeared into his throat.

“Are you talking about him?”

Chu Yunxi now looked ready to eat Long Chen. Long Chen had suddenly obtained an enemy out of the blue and was almost killed, and the fury in his heart was not lesser than Chu Yunxi’s. However, Liu Lan was stronger than him, and under her control, he could not utter a word.

“I know about him. I heard that he’s going to participate in the inner faction selection as well, yes? Good, good, good!”

Chu Yunxi’s heart clenched as he recalled the scene from before, repeating ‘good’ thrice. He glared at Long Chen and sneered, “I’m not a match for you now. However, since you’re willing to go against me for his sake, let it be known that the day of the inner faction selection shall be the day this kid dies!”

The fiery gaze like that of a ferocious beast lay on Long Chen for a while. He then gazed at Liu Lan, seemingly heartbroken, bit his lips vigorously and left.

The happenings of the day was driving him crazy.

.....

After Chu Yunxi left for the Green Willow Residence, Liu Yuan and Chu Fengqing had nothing to do and began to joke around while drinking.

“Brother Liu, I heard that your daughter wanted my son to meet her alone. Why is that?”

Liu Yuan was just as baffled and laughed in embarrassment, “That girl has never done anything that I expected. How would I know?”

“Perhaps she wants my son to see her room?” Chu Fengqing clicked his tongue in jest.

At this age, Chu Fengxing knew his words were not quite right, and Liu Yuan was rendered speechless. He continued joking around with Chu Fengqing for a while longer when Chu Yunxi entered, expression dark.

Liu Yuan was startled, “Yunxi, where’s Lan’er?”

“You still have the gall to ask me?” Chu Yunxi sneered and turned towards Chu

Fengqing, "Father, let's go. We're never coming back to this damned Green Sun Hall!"

The occupants of the room were instantly stunned. Liu Yuan immediately guessed that something must have gone wrong with Liu Lan and quickly asked, "Yunxi, did Lan'er say something?"

Chu Yunxi glared at him, "You dare say you know nothing about what your daughter has done?"

Before he could respond, Chu Yunxi had already left. Seeing this, Chu Fengqing knew something was off.

In actuality, if not for his son being so persistent, he would definitely not agree to this marriage, much less go through all that bullshit with the weakest of the eight great elders, Liu Yuan.

Hearing his son's words, he could tell that Liu Lan had made Chu Yunxi completely give up.

"This is even better. Liu Lan doesn't have a good reputation anyway. If she actually marries into the family, she'll even be an embarrassment to us!"

With this thought, Chu Fengqing's attitude had a 180-degree change. Snickering, he followed Chu Yunxi and left the Green Sun Hall, not even turning back.

"Time to see what Liu Lan has been up to!"

He was also an elder, but Liu Yuan had been scorned on. Expression stony, he slammed the table and stood up!

Seeing Liu Yuan angered, the surrounding elders and enforcers were silent in their fear.

"What's wrong with Enforcer Liu? Even if she doesn't agree to the proposal from the Green Emperor Hall, there's no need to make the situation so stiff, is there? The Green Emperor Hall is the number one hall in the Green Faction and has a great reputation in the outer faction. Why doesn't Liu Lan know how serious this is?"

The elders were all confused.

.....

Though gravely injured, Long Chen had used Origin Reversion in time, and Liu Lan had produced a few profound middle-grade healing items from her cosmos pouch. After refining them, Long Chen gradually recuperated.

He raised his head to see Liu Lan looking indifferent and chuckled darkly, "Looks like the enmity between us is huge."

"Is that so?" Liu Lan exclaimed without care, "It's just a slight injury. Didn't I let you see more than enough?"

"Is your body that valuable?" Long Chen struggled to stand.

"Come into the room. You can leave after your injuries are healed."

"Don't think anything you do will appease me. Whether it's you or Chu Yunxi, I'll definitely take revenge. If you have the guts, kill me now. Don't wait till the time I can crush you..."

Long Chen took several steps forward, looked back and sneered, "I will crush you."

Liu Lan was startled but immediately laughed, as if provoking him, "Don't mention anything yet. If you can defeat Chu Yunxi and enter the Inner faction, you can do whatever you wish to me."

Long Chen clenched his fists tightly, but eventually loosened them. He was definitely not a match for Liu Lan now, so even if she had made use of him, there was nothing he could do as of yet.

"You think I want you?" Long Chen snickered, "I have more girls than you know. Why would I work hard to get an old lady like you?"

"Old lady?"

Liu Lan almost fainted in her anger. She was about to flip out, but Long Chen had already gone far.

She watched Long Chen as he left. While injured, he still stood tall and straight.

"Was it too much for me to make use of him like this? When he gets stronger, it'll definitely bite me in the ass someday..."

At the thought of how Huang Feiyang and the sect leader had ended up, Liu Lan felt a shiver run down her spine.

“Whatever it is, I managed to get Chu Yunxi to completely give up. Though he seems refined, he’s intense, haughty and arrogant. If I do go with him, my future is destroyed. How can I, Liu Lan, depend on someone for my whole life?”

Those were her true thoughts. In actuality, she was extremely against Chu Yunxi, which was why she had thought up this plan to make him give up.

“This way, all connections between the Green Sun and Green Emperor Hall are destroyed. However, that was fated to happen the moment Chu Yunxi set his eyes on me.”

There was no way around it.

At the thought of Long Chen and the progress he had made in this time, Liu Lan nodded, “I can only gamble everything on him. He was already a person full of miracles, and with more pressure on him, he’ll develop even more quickly. Chu Yunxi tried to kill him today, and with his nature, he’ll definitely plot to take revenge during the inner faction selection!”

Liu Lan knew Long Chen’s temperament inside and out.

All that had happened today might seem sudden, but all were within Liu Lan’s plans. She knew Chu Yunxi and Long Chen well enough that they could not do anything about her. It was obvious how high-handed her methods were.

“But what if he really becomes so lucky and enters the inner faction? Wouldn’t I have to...”

At this thought, as well as how Long Chen had been stunned into a daze at her body, Liu Lan suddenly felt her face burning...

.....

He had been made a fool of for no reason and almost lost his life. It was impossible for Long Chen not to be furious.

“That wretched woman is really terrifying. She must have planned this for a long time, and I was stupid enough to head straight-on into the hole she dug and jump in. I’ve made enemies with Chu Yunxi, and gotten myself injured at that...”

The thought of Chu Yunxi increased his desire for blood.

Liu Lan had made a fool of him once and used him as a shield. However, Chu Yunxi had truly wanted his life, and almost succeeded.

“Since his strength and status are both higher than mine, he didn’t treat me equally and thought my life to be like grass...”

Long Chen had now guessed at Chu Yunxi’s character. Even if he knew what really had happened, he still wouldn’t let Long Chen off.

“By the way, old Liu also mentioned that I’m going to be in the same team as him during the inner faction selection. How am I going to team up with him in this situation? He’ll probably want my life the moment the selection starts.”

Long Chen frowned.

“Liu Lan keeps arousing hostility in people around me and was especially vicious this time. However, aren’t you afraid of burning yourself when playing with fire? I, Long Chen, am not some sheep that’s so easily manipulated!”

Long Chen did not dare let Lingxi see all his injuries. For one, he had no idea how to explain the happenings of the day, and Lingxi’s distaste towards Liu Lan might result in her charging out and wanting a fight.

Hidden in a corner in the Green Willow Residence, Long Chen used Origin Reversion once more and absorbed the profound middle-grade spirit medicine that Liu Lan had given him as well. Only then did about half his injuries get better. If Long Chen tried a little harder, nobody would be able to tell.

Long Chen headed towards the area where grade 1 disciples resided, but when he was about to approach it, he met Gan Lin.

The moment he saw Long Chen, Gan Lin had a strange expression on his face as he shook his head, “Long Chen, I never expected that you’d get together with Lord Enforcer. However, the pressure you’ll face is more than you expected. I’m sure Chu Yunxi won’t let you off...”

“What are you saying?” Long Chen widened his eyes in surprise.

Chapter 145 – Liu Lan’s Love Life

“What do you mean, Senior Gan?” Long Chen asked, shocked.

“There’s no need to hide it. Everyone knows already.”

Gan Lin smiled wryly. “We all know what just happened. The two of you admitted your relationship in front of Chu Yunxi, and I believe in no time, this will spread throughout the Green Faction. Before the fight in the inner faction selection begins, I think this will be the biggest piece of gossip...”

“Damn it!”

Long Chen scolded inside. He knew that this was definitely Liu Lan’s work.

He absolutely could not reveal that she had plotted for him to watch her bathing. He could only continue on with this ridiculous lie, but it was this type of gossip that gathered everyone’s interest...

“Looks like my reputation will spread to the nine great outer factions, since I’ve stolen Chu Yunxi’s love from him and thoroughly disregarded him. Damn it, Liu Lan, I’m completely done for in the inner faction selection!”

Long Chen really had the impulse to catch her alive and skin her.

After bidding Gan Lin farewell, Long Chen returned to his residence. Unexpectedly, Liu Ling, who was staying next door, was watching him coldly from the entrance to her residence.

“You bastard, I won’t let you touch a single hair on my sister!”

Having said this, the door closed with a bang.

“Huh?”

There was no way to describe how Long Chen was feeling.

“Oh well, just do whatever you want. I’ll cultivate diligently, not just for Liu Qing but also for myself. I must definitely pass the inner faction selection!”

“But fighting against the top talents of all the nine great outer factions is

incredibly stressful...”

After he opened the door, Lingxi was already awaiting his presence.

When he saw Lingxi’s worried expression, Long Chen suddenly felt a feeling of peace come over him.

It was as if he had been wandering and risking his life outside for ten years, and was only now returning to his anchor, his home.

“You’re back?”

“Yeah.”

.....

The next ten days were spent on cultivation.

In these ten days, he spent two on killing demonic beasts at the Sky Martial Realm. He was still unable to deal with level 5 profound-grade demonic beasts, and could only settle for hunting level 4 beasts.

In two days, he killed a total of four level 4 profound-grade demonic beasts.

What had happened with Liu Lan had already spread in the outer faction, and the Green Emperor Hall quickly became the laughing stock of the outer faction. All jokes were made at their expense. While in the Sky Martial Realm, Long Chen kept a low profile, and hence, no problems arose.

For those few days, he was truly like a mouse, concealing himself as best as possible to prevent disputes. He did not take the demonic cores and beast spirits to the Treasure Exchange Pavilion to be converted into contribution points.

At this point, Lingxi had already found out what had happened to Long Chen. However, this version had been modified, and she only held more contempt towards Liu Lan.

However, the inner faction selection was right around the corner.

“Let’s not even consider if Chu Yunxi will attack me during the inner faction selection. Many of the other geniuses have the same level of strength as Chu Yunxi. My goal is the inner faction, and the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm is definitely not enough.”

Sitting in the spacious basement, Long Chen devoured the blood of level 4 profound-grade demonic beasts. However, they had little effect. After using Blood Transmutation, he was only able to get infinitely nearer to the Earth Dan Realm.

The inner faction was definitely holding high expectations for the selection.

Those who could distinguish themselves in each selection were absolute geniuses. Even after entering the inner faction, they would definitely be able to shine. On top of that, this was a platform for competition within the nine outer factions. Though they were generally united, competition was not scarce amongst them. The outer factions had restrained themselves, all so they could show off in the selection and secure their status amongst the outer factions.

Those who were particularly expectant towards the selection were definitely of the Green Faction.

All of the participants from the other factions were on good terms and were exceptional partners. However, on the Green Faction's end, there was Long Chen, who had been chosen despite being at the Human Dan Realm, and had a huge feud with Chu Yunxi.

Everyone loved gossip, and nobody was unaware of Long Chen and Chu Yunxi being at odds over a woman.

The most mysterious character here was Long Chen. He had only just entered the outer faction two months ago, and he had already risen at an insane pace, from the eighth Dragon Vein till the perfect mastery stage at the Human Dan Realm.

His success at his cultivation and love life were both shocking. Everyone had assumed that Chu Yunxi would definitely get together with Liu Lan, and yet Long Chen had stolen his superior's heart. It was akin to a great cabbage being provided to swine, or a beautiful flower stuck in cow dung.

These rivals in love would both represent the Green Faction and fight together, and would definitely put on a good show. For this reason, there was boundless anticipation towards this selection.

There were ten more days till the first day of the eleventh month, and

everyone felt as if time was crawling.

Though Long Chen might have been on the upper hand in love, he was probably going to have a tragic end on the battlefield.

As he was the only one at the Human Dan Realm, Long Chen caught much attention. His information was read through time and again. While he had defeated Feng Wutian, Long Chen was still undoubtedly the weakest in the selection.

Every time Long Chen went out, he could see everyone discussing the inner faction selection in Lingwu City. Long Chen was one of the most-talked-about topics, but it was clear that nobody expected him to do well. When they spoke of him, what they wanted to see was what would happen between him and his rival in love, Chu Yunxi.

“Chu Yunxi is an exceptional talent, and the Chu family is quite amazing too. I wonder if Liu Lan has a screw loose to choose a pig like Long Chen!”

Every time he heard this, Long Chen had the urge to vomit blood. This was the reason he did not dare go to the Treasure Exchange Pavilion. If he were to be surrounded, he’d probably be drowned by all the saliva they would spit out.

“What a shameless woman.” Lingxi puffed her cheeks in annoyance.

“Long Chen, with your current strength, it really will be difficult to deal with them. Don’t worry though. I’ve taken the Spirit Grass, and can take on an attack that even someone at the perfect mastery stage at the Earth Dan Realm cannot block. If that Chu whatever dares touch you, I’ll take his wretched life!”

At the thought that he had harmed Long Chen, Lingxi felt indignant.

Long Chen could do little at that.

“Oh well. I can only hope to have some sort of breakthrough during the selection. If not, it’s not quite possible...”

Ever since he had entered the Lingwu Family, Long Chen had raised his status step by step. Never had he experienced fear or terror, but now that he would have to compete against geniuses of the outer faction, he was powerless.

“I won’t be able to take revenge against Chu Yunxi’s attack in the near future.”

Just as he was thinking this, Long Chen was annoyed to find that Liu Lan had come looking for him.

Long Chen had no intentions of seeing her, but she was lingering outside.

“Little Xi, I’m going to see what shit she’s going to spout. Don’t get impulsive. She’s very powerful. Once I get stronger, you can attack her. What do you think?”

Before heading out, Long Chen saw Lingxi’s dark expression that hinted at violence, and quickly advised.

“Hmph. Once I regain my strength, she’ll definitely be in for it.”

After opening the door, he found Liu Lan in that black dress that she had worn when she had entered his room for the first time. It presented her curves well, but today, she also had on a black cloak, concealing her charming appearance.

“The inner faction selection is about to start, and you don’t have any trump cards. The Yuanling City’s Daybreak Merchants Union is organising a large-scaled auction today. How about we go take a look?”

Long Chen had planned on sending her away to avoid being unable to hold himself back and responding with violence. However, upon hearing her mention an auction, he hesitated for a moment and decided to go with her.

After getting a cloak from Liu Lan, Long Chen followed behind her and headed towards the outskirts of the Lingwu City.

Amongst cultivators, there were many who had offended others or committed unspeakable sins. They were unwilling to reveal their identities, and this was especially so at auctions, where it had almost become an unspoken rule to wear cloaks to participate.

With this, Long Chen could walk alongside Liu Lan without causing a ruckus.

“These ten days have been very lively. Your love life has already become the topic of everyone’s discussion enjoyed before and after meals.” Long Chen commented.

“Are you complaining or taking pleasure in it?” Liu Lan seemed to smile.

“Are you teasing me?”

Liu Lan did not deny this.

“Just ignore this. Long Chen...” Her brows furrowed slightly, “The danger of the inner faction selection is something you can’t even begin to imagine. Whether you believe it or not, I don’t want you to die.”

“Are you really an old cow trying to eat young grass*?”

(tln: someone who is much older getting together with someone significantly younger)

Being called an old cow multiple times brought Liu Lan closer to the brink of getting violent, no matter how well-mannered she was. However, as she had been in the wrong, it wouldn’t do her good to get mad.

Rolling her eyes, Liu Lan continued, “I can only apologise to you for what happened. Chu Yunxi was even more extreme than I expected. If there’s any opportunity at all, I believe he’ll find a way to kill you regardless of the repercussions.”

“What is that supposed to mean? Schadenfreude?” Long Chen’s voice had turned cold.

“I didn’t mean that.” Liu Lan was anxious, “I’m just telling you that it’s best to exercise restraint this time. You need to keep your life. Besides, you’re a few years younger than Chu Yunxi and only just entered the Lingwu family, It’s not like you won’t have any chances at surpassing him.”

“Stop it. I won’t hold back when it comes to people I need to kill.”

Long Chen spat out these words and walked ahead.

